HISTORY

OF THE

GREAT KANAWHA VALLEY

WITH FAMILY HISTORY AND BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES. A STATEMENT OF ITS NATURAL RESOURCES, INDUSTRIAL GROWTH AND COMMERCIAL ADVANTAGES.

VOL. I.

ILLUSTRATED.

MADISON, WIS.:
BRANT, FULLER & CO.,
1891.

Democrat Printing Co., Madison, Wis.
Bindery of W. B. Conkey, Chicago, Ill.

Reprinted by –

HIGGINSON BOOK COMPANY
148 Washington Street, Post Office Box 778
Salem, Massachusetts 01970

Phone: 978/745-7170 *Fax*: 978/745-8025

A complete catalog of thousands of genealogy and local history reprints is available from Higginson Books. Please contact us to order or for more information, or visit our web site at www.higginsonbooks.com.

This facsimile reprint has been photo-reproduced on acid-free paper. Hardcover bindings are Class A archival quality.

CONTENTS.

VOLUME I.

CHAPTER I. PAGE

Pre-historic Occupation of the Kanawha Valley — Mound Builders — Who Were They? — Whence Came They? — Historical Sketch of the Cherokees — Interesting Explorations of Ancient Earth and Stone Works..... 23

CHAPTER II.

First White Settlement in the New River Kanawha Valley, and the First That Crossed the Alleghenies Westward..... 49

CHAPTER III.

Ingles-Draper Settlement — First Indian Blood Spilled — Cupid's Work in the Wilderness — First White Wedding West of the Alleghenies—Bloody Encounter and Murder of Whites — Carried Into Captivity—Babe Born on the Route — Story of Mrs. Ingles' Hardships — First Salt Made by Her in the Kanawha Valley..... 52

CHAPTER IV.

Names of Rivers in the Ohio Valley — Indian Titles — Their Beauty and Descriptive Character — Weary Journey of Two Escaped Women — Up the Ohio and Kanawha on Foot — Notable Historic Spots and Events — The Burning Spring — First Natural Gas in the Valley — Features of the Country..... 61

CHAPTER V.

Canyon of New River — Awful Chasm Passed by the Lonely Fugitives — Frightful Perils — "Drawing Straws" — Which Shall Die? — Life and Death Struggle — Weary Journey Renewed — Scaling Anvil Cliff — Yielding to Despair — Relief at Last and Home — Fate of the Old Dutch Woman — Battles, Sieges and Surprises..... 75

CHAPTER VI.

Early Explorers — First Surveys in West Virginia and Kentucky — Early Routes of Travel — Weary Roads Through the Wilderness — Story of William Ingles — His Life Among the Indians — His Ransom and Reluctant Return — Mother's Joy — His Subsequent Restless Career — Bloody Raid on Burke's Garden — Pursuit and Vengeance — The Captives of Abt's Valley..... 85

CHAPTER VII.

Rebecca Davidson — Hunting in "Ye Olden Time" — How the Sport Was Arranged — Excitement and Dangers — "Buck Ague" — The Ingles Family Clock — Ticking for Several Generations — Moralizing on "Ye Grandfather's Time-piece" — A Century's Changes — Contrast Between Now and Then — Picture on Plantation Life..... 96

CHAPTER VIII. PAGE

Daniel Boone — Career of the Illustrious Pioneer — His Life in the Kanawha Valley — Battle of Point Pleasant — Its Far Reaching Importance — Events Leading Thereto — Forces Engaged — The Indian Side — Outrages That Infuriated Them — Graphic Description of the Conflict..... 108

CHAPTER IX.

Lord Dunmore — His Conduct While Governor of Virginia Colony — His Treachery to the Frontiersmen — His Subsequent Rascally Conduct — Point Pleasant as a Military School — Notable Characters of the Place — Gen. Andrew Lewis — Logan, the Mingo Chief — Cornstalk, the Famous Indian Commander..... 128

CHAPTER X.

Murder of Cornstalk — "Red Hawk" — His Effort to Shoot Washington at Braddock's Defeat — Bloody Raids by Indians to Avenge Their Leader — Attack on Pt. Pleasant — Its Repulse — Raid up the Kanawha and Attack on Donnally's — Spirited Battle — Hannah Dennis — Her Career Among the Indians.. . 142

CHAPTER XI.

Chronological Record of Events Along the Border — Dates of Battles, Sieges and Settlements..... 154

CHAPTER XII.

The Kanawha River and Kanawha Valley..... 169

CHAPTER XIII.

Charleston, West Virginia..... 172

CHAPTER XIV.

Orange County..... 196

CHAPTER XV.

The Great Kanawha River — History of Its Navigation and Improvements — Aboriginal Methods — Silent Glide of the Birch-bark Canoe — Advent of the Pioneers — Flat-boats and Batteaux — First Steamboat — Revolution Accomplished Thereby — Plans to Improve the Channel — Elaborate System of Locks and Dams — Character and Cost of the Work — Statistics of Coal Shipments.... 198

CHAPTER XV. PAGE.

Salt Manufacture in the Kanawha Valley — Development of the Industry by Slow Degrees — Crude Beginnings — Petroleum Oil — Discovery and Effects — "Old Greasy" — Natural Gas — First Appearance and Wonderful Results — A Harvard Professor's Experience with a Match at the Well — Disastrous Consequences to the Inquisitive Scientist — Not so Pretty but Much Wiser — Interesting Statistics 211

CHAPTER XVI.

Church History of the Kanawha Valley — First Law Passed in the New World Commands Religious Attendance — "Blue Laws" by the Fanatics of Old Virginia — How It Was Beyond the Mountains — Pioneer Preachers — Self-sacrifice and Zeal — First Baptist Minister on the Kanawha — Primitive Meetin' Houses — Widely Scattered Congregations — The Baptist Church and Its Heroes — The Presbyterians — Historic Split in That Denomination — Methodist Episcopal — Early Missionary Work — Protestant Episcopal — United Brethren — The Catholic Church. Its Work in the Valley — The Lutherans..... 227

CHAPTER XVII.

Educational History — Gov. Berkeley's Famous Dictum Against Schools — Progress of Two Centuries — Virginia's Backwardness in Embracing the Free School System — The "Pauper Schools" — Various Old Time Statutes — But Little Progress — The "Old Field Schools" — What They Were — Pen Portrait of Building and Surroundings — The Pioneer Teacher — Readin', Ritin' and 'Rithmetic — "Boarding Around" — Names of "School-Masters" of ye Olden Time — Gradual Improvements — Modern Progress — Schools Under the New Constitution — First Official Reports — Present Status..... 245

CHAPTER XVIII.

Military History of the Kanawha Valley — Early Struggles — The Revolution — Warfare With Both Savages and British — War of 1812 — Virginia's Ready Response With Troops — The Civil War — Brother Against Brother — Occupation of the Valley by Opposing Forces — Gov. Wise' Foray — Battle of Scary Creek — Federals' Control of the Valley — Battle of Carnifex Ferry — Advance of Loring's Command — Lightburn's Famous Retreat — Federals Driven Out — Their Triumphant Return — Jenkins' Raid to Pt. Pleasant — A Dastardly Murder — "Johnnies" Capture a Steamboat — Witcher's Attack on Winfield — Estimate of Kanawha Troops in the War — Casualties on Both Sides..... 260

CHAPTER XIX.

Bench and Bar — Early Struggles of the Profession — First Courts in the Kanawha Valley — Methods of Administration — Old Time County Courts — Pioneer Practitioners — The War Period — Effects of the Famous Lawyer's Test Oath — Hardships of the Same — Sketches of Eminent Judges — Bright Minds of the Kanawha Bar — Brilliant Advocates and Shrewd Special Pleaders — Anecdotes of the Profession — Mr. Fisher's Wit and Repartee — Review of Noted Law Cases — Increase of Litigation and Changes in Modes of Practice..... 278

VOLUME II.

CHAPTER XX.

Medical History of the Kanawha Valley from 1790 to 1890 — Early Diagnosis of Fevers — Old-time Doctors and Their Methods — Diseases Peculiar to the First Settlers — Medical Writers Abroad — Influence on the American Practitioner — List of Complaints in the Valley Scientifically Defined — Measles, Mumps, "Kidney Troubles," and Other Evils Flesh is Heir to — Cholera and Its Ravages — Improvement in Medical Treatment — How They Used to Bleed 'em — Calomel and Jalap — Supremacy of the Lancet — The "Root and Yarb" Doctor — He "Sneezed" Her — Peripatetic Physicians and the Inevitable Saddle-bags — Description of a Long Night Ride — Fording Mill Creek by Moonlight — Pen Portraits of Old-timers — The Harveys, Putneys and Others.. 253

CHAPTER XXI.

Point Pleasant the Oldest English Town on the Ohio — Claims of Wheeling — Of Marietta . 272

CHAPTER XXII.

Formation of Mason County — Topography — Naming of the County — The County Seat — Burial of the Leaden Plates by the French — Principal Towns in Mason County — Hon. John Hall — Natural Resources — Newspapers..... 279

CHAPTER XXIII.

Area of Putnam County — Its Formation — The County Seat and Principal Towns — Its First County Court — Topography — Natural Resources — Early Settlers — Incidents of Early History — Newspapers 285

CHAPTER XXIV.

Formation of Fayette County — The County Seat — The Principal Towns — Mineral and Agricultural Resources — Topography — Historic Incidents — John R. Peyton — Marshall's Pillar — Climate — Newspapers..... 290

CHAPTER XXV.

The Formation of Kanawha County — The First Settler — The Site of Charleston — The First County Court — Climate — Mining Interests — Fruit — Newspapers..... 294

CHAPTER XXVI.

Banking Institutions..... 303

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

	Page.
Adkins, John M.	17
Alford, J. D.	140
Armstrong, E. H.	18
Armstrong, J. H.	18
Arnold, E. S.	150
Arrington, Gideon H.	18
Arrington, James T.	19
Barber, T. L., M. D.	150
Baker, William H.	19
Barbee, Andrew R., M. D.	20
Barcus, E. J.	21
Barnett, William	21
Beale, Chas. T.	22
Beale, James M. H.	23
Bechtle, John W.	24
Beury, J. L.	229
Bibby, James	151
Bickel, R. S.	24
Blagg, Benjamin H.	25
Blain, Z. T. J.	26
Blazer, Philip	27
Boggs, Hugh L.	152
Bowers, T. S. P.	152
Brannon, Mathew.	28
Brannon, John S.	28
Brazie, W. A.	230
Bridge, E. W.	230
Broun, Major Thomas L.	153
Brown, Gideon	29
Bryan, John	29
Bryan, J. W.	30
Bumgarner, Seth.	30
Burdett, Hon. Samuel C.	154
Burlew, Noyes S.	155
Burnside, Joseph	31
Buttrick, E. L.	157
Calvert, Cornelius	158
Carpenter, Thomas C.	140
Capito, Charles	159
Caperton, Dr. George H.	231
Carder, William B.	159
Carr, R. S.	159
Carver, John	160
Carver, Aaron	232
Champ, George W.	232
Chapman, Charles S.	32
Cheney, M. A.	233
Clendenin, James E. B.	33
Clifton, Charles	34
Cobb, Augustus	35
Cullen, Israel	39
Combs, William R.	161
Cooper, William	35
Cotton, John T., M. D.	162
Couch, Daniel, M. D.	36
Couch, John R.	37
Couch, Peter S.	37
Crary, Archibald, M. D.	38
Cummings, Dr. William R.	162
Curry, William P.	163
Daniel, Nehemiah	233
Davis, Rev. R. W.	40
Davis, George	164
Davis, John William	233
Dent, Daniel G.	234
Deuley, A. B., M. D.	141
Duffy, P. F.	165
Eastham, Albert Gallatin	42
Eastham, Hon. P. C.	42
Easley, E. H.	165
Edwards, Edward	41
Edwards, John	41
Eggenshwiler, C.	43
English, John W.	44
Ewing, W. P., M. D.	166
Fife, Charles T.	142
Fife, Col. William E.	142
Fisher, Charles P.	166
Floyd, Hon. John B.	167
Fontaine, Peter	167
Forrest, Hosea H.	45
Fowler, George E. W.	45
Frankenberger, Philip	168
Frankenberger, Moses	168
Franklin, Benjamin	46
Fravel, Edward H., M. D.	143
Friedman & Co., J.	47
Fry, Henry	48
Fry, Hon. Joseph L.	169
Frye, Patrick	170
Garrison, F. L.	170
Gebhart, C. C.	170
George, James	49
George Joseph E.	49
Gerlach, John	50
Gillespie, Jehu W.	51
Gilliam, Dr. Edward L.	51
Gilmore, Baptiste	52
Ginther, Jonh.	53
Goshorn, John H.	171
Goshorn, Hon J. W.	171
Goshorn, W. F.	173
Goshorn, George	174
Gould, Andrew	54
Graham, Hugh	54
Green, Samuel S.	175
Guthrie, Hon. F. A.	55
Gwinn, Henry	56
Hale, Dr. John P.	176
Hall, Thomas L.	57
Hall, Benjamin A.	57
Hamilton, H. L.	181
Hamilton, Alexander W.	234
Hanes, Ephraim	57
Hanna, James W.	58
Hanna, Samuel J.	59
Hannan, Erastus D.	60
Hannan, E. H.	60
Harrison, G. W.	61
Hart, George	62
Henley, Charles W.	181
Henry, R. S., M. D.	182
Hereford, C. D.	183
Hereford, James T.	62
Hill, Edmund	63
Hobson, A. M.	235
Hogg, Charles E.	63
Hogg, W. H.	65
Hogsett, Charles W.	66
Holloway, Timothy H.	66
Holmes, W. D.	66
Hoover, Charley S.	236
Hoy, F. D.	67
Hughs, Christopher	68
Hunter, Jefferson	69
Hutchinson, John L.	69
Isaac, W. D.	183
Jelenko, Gustave	184
Johnson, Okey	185
Johnson, Dr. Nicholas	236
Johnson, William R.	237
Keister, William J.	70
Keller, Lester, M. D.	237
Kent, Charles H.	238
Kennedy, J. W.	186
Kerr, James B., M. D.	71
Kieszling, Adam	71
Kimberling, Nathaniel	72
Kimberling, Lewis	72
Kimberling, Joseph N.	73
King, Winston B.	73
Kirk, W. S.	74
Klase, William N., M. D.	186
Knight, Aquila Leighton	75
Kubach, O. C.	239
Laidley, M. M.	78
Laidley, Alex T.	187
Laidley, J. J.	188
Lair, Frank E.	239
Layden, Dominick	191
Lee, Richard H.	189
Lewis, Virgil Anson	78
Lewis, Charles C.	189
Lewis, Charles Irvin	240
Llewellyn, David Edward	241
Long, Isaac	80
Long, James W.	81
Long, William A.	81
Lovell, James J.	190
Mahood, D. F.	243
Matthews, J. W.	144
MacCorkle, William A.	192
McCallister, John C.	82
McCausland, Gen. John	82
McCoy, David	145
McCulloch, Charles E.	85
McCulloch, Mrs. Mary C.	86
MacDonald, Symington	242
McDaniel, Capt. A. G.	87
McDermitt, John	88
McVey, George W.	242
McWhorter, Hon. Henry Clay	192
Meeks, Dr. James R.	88
Michaelson, O. H.	193
Middelburg, Arnold	195
Miller, D. D., M. D.	195
Miller, C. C.	90
Miller, James H.	91
Miller, William A.	91
Mitchell, Robert E.	92
Moore, Charles Page Thomas	92
Moore, George M.	94
Moore, Shepard W.	94
Moredock, George W.	95
Morgan, William A.	96
Morrow, Henry C.	96
Mossman, E. J.	97
Musgrave, Elijah Green	97
Mohler, James K.	196
Montgomery, Hon. John C.	243
Montgomery, James W.	244
Morgan, John	197
Neale, William P. L.	98
Neale, W. P., M. D.	99
Newman, Isaac V.	100
Newton, Douglass E.	100
Nicholson, Thomas	101
Norton, H. J.	101
Noyes, P. H.	197
Nuttall, John	244
Nye, J. W.	145
Oakes, William Ira	198
Oney, Robert T.	199
Oxley, Benjamin H.	199
Patrick, Alfred S., M. D.	200
Payne, James Monroe.	200
Pearson, Berrimon B.	102
Poffenbarger, Clinton	103
Poffenbarger, William H.	104
Porter, Thomas	201
Purdy, Mrs. Annie	104
Quarrier, Hon. William A.	201
Rea, Robert	106
Redmond, Benjamin J.	105
Reece, Dr. W. S.	107
Reece, George W.	107
Reynolds, George B.	203
Rhods, John P.	108
Riffle, Jasper	108
Riffle, Lewis E.	109
Robins, J. E., M. D.	245
Robinson, James J.	245
Rollins, J. E.	204
Rosebery, E. F.	110
Roseberry, W. O.	110
Roush, Daniel	113
Roush, Noah	112
Roush, Jacob	111
Roy, J. C.	204
Ruffner, Joseph	205

	Page.
Rupert, L. B., M. D.	246
Russell, John N., M. D.	114
Sarver, Rufus French	247
Sayre, Charles	115
Schaffer, Leo	247
Schuler, John B.	115
Scott, Hezekiah	207
Scott, W. D	208
Scott, Addison M., C. E.	206
Sentz, Capt. James H.	205
Shaver, A. C	208
Shaver, J. R.	209
Sharp, Major William	209
Shrewsbury, Albert D.	210
Shrewsbury, C	116
Simms, Howard T	146
Simpson, Livia Nye	117
Skees, R. R.	210
Slack, John	211
Slyger, Thomas J	212
Smith, Burwell S.	118
Smith, Isaac V	118
Smith, J. P. R. B.	119
Smith, Samuel	119
Smith, Major J. S. F.	212
Smith, Ballard R., M. D.	248
Snyder, Major Thomas Fife	213
Staunton, J. M., M. D.	214
Steenbergen, J. W.	120
Sterling, R. W.	121
Sterne, John V.	122
Sterrett, Mrs. F. H.	123
Stewart, Adam.	123
Stewart, George.	124
Stewart, James.	146
Stump, John L.	215
Straughan, M. H.	215
Strickler, Ernestine A.	124
Sturgeon, William	125
Sullivan, Daniel M.	126
Sullivan, Alfred T.	126
Summers, William S.	216
Taylor, James H.	127
Terry, William H.	128
Timms, Hon. L. J.	147
Tippett, George W.	129
Thayer, Job E.	217
Thayer, William T.	218
Thayer, Otis A.	218
Thomas, Dr. F. S.	219
Thomas, J. M.	220
Thomas, D. P.	128
Thomas, J. C	128
Thompson, William	248
Thornhill, John L.	221
Truslow, John A.	221
Turner, Henry Clay	130
Tyree, Richard	249
Vanden, George W., M. D.	250
Veazey, Oscar A.	223
Vickers, J. W	224
Walker, Van Buren	148
Wallace, Love C.	131
Wallis, William H.	132
Walls, Hansford L., M. D.	148
Ward, Charles	224
Watterson, Adam I.	133
Waugh, John T.	133
Whaley, F. M.	134
White, George	149
Wolfe, Adam H.	130
Wood, Joseph A., M. D.	227
Wooldredge, Atherton M.	228
Woodman, Frank	228
Wilkinson, Daniel	135
Williams, H. H.	136
Williamson, Henry C.	136
Winkelblack, R. L.	138
Wyant, William	251
Wysor, John C.	251
Young, David	139

PORTRAITS.

R. W. Sterling and wife,	facing 121	
R. S. Carr	facing 159	
Chas. Ward	facing 224	
R. S. Bickel	facing 24	
A. R. Barbee	facing 20	
C. P. T. Moore	facing 92	
F. S. Thomas	facing 219	

INTRODUCTION.

Pioneer history does *not* repeat itself. Our country—and especially our great western trans-Allegheny country—has but recently passed through, and is hardly yet entirely emerged, in the far west, from a period of intensely active, exciting and eventful history, which can never be repeated.

The discovery, exploration, conquest, settlement and civilization of a continent, once accomplished in this age, is done for all time; there are no more continents to discover; no more worlds to conquer.

To Macaulay's imaginary New Zealander who is to stand upon the broken arches of London bridge, and speculate on the ruins of St. Paul and of London, the opportunity will never come; the ratchets of steam, electricity and printing, will hold the world from ever again retrograding. The course of civilization is onward and upward, as that of empire is westward.

The wilderness, to be settled by the pioneer Ingleses and Drapers, the Harmons and Burkes, the Gists and Tygarts, no longer exists. The occupations of the Boones and Kentons, the Zanes, McCullochs, Bradys and Wetzels, as border settlers and Indian fighters, passed away with them. There is no longer need for the Lewises and Clarkes, as trans-continental explorers; for the Fremonts and Kit Carsons as mountain path finders and path makers. For the Schoolcrafts and Catlins to study and portray, with pen and pencil, unknown races and tribes; the Pontiacs and Cornstalks, the Logans and Tecumsehs, the Black Hawks and the Girtys, have left the stage forever. The Andrew Lewises and Mad Anthony Waynes, the George Rogers Clarkes, and William Henry Harrisons, the daring frontier commanders, would have to mold their swords into pruning hooks and plow shares now. The martyrdoms of the Col. Crawfords, the Mrs. Moores, and the Flinns, can never occur again. The experiences of captive life and remarkable escapes of the Mary Ingleses, the Bettie Drapers, the Mary Moores, the Hannah Dennises and the Rebecca Davidsons, are, thanks to advancing civilization, the last of their kind, and the Anne Baileys and Bettie Zanes need fear no future rivals for their well-earned laurels.

The history that the hundreds of brave actors—of whom these are but the types and exemplars—made, in their day and generation, by their heroic deeds and sufferings, was a history unparalleled in the past, and that can never be repeated in the future; the conditions no longer exist, and can never exist again.

For the present generation, born and reared in these days of safety, law and order, peace and plenty, ease and luxury, in these days of steam and electricity, of rapid transit, more rapid communication, and all the nameless accompaniments of the latest civilization, it is difficult to look back to the days of our grandfathers, and realize that, in their day, all this vast western country from the Alleghenies even to the Pacific, now teeming with its many millions of busy, prosperous, and happy people, with their thriving cities, towns and villages, and productive valleys and plains, was then one unbroken expanse of wilderness, lying in a state of nature, roamed by herds of wild animals and tribes of savage men; unknown, or but vaguely known to the white man; never penetrated by white men except by a few exceptionably adventurous Spanish and French explorers and traders, accompanied, as usual, by pious monks and Jesuit fathers, tempted by the love of God or gold, and the hope of gain or glory.

Those who braved the dangers, privations, and hardships of pioneer life, and participated in the stirring scenes and events that attended the transformation of this wilderness into hives of busy industry, and homes of comfort and luxury, seldom kept diaries, or left written records or histories of their wonderful achievements and thrilling experiences—the circumstances and surroundings not favoring the writing or preserving of such records—nor, indeed, did the tastes of the hardy pioneers run in that direction, and, therefore, as the older generations passed away, many of them carried with them recollections and traditions that can never be recovered, and thus has been lost much of pioneer history probably as interesting as any that has been preserved.

As the histories of these exciting times will, no doubt, possess deeper interest and be more valued and prized the farther the period in which the events occurred recedes adown the stream of Time, it should be the duty of every one who can, to collect and add whatever he can, from authentic and trustworthy records and traditions, to the general fund of reliable history of this interesting period, for permanent preservation.

The Ingles and Draper families were pioneers in the then great western wilderness. The history of these first trans-Allegheny settlements is full of interest, and some of their experiences, for daring adventure, terrible suffering, and heroic endur-

ance, are not excelled by anything recorded in all the annals of border life.

As typical and illustrative of border life experiences of the early times it may be of interest to give some of the family records and vanishing traditions of these early pioneers, to preserve them from the fate of so many others now lost in oblivion, and add them to the many other interesting histories of the period.

In connection with and following the histories of the early pioneer settlements and families, will be traced briefly, in chronological order, the progressive frontier explorations and settlements along the New-River-Kanawha valleys from the Alleghenies to the Ohio river, all sandwiched throughout with collateral facts and incidents of more or less local or general historical interest.

HISTORY OF THE NEW RIVER-KANAWHA VALLEY.

On the slopes of the Grandfather mountain in North Carolina, not far from the highest land in the southern states, New river, (the upper Kanawha) takes its rise.

By reference to modern maps, a curious topographical feature in regard to the rivers of this upper New river region will be observed.

Within a radius of a few miles four important rivers take their rise; their head waters interlocking with each other; they, however, soon bid each other a final adieu, and flow their several ways to the four points of the compass.

New river rises in North Carolina, a sea-board state; but, instead of going down through the sunny south to its natural home in the bosom of the Atlantic, it strikes out defiantly, nearly due north, through Virginia, cutting its way through the Blue Ridge, the Allegheny, and parallel ridges, and finally, finds its way through the waters of the Ohio and Mississippi into the gulf of Mexico.

The Yadkin river (on which, not far from here, Squire Boone and family, including the afterward renowned pioneer, Daniel Boone, settled, in 1750, having come from Berks county, Penn.) rises in Virginia; but, instead of "pooling its issues" and joining its fortunes with its close and bold neighbor, New river, it leaves its native state and takes the back track, nearly south, through the Carolinas to the broad Atlantic, through the great Peedee.

The Roanoke river, or the Dan branch of it, rises both in Virginia and North Carolina, along the dividing line, flows nearly east until it joins the Staunton river, forming the true Roanoke, and empties into Albemarle sound; whilst the Tennessee, or Pelissipi, as the Cherokees called it here, now called

the Holston, rising similarly along and on both sides of the Virginia and North Carolina line, and in close interlock with the other streams named, starts out on its long western journey, and, finally, mingles its waters with those of the Ohio and Mississippi, or Me-sa-cha-ce-pe, as the aborigines called it, meaning the Big river, or "Father of Waters," the "Rio Grande" of De Soto.

The "New river" was first discovered and named in 1654, by Col. Abraham Wood, who dwelt at the falls of the Appomattox, now the site of Petersburg, Virginia. Being of an adventurous and speculative turn, he got a concession from the governor of Virginia to "explore the country and open up trade with the Indians to the west." There is no record as to the particular route he took, but as the line of adventure, exploration, and discovery, was then all east of the mountains, it is probable that he first struck the river not far from the Blue Ridge, and near the present Virginia and North Carolina line.

From the fact that the gap in the Blue Ridge lying between the heads of Smith's river branch of the Dan, in Patrick county, and Little river branch of New river, in Floyd county, is, to this day, called "Wood's Gap," it is highly probable that this was his route, and that the gap was named after him; if so, then it is almost certain that New river was first seen by Col. Wood, probably the first white man who ever saw it, at the mouth of Little river, about a mile and a half above "Ingles' Ferry," and being to him a *new* river, without a name, he then and there named it after himself, "Wood's river."

If this supposition is correct, then Col. Abraham Wood and his party of humble hunters and traders, anticipated, by many years, the famous exploits of the Hon. Gov. Spottswood and his Knights of the Golden Horseshoe, in passing the then limits of western discovery, the mysterious "Blue Ridge." As a singular example of the injustice of history: Gov. Spottswood was knighted, immortalized, and had his name perpetuated by a Virginia county for what he *didn't do* (*first* cross the Blue Ridge), while Col. Wood, who *did* do it, is *almost* forgotten. Even Col. Wood was not the *only* one, though the first, who preceded Gov. Spottswood in crossing the Blue Ridge.

In 1666, twelve years after Col. Wood, and fifty years before Gov. Spottswood, Gov. Sir William Berkely, says Arthur, despatched an exploring party across the mountains, to the west, under Capt. Henry Batte, with fourteen Virginians and fourteen Indians. They also started from Appomattox. In seven days they reached the foot of the mountains. After crossing them they came to level, delightful plains, with abundant game, deer, elk, and buffalo, so gentle as not to be frightened by the approach of man. Here they discovered a river flowing west-

ward; having followed it for several days, they came to fields and empty cabins, lately tenanted. Capt. Batte left in them some trinkets, in token of friendship.

But here the Indian guides stopped and refused to go any farther, saying that there dwelt near here a tribe of Indians that made salt and sold it to other tribes. This tribe was said to be numerous and powerful, and never let any one escape who ventured into their towns. Capt. Batte finding his Indians resolute in their determination not to venture farther, reluctantly abandoned the trip, and returned to the province. Gov. Berkely was so interested in the report that he determined to go and explore the country himself, but other cares and duties occupied him, and he never did. No mention is made here of Col. Wood's trip, but Capt. Batte must have known of it, as it had been but twelve years since Col. Wood started from, and returned to, the same point. From this meager account, it seems probable that Capt. Batte followed the same route that Col. Wood had traveled, crossed the Blue Ridge at the same point—Wood's Gap—struck New river (Wood's river), which he calls a western flowing river, at or about the same point that Wood had, and followed it downward several days before reaching the territory occupied by the salt makers which, it is highly probable, was in the Kanawha valley, and the salt made at the old Campbell's creek salt spring. There were abundant remains of ancient Indian pottery about the spring when the country was first settled by the whites.

Col. Wood, when he discovered New river did not know, of course, the extent of the river nor the destination of its waters; but these names (Wood's river and New river) were intended to attach to the whole course of the stream, from its source to its mouth, wherever that might be.

HISTORY OF THE GREAT KANAWHA VALLEY.

CHAPTER I.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

PRE-HISTORIC OCCUPATION OF THE KANAWHA VALLEY — MOUND-BUILDERS — WHO WERE THEY? — WHENCE CAME THEY? — HISTORICAL SKETCH OF THE CHEROKEES — INTERESTING EXPLORATIONS OF ANCIENT EARTH AND STONE WORKS.

OF all the nations, or confederations, of tribes of Indians occupying this country at the time of the coming of the white man, the Cherokees were the most populous and powerful probably, not even excepting the Iroquois. They were then a southern nation, occupying territory in Virginia, Kentucky, Tennessee, the Carolinas and Georgia. For more than two hundred years they have been engaged in an almost ceaseless struggle for existence, warring with other tribes and pressed by the constant encroachments of the whites, yielding by degrees their immense claims of territory to the colonies and to the United States government, until finally in 1838 they were transplanted to new homes beyond the Mississippi.

Since 1721, the date of the first colonial treaty with them, they have been oftener and for longer time before the public, in the way of treaties, land sales, conflicts about boundaries and judicial decisions, than any other of the Indian peoples. They have passed through all this, and are now more prosperous, advanced and progressive than at any previous time in their later history. Such is a brief outline sketch of the interesting people who held this valley prior to the coming of the whites. The first known contact with them by the white race, was by the enterprising Spanish explorer, Ferdinand DeSoto, in Georgia, in 1540. For more than a century nothing more was known of them, until in 1667, Gov. Berkley of Virginia, with a view to encouraging trade with the Indian tribes, equipped an expedition, consisting of fourteen whites and fourteen Indians, to make

a trip of discovery beyond the mountains. Traveling southwest from Appomattox, whence they started, they came to and crossed the Blue Ridge, and probably into the Holston and Clinch valleys in southwestern Virginia, where they encountered the Cherokees. In 1690 something of them was made known by a Mr. Daugherty, a Virginian and an Indian trader, who had taken up his residence among them.

The first formed relations between the Cherokees and the colonists was in 1693, when twenty Indian chiefs visited Charleston, S. C., the Ashley settlement, to proffer friendship and solicit aid in their troubles with some of their unfriendly neighbors. In 1702, M. Pericault mentions them as living on the upper waters of the Kasquinempas (Tennessee).

In 1708 the same author mentions that the Cherokees had formed a league with other tribes to wage war against the French and Mobilians, and burn their houses. About 1712, early maps show them on the Holston and Clinch, the Broad, the Catawba and the Savannah rivers. In 1713, Peter Julien was arraigned in South Carolina for holding two Cherokee women in slavery. In 1715, the Cherokees, Creeks and Yamassees formed an alliance and declared open hostilities against the South Carolina colonists. In 1716, the Cherokees killed M. M. de Ramsay and de Longucil northeast of Mobile. The French in Canada engaged the Iroquois to punish them for the act, which they did, sacking and destroying two villages, and compelling the Indians to retreat. The first formal business dealing with them was in 1721, when, by treaty agreement with South Carolina, they ceded to the colony certain lands within their boundaries.

After this there were several other treaties, prior to 1768, with the more southern colonies, but not affecting this region. In the latter year, however (1768), October 14, Mr. Stewart, British superintendent of Indian affairs, concluded a treaty with the Cherokees, at a place called Hard Labor, S. C., in which it was agreed "that the southwest boundary of Virginia should be a line extending from the point where the northern line of North Carolina intersects the Cherokee hunting grounds, about thirty-six miles east of Long Island, in the Holston river; and thence extending in a direct course north by east to Chiswell's mine on the east bank of the Kenhawa river, and thence down that stream to its junction with the Ohio river." This treaty was made in pursuance of appeals from the Indians to stop further encroachments of settlers upon their lands, and to have their boundaries definitely fixed, especially in the region of the north fork of Holston river and the headwaters of the Kenhawa. Two years later, on the 18th of October, 1770, at Lochabar, S. C., a new treaty was concluded. A new boundary

line was established by this treaty, "commencing on the south bank of Holston river, six miles east of Long Island, and running thence to the mouth of the Great Kenhawa." By these two treaties and cessions the Cherokees surrendered all right, title, interest and claim in and to this valley forever, and so far as they were concerned, it was now open and clear for the advent of the whites, who were rapidly pressing on this way. There were numerous other treaties before and after these, but not affecting this region. At the date of these cessions, there was not yet a single white settler in the Kanawha valley proper, though there were a few on the upper New river.

About the date of the latter treaty, 1770, Gen. Washington was at the mouth of the Kanawha, looking up valuable lands and locating his military land warrants for services in the northwest.

Although the Cherokees owned this valley and region up to the date of these relinquishments, and had so owned or claimed it, probably for many generations and centuries, they did not at this time occupy it, and probably had not—except in the southern, or upper New river region—for some generations previously; but there are reasons to believe that at an earlier time they had occupied not only the western portion of Virginia, but Ohio as well, in very large numbers and for a very long period of time. Whether they were driven out by superior force, or voluntarily migrated to their afterward more southern homes, it is probably now impossible to determine. Since the Cherokees evacuated the territory, it has been occupied by one or more temporary waves of population. A large portion of what is now West Virginia and Kentucky, was for some time claimed by that powerful confederacy, the "Six Nations," by right of former conquest, and also by the Shawnees and the Delawares.

This region was not held by settled occupants at the coming of the whites, but was held as a debatable territory, and used for hunting and fighting purposes by and between the northern and southern tribes. It was the northern tribes (the Shawnees, Delawares, Mengses, Wyandottes, etc.), then occupying Ohio, that caused so much suffering to the whites, by raiding the frontier Virginia settlements, and opposing by all the cruel methods known to the race, the steadily persistent progress of the hardy and daring early pioneers into this region, and they who met the whites in the desperate, bloody, ever memorable, and to them fatal conflict at Point Pleasant.

Just when the Cherokees left the Ohio valley may never be known, but it is probable that a portion of them, at least, were very far south before the middle sixteenth century, as reported by De Soto; and there are evidences of their occupation in

southern Virginia, the Carolinas and Tennessee about the middle of the seventeenth century.

MOUND BUILDERS.

Probably no ethnological question has excited more interest within the past century than the elusive and tantalizing one of the origin and history of the races and tribes of men who inhabited this country at and before the coming of the white race. They knew but little about their ancestors, they had no written records, and their traditions were vague and conflicting. It was long hoped that some buried records in hieroglyph, picture or other sign writing might be found, that would throw light upon their past history; but so far diligent search has failed to unearth anything of the kind. For a time it was hoped that a (so-called) lettered stone found in the great Gram creek mound would give some clew that would help unravel the mystery; some of the characters were supposed to resemble Sanscrit letters. Copies of it were sent to philologists and learned societies in this country and in Europe; but nothing could be made of it, and all hopes based upon it were dashed.

Several theories have been suggested as to the probable origin of the "mounds" and other earth and stone works found by the first white comers, and now known to be so numerous and widely distributed. When at first so little was known about them, no less a person than Dr. Franklin suggested that the erratic De Soto probably built them during his wanderings through the country; and the theory was advocated by Noah L. Webster and many others, but as more data were accumulated and more known about the number, extent and character of the works (there are more than ten thousand mounds and fifteen hundred enclosures in Ohio alone, and they are still more numerous in the gulf states), this theory was found to be untenable, and was abandoned.

It was then suggested that the Aztics or Toltics or Pueblos had occupied the Mississippi valley in their earlier stages of evolution, and then passed on to develop a higher state of civilization farther south. Or, reversing the order, that these Aztics or Toltics, when they had developed in their southern homes to the mound building stage, had, or a portion of them had, come up and occupied the Mississippi valley for several or many generations or centuries, when they retired or were conquered and driven out, or nearly exterminated and the remnants absorbed into the local tribes following them; forgetting, after a time, the history of the works their ancestors had built.

Another theory was that these works were built by locally developed tribes, or confederations of tribes, who having at-

tained to this degree of advancement, again degenerated, or were exterminated by war, pestilence or famine, or migrated to parts unknown, their successors being ignorant of their past history.

These and other theories have had their day and their advocates; but none of them, upon full examination, have proved entirely satisfactory.

In the meantime, interest in the subject has increased, and a great deal of work has been done by individuals, by local and state societies, by the Peabody Museum, the Smithsonian Institution and others, in opening and examining mounds and other works, collecting and comparing relics, and studying the subject generally. This careful study has developed and established one important fact, *i. e.*, that *some* of the tribes, in some of the districts, built mounds up to and even after the Columbian period. Among the relics found in some of them, were metals and other articles unquestionably of European origin, that could only have come into the hands of the natives through contact with the whites after the Columbian discovery. These facts naturally suggest, and go far to substantiate the theory that, after all, the mysterious mound builders were the ancestors of the tribes who occupied the country at the time of the coming of the whites; or were at least a people on the same general plane of intelligence and advancement as many of the tribes found here.

It cannot be said that this conclusion is yet definitely established, but the concurrence of opinion of the most careful students and ablest men who are devoting their time and labor to the investigation of the subject certainly tend strongly in this direction. Prof. Cyrus Thomas, of the Smithsonian Ethnological Bureau, Maj. J. W. Powell, of the Government Geological Bureau, Washington, Prof. Carr, of the Peabody Museum, Mr. Foster, author of "Pre-Historic Races," and others, strongly incline to this theory.

The comparison of the data obtained by an examination of these works in different parts of the country shows that there are such local peculiarities and varieties of arrangement, form and structure of the works, mode of burial in the sepulchral mounds, the character of relics deposited with the dead, &c., as to suggest that the mounds of different regions were the work of different peoples.

Prof. Thomas, in a report to the Smithsonian Institution, divides the territory east of the Rocky mountains, into eight districts, as follows :

1st. The Wisconsin district, or area of effigy mounds.

2nd. The Illinois, or upper Mississippi district.

3rd. The Ohio district, including the state of Ohio, the western part of the state of West Virginia, and the eastern portion

of Indiana. Of this district he says: "Although the works of this region present some features which are common to those of the Gulf section, there are several peculiar characteristics which warrant us in designating it as a distinct district. Among other of these peculiar features we notice the great circles and squares of the enclosures, the long parallel lines of earthern walls, the so-called 'altar mounds,' or mounds containing structures chiefly of clay, to which the name of 'altar' has been applied; the numerous carved stone pipes; the character of the pottery, and the method of burial."

4th. The New York district.

5th. The Appalachian district, including western North Carolina, eastern Tennessee, south-west Virginia and part of southern Kentucky.

"The characteristics which appear to warrant us in concluding that the works of this region pertain to a different people from those in the other districts, at the same time seem to show some relation to those of the Ohio district. Such are the numerous stone pipes, the altar-like structures found in some of the mounds, and the presence of mica plates with the skeletons. But the peculiar features are the mode of burial, the absence of pottery, and the numerous polished celts and engraved shells found in the mounds."

6th. The middle Mississippi area, or Tennessee district.

7th. The lower Mississippi district, including the southern half of Arkansas, Louisiana and Mississippi.

8th. The Gulf district, including the Gulf states east of the Mississippi.

It is not intended, of course, to bound these districts by any definite lines; they can only be stated in very general terms. However interesting the study of these several districts, the vast amount of data collected, compared and recorded, and the conclusions reached, or, still under discussion by archæologists in regard to the origin and character of the mysterious ancient works, which attest the existence of an ancient and mysterious people or peoples who built them, our interest attaches more particularly to the third, or Ohio district, which embraces the Great Kanawha valley. The great uniformity of the works throughout this district having established the conviction in the minds of archæologists, of the identity of their origin, while their peculiar characteristics are so well marked, distinct and different from the works of other districts, as to force the conclusion that their builders were a different people from those who built the works of any of the other districts.

From the time of the earliest white settlements here, the Kanawha valley has been a rich field for the collection of scattered surface relics. Splendid specimens, in great variety and vast

numbers, have been carried away to enrich private and public collections, in this country and in Europe.

Our own early citizens, unfortunately, attached little or no importance or value to them; they picked them up in the roads or the fields and laid them on the mantel or shelf, or they served as playthings for the children until given to the first stranger who came along with enough appreciation of their value or interest to ask for them and carry them away. It has only been within late years, when nearly all the loose specimens were gone, that a few citizens of the valley have tried to stop the outside drain, and to collect the few that are left into private cabinets.

Out of the great number of mounds and other ancient earth and stone works abounding in the valley, very many have been destroyed by digging them to pieces from ignorant curiosity, or, sometimes a silly search for treasure. This iconoclasm has, of course, taught no one anything, and benefited no one, but has destroyed the mounds for future intelligent examination by expert archæologists. Until a few years ago, no intelligent and systematic examination and study of these works had ever been undertaken, to try to learn something of the history and character of the mysterious people who built them, and held them, probably, for hundreds, and possibly for thousands, of years, and then vanished before the advent of the white man, leaving their unwritten records buried in these mounds, and in mystery. In 1883-4, the Smithsonian Institution sent Col. P. W. Norris, who had had large experience in mound explorations in other districts, to this valley, to examine and report upon the works here. Prof. Cyrus Thomas, in charge of the corps of mound explorers, in speaking of Col. Norris' report, says:

"Through his explorations it was made manifest that one of the most extensive and remarkable groups of ancient works in the United States is contained in the section mentioned. There is probably no group exhibiting greater variety of works. They comprise mounds of various forms, from a few inches to forty feet in height, circular and irregular enclosures, parallel lines of walls, elevated ways, basins and ditches, stone cairns and rude stone structures of an anomalous character. Although the exploration of this interesting group is far from complete, it is sufficient to indicate, with great probability, that the people who constructed the mounds within it built the Grave Creek mound, or were intimately related to the authors of that celebrated tumulus. Some indications also appear that the builders of these mounds were related to the authors of the ancient works of the Scioto valley."

From the indications still existing, a large population of mound builders must have dwelt in this valley at some time in the remote past. One of their chief centers of population was

on the Kanawha river, on both sides, from three to seven miles below Charleston. They occupied not only the alluvial bottoms, but the hills and ridges on both sides. Here they constructed a large number of works of nearly all the varieties above enumerated.

Here Col. Norris began his labors. The writer accompanied him in some of his excavations and interesting explorations, the first being on the farm of the late Col. B. H. Smith, on the north side of the river, about six and one-half miles below Charleston; the first opened being a large mound on the second bottom and about half way between the river and the hill. It is conical in form, 175 feet in diameter at the bottom and thirty-five feet high. The excavation proved it to be a double or two-story structure, as it were. The first or bottom story was twenty feet high, and afterward fifteen feet more was added, making a total of thirty-five feet. A square shaft was sunk down through the center of the mound, to and a little below the original surface of the ground. This shaft was begun twelve feet square at the top, and gradually reduced to six feet square at the bottom. But little below the surface sod was found a pile of rough, flattish, irregular-shaped stones, of probably 100 to 200 pounds weight each. It was about half a mile to the nearest point where they could have been gotten.

Upon removing these stones — probably a ton or more — a stone vault was discovered seven feet long by four feet deep. In this was one large skeleton, which seems to have been buried without the head, as no sign of the skull could be found; the bones were much decayed. One spearhead was the only implement found with this skeleton. Just under this vault, and six feet from the top of the mound, was found a second skeleton, ordinary size; it was surrounded by earth and much decayed. At three feet below the last, and nine feet from the top, was a third skeleton, enclosed in the remains of a bark coffin, and surrounded by dry, loose earth. The bones were less decayed than the last. The skull was a "flat head"; it had been artificially compressed. At twelve feet from the top, the earth became mixed with ashes, and so continued for three or four feet. At this depth — say sixteen feet from the top — was found decayed timbers, which, as the excavation progressed, proved to have been a wooden vault about twelve feet square and seven or eight feet high, though much decayed and fallen in from the weight of the superincumbent earth. What remained, indicated that the cover had been roof-shaped. Some of the timbers of this vault were walnut, and twelve inches in diameter. Five skeletons were found within this vault, the principal one was a huge figure, measuring seven feet six inches in length, and nineteen inches between the shoulder sockets. It lay upon the back,

head to the east, legs together, and arms by the sides. It was on the floor of the vault, and nineteen feet from the top of the mound. Beside this, four other skeletons were found within this vault. The irregular positions of the bones indicated that the skeletons (if skeletons) had been placed in standing positions, one in each corner; but the irregular heaps of these bones suggested to some who saw them, the possibility that the subjects may have been buried alive, to accompany and attend their great chief in his journey to the happy hunting grounds and land of spirits. These bones were far decayed, save the forearm of one, which was preserved by two copper bracelets, which were found still in place. Upon the slow oxidation of the copper the salts are absorbed by the bones, giving them a tinge of green, and helping to preserve them from decay.

The large skeleton above mentioned had on each wrist six heavy bracelets of copper; four others were found under the head, which, together with a spearpoint of black flint, were incased in a mass of mortar-like substance, which had evidently been wrapped in some textile fabric. On the breast was a copper gorget; in each hand were three spearheads of black flint, and others were about the head, knees and feet. Near the right hand were two hematite celts, and on the shoulders were three large and thick plates of mica. About the shoulders, waist and thighs were numerous minute perforated shells and shell beads. A handsome stone pipe, carved out of gray steatite, and highly polished, was found in the excavated dirt. In form and finish it is said to be precisely like the pipes of the southern Cherokees, and approaches very closely to a type found in the Miami and Scioto valleys.

The writer visited this group of works about fifty years ago. The whole bottom, mounds, circles and all alike, were then covered by forests; the trees being of great age and large growth; many three feet, and some probably as much as four feet in diameter, indicating that the mounds had not been disturbed, that no new ones had been built, and that neither the race who built them nor their successors had occupied the valley, and actually resided here, for many generations or centuries.

After completing the exploration of the above described mound, Col. Norris transfered his force to the opposite, or southwest side of the river, and commenced the excavation of a large mound on the Creel farm. This is one—and the largest—of a group of mounds and other works on that side of the river; all, evidently, being parts of a general, central city lying on both sides of the river. Col. Norris suggested as a name for this ancient hive of people, "Great Kanawha City."

The Creel mound is conical in form, 173 feet in diameter at the base, and thirty-three feet high. The top has been some-

what cut down and leveled for a site for a judges' stand, for a race course that was laid off around the mound. The excavation in the mound was commenced twelve feet square at the top and sunk to the bottom, narrowing as it went down.

In a very hard bed of mixed earth and ashes, about four feet from the top, were found two much decayed human skeletons, adult size, lying horizontally on their backs, with their heads to the south; and near their heads were several stone implements. From this point downward for about twenty feet, nothing of importance was discovered. The earth was of light gray color, apparently composed of clay and ashes, and was very hard. When a depth of twenty-four feet was reached the earth changed to a much darker and softer material, and there was soon discovered casts and fragments of timbers from six to twelve inches in diameter; also numerous fragments of animal bones, which had been split open, probably for their marrow. At a depth of thirty-one feet from the top, a human skeleton was found lying with the head to the north; it had evidently been enclosed in a coffin or wrapping of bark. A thin sheet of hammered native copper was found in contact with the bones of the skull and had helped to preserve them. At this point the excavation was opened out to a diameter of about sixteen feet to give a better opportunity of finding and examining whatever might lie at the base of the mound. This disclosed the fact that the builders, after having first leveled, smoothed and packed the natural surface, covered it with a layer of bark, inner side up, and spread upon this a layer of fine, clear, white ashes, probably several inches thick, though now pressed down to little more than an inch. On this bed of ashes the bodies were laid, and probably covered with bark.

Examination here brought to light ten other adult skeletons, all extended horizontally, five on each side of the central skeleton, with feet pointing towards, but not quite touching it. Like the first, they had all been enclosed in wrappings of bark. With each skeleton on the east side was an apparently new lance head about three inches long, and by the right side of the northern one a fish dart, three arrow heads and some fragments of unio shells and pottery. No ornaments or implements of any kind were found with the five skeletons on the west side. In additon to the copper plate above mentioned a few shell beads and a large lance head were found with the central skeleton. The accounts of the exploration of the two mounds above described are made up, substantially, from the notes of Col. Norris and the report of Prof. Cyrus Thomas to the Smithsonian Institution, supplemented by the recollections of the writer himself.

In closing his report of the last, or Creel mound, Prof. Thomas says: "As there were a number of holes resembling

post holes, about the base, which were filled with rotten bark and decayed vegetable matter, I am inclined to believe there was a vault here, similar to the lower vault in the Grave creek mound, in which the walls were of timber set up endways in the ground. But it is proper to state that the assistant who opened the mound (Col. Norris), is rather disposed to doubt the correctness of this explanation."

The writer remembers discussing these interesting and unique holes or tanks with Col. Norris, at the time. His (Col. Norris') opinion was, or, at least, it was his suggestion, that they were purposely constructed for water tanks to hold a supply of water to serve the departed on their long journey thither. Some of them were filled with water when discovered, and others partially filled. How did this water get into these tanks? It does not seem probable that it percolated down through the mound for more than thirty feet, nor that it was drawn up by capillary attraction from the earth below. In either case the surrounding earth would have been wet or damp, while, on the contrary, it was quite dry. If they had been the holes of vault posts, they would probably have been symmetrically arranged, perhaps in the form of a hollow square, but they were scattered and irregularly located. If they had been post holes the bottoms would have been irregular and rough, corresponding to the haggled and ragged end of posts cut off, or worn off, by a stone axe, or burnt off by fire; but the bottoms were flat and level, making a right angle with the perpendicular sides. If for posts the sides of these holes would have been irregular and rough corresponding to the shape of the posts, with impressions of knots, bark, etc. These holes were nearly true cylinders, the sides and bottom comparatively smooth, and appeared to have been designedly and carefully smoothed. If post holes, their interiors would have been like the surrounding earth; these seemed to be lined with a composition cement, apparently of clay and ashes. If ordinary post holes they would have been pervious to water; any water put in them, or by any means getting in them would have found its way through sides and bottom and been absorbed by the surrounding earth, these seemed to be water tight.

Post holes would probably have been of nearly uniform size; these varied greatly in both diameter and depth. In view of all the facts it is more probable that they were post holes or water tanks; or is there any other solution more plausible than either of these? Col. Norris who had had large experience in the exploration of mounds, in several of the districts, had never seen anything of the sort before.

As illustrating the general character of the smaller mounds of this region, many of which were examined by Col. Norris,

descriptions of a few are here quoted from the interesting report of Prof. Thomas.

One twenty feet in diameter and seven feet high, with a "beech tree thirty inches in diameter growing on it, was opened by running a broad trench through it. The material of which it was composed was yellow clay, evidently from an excavation in the hillside near it. Stretched horizontally on the natural surface of the ground, faces up and heads south, were seven skeletons, six adults and one child, all charred. They were covered several inches thick with ashes, charcoal and firebrands, evidently the remains of a very heavy fire which must have been smothered before it was fully burned out. Three coarse lance heads were found among the bones of the adults, and around the neck of the child three copper beads, apparently of hammered native copper.

"Another mound fifty feet in diameter and five feet high, standing guard as it were, at the entrance of an enclosure, was opened, revealing the following particulars; the top was strewn with fragments of flat rocks, most of which were marked with one or more small artifiicial cup-shaped depressions. Below these to the depth of two or three feet, the hard yellow clay was mixed throughout with similar stones, charcoal, ashes, stone chips, and fragments of rude pottery. Near the center and three feet from the top of the mound were the much decayed remains of a human skeleton, lying on its back, in a very rude stone slab coffin. "Beneath this were other flat stones, and under them charcoal, ashes and baked earth, covering the decayed bones of some three or four skeletons which lay upon the original surface of the ground. So far as could be ascertained, the skeletons in this mound lay with their heads toward the east. No relics of any kind worthy of notice were found with them.

"Another mound of similar size, upon a dry terrace, was found to consist chiefly of very hard clay, scattered through which were stone chips and fragments of rude pottery. Near the natural surface of the ground a layer of ashes and charcoal was encountered, in which were found the remains of at least two skeletons.

"A mound some 200 yards south of the enclosure, situated on a slope and measuring fifty feet in diameter and six feet in height, gave a somewhat different result. It consisted wholly of very hard clay down to the natural surface of the hill slope. But further excavation revealed a vault or pit in the original earth, eight feet long, three feet wide and three feet deep at the upper end. In this was found a decayed skeleton, with the head up hill or toward the north. Upon the breast was a sandstone gorget, and upon it a leaf-shaped knife of black flint and a neatly polished hematite celt. The bones of the right arm were found stretched

out at right angles to the body, along a line of ashes. Upon the bones of the open hand were three piles (five in each) of small leaf-shaped flint knives."

The above described four small mounds pertain to the Cliff-ton group, a few will now be given from the extensive group below Charleston, for comparison.

Below No. 7, sunk into the original earth, was a vault about eight feet long, three feet wide and three feet deep. Lying extended on the back in the bottom of this, amid the rotton fragments of a bark coffin, was a decayed skeleton, fully seven feet long, with head west. No evidence of fire was to be seen, nor were any stone implements discovered, but lying in a circle just above the hips were fifty circular pieces of white perforated shell, each about one inch in diameter and an eighth of an inch thick. The bones of the left arm lay by the side of the body, but those of the right arm, as in one of the mounds heretofore mentioned, were stretched at right angles to the body, reaching out to a small oven-shaped vault, the mortar or cement roof of which was still unbroken. The capacity of this small circular vault was probably two bushels, and the peculiar appearance of the dark colored deposit therein, and other indications, led to the belief that it had been filled with corn in the ear.

The absence of weapons would indicate that the individual buried here was not a warrior, though a person of some importance.

"Mound 23 of the same group presents some peculiarities worthy of notice. It is 312 feet in circumference at the base and twenty-five feet high, covered with a second growth of timber, some of the stumps of the former growth still remaining. It is unusually sharp and symmetrical. From the top down the material was found to be a light gray and apparently mixed earth, so hard as to require the vigorous use of the pick to penetrate it. At the depth of fifteen feet the explorers began to find the casts and fragments of poles or round timbers less than a foot in diameter. These casts and rotten remains of wood and bark increased in abundance from this point until the original surface of the ground was reached. By enlarging the lower end of the shaft to fourteen feet in diameter it was ascertained that this rotten wood and bark were the remains of what had once been a circular or polygonal, timber-sided, and conical-roofed vault. Many of the timbers of the sides and roof, being considerably longer than necessary, had been allowed to extend the points of support often eight or ten feet, those on the sides and beyond the croping and those on the roof downward beyond the wall. Upon the floor and amid the remains of the timbers were numerous human bones, and also two whole skeletons, the latter but slightly

decayed, though badly crushed by the weight pressing on them, but unaccompanied by an ornament or implement of any kind. A further excavation of about four feet below the floor, or what was supposed to be the floor of this vault, and below the original surface of the ground, brought to light six circular, oven-shaped vaults, each about three feet in diameter and the same in depth. As these six were so placed as to form a semi-circle, it is presumed there are others under that portion of the mound not reached by the excavation. All were filled with dry, dark dust, or decayed substances, supposed to be the remains of Indian corn in the ear, as it was similar to that heretofore mentioned. In the center of the circle indicated by the positions of these minor vaults, and the supposed center of the base of the mound (the shaft not being exactly central), and but two feet below the floor of the main vault, and in a fine mortar or cement, were found two cavities, resembling in form the bottle- or gourd-shaped vessel so frequently met with in the mounds of southeastern Missouri and northeastern Arkansas. Unfortunately the further investigation of this work was stopped at this stage of progress by cold weather."

"Mound 31, of this group, seems to furnish a connecting link between the West Virginia and the Ohio mounds. It is sharp in outline, has a steep slope, and is flattened on the top, is 318 feet in circumference at the base and twenty-five feet high. It was opened by digging a shaft ten feet in diameter from the center of the top to the base. After passing through the top layer of the surface soil, some two feet thick, a layer of clay and ashes one foot thick was encountered. Here, near the center of the shaft, were two skeletons, lying horizontally, one immediately over the other; the upper and larger one with the face down and the lower with the face up. There were no indications of fire about then.

"Immediately over the heads were one celt and three lance-heads. At the depth of thirteen feet, and a little north of the center of the mound were two very large skeletons, in a sitting position, with their extended legs interlocked to the knees. Their arms were extended and their hands slightly elevated, as if together holding up a sand-stone mortar which was between their faces. This stone is somewhat hemispherical, about two feet in diameter across the top, which is hollowed in the shape of a shallow basin or mortar. It had been subjected to the action of fire until burned to a bright red. The cavity was filled with white ashes, containing small fragments of bone burned to cinders. Immediately over this, and of sufficient size to cover it, was a slab of bluish-gray limestone about three inches thick, which had small cup-shaped excavations on the under side. This

bore no marks of fire. Near the hands of the eastern skeleton were a small hematite celt and a lance-head, and upon the left wrist of the other two copper bracelets.

"At the depth of twenty-five feet, and on the natural surface, was found what in an Ohio mound would have been designated an 'altar.' This was not thoroughly traced throughout, but was about twelve feet long and over eight feet wide.

"It consisted of a layer of well prepared mortar, apparently clay, slightly mixed with ashes. This was not more than six or eight inches thick in the center of the basin-shaped depression, where it was about one foot lower than at the other margin. It was burned to a brick red and covered with a compact layer of very fine white ashes scattered thickly, through which were small water worn boulders, bearing evidences of having undergone an intense heat. The material of the shaft, after the first three feet at the top, consisted almost wholly of finely packed ashes, which appeared to have been deposited at intervals of considerable length and not at one time."

This last mound much resembles the Ohio otter mounds, but differs in this: that if an otter mound at all, it was also used as a burial mound. Near this a number of stone slab graves, box shaped, were found, also a cache resembling those found in Ohio. There are in this group of works graded roads or streets, with cross roads, the angles were marked by triangular flat stones of two sizes, corresponding to the size of the road. These stones were marked by small cup-shaped excavations on one side. In this group, forming the ancient "Great Kanawha City" of Col. Norris, there are about 100 monuments all told, consisting of mounds, large and small, of earth and stone; enclosures of earth and stone, caches, stone graves, graded streets, etc.

A number of others were examined by Col. Norris, but those above described are typical structures and will serve to show the character of the works of this region.

A comparison of these works with those of Ohio, satisfies Prof. Thomas that "The authors of these structures were also the authors of the Ohio works, or that they belonged to tribes so closely related that they may justly be considered as one people."

In discussing the probable identity of the builders of the Ohio mounds, the Kanawha mounds and the mounds of southwest Virginia, east Tennessee and western North Carolina, Prof. Thomas further says: "I have been and am still disposed to connect the mound-builders of the Kanawha valley with those of western North Carolina, but our explorations in the two sections have convinced me of their close relation to the people whose mysterious monuments dot the hills and valleys of Ohio. That they were related in some way to the mound-builders of

North Carolina and east Tennessee is more than probable, but the key to unlock this mystery, if it exists anywhere, is most likely to be found in the history, traditions and works of the Cherokees, and the traditions relating to the Tallegwi."

It is pretty well established and conceded, that the mounds of Wisconsin and, perhaps, elsewhere in the northwest, were built by the tribes inhabiting the country at the coming of the whites or their ancestors; but the case is quite different in the Ohio district, the works of which are more in doubt and mystery than those of any other part of the country. They seem to be, and probably are, much older than the northwestern mounds. The two principal theories of the origin of the mounds, that is, 1st, that they were built by an ancient, extinct and forgotten race, and 2nd, that they were built by post-Columbian tribes and their ancestors, may each be true in different localities. The effigy and some other mounds of the northwest may have been, and probably were, built in comparatively recent times, while those of the Ohio district may date back to a very remote past.

Early Spanish writers gathered from the traditions of the Mexicans and Central Americans, that the ancient Toltecs had occupied this part of the continent, the Mississippi and Ohio valleys, for a very long time and a very long while ago. Their country was called "Hue-Hue-Thalpalan." Communication was kept up between the Mexican and Central American nations and the dwellers in Hue-Hue-Thlapalan, until finally the Thlapalanese, or Toltecs, were overcome and driven out by hordes of more savage tribes, and returned to the southern regions, whence they had originally come. The time of this return to their ancient southern homes, according to the traditions, was about 2,500 years before Columbus, or 1,000 years before Christ.

Baldwin, in his very interesting work, "Ancient America," quotes de Bourbourg, Cabrera, Torqumada and others in regard to these ancient traditions and the evidences. He thinks they are very plausible and entitled to much consideration; he thinks the close similarity of their works is a strong argument in favor of the identity of their origin. He instances five mounds: Grave Creek, W. Va.; Miamisburg, Ohio; Uxmal, Mayapan and Chitzen-Itza in Mexico and Central America, that are as much alike in their way as any five Gothic churches.

The whole subject is very interesting, but I have no space here to elaborate it. It is a singular fact that what is now Ohio, was uninhabited at the first coming of the whites, in the latter half of the seventeenth century. The tribes that came in later, very naturally knew nothing of the origin or history of the mounds.

Prof. Thomas expresses his conviction that there was during

the mound-building age "a powerful tribe, or association of closely allied tribes, occupying the valley of the Ohio, whose chief seats were in the Kanawha, Scioto, and Little Miami valleys." He further says that "a careful study of all the data bearing on the subject, leads me to the conclusion that the Cherokees are the modern representatives of the Talegwi, and that most of the typical works of Ohio and Vest Virginia owe their origin to this people. If the Cherokees were descended from or were mixed with the Talegwi, may not the Talegwi have descended from or been mixed with the Thlapalanese or ancient Toltecs?

Most of the works hereinbefore described, are of earth, but there is another interesting class made wholly of stone. Whether they were built about the same time and by the same people who built the mounds and earth enclosures, or whether by a different race, and earlier or later, is not known; certain it is, that they bear marks of very great age.

There is an interesting work of this sort at the mouth of the Kanawha, just across the river from Point Pleasant. As described by an intelligent gentleman living at the spot: It is a stone wall built in a true circle, about 200 feet in diameter, built on the alluvial river bottom, near the river. The wall was originally about six feet high, with a base about two to two and one-half feet thick. The river has cut away the bank until it has encroached upon the stone enclosure, and about fifty feet of it has tumbled down on the beach. The stones are of a size to be carried by one or two men, and were evidently brought from the cliffs back of the bottom, half a mile or more distant. It is presumable that this circular wall was built on the then surface of the general bottom level; and if so, the river has since then deposited about four and one-half or five feet of alluvium, raising the whole bottom that much, so that only a rim of loose stones on the surface now indicates where was originally the top of the wall.

My informant tells me that since the settlement of the country by the whites, there have been but seven recorded rises in the rivers that have overflowed this bottom, and that the deposit from these seven rises has been so small as not to perceptibly raise the level of the bottom; he thinks the aggregate has not exceeded an inch or two. At this rate it will be seen that at least twenty-five to forty centuries would be required to deposit the four and a half or five feet increased elevation of the bottom since the foundations of this stone wall were laid.

In the upper end of the valley, on a high mountain, steep and difficult of access, is an ancient and very remarkable stone work which is but little known, having been seen by comparatively few persons. Knowing that Capt. W. N. Page, C. E., a

gentleman who takes a lively interest in archæological subjects had made an examination of this work a few years ago, I asked him for a brief statement of what he discovered. He has kindly furnished me with a very full and interesting account of what he saw. I can do no better than to give here his statement entire, as is cannot fail to interest all who may read it.

"*Prehistoric Masonry.*—Near the summit of the mountain dividing the waters of Loup and Armstrong creeks, in Fayette county, West Virginia, there is found the remains of a very remarkable stone wall, which was well known by the first white settlers in the Kanawha valley, and to the Ohio Indians who passed along this route in hunting and other expeditions, toward the valley of Virginia, where, according to their legends, the buffalo migrated periodically from the Ohio valley, and further west.

"The late Dr. Buster, who was among the first white residents of the Kanawha valley, resided at the foot of this mountain, on the south bank of the river, during a long and active life. No white man had ever occupied the ground upon which his father built his cabin, according to record; and the history of the pale face here, is absolutely complete within his family. Paddy Huddleston, probably the first white settler within the limit of Fayette county, lived just up, and across the river, practically in sight; and from his house Daniel Boone had trapped beaver. In my last interview, about 1877, though a very old man his mind and body were still active and vigorous. He remembered talking to the Indian "medicine men" in his boyhood, as they frequently passed up the river, and discussed this wall, and the numerous relics of bones, stone implements, and pottery found over all the surrounding bottom lands. According to his statements the Indians knew of these monuments, but claimed no part in them. One of their legends set forth the fact that the Kanawha valley had been occupied by a fierce race of white warriors, who successfully resisted the approach of the "red man" from the west for a long time; but had finally succumbed, and passed away in death. The Indians claimed never to have occupied the valley, except for hunting expeditions; that they found these relics old when they first entered; and that their origin was beyond his records.

"Though such legends are not always reliable, a careful study of the conditions, habits of the people, and the bones as found at the foot of the mountain, inevitably leads to more than the suspicion of a prehistoric race, differing from the North American Indian in physiognomy, character and habits.

"Loup and Armstrong creeks empty into the Kanawha from the south, and are nearly parallel—three miles apart—for a distance of about ten miles. Like the river, both creeks have

cut deep gorges through the nearly horizontal carboniferous strata, and the smaller tributaries, heading against the "divide," have also cut to the creek level at the points of junction. The result of this denudation is a mountain, rising 1,500 feet above water level, with ribs, holding their altitude well toward either creek, while the main backbone, or water shed, has alternate knolls and low gaps, with a difference of about 300 feet elevation between the high and low points.

"As the hard sandstones of the 'conglomerate series' are under water level here, the softer, overlying strata of the 'lower barren measures' have been weathered so that the slopes are comparatively smooth. The wall in question has been constructed along an approximate contour of this mountain, about 300 feet below the high summits, and just under the low gaps, conforming as nearly as possible to such a contour, it winds around each rib, or spur, until a low place is found through which to pass, when it finally crosses the main ridge, and returning in the same manner, on the other slope, makes a complete enclosure facing the river, of about three miles in length, and varying in width from a hundred yards to a mile or more. The total length of wall has never been measured, but can hardly be less than eight or ten miles. A single cross wall at a narrow point, divides the enclosure into two nearly equal arms, in one of which there is an unfailing water supply of not more than a half cubic inch flow, from a coal measure which has been cut by a low gap at this point. When I first saw this spring in 1877, the existence of this coal measure was unknown, and the old hunters of the neighborhood were under the impression that the water came from a well, sunk upon the water shed of this gap and filled up by leaves and time. It was a circular pool about six feet in diamater, and three or four feet below the surface Dr. Buster stated that it was at least ten feet deep when he first saw it, and held to the opinion of a well; but I am satisfied now that it is only the drainage from the coal seam mentioned, upon a floor of impervious clay. It is located on the dip side of the coal escarpment, which by actual survey covers an area of thirty-seven acres, with a maximum covering of about two hundred feet. The hole had probably been scooped out by bear and other wild animals, as the marks upon the neighboring trees from bear's claws, is evidence that this has been, and is yet to some extent, a favorite wallow, in which they roll like swine, and in their gambols, they claw the bark of trees so as to leave the mark as long as the tree may stand. Near this spring, however, and within the partition farthest from the river, there has recently been found two large circular heaps of stone, indicative of some kind of tower structure; and it is more than probable that their

location had reference to the water supply, which is not found elsewhere within the enclosure. These circles were about twenty feet in diamater, and their present appearance indicates an original height of about twenty feet. The wall has been constructed of loose stone, without any kind of cement, and of such dimensions as could be readily handled, without any attempt at quarying or facing. Along the steepest slopes it has fallen, and can be traced only by the bench of debris, but in places where it crosses the ridges, and had level foundations, some idea of the original dimensions may yet be had. It is safe to estimate a height of six feet, upon a foundation width of from six to eight feet. Nearly all the loose stone within the enclosure seems to have been carried out for use in the structure; but in many instances blocks of the 'black flint ledge' may be observed in the wall, and since the outcrop of this ledge is lower down the slope, it is certain that such stone has been carried up hill. This fact alone is evidence of human labor; but no one can follow the traces far without ample proof of some crude architect, though at an altitude of two thousand feet above tide, the two within the enclosure are large, many exceeding five feet in diameter, with hundreds of years growth. At points may be seen oaks four feet through, evidently sprouted since the foundation of this wall was laid, as the stones have been lifted and misplaced by their growth. Wherever a cliff has been encountered, it has been utilized as far as possible, and as a rule, the wall has been joined to such cliff at the foot, rather than at the top. This would indicate an object to guard against entrance from without rather than from escape from within. As in some instances the cliffs have sufficient slope to enable ordinary animals to descend, but are too steep to climb. The wall has been built with so much batter and so roughly, that it could never have been intended for any kind of fortification, nor to confine, nor to keep out, any but domestic animals. This conclusion is clear, when the question is presented as to who performed the labor and its object.

"The flat lands along the south bank of the river, between the mouths of these creeks, and immediately in front of that portion of the wall facing the Kanawha, varies in width from five hundred to two thousand feet, while the bottoms on the opposite side are very much more extensive, and better suited for agricultural purposes; yet the greater proportion of the bones and relics are found on the south, or wall side. About two hundred acres of this bottom land, near the mouth of Armstrong, is literally filled with the bones and implements of some human race, whose history has been buried with their dead. Four years ago, in the construction of a railway, it became necessary to cut through a part of this ground, near where the old Buster cabin

had stood. This cut was about two hundred feet long, thirty feet wide, and with a maximum depth of ten feet. Within a distance of one hundred feet, there were uncovered about thirty skeletons, all buried in a like position, at an average depth of four feet. There was no evidence of mound, or monument of any kind, except a few loose stones piled upon each set of bones, below the surface, and there was no indication to point to this particular spot, which was near the river's bank. Without exception, the bodies had faced the east, or the rising sun, in a horizontal position from the hips down, and reclining at an angle of about thirty degrees from the waist up. The bones were in a fair state of preservation, but many could be crumbled with the hand. The soil being a sandy loam, had filled every crevice and marrow duct, so that even the skulls were crushed with the weight in handling, and it was with much difficulty that anything was preserved. I measured several skeletons in position, and found them to average about five feet ten inches. With one exception, the cranium was well proportioned, with broad and prominent forehead, and the facial bones more nearly resembled the white, than the red race. This exception was in all probability, a deformity, else it was a very much lower order of animal intellectually, though not physically. The teeth indicated an age of about twenty-five, and imbedded in the front of the lower jaw bone, was a full developed tooth which had never penetrated the bone. The skull was canoe shaped, sharp front and back, long, and very narrow. The occiputal bone was out of all proportion, curved under, and terminating in a sharp point. The parietal bones occupied nearly the entire skull area, as the coronal and lambdoidal sutures were so far forward and back of the usual position, that both the frontal and occiputal bones were curiosities. The frontal bone was also pointed, and there was no break in the canoe curve from the eye to the nape of the neck. The other bones denoted full and complete development; but he must have been a fearful sight in life. Along with these bones were found those of many food animals, such as bear, deer, elk, &c., birds, and fish scales. About three feet below the surface, a regular stratum of phosphate, about eight inches thick, extended over the greater area of the cut. Upon close examination, enough fish scales and bones remained to indicate its origin. In places, bits of charcoal, slag from melted sand, and pieces of charred bone, showed that they had feasted on cooked meats. The implements found were all stone, pottery and bone. The stone instruments consisted of greenstone celts, precisely the same as those of the Continental stone age, scrapers for dressing hides, flint spear and arrow heads in great abundance in various sizes and shapes, and a lot of quoit-shaped stones, which

had been marked, and evidently used in some system of weights, as many are exact multiples of others. The arrow heads were nearly all of the war variety, made to be left in the wound, and not notched for a thong fastening, as was customary among the Indians with their points for game. Some of these points were the sharpest and slenderest specimens of flint workmanship I have ever seen; they were more than two inches long, and less than half an inch at the shaft end, or widest part, tapered to such a fine point, that they could be used as comfortably as a pin to pick splinters out of the hand. One in particular, had three sharp equal points, which with the shaft end (for which it was notched), made a cross, or four pointed star. The spear heads were unusually sharp, and made for business, as was the case with the edges of the celts. The pottery, like all that found in the valley, was made from the river mussel-shells, coarsely pounded, and mixed with loam. A great variety was found, some of the pieces large and nearly perfect, showing the effects of use, and heat over a fire. The bone implements consisted mainly of long needles, awls, etc., for the manufacture of skins. The eye of the needle was notched to receive the thong, on the same principle as ours of to-day. Those which had been polished were as sharp and sound as when made from the small rib of the deer; but the unpolished portions of the awls had crumbled off. In the line of bone, there was also found 'wampum,' made from very small segments of the spine of some fish or reptile; and the value of each piece seemed to depend upon the amount of labor which had been bestowed upon it. There were no holes through these beads, nor arrangement for stringing them together, consequently they could not have been intended for any kind of ornament. They varied in size from a No. 8 to a No. 2 shot, but each had been carefully polished. Imbedded in the sand, in the mouth of one of the skulls, were found two pieces of thinly beaten copper, nearly three inches long, and rolled as if around an arrow shaft; they had probably been one, broken in two. This was the only metal found; and only one steatite pipe, with the stem very accurately bored and split into halves. The nearest steatite in position lies east of the Blue ridge, in Virginia, and neither this nor greenstone is found in the river silt. It is to be regretted that so little attention was directed to this find by proper official authority, as there was much to illustrate the life, habits and customs of this people. The Smithsonian Institute promised an investigation, but no further notice was taken of the subject. I am satisfied, however, that this particular cut exposed a very small part of what may be found, and that it is not yet to late for a thorough investigation.

"Upon the above brief statement of the facts, speculations must be based until further light can be obtained.

"The first question is, who built this wall, when and for what purpose? It may be safely assumed that it ante-dates any historic record or legends in our possession. The Indians found here knew of its existence, but nothing of its origin or purpose; and as far as we know, they were not a race to undertake such manual labor. The theory among the old hunters, that it was a game pen, is refuted early in an examination, since nothing but a domestic animal could be fenced by such a structure. That it could have been intended for any kind of agricultural purpose, seems equally as improbable for the same reasons, and for the further reason that the location is practically inaccessible, while the valleys below were broad and fertile. In portions of the enclosure there is a deep, rich soil; but a large part of it is a barren, rocky crest, which would certainly have been left out where the same labor might have been better employed. There remains the question of fortification, which seems equally as improbable, except so far as it might have afforded immediate protection in actual fight; but with the weapons probably in use, a tree would have answered the purpose better. Though the towers may have a warlike sound, as a matter of fact, they were in a position where they would have been of the least service in defending the wall against any outside attack, though they might have served to defend the water supply.

"It seems to me that we must look for some other object and conditions, entirely foreign to any Indian custom; and that not only the bones at the foot of this mountain, but the archæological history of the entire Kanawha valley, furnishes a clue. That the Kanawha valley has been densely populated by some prehistoric race, differing from the Indians in intelligence, manners and customs, there can be little doubt. The soil everywhere bears indisputable evidence of their numbers and handiwork, beside which the hundred years of white occupancy and monuments would sink into insignificance with a like test of time. From Kanawha Falls to Charleston, a distance of forty miles, scarcely a post hole can be dug without disclosing some evidence of this people. It has been asserted that the Aztecs, or some Arian race from Mexico, had followed up the Mississippi and Ohio to the Kanawha, and the numerous mounds found in this valley has been cited as one evidence. Such theory is plausible, as the route is a natural highway, followed later by the Spaniards and French without much loss of time. It is also natural to presume that a southern race would have settled in greater numbers along the Kanawha, than in the upper Ohio valleys. But the present question is, whether the bones found

at the mouth of Armstrong creek, without sign or monument, belong to such a race, or to the North American Indian. The physiological features are clearly against the latter assumption; and that they were sun worshipers, is demonstrated by the sameness in position of all the bodies found. The quantities of fish, and bones of large wild animals, prove that they were an active race of meat eaters, that they cooked their food in vessels of clay; and that they were bold, is certain from the large proportion of bears' tusks, some of which were enormous, and must have been ugly customers to tackle with stone weapons. If we connect these bones with the stone wall in question, it seems to me that it can be more readily accounted for in connection with some Essenic religious rite. The elevation of the mountain is such that the sun can be seen much longer than from the valley, and the position of the towers were favorable to such observation; and being near the the center, they were doutless the *sanctum sanctorum* of the enclosures, and abode of some high priest. It is more than probable that some kind of serfdom or slavery existed, whose surplus labor was directed to such monuments, probably not so much for record, as for occupation or punishment; as the wampum shows they placed some value on labor.

"A comparison of ages between the wall and bones, would certainly not place the latter ahead of the former, though the reverse might be the result; but it must be borne in mind, that under certain conditions the decomposition of bone is no index to age or time, as it is pretty well authenticated that a period of two thousand years has failed to obliterate a human skeleton, probably as much subject to oxidation as these have been. I am perfectly certain that the Armstrong bones are very ancient, but am not competent to approximate any definite time. I have heard of a similar wall on one of the Paint Creek mountains, ten miles down the river, but have never seen it. As none of our race ever occupied these mountain tops, and they have rarely been visited except by huntsmen, other evidence might easily have been overlooked; and since we have no records more ancient in connection with the human race, it is to be hoped that the subject will receive more attention in the future, than in the past."

Ten miles below this work is another and similar one, on a smaller scale. It is on a high mountain, facing the river, just above the mouth of Paint creek. The characteristics of the two works are so nearly alike that the foregoing description of the one at Loup creek, renders unnecessary any description of the one at Paint creek.

At the base of the Paint creek mountain, too, is an extensive

burying ground, similar to the one described at Loup creek. It is just where the village of Cliffton now stands, and such are the numbers of remains, that excavations for any purpose, are almost sure to unearth human skeletons, with stone, bone, earthenware and copper implements and relics.

Within the village of Brownstown, ten miles above Charleston and just below the mouth of Lens creek, is another such ancient burying ground. None of these have been systematically examined, but casual excavations are constantly disclosing the remains of these ancient people and their implements. At Brownstown, not long since, two skeletons were found together, one a huge frame about seven feet in length and the other about four feet, a dwarf and deformed. None of these graves at Loup, Paint or Lens creeks are marked by mounds, stone slabs, stone piles or any other surface indications. The probability naturally suggests itself that those who buried there, and who built these stone enclosures were a different race from the mound-builders.

On a bench, or natural terrace of the mountain fronting the river below Rush creek, is a nearly straight wall connecting with nothing at either end. Possibly it was but part of some plan, left in an unfinished condition. No satisfactory explanation of, or even plausible suggestion as to the purposes and uses of these stone walls has ever been made.

Some young men while hunting on the mountain near Cannelton discovered what seemed to be the walled up entrance to a cave in the face of a cliff. Impelled by curiosity, they pried out the stones and effected an entrance to the cavity, where they found remains of human and of animal bones, flint implements, a piece of coarse woven fabric and some dried berries. The berries were in flat layers between a course of small twigs or stems below, and another course above. This is the only instance, so far as I know, of cave burial in the valley.

Some years ago I examined a stone mound about four feet high, on cemetery ridge back of this city (Charleston) and was surprised to find that very many—possibly, originally, all—of the stones were marked; for what purpose it is impossible to tell, but possibly these marks were the individual signatures, sign-mounds or totem marks of those who contributed, each a stone, to the monument of his departed friend. I have never seen or heard of similar markings in any other mound. These stones have since been carted away and used for fence building.

There have been no very recent examinations and explorations of these ancient works here. The untimely death of Col. Norris brought to an end his useful labors; and the Smithsonian Institution has sent no successor to carry forward the work he

so auspiciously begun. During his stay here his activity and efficiency were evidenced by the fact of his shipping to the Smithsonian Institution over 4,000 specimens of ancient and interesting relics.

Of the hundreds of ancient earth and stone works in the valley there are many yet to be explored, and offer a rich field for the study of the ethnologist and archæologist.

CHAPTER II.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

FIRST WHITE SETTLEMENT IN THE NEW RIVER-KANAWHA VALLEY, AND THE FIRST THAT CROSSED THE ALLEGHENIES WESTWARD.

A PARTY of adventurous gentlemen, composed of Doctor Thomas Walker, Colonel James Patton, Colonel John Buchanan, Colonel James Wood and Major Charles Campbell, accompanied by some hunters, of whom John Findley, who afterward, in 1767, penetrated into Kentucky, and, in 1769, accompanied Daniel Boone from North Carolina to Kentucky, was one, made an excursion through southwest Virginia in 1748, and were the first white persons from this direction to penetrate the then unknown region of Kentucky. Dr. Walker, the leader of the expedition, discovered the pass in the mountains, and gave the name of "Cumberland" to the mountain range and gap hitherto called by the Indians "Wasioto"; "Cumberland river" to the stream hitherto called "Shawanee," or "Pelisipi"; and "Louisa" to the river called by them "Che-no-ee," now Kentucky river. Major Jed Hotchkiss, who, has seen the MS. diary of Doctor Walker, thinks he did not get on to the Kentucky river, and that the stream he named Louisa was the one now called the Coal river, West Virginia, which heads up in the big Flat-Top mountain along which he traveled. The earliest maps that lay down Coal river — Jefferson's and others — call it Louisa.

The Cumberland mountains, gap, and river, were named after the Duke of Cumberland, and Louisa river for his wife, the Duchess of Cumberland. Walker's creeks (big and little), of New river, which were explored by Dr. Walker and party on this expedition, and Walker's mountains (big and little), parallel ranges, were named after Dr. Walker.

About this time (1748), probably immediately on the return of Walker, Patton and others — if, indeed, they did not accompany the Walker expedition as far as New river — Thomas Ingles and his three sons, Mrs. Draper and her son and daughter, Adam Harmon, Henry Lenard and James Burke, "came west to grow up with the country," and made the first settlement west of the great Allegheny "divide," the first on the waters of New river,

or Wood's river, as it was then interchangeably called, and the first on any waters flowing to the undefined, unknown, mysterious west, whither they knew not. The name given to this locality and settlement was "Draper's Meadows." The first buildings and improvements, which were built of round logs, as all frontier buildings then were, stood upon the present sites of the "Virginia Agricultural and Mechanical college," and "Solitude," the residence of the late Colonel Robert Preston, near Blacksburg, now Montgomery county, Va. Even at the present day, when all southwest Virginia is settled and highly improved, and is known to excessively abound in grand and beautiful landscape scenery, few, if any, scenes surpass this little "Draper's Meadows" valley, the original, and at that day, probably, a hap-hazard settlement, as they had not sufficiently explored the country to compare localities and make choice. Its eastern limit is near the crest of the Allegheny, here a very low "divide" between the waters of the Roanoke on the east and New or Woods river on the west; its western, the beautiful "Horse-Shoe Bend" of New river; while on the north and south, in the near distance, are parallel mountain ridges. Between is a beautiful undulating plain, with rich limestone, blue-grass soil. There are numerous bold, never-failing limestone springs, and the drainage is to New river, through Toms creek, Straubles creek and Walls creek.

At the date of this Draper's Meadows settlement (1748) the entire population of Virginia — which then extended from the Atlantic to the Mississippi (or, as claimed, to the Pacific), and embraced the present states of Virginia, West Virginia, Kentucky, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan, and Wisconsin — was but 82,000. All but a few hundred of these were east of the Blue ridge; these few hundred were settled in the valley of Virginia, so-called, being the territory lying between the Blue ridge and the Alleghany ranges. The settlers in this valley of Virginia were mostly Scotch-Irish families, who had stopped for a time in Pennsylvania, and found their way from there into the valley of Virginia, by way of Harper's Ferry, taking up the best lands on the waters of the Shenandoah, the James, and the Roanoke rivers.

The Ingles and Draper families, who were also Scotch-Irish, and who had also come by way of Pennsylvania, were the first to press on beyond these, then frontier settlements, scale the Allegheny, the then limit and western barrier of civilization and discovery, and pitch their tents, as above stated, in the great outside, unknown, and mysterious wilderness beyond.

The first map of this region to which I have had access, is a map of 1744, accompanying Rapin de Thoyers' history of England. This map shows pretty fair knowledge of the coast lines, but wild guesses, based upon small information about the country

beyond the mountains. The Tennessee river called Hogoheegee, empties in the Wabash or "Ouback." The head waters of the Hogoheegee are left blank — cut square off. The Cumberland, called Pelisipi, empties into the Hogoheegee. The Ohio or "Hohio," empties into the Ouback or Wabash on the north, and the Ouback unites with the Potomac in a lake common to both, lying south of Lake Erie, and from which they flow their respective ways east and west. The Allegheny mountain is laid down with a fair degree of accuracy as to location and direction. The next map of this part of Virginia was made by Peter Fontaine, surveyor of Halifax county, at the request of the governor of Virginia, in 1752. In this map the Allegheny mountain is put down as "Mississippi or Allegheny ridge." New river is put down as "New Riv., a branch of Mississippi Riv.," and all the region west of the Allegheny is left blank, and called "a mountainous tract of land west of the Blue ridge," "Augusta county," "parts unknown."

CHAPTER III.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

INGLES–DRAPER SETTLEMENT — FIRST INDIAN BLOOD SPILLED — CUPID'S WORK IN THE WILDERNESS — FIRST WHITE WEDDING WEST OF THE ALLEGHENIES — BLOODY ENCOUNTER AND MURDER OF WHITES — CARRIED INTO CAPTIVITY — BABE BORN ON THE ROUTE — STORY OF MRS. INGLES' HARDSHIPS — FIRST SALT MADE BY HER IN THE KANAWHA VALLEY.

FEW facts and dates have been preserved in relation to the Ingles-Draper frontier settlement, owing, in great measure, to the fact above stated, and but few records were written in those days, owing to disinclination and the disadvantages under which they labored, and to the additional fact that, a few years later, their houses were burned, and all books, papers, and documents of every sort were destroyed, every collateral fact that helps to fix dates, or throws other light upon the subject becomes of interest. Such are the following, of which there is record evidence:

In April, 1749, the house of Adam Harmon, one of the party, was raided by the Indians, and his furs and skins stolen. This was the first Indian depredation ever committed on the whites west of the Allegheny. The theft was reported by Henry Lenard to William Harbison, a justice of the peace for Augusta county. The names of Adam Harmon and Henry Lenard will appear again farther on. In 1751 an allowance was made by the state to Colonel Patton for moving a party of Indians from Williamsburg, the then capital, to Reed creek, in Augusta county. Reed creek empties into New river a few miles above Ingles ferry. In 1753 the Indians stole the skins of George Hoopaugh and Jacob Harmon, killed their dogs and shot their "critters." In 1758 the state sent Capt. Robert Wade from "Fort Mayo," with thirty-five rangers, to this settlement to "Range for enemy Indians." They came by Goblintown, by Black water, Pigg river, and Smith's river, branches of the Dan, and crossed over to the head of Little river, through "Wood's Gap," and down Little river to New river. Probably just the route of Col. Abraham Wood and Capt. Henry Batte many years before. Thence they passed down as far as Draper's

Meadows and back up to Reed Island Creek. They fell in with a party of five Indians and one white man, the latter named Dunkleberry. They let the white man escape, but followed and killed the Indians. This was the first organized pursuit of Indians west of the mountains. The result of the expedition was reported by Capt. John Echols, and sworn to before Abraham Maury, a justice of the peace for Augusta county.

Another adventurous hunter and pioneer had quietly made his appearance in this Draper's Meadows camp. It was the chubby and rosy-cheeked little god of the bow and arrow. He had evidently counted on finding fair and proper game here, and he had not mistaken his reckoning. William Ingles and Mary Draper had fallen victims to his skillful archery. They had surrendered at discretion, and, early in 1750, they were bound by the silken cords, he being then twenty-one and she eighteen years of age. This was the first white wedding west of the Alleghenies. Their rose-colored hopes and anticipations of the future, and their youthful dreams of happiness, were not all to be realized. as will soon appear. Mary Draper, having no sister, had spent much of her time in her girlhood days with her only brother, in his outdoor avocations and sports. They played together, walked together, rode together. She could jump a fence or ditch as readily as he; she could stand and jump straight up nearly as high as her head; could stand on the ground, beside her horse, and leap into the saddle unaided; could stand on the floor and jump over a chair-back, etc., etc. It will soon be seen how invaluable to her such physical training was a few years later. In the long after-years she used to delight in telling over to her grandchildren of her feats of agility in her youthfnl days.

In 1754, John Draper, finding it not good to be alone, had prevailed upon Miss Bettie Robertson to join him in the search for happiness in this wild wilderness home. Notwithstanding the isolation of the Draper's Meadows settlement, and its remoteness from civilization and society, the settlers were reasonably happy, prosperous and contented. They were busy clearing out and improving their lands, adding to their herds of stock, building houses, and increasing their comforts. Others, influenced by their favorable reports, were coming in and settling near them, and they were laying, as they hoped and believed, the foundations of a growing and prosperous community.

Several times parties of Indians, from north of the Ohio, had passed and repassed this settlement to make raids upon the Catawbas, their enemies, living farther south; but they had made no attack upon the white settlers, nor given them any annoyance or cause for alarm, except the thieving raids to Harmon's and Hoopaugh's above noted. The friendliest relations had existed between the whites and the redskins up to this time, but this

happy condition of things was not long to last; indeed, the Indians may already have meditated or determined upon mischief, but disguised their designs by a show of friendship until they had made full observations and matured their plans. On the 8th of July, 1755, being Sunday, and the day before Braddock's memorable defeat, near Fort Du Quesne, when all was peace, and there was no suspicion of harm or danger, a party of Shawnees, from beyond the Ohio, fell upon the Draper's Meadow settlement and killed, wounded, or captured every soul there present, as follows: Col. James Patton, Mrs. George Draper, Casper Barrier and a child of John Draper, killed; Mrs. John Draper, James Cull, wounded; Mrs. William Ingles, Mrs. John Draper, Henry Lenard, prisoners. Mrs. John Draper, being out of doors, a short distance from the house, first discovered the enemy approaching, and under circumstances indicating hostile intent. She ran into the house to give the alarm and to get her sleeping infant. Taking the child in her arms she ran out on the opposite side of the house and tried to make her escape. The Indians discovered her, however, and fired on her as she ran, breaking her right arm, and causing the child to fall. She hastily picked it up again with her left hand, and continued her flight. She was soon overtaken, however, and made a prisoner, and the child brained against the end of one of the house logs. The other Indians, meanwhile, were devoting their attention to other members of the families and camp, with the results in killed, wounded and captured, as above stated. Col. James Patton, who had large landed interests hereabout, was here at this time, and with him his nephew, William Preston. Whether Col. Patton was only temporarily here, or was then making this his home, I do not know. He had command of the Virginia militia in this region, and had just brought up a supply of powder and lead for use of the settlements, which, I believe, the Indians secured. Early on the morning of the attack, Col. Patton had sent young Preston over to the house of Mr. Philip Lybrook, on Sinking creek, to get him to come over and help next day with the harvest, which was ready to be cut, and this fortunate absence doubtless saved young Preston's life. Col. Patton was sitting at a table writing when the attack was made, with his broadsword, which he always kept with him, lying on the table before him. He was a man of large frame (he was six feet four inches in height), and herculean strength He cut down two of the Indians with his sword as they rushed upon him, but was, in turn, shot down himself by others out of his reach. He was a widower, sixty-three years of age, and full of health and vigor when he met his untimely death.

Having everything in their power after the massacre and capture, the Indians secured all the guns and ammunition on the premises, all the horses, and such household articles as they could

carry away. After loading up their stolen plunder, and putting the women and children on the horses, ready for moving, they set fire to the buildings and consumed everything left.

About half a mile or a mile to the west, on their route, they stopped at the house of Mr. Philip Barger, an old white haired man, cut his head off, put it in a bag, and took it with them to the house of Philip Lybrook, of Sinking creek, where they left it, telling Mrs. Lybrook to look in the bag and she would find an acquaintance. Lybrook and Preston would, probably, have shared the same fate as Barger, if they had been found at Lybrook's house, but they had started back to Draper's Meadows on foot, by a near pathway across the mountain, and thus missed meeting the Indians and saved their lives. In 1774, nineteen years later, the family of John Lybrook, son of Philip, was attacked by a party of Indians. John Lybrook himself succeeded in eluding them, by secreting himself in a cave in the cliffs — five of his children were murdered. About the same time, Margaret McKenzie and three Snidow boys were captured in the neighborhood, two of them, Jacob and William, soon escaped and returned, but John, a small boy, was taken on to the Indian towns. He was recovered by some of his family after some years of captivity, during which he had almost forgotten his mother tongue, and meanwhile had acquired so strong a taste for the wild, Indian life, that he returned to the Indians and spent his life with them. Margaret McKenzie was recovered after eighteen years of captivity, returned to Giles county, married a Mr. Benjamin Hall, and lived to a very old age, dying about 1850. The general course of retreat of the Indians with prisoners and spoils of the Draper's Meadows massacre, was down New river. It is presumed that the Indians knew and traveled the ridge roads and creek routes for much of the distance, where the river route was impracticable for pack-horses.

Terrible as were these experiences generally, they were especially painful and trying to Mrs. Ingles, who was nearly approaching a period of maternity. Neither this, in her case, however, nor a schattered arm in the case of Mrs. Draper, were allowed to stand in the way of their making the trip. They were permitted to ride the horses, carrying the children, and make themselves as comfortable as the circumstances allowed, but go they must, whatever the pain and suffering to them. It was very fortunate for each that the other was along, and their companionship was not only a comfort and solace to each other in their trying situations, but they rendered most important services to each other as nurses, as occasion required. On the night of the third day out, the course of nature, which waits not upon conveniences nor surroundings, was fulfilled, and Mrs. Ingles, far from human habitation, in the wide forest, unbounded by walls, with only the

bosom of mother earth for a couch, and covered by the green trees and the blue canopy of heaven, with a curtain of black darkness around her, gave birth to an infant daughter. Ordinarly, such an occurrence would have been equivalent to a death warrent to the mother and child, for if they had not both died, under the stress of circumstances, the Indians would have tomahawked them, to avoid the trouble and the necessary delay of their journey; but Mrs. Ingles was an extraordinary woman, and equal to any emergency. Owing to her perfect physical constitution, health and training, she seems to have passed through her trouble with almost as little suffering and loss of time as one of the wild Indian squaws themselves. She was next morning able to travel, and did resume the journey, carrying the little stranger in her arms on horseback. One strong reason—probably the controlling one, with the Indians—why Mrs. Ingles and infant were not tomahawked, was that they counted upon getting a handsome sum for the ransom of herself and her children. It was not tender humanity, but cold business calculation that prevailed, and induced them to put up with the small additional trouble and delay for the hope of future gain.

The particulars of the eventful history of this ill-fated babe are from a short sketch of Mrs. Ingles' captivity, together with facts relating to the early settlements of the Pattons and Prestons, written by Mrs. Governor John Floyd, half a century ago. Mrs. Floyd was a Preston, born and reared at Smithfield, so that she and Mrs. Ingles were near neighbors, and it is probable she received the facts related, from Mrs. Ingles direct. About forty miles down, as Mrs. Ingles afterward estimated, the party crossed from the east to the west side of the river; this must have been at or about the mouth of Indian creek; as this creek was then, and afterwards, known to be in the line of the Indian trail, and there is here a practicable ford accross New river. At this point, in 1764, Captain Paul, from Fort Dinwiddie, attacked a party of returning Indians whom he was pursuing; killed several, stampeded the rest, and recovered some prisoners, among whom was Mrs. Catharine Gunn, a neighbor and friend of his. From the mouth of Indian creek the Draper's Meadows party came down the river, on the west side, to the mouth of Bluestone river, when they left New river, going up Bluestone a short distance, thence crossing over Flat-Top mountain, and probably following very much the route of the present Giles, Raleigh and Fayette turnpike, to about the head of Paint creek, and thence down Paint creek to Kanawha river. At some point a short distance below the mouth of Paint creek, probably at Cabin creek, or Witcher's creek shoals, where, in low water, the river was shallow enough to ford or wade, they again crossed over to the northeast side of Kan-

awha river, and upon reaching the salt spring, just above the mouth of Campbell's creek, then well-known to the Indians, they stopped and rested, and feasted themselves on the abundance of fat game they killed, as it came to the "Licks" for salt. Some of the prisioners were treated very roughly on the route down, and suffered very much; but Mrs. Ingles, owing to her delicate condition, and to her having policy and tact enough to simulate a reasonable amount of cheerfulness and contentment under all her trials, and to make herself useful in many ways, was treated with more leniency and respectful consideration than any of the others. She was permitted to ride and to carry her children. It was made one of her duties, when well enough, as it was also her pleasure, to attend to and aid her wounded sister-in-law, Mrs. Bettie Draper. The Indians instructed her to bathe and poultice the broken arm with the steeped leaves of the wild comphry plant, and to dress the wounds with a salve made from the comphry plant and deer fat. In searching for this plant in the woods, Mrs. Ingles says she sometimes wandered off some distance from the camps, and felt strongly tempted to try to make her escape; but the thought of leaving her helpless children restrained her. She determined to share their fate, hoping that, by some good fortune, deliverance might come to them all, and that they should be saved together.

While the Indians hunted, rested and feasted themselves at the salt spring, they put their prisoners to boiling brine and making a supply of salt to take with them to their homes beyond the Ohio. Mrs. Ingles took part in this salt making, boiling salt water in some of her own pots and kettles, that had been brought along on the pack-horses, and she, together with the other prisoners, were undoubtedly the first white persons who ever made salt, not only in this valley, but anywhere else west of the Alleghenies. After several days of resting, feasting, and salt-making, the party again loaded up their pack-horses and resumed their onward march down the Kanawha and down the Ohio to the capital town of the Shawanees, at the mouth of the Sonhioto, or Scioto river, which they reached just one month after leaving the scene of the massacre and capture at Draper's Meadows. Soon after their arrival at the Indian town there was a general gathering of old and young to welcome back the raiding party, to congratulate them on their success, to learn the extent of their good fortune, and to celebrate the event by a general jollification. The prisoners, according to custom, were required to "run the gauntlet," except Mrs. Ingles, whom, on account of her condition, they excused. Mrs. Draper, notwithstanding her lame arm, not yet recovered, was subjected to this painful ordeal, with much suffering. It was a great comfort to

Mrs. Ingles, amidst all the distressing circumstances with which she was surrounded, that her children were left in her own charge, and that she could, in some degree, care for them and promote their comfort. This, however, proved of but short duration. It was but a few days until there was a meeting of the Indians who had made the last raids, to divide out the spoils. The prisoners were all separated, as was the custom, and allotted to different owners, and not again allowed to see or communicate with each other. It was an agonizing experience to Mrs. Ingles to have her young and helpless children, excepting, of course, the infant, torn from her and from each other, but the Indians and the fates had so decreed, and she had to submit with what grace she could. Shortly after this division of prisoners, some French traders came into the Indian town for the purpose of trading and bartering with the Indians. They had, among other things, a stock of check shirting, and as check shirts were in great demand among the Indians, and Mrs. Ingles a good sewer, she was put to making check shirts. Her proficiency in this line so increased her value and importance to them that she was treated with unusual leniency and consideration. When a shirt would be finished and delivered to its owner, the buck would stick it on the end of a pole, and run through the town exhibiting it, and singing the praises of the "heap good white squaw." The French traders seeing their interest in encouraging the shirt trade, were very kind to Mrs. Ingles, who was so important a factor in the business, and induced the Indians to pay her liberally for the sewing. This, fortunately, enabled her to supplement her own scanty wardrobe, a matter very essential to her personal comfort. After this trading and shirt making had continued for two or three weeks, a party of Indians with these Frenchmen was made up to go to the "Big Bone lick" to make salt. Mrs. Ingles and some other prisoners, among them a Dutch woman, but none of her party or acquaintances, were taken along.

This Big Bone lick is about 150 miles below Scioto, and about three and a half miles by the creek, from the Ohio river, on Big Bone creek, in (now) Boone county, Ky. Some of the largest mastodon bones ever discovered, and the largest number ever found together, strewed the ground here, or were partially buried beneath the surface. The lick seems to have been a swampy morass, some eight or ten acres in area, with the sulphosaline waters oozing up through it, and when the huge animals waded in to get the coveted mineral water, many mired, and being unable to extricate themselves, so perished, with their legs imbeded in the mud, and their bodies resting on the surface. Col. Thomas Bullitt and other early explorers and surveying parties here, in after years used the immense ribs and tusks for

tent poles, and the skulls and vertebra for stools and benches. These huge bones, tusks and teeth, have been taken from here in large numbers, to enrich many museums both in this country and in Europe. Many of the tusks were eight or ten feet long. Here Mrs. Ingles again assisted in making salt, thus being the first white person to make salt west of Kanawha, as she had been the first there, and while the first *person* in the Kanawha valley, she was the first white *woman*, so far as I know, who ever saw the Kanawha or New river, and the first white woman ever within the bounds of Ohio, Indiana or Kentucky, all then, however, still parts of Virginia. While at the Big Bone lick, Mrs. Ingles, to escape the ills she suffered, and to fly from others, threatened or feared, formed the desperate resolve to make her escape, and, if possible, find her way home. A more hopeless undertaking, apparently, she could not have conceived, but her condition was so distressing that even death was preferable, and she determined that, come what would, she would make the attempt. She confided her secret to the elderly Dutch woman above mentioned, who had been captured in western Pennsylvania, somewhere in the region of Fort Du Quesne, and who was the only other white female in the camp. She at first discouraged the scheme, and tried to dissuade Mrs. Ingles from throwing her life away on so mad and desperate a venture. Mrs. Ingles was not to be shaken in her resolution, but the Dutch woman, dreading to be left alone with the savages in the wilderness, and dreaming, with freshly stimulated hope, of the comforts and joys of home, listened with more and more favor to the earnest appeals of Mrs. Ingles, and finally was completely won over to the desperate scheme, and determined to accompany her. They had been in the habit of going out daily from camp at the lick, ostensibly to hunt wild grapes, walnuts, hickory nuts, etc., which they would take back and distribute among the Indians, but the more important matter to them was to discuss the question and the ways and means of escape. When the Dutch woman gave in her adhesion to the scheme, they stood not upon the order of their going, but prepared to start at once. There was little preparation for the women to make: they could make but little without exciting suspicion. They had each secreted a blanket for the trip, but took no clothes except what they wore, which were scanty enough. They each started with a tomahawk. Mrs. Ingles says she exchanged hers for a sharper one, just before starting from the camp, with a Frenchman, who was sitting cracking walnuts with his on one of the mammoth bones, since so noted. Mrs. Ingles had been tried as few women are, but now the supreme moment of her life was upon her. To try to escape, she had determined; but what was to be done with her child? She well knew that if

she attempted to take it with her, its cries would betray them both to recapture and death. And, even if she should possibly escape recapture, she knew too well what she would have to encounter and endure to suppose, for a moment, that it was possible to carry the infant and succeed in her effort. Clearly there was but one thing to do under the circumstances, and that was to abandon the unhappy little sufferer to its hard fate. Who can conceive of the agony of a young mother compelled to decide such a question, and to act, with such alternatives before her? But Mrs. Ingles was a woman of no ordinary nerve. She did decide and act, and who will say that she did not decide wisely? Certainly, in the light of subsequent events, her decision and action were wise and fortunate. She nestled the dear little babe as cosily as she could in a little bark cradle, gave it her last parting kisses and baptism of tears, tore herself away, and was gone, never to see it again in this world, and knowing, or having every reason to believe, that it would be murdered as soon as it was known that she was gone.

It is an interesting fact, as shown by census reports, that this Big Bone lick, then in an unknown and seemingly interminable wilderness, was at the last census (1880) almost exactly the center of population of the United States.

CHAPTER IV.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

NAMES OF RIVERS IN THE OHIO VALLEY — INDIAN TITLES — THEIR BEAUTY AND DESCRIPTIVE CHARACTER — WEARY JOURNEY OF TWO ESCAPED WOMEN — UP THE OHIO AND KANAWHA ON FOOT — NOTABLE HISTORIC SPOTS AND EVENTS — THE BURNING SPRING — FIRST NATURAL GAS IN THE VALLEY — FEATURES OF THE COUNTRY.

THE history, names and signification of the rivers up which these fugitive women were to travel, as guides to their distant homes, may be of interest here. First mention of the river now called Ohio is found in an old map of 1672, attributed to the French explorer, La Salle. In this the Iroquois name is given as "Oligen-Sipen," "the beautiful river." A map of 1687 calls it "Dono," or "Albacha." A Dutch map of 1708 calls it "Cubach." A map of 1710 calls it "O-o," and makes the Ohio and Wabash or Oubache one river. In 1711 it is called "Ochio." In 1719 it is called "Saboqungo." The Miamis called it Causisseppione. The Delawares, Kitono-cepe, and others Alliwegi-Sipe. The Wyandottes called it "Oheezuh," "the grand or beautiful." On the map accompanying Rapin De Thoyers' history of England (1744), it is called Hohio, and empties into the Wabash, or "Ouback," on the north side. In some of the early treaties of the Pennsylvanians with the Iroquois, they got the spelling "Oheeo," probably intended to represent the same sound as the "Oheezuh" above; this Oheeo became changed in accent, about 1744, by the Virginians, to "Ohio," or "Hohio," as on the above mentioned map. When, in 1749, the French called the "O-y-o" or "Ohio," "La Belle Riviere," they were not giving it a new name, but merely rendering into French the numerous Indian designations, most of which were equivalents, and meant "the beautiful river." With the later French, as with the Indians, the name included the Allegheny, or Al-le-ge-ning (the impression of feet), which was considered the extension of the main stream, and the Monongahela only a tributary. In addition to all these names, the Ohio, during its early Indian history, was often called the "River of Blood," from their own bloody encounters along its shores. The present Big Miami was called Mi-ah-me-zah by some of the Indian tribes; Os-we-ne, by the Delawares; La

Roque, by the French, meaning the river of rocks, or stony river. Licking river was named from the big buffalo licks on its banks, now the celebrated Blue Lick springs of Kentucky. The Little Miami was called by the Delawares Pio-quo-nee, or High Bank river. The Scioto was called by different tribes Son-hi-o-to, Si-o-tha, Si-o-to-cepe, etc., its signification was said te be "the unknown." The Big Sandy gets its name from the prevalence of sand bars in its bed. It has also been called Tatteroi, Chatteroi, and Chatterawha; but I do not know the signification of this variously spelled term; they may, like some others, all mean one thing — the river of sand bars, or Sandy river. The Miamis called it We-pe-po-co-ne-ce-pe-we. The Delawares called it Si-ke-a-ce-pe, Salt river. And Little Sandy was called Tan-ga-te Si-ke-a-ce-pe-wa, or Little Salt river. One of the upper forks of Big Sandy was named Tug river by some of Gen. (then Major) Andrew Lewis' soldiers returning from the Big Sandy expedition of 1756, when they became so straightened for food that they had to boil and eat their rawhide buffalo thongs and tugs to keep from starving. The La Visee, or Levisa, fork, as commonly called, or Louisa, as sometimes erroneously called, is said to mean the picture, design, or representation. It was so called by an early French explorer in the region, from Indian pictures or signs, painted on trees, near the head of the stream. The Guyandotte river is said to have been named after a tribe of that name. The Miamis called it La-ke-we-ke-ton Ce-pe-wa. The Delawares called it Se-co-nee, narrow bottom river. The locality of Point Pleasant was called, by the Wyandottes, Tu-edna-wie, the junction of the rivers. The present site of Pittsburg, Washington says, was called De-un-da-ga the forks of the river. The Great Kanawha river was called by the Miamis Pi-que-me-ta-mi; by the Delawares, Ken-in-she-ka-cepe, white stone river. The Little Kanawha was called by the Delawares, O-nom-go-how-cepe. The first name given the Great Kanawha from this end, by the whites, so far as I know, was by a French engineer party, under Capt. De Celeron, who, on the 18th of August, 1749, planted an engraved leaden plate at the mouth, giving the river the name of Chi-no-da-che-tha, and claiming for the French crown all the territory drained by its waters. This complicated name is probably Indian, not French; but what its signification is or was, I do not know. This leaden plate was unearthed in 1846, by a little nephew of Col. John Beale, then a resident at the point, and in 1849, just 100 years after the French had planted it, James M. Laidley, Esq., then a member of the legislature of Virginia, from Kanawha, took it to Richmond, and with appropriate remarks, submitted it to the Virginia Historical Society, where, I believe, a copy of it is still

pre-served, but he was required to return the original to the finder, who was afterward cheated out of it by the fair and false promises of some itinerant sharper — a duplicate copy of the original plate and inscription is preserved among the French National Archives in Paris. Christopher Gist, agent of the "Ohio Land Company," passed down opposite the mouth of Kanawha, on the Ohio side in 1751. The name of Kanawha was not given to the river until between 1760 and 1770. The name is commonly supposed and stated to signify, in the Indian tongue, "river of the woods"; but this, I think, is clearly a mistake. The stream had been discovered as a *New* river, at the other end, by Col. Abraham Wood, long before, as herein above described, and named after him, "Wood's river" — so when the name Kanawha was given to it, it applied to a river that already had a name, which then became an alias, and thus it was called "Kanawha or Wood's river," and *not* "Kanawha, the river of the Woods."

The name Kanawha was probably derived by evolution from the name of a tribe of Indians (a branch of the Nanticokes), who dwelt along the Potomac and westward, to New river. They were variously called, or spelled by different authors, at different times, Conoys, Conoise, Canawese, Cohnawas, Canaways and Kanawhas. The spelling of the name has been very various, in addition to the ways mentioned above, including nearly all practicable methods commencing with C or K. Wyman's map of the British Empire, in 1770, calls it "the Great Conoway, or Wood's river." The act of legislature of 1789 forming the county spelled it Kenhawa. In an original report of survey made by Daniel Boone at the mouth of the river, in 1791, and now in the writer's possession, he spells it "Conhawway" — the accepted spelling now is "Kanawha," probably never to be changed again. On some of the old maps the river is called "New river," or "Wood's river" from its source to its mouth; on others it is Kanawha from its mouth to its source. Later it was called "New, or Wood's river," from its source to the mouth of Greenbriar, and Kanawha thence to its mouth; still later, and at present, it is Kanawha from its mouth to the mouth of Gauley, and New river from that up, the name of Wood's river having become obsolete. The legislatures of Virginia and West Virginia ought to, by joint action, abolish the name of New river, and give one name to the whole stream from source to mouth, and that name should be Kanawha. "Pocatalico," it is said, signifies, in the Indian tongue, "the river of fat doe." "Cole river," as then spelled (the Louisa of the early maps), was named in 1756, by Samuel Cole, who with some others of the returning "Big Sandy expedition" (Gen., then Major Andrew Lewis among them), got over on to, and fol-

lowed up this river; their names were cut on a beech tree near the junction of Marsh and Clearforks, and remained legible until the tree was cut down by some vandal, a few years since, to clear his land. Since the discovery of mineral coal along the river in such vast quantities, the spelling of the name has gradually become changed to c-o-a-l. The Miamis called it Wa-lende-co-ni-cepe, the Delawares called it Wal-hon-de-cepe, or Hill creek. On probably the earliest map that laid down Coal river at all — that used at the treaty of peace in 1783 — and also on the map illustrating Jefferson's notes of Virginia, it was called Louisa, probably so named by Dr. Walker, as elsewhere stated. Elk river was called by some of the tribes Tiskelwah, or river of fat elk. By the Miamis it was called Pe-quo-ni-cepe; by the Delawares To-que-min-cepe, or Walnut river. Paint creek was called by the Miamis Mos-coos-cepe, and by the Delawares Ot-to-we-cepe, or Deer creek. The present name of Paint creek comes from painted trees, blazed and stained with red ochrous earth, by the Indians, to mark their early trail. It is also said that at a point of crossing of trails, near the head of the creek, returning raiding parties used to record on the trees, in this red paint, the number of scalps taken, and other important events in characters understood by them. Gauley river was called by the Miamis Chinque-ta-na-cepe-we; and by the Delawares To-ke-bel-lo-ke, or Falling creek. How the stream got the name of Gauley, or what it signifiies, is not known. The earliest spelling of the name, that in Henning Statutes, was Gawly. In the treaty map of 1783, and also Jefferson's map, the river is not even laid down. Greenbrier river, according to Col. John Lewis Payton, was named by Col. John Lewis, in 1751. He with his son (afterward Gen Andrew Lewis), were surveying lands along the river, and were very much scratched aud annoyed by the greenbriers. John Lewis told his son to note the name of the stream, on his surveys, as Greenbrier river, which was done, and from the river the county was named. The Miamis' name of the river was We-o-to-we-cepe-we. The Delawares called it O-ne-pa-ke-cepe. Blue Stone river was named by the whites from the deep blue valley limestone over which it flows. Its Miami name was Mee-ce-ne-ke-ke-ce-pe-we. The Delawares called it Mo-mon-ga-sen-eka-ce-pe, or Big Stone creek. East river was named by the whites from the direction of its flow. Its Miami name was Nat-weo-ce-pe-we. Its Delaware name Ta-le-mo-to-ny-ce-pe. Wolf creek was so named from the many wolves trapped or killed on it by the early settlers. Walker's creek, as hereinbefore stated, was named after Dr. Walker. Many of the foregoing river names are from a list of Indian names and equivalents, compiled by Col. William Preston, of the Draper's Meadows-Smithfield set-

tlements. The suffix of ce-pe or ce-pe-we to these various names, means, in the Indian tongue, *water* or river.

But to return to the fugitive women and their daring, desperate, and apparently hopeless undertaking. There were hundreds of miles of wilderness before them. The savage Indians and wild animals would alike seek their blood. Pursuit, exposure, privation, and, possibly, starvation were staring them in the face, but they flinched not; they had determined to start, and start they did. Against all these tremendous odds, it looked like flying in the face of providence and the fates that they trusted to help them through, but hope led on, and despair lay behind; they followed the one and fled from the other. They had not gotten far from the camp at Big Bone lick before the sun went down and the shades of night gathered around them. They selected an obscure place, raked some leaves into it for a bed, and, with the aid of their blankets, got such rest and sleep as they could; but there was not, as may be supposed, much sleep for them that night. When they failed to return to camp at or later than the usual time, the Indians became uneasy, thinking they had strayed too far and lost their way, or else had been killed by wild beasts. Some of the Indians went some distance in the direction they had started, but which course they had reversed as soon as out of sight, and fired guns to attract their attention if they should be lost. They gave up the search that night, however, and did not renew it the next day. Their conclusion was that the women had been destroyed by wild beasts, and gave themselves no further concern about them. They did not at all suspect that the women had attempted an escape. These facts were learned by William Ingles, from the Indians, many years after, at an Indian treaty, or conference, held at Point Pleasant not long after the battle of the Point, when they (the Indians) learned for the first time what had become of the missing women so long before. The next morning, not having the trouble of making their toilets, nor cooking nor eating their breakfasts, they made an early start, from a point near the mouth of Big Bone creek, fifteen miles below the mouth of the Big Miami, which De Celeron had called "La Roque," and about forty miles below the present site of Cincinnati. They kept the Ohio river in view, and tramped and toiled their weary way up its course, cheered by the knowledge that every mile they made took them one mile nearer their far, oh! how far-off homes! Without any special misadventure, after days and days of toil, and nights of uneasy rest, having passed Licking river, the sites of the present cities of Covington and Newport, and of the proud city of Cincinnati, just opposite, first called Losantiville; all then an untrodden wilderness. This is a curious patchwork name invented by the cranky pedagogue and historian, John Filson, as a

suitable name for the town when first started. L is for Licking; os the mouth; anti, opposite; and ville, the village; all meaning (L-os-anti-ville) the village or town opposite the mouth of Licking. Having passed the sites of Foster, Augusta, Maysville, first called Limestone, Concord, Vanceburg, etc., they at last reached the point opposite, or nearly opposite the Shawnee town at the mouth of the Scioto. The main Shawnee town in those days was not above the mouth, where Portsmouth now stands, but a short distance below. This was their chief or capital town. Their council house, built of logs, was ninety feet long and covered with bark. A few years later (1763 to 1765) a very extreme, if not unprecedented flood in the rivers swept off the greater part of the town, and it was never rebuilt at that place; but the tribe moved their head-quarters to the upper Little Miami, and up the Scioto, and built up successively, the old and the new Chillicothe, or Che-le-co-the, towns. There remained a Shawnee village at the mouth of Scioto, which was then built upon the upper side, the present site of the city of Portsmouth. During the existence of the main Indian town just below the mouth of the Scioto, there was another prominent settlement at the mouth of a creek about four miles above the mouth of Kanawha. This town was also abandoned about the same time as the Scioto town; whether from the same cause, or for what reason, is not now known. The creek, at the mouth of which the town stood, is still known as "Old Town creek." When Mrs. Ingles and her companion reached the point opposite the Scioto Shawnee town, they were weary and worn, and almost famished with hunger. They had subsisted, thus far, on walnuts, hickorynuts, grapes, and paw-paws; here they found a corn-patch and an isolated, untenanted cabin. As it was about dark when they reached it, they slept in the cabin — seeing no sign of any one about it — and enjoyed a hearty supper and breakfast of corn. Some nineteen years later Col. John Floyd (father of the afterward Gov. John Floyd, of Virginia, and grandfather of Gov. John B. Floyd), then deputy surveyor under Col. William Preston, of Draper's Meadows, or Smithford, father of the afterward Gov. James Preston, of Virginia, accompanied by Hancock Taylor, uncle of Pres. Zachary Taylor, located and surveyed for Patrick Henry, afterward governor of Virginia, 200 acres of land at this place, binding one and an eighth miles on the river, covering the site of this cabin, corn-patch, and Indian settlement opposite the late site of the main town across the river. Next morning the women discovered an old horse, with a tinkling bell on its neck, grazing about, loose. They "appropriated" this horse, muffled the bell clapper with leaves and rags to prevent its sounding, gathered what corn they could manage to carry, and getting away from the neighborhood of the settlement as

quietly and quickly as they could, resumed their onward movement. They could plainly see the town and Indians on the opposite side, but managed to keep themselves unseen. The horse was a most valuable acquisition, and a great comfort to them. Sometimes they rode him on the "ride and lead" plan, alternating, and sometimes both would have to walk and lead, depending upon the nature of the ground and route, whether rough, smooth, etc. This day they had a great fright and narrow escape. A party of Indian hunters passed very near them, but they secreted themselves and horse as best they could among the underbrush, to avoid being seen, and waited until the hunters passed out of range, when they again moved on. After several days of travel, having passed the sites of the future towns of Greenup, Riverton, Ashland and Catlettsburg, they reached a stream (the Big Sandy), which they were unable to cross near its mouth, and they traveled up it a long distance before they could cross. At length they came to a lodgement of driftwood, extending clear across the stream. They tried it and found it would bear their weight, but what would be done with the horse? Mrs. Ingles doubted whether he could be gotten over on the drift, but the Dutch woman insisted that he could, and in this case she prevailed, at least to make the effort. They were already a long way up the stream; they did not know how much farther they might have to go before they could ford or wade it, they thought they might get the horse over (the wish being, no doubt, parent to the thought), and they tried it. They had gotten but a short distance from the shore, however, when his legs slipped down through the drift, and there he stood, with his feet hanging down in the water, and his body resting on the logs above, unable to extricate himself.

It was a sad case. The loss of the horse was most serious, and in their feeble, footsore, and famished condition, might be fatal to them. They were touched with pity to have to leave the poor creature in this sorry and helpless plight; but there was no help for it. There was no choice but to abandon him to his hapless fate and try to save themselves. They each took a little corn from what was left of their scanty stock, and the old woman, who seems to have had a very practical and provident turn of mind, took the bell off the horse, and carried it through all the after troubles and trials of the journey. This point of crossing of the river was probably about the forks, and near the site of the present town of Louisa, where fifteen years later, according to Collins, Col. George Washington located, for John Fry, 2,084 acre of land, the first survey ever made in Kentucky. The first settlement made on the Big Sandy was by Charles Vancouver, at this point in 1789, but the settlement was soon after broken up by the Indians. They now started down the upper or east side of Big Sandy, and retraced, with weary steps, the distance to the

Ohio again, and thence up it, sometimes along the river bank, and sometimes a long the ridges, with the river in sight. As they did with the Big Sandy, so they had to do with every stream they came to, from first to last. When they could not wade the stream at the mouth, they had to go up it till they could, and many of the streams required days and days of weary travel up to a point of practicable crossing, and back again to the main stream, their only guide, thus increasing very greatly the distance traveled, perhaps nearly doubling a direct river line. Fortunately for them, it was at a season of the year when the waters were comparatively low, or this difficulty, serious as it now was, would have been insurmountable. Frequently, in going up or down these side streams, they could see that the stream made a large bend, and, to save distance, they would go across the ridge, having to pull themselves up the steep hills by the bushes and sods, until they reached the top, when, from fatigue and exhaustion, they would more slide than walk down, bruising and scratching themselves severely as they went. Since the loss of the horse, the old woman had become greatly disheartened and discouraged. She became very ill-natured to Mrs. Ingles, blaming her for having persuaded her to leave the Indians, to starve and perish in the wilderness. In her desperation she threatened to kill Mrs. Ingles, and even attempted violence. The old woman was, physically larger and stronger than Mrs. Ingles, but the latter was younger and more active, and managed to keep out of reach, though both were so exhausted from hunger and fatigue that they could little more than walk. By gentleness, kind talk, and delicate little attentions to the old woman, Mrs. Ingles succeeded, at length, in getting her pacified, and to some extent reconciled, and on they trudged together again. The weather was getting cold, and they suffered greatly from exposure. They had long since, worn out their shoes or moccasins, and their clothes were worn and torn to shreads and rags by the bushes, briers, etc. At nights they slept under shelving rocks or in hollow logs, on leaves, moss, or such stuff as they could rake together. When they failed to find nuts and berries enough to sustain them, they were often driven by hunger to pull up small shrubs or plants, and chew such as had tender bark on their roots, without the slightest idea of what they were, or what their effects might be; the cravings of hunger must be appeased by whatever they could chew and swallow. On one occasion they found on the drift, in some stream, a deer's head, probably cut off and thrown away by the Indians. This they made a meal of, though it was considerably advanced in decomposition, and strong and odorous. They protected their feet, as best they could, by wrapping them with strips torn from what was left of their dresses, and tied on with strings made from the soft, flexible bark of the young leather-wood shrub.

Toiling along in this sorry plight day after day, having passed the present sites of Huntington and Guyandotte, and crossed Guyandotte river, passed Green Bottom, where Thomas Hannon, as early as the year 1796, made the first white settlement within the present limits of Cabell county, the first on the Ohio River from the Kanawha to the Big Sandy, opposite the site of Gallipolis, and under the noted cliff over which Ben. Eulin, years after, made his famous fifty-three feet leap, when pursued by Indians, and was saved from death by falling in the tops of paw-paw bushes and grape vines, they at length reached the mouth of the Kanawha river, not then so called, but New river, or Wood's river, as they knew it, or the "Chinodacheta" as the French had then recently named it. This point was well remembered by Mrs. Ingles, and the sight of it again, under such circumstances, after her terrible experiences and sufferings for the past few months, stirred within her breast a flood of painful recollections and reflections, and a terrible struggle between hope and dispair. Here, at last, after all she had gone through on this desperate effort to regain her liberty and home, was the river that led on to that home and friends from whom she had been torn by savage hands. These waters came down from them, but brought her no tidings. If she could but follow up the stream, it would lead her to them, if indeed they still survived; but could she ever get there? It seemed impossible, weary and worn as she was by toil and anxiety, reduced as she was by exposure, cold and starvation, and her companion, instead of being an aid and comfort to her, had now become a source of danger and dread; but her situation was too horrible to let her mind dwell upon it. She dared not count the odds or weigh the chances too loosely. She knew that these odds and chances were largely against her. She knew that there was constant danger from savage Indians, for this was a favorite route for their raids into the Virginia settlements, danger from wild beasts, from starvation, cold, exposure and sickness, and danger from her companion. To give up, or delay, was certain death; to press on was at least, going in the direction of relief and of home and friends. She summoned to her aid all her resolution for another effort, and again the toilsome journey was resumed. Day after day they dragged their weary limbs along, suffering and strarving; night after night they shivered, starved and suffered, crawling into hollow logs or hollow trees as a partial protection from the increasing cold, and thus they traversed this now beautiful valley, then an unbroken wilderness, never penetrated by foot of white person, until Mrs. Ingles and others passed through it a few months before, as prisoners. In those days herds of buffalo and elk roamed through these valleys and over the hills. There were well beaten

paths where they passed through the low gaps, between the hills, on their way to and from the Salt licks or springs, traces of which were visible to within recent years. The last buffalo killed in this valley was by Archibald Price, on the waters of Litttle Sandy creek of Elk river, about twelve miles from Charleston, in 1815. The last elk killed in the valley, and probably the last east of the Ohio river, was killed by Billy Young, on Two Mile creek of Elk river, about five and a half miles from Charleston, in 1820. One of our venerable citizens, Mr. John Slack, Sr., then a small boy, still alive and vigorous, remembers this elk and its huge horns between which a man could walk upright and ate part of the game. It is said that vast herds of buffalo summered in the Kanawha valley, "in an early day," within reach of the Salt spring, or "Big Buffalo lick," as it was called, and in the fall, went to the grass regions of Ohio and Kentucky, and the cane brakes of the Kentucky streams. Their routes were for Kentucky, down through Teays' valley, and for Ohio, down Kanawha to Thirteen Mile creek, and over to Letart, where they crossed the Ohio river. Col. Grogham, who came down the Ohio in a boat in 1765, encountered a vast migrating herd crossing at Letart.

It is curious to note what changes occurred in the tenantry of the forest upon the advent of the white man. The Indians, after a blody and desperate resistance, were driven back. The buffalo, deer, elk, bears and panthers, feeling themselves unequal to the contest, submitted to the inevitable, and passed on. Wolves were numerous "in an early day," but soon became almost extinct. Dr. Doddridge, one of the most observant of the early pioneers, thinks this was occasioned, more than all other causes put together, by hydrophobia. Probably this was introduced among them by the dogs of the white man. Carnivorous birds, as eagles and buzzards, were very numerous, but rapidly diminished in numbers. Wild turkeys were extremely abundant, but were soon "cleaned out." Venomous snakes were numerous, and held their own with some tenacity. Gray and black squirrels were very numerous, and, for a time, seemed rather to increase than diminish, and were very destructive to the early corn fields. Every few years, moved by one of the inexplicable instincts of animals, they migrated, in countless numbers, from west to east. There were no crows nor black birds in the wilderness, and no song birds, but they soon followed in the wake of the white man. There were no rats, but they soon followed. 'Possums were later coming, and the fox squirrels still later. There were no wild honey bees, but they came in with the whites, keeping a little in advance. The famishing women daily saw plenty of game and wild animals, but only to be tantalized by them. They could make no use of them. They were only too

glad to be let alone by the frightful beasts. As they passed the mouth of the Kanawha, they passed in sight of the afterward bloody battle ground of Point Pleasant, which will be treated of at length in a separate chapter. About eighteen years later (in 1773) there was much discussion in the country in reference to establishing a separate colony in the west, with the seat of government at the mouth of the Kanawha. Gen. Washington, who owned a tract containing about 30,000 acres of land on the Kanawha and Ohio rivers, among them a tract of over 10,000 acres on both sides of the Kanawha, commencing a short distance above the mouth, in advertising to sell or lease the latter, in 1773, says, in conclusion:

"And it may not be amiss, further to observe, that if the scheme for establishing a new government on the Ohio, in the manner talked of, should ever be effected, these must be among the most valuable lands in it, not only on account of the goodness of the soil and other advantages above mentioned, but from their contiguity to the seat of government which, it is more than probable, will be fixed at the mouth of the great Kanawha. GEORGE WASHINGTON."

A few years earlier, Washington and the Lees, says Payton, were figuring on a gigantic land scheme in the west. They formed a land company called "The Mississippi Company," and they modestly asked George III. for a grant of two and a half million acres in the west. The company was composed of George Washington, F. L. Lee, R. H. Lee and Arthur Lee. From about 1767 to 1769 or 1770, Washington had Col. Crawford through the west, off and on, examining and making notes of the best bodies of land. In 1769, Arthur Lee went over to urge the claims of the Mississippi Company, in person, before George III. and the parliament. The grant was not made, and the scheme was finally abandoned. But suppose it had succeeded, how different might have been the history of our country! Washington and the Lees might have been the ruling spirits in a great western republic, with the seat of the government at Point Pleasant. The country west of the Ohio was then sometimes called the "State of Washington." In 1787, the legislature of Virginia, in granting a ferry franchise across the Ohio river, says, from lands of so and so, in Ohio county, West Va., to lands of so and so, in the "State of Washington," now limited to Washington county, Ohio. From Point Pleasant the fugitives passed up on the lower or west side of Kanawha, passing opposite the present towns of Leon, Buffalo, Red House and Raymond City, all now built up on the east side, passed by Tackett's Knob, and the famous pine tree to which Tackett was tied by the Indians, in after years; over the site of Winfield, the present county seat of Putnum county, etc. In passing the

mouth of Scary creek, where the Chesapeake & Ohio railway now leaves the river, they passed the site of the first, or one of the very first, battles fought between the federals and confederates in the late civil war, being the 17th of July, 1861, and one week before the first battle of "Bull Run." The federals were commanded by Col. Norton, and the confederates were under the immediate command of Capt. (afterward Colonel) George S. Patton. Both commanders were wounded; twelve federals were killed, and three confederates. Gen. Henry A. Wise was then in supreme command of the Kanawha forces, with Col. C. Q. Tompkins next in command. At the mouth of Coal river the fugitives passed, on the lower side, the future site of Fort Tackett, one of the first forts built in the valley, when the white settlements began, and the scene of a bloody tragedy and capture of the fort by the Indians. In after years (1788), from this fort, under cover of darkness, John Young escaped, taking in his arms his young wife with a babe of one day old, and the bed or pallet on which she lay, put them in a canoe, and, during the night, through a drenching rain storm, poled the canoe up to the fort where Charleston now stands. Neither father, mother, nor babe suffered from the exposure, the mother lived to be about ninety, and the babe lived to be over ninety, dying but a few years since, leaving a large family of worthy descendants in this valley. Above the mouth of Coal river the fugitive women passed the site of the present town of St. Albans, a Chesapeake & Ohio railway station. They had to go up Coal river until they could wade it, as they had done with Licking, Little Sandy, Big Sandy, Guyandotte, Twelve Pole, and other streams. Twelve miles above Coal river, they passed opposite the mouth of Elk river, two miles up, which Simon Kenton, the afterward renowned pioneer and Indian fighter, and two companions, Yeager and Strader, sixteen years later (1771), built a cabin, and occupied it; engaged in hunting and trapping until the spring of 1773, when they were attacked by Indians. Yeager was killed, and Kenton and Strader both wounded, though they made their escape to a hunting camp at the mouth of the Kanawha. So far as known, Simon Kenton and companions were the first white men who ever built a cabin or camp and lived in the valley, Mrs. Ingles and companions having been the first white persons ever here, as above stated. Immediately above the mouth of Elk river, they passed opposite the site of the present city of Charleston, the capital of West Virginia. Here, Fort Clendenin was afterward saved from Indian capture by the heroism of a brave little woman, Ann Bailey, who rode her black pony, called "Liverpool," to the fort at Lewisburg, called Camp Union or Fort Savannah, 100 miles distant, through a wilderness, and back alone, bringing the besieged a

supply of powder, etc. Between four and five miles above here, they passed the spot where, thirty odd years later, that prince of pioneers and frontiersman, Daniel Boone, built a cabin and lived for ten or twelve years. See chapter on Boone. Opposite this, and just above the mouth of Campbell's creek, was the salt spring where Mrs. Ingles and her companions and captors had stopped to rest and make salt, as they passed down, some months before, as above stated. For many years after the settlement of the country, this locality was the chief source of supply of salt for the great west, until the Pomeroy salt region, and afterward Saginaw, Mich., and others, were developed. (For a history of the salt interest of Kanawha, see chapter on Salt.) Ten miles further up the river, they passed opposite the afterward noted Burning spring, first located and owned by Gens. Washington and Lewis, in 1775. Gen. Washington in his will, in speaking of this tract, says: "The tract of which the 125 acres is a moiety, was taken up by Gen. Andrew Lewis and myself, for and on account of a bituminous spring which it contains, of so inflammable a nature as to burn as freely as spirits, and is nearly as difficult to extinguish." Gen. Washington gave, or intended to give, to the public forever, as a great natural curiosity, two acres of land embracing the Burning spring, and a right of way to the river; but from oversight, or other reason not now known, the grant was never put on record, and Dr. Lawrence Washington, nephew of his uncle, and to whom it descended, sold it to Messrs. Dickinson & Shrewsberry, who, in 1843, bored on it, striking the largest yield of natural gas ever tapped in the valley.

While on the subject of this spring I will mention a curious and interesting fact that occurred here in 1831 or 1832. Three men who had but recently come to the neighborhood, and were employed at a salt furnace, close by, were standing around the wonderful spring, watching with amazement and awe the bubbling and boiling of the water, and the gaseous flames leaping up from its surface, when, suddenly, there came, from a passing cloud, a flash of lightning, and an electrical stroke, or discharge, right into the spring. The shock instantly prostrated the three men standing around it. One, who was least stunned, soon got up and ran to the furnace and gave the alarm. A second one, after a little time, was able to hobble off without help; but the third had to be carried home on a stretcher, and was so seriously shocked that he never entirely recovered from the effects of it. One of our late elderly citizens, Mr. Silas Ruffner, was present, and a witness of the facts related. It may be well to explain, for those who do not understand it, that the Burning spring was not actually a spring of flowing water, but simply a pool, or puddle, up through which issued a stream of natural gas, keeping the water in bubbling motion, resembling boiling, and the gas, upon

being lighted, would burn till put out by rain or blown out by the wind. Having passed the mouths of Rush, Lens, Fields and Slaughters' creeks, they (the escaping women) next passed the mouth of Cabin creek, where, about twenty years later, the family of John Flinn, one of the earliest settlers, was in part killed, and the remainder captured by the Indians, for more particulars of which, see chapter on Boone. Four miles above here they passed the mouth of Kelly's creek, where, in 1773, Walter Kelly made the first family settlement in the valley, and where, in the following year, he lost his life, as elsewhere related. At this place William Morris founded a permanent settlement soon after Kelly's death, and built Fort Morris, the first in the valley. The Kelly cabin stood near a ravine, a few rods above, and the Morris fort on the creek, about 150 yards below the present Tompkins brick church. About the same time his brother, Leonard Morris, made a settlement at the mouth of Slaughter's creek, and not long after, Henry Morris, another brother, settled on Peters creek of Gauley. Three miles above Kelly's creek, the fugitives passed the mouth of Paint creek, the route of the Indian trail down which Mrs. Ingles and her captors came, some months before. About the mouth of Paint creek there seems to have been a large and very ancient aboriginal settlement. There are still remains of extensive stone fortifications on the high hill above the creek, and similar and larger ones, acres in extent, on the high mountain between Armstrong and Loup creeks, and from an old burying ground, at the river, about the town of Clifton, are still unearthed, from time to time, interesting relics of the "stone age," or mound-builder period. Fourteen miles above Paint creek, having passed the present sites of Coal valley and Cannelton, Morris, Armstrong and Loup creeks, they passed the falls of the great Kanawha, over "Van Bibber's rock," where, in 1773, John and Peter Van Bibber, Matthew Arbuckle and John Alderson spent a night under a shelving rock near the water's edge, just under the falls, to secrete themselves from a party of Indians, whose sign they had discovered, and where John Van Bibber pecked his name in the rock with the pole of his tomahawk. This fact is related by David Van Bibber, "nephew of his uncle," recently deceased, at over ninety.

CHAPTER V.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

CANYON OF NEW RIVER — AWFUL CHASM PASSED BY THE LONELY FUGITIVES — FRIGHTFUL PERILS — "DRAWING STRAWS" — WHICH SHALL DIE? — LIFE AND DEATH STRUGGLE — WEARY JOURNEY RENEWED — SCALING ANVIL CLIFF — YIELDING TO DISPAIR — RELIEF AT LAST AND HOME — FATE OF THE OLD DUTCH WOMAN — BATTLES, SIEGES AND SURPRISES.

SOME two miles above the falls, the fugitives passed, on the opposite side, the mouth of Gauley river, and thence out of the Kanawha valley proper, and entered the grand canyon of New river. How did they ever get through it? Can the railroad engineers who located the C. & O. road, or the contractors and others who built it, or anybody who ever looked down into that awful chasm from the cliffs and precipitous mountains, 1,000 to 1,500 feet above, or ever looked out at it from the windows of a Chesapeake & Ohio railway car — can any of these, looking back, in imagination, to the time when all this wild scene was in a state of nature, tell how these destitute and famished, but heroic women ever made the passage of this terrible gorge from Gauley to Greenbriar? Or conceive of the amount of daring and desperation it required to nerve them to the effort? The how can not now be told in full detail, but the simple and comprehensive answer is: They did it and survived. They passed up by Penitentiary Rocks, the Little Falls, Cotton Hill, the Blue Hole, the Pope's Nose, the Short Tunnel, the Lovers' Leap, the Hawk's Nest, Sewell, Quinnmount, War Ridge, Fire Creek, Stone Cliff, Castle Rock, Stretcher's Neck, Piney, Glade Creek, New River Falls, etc., etc.— all nameless then. They walked, climbed, crept and crawled, through brush and thorns, vines and briers, over and around the huge rocks that have tumbled down from the towering cliffs above, and the avalanches of debris that followed their crushing courses — climbed under or over fallen timber, over slippery banks and insecure footings, wading creeks that had to be crossed, wading around cliffs and steep banks that jutted out into the main stream, and when this was impossible, as was sometimes the case, they had to climb over or around the obstruction, however high, however difficult,

however tedious, however dangerous, looking down from the dizzy heights upon the rushing, roaring torrents of New river below, madly dashing against the huge rocks and bowlders that obstruct its course, and lashing the bases of the cliffs and tortuous shores as it furiously rushes on. Suppose, in this terrible struggle, these poor, leg-weary and foot-sore women had, in their unrestful slumbers, on couches of leaves or bare earth, in caves or hollow logs, dreamed that their great-grandchildren would now be gliding through this wild canyon, the roughest this side of the Rocky mountains, in luxurious Pullman palace cars, at the rate of forty miles an hour — outspeeding the wind — and that time and distance should be annihilated in sending messages through it to far away friends! They probably did not, in their wildest flights, even dream anything so seemingly impossible; and yet, how strangely true it is!

They had passed Flat-Top mountain, Blue Stone river, Indian creek, etc., and were about the mouth of East river, up which the New river branch of the Norfolk & Western railroad now runs, when the old woman again became desperate, and this time more dangerous than ever. In the extremity of her suffering from starvation and exhaustion she threatened to kill Mrs. Ingles with cannibalistic intent. Mrs. Ingles tried temporizing, by proposing to "draw cuts" to determine which one should be the victim; to this the old woman consented. The lot fell to Mrs. Ingles; she then appealed to the old woman's cupidity by offering her large rewards when they got home, if she would spare her; but the pangs of present hunger were more potent than the hope of future gain, and she undertook, then and there, to immolate her victim. She succeeded in getting Mrs. Ingles in her grasp, and it became a struggle for life or death. How sad that these poor women, after all they had suffered and endured together, should now, in that vast solitude, alone, with no eye to see, nor hand to save or aid, be engaged in a hand to hand, life or death struggle! The old woman, to prevent death by starvation, would kill her companion for food, while Mrs. Ingles was trying to save her life from the murderous hand of her companion, probably to die a lingering death from starvation; the choice seemed worth but little. If they had had more strength, the result might have been more serious; or, possibly, fatal to one or both. But both were so feeble that neither had done the other much hurt until Mrs. Ingles, being much the younger (she was then but 23), and, by comparison, still somewhat more active, succeeded in escaping from the clutches of her adversary, and started on up the river, leaving the old woman greatly exhausted by the struggle. When well out of sight, she slipped under the river bank and secreted herself until the old woman had recovered breath and passed on, supposing that Mrs. Ingles was still in ad-

vance. This scene occurred late in the evening, between sundown and dark. When Mrs. Ingles emerged from her concealment, the moon was up and shining brightly, and by its light she discovered, near at hand, a canoe at the river bank, half full of leaves blown into it by the wind; but there was no paddle, oar or pole; as a substitute, she picked up, after some search, a small slab or sliver from a shattered tree, blown down by a storm. She had never before undertaken, literally, to "paddle her own canoe," and found much difficulty, at first, in guiding it; but, persevering patiently, she caught the knack of steering it, and as the river was low, and not much current at the place, she succeeded in making her way safely across. Here, to her great relief, she found a cabin or camp that had been built by some hunters from the settlements above, and a patch where they had attempted to raise some corn. Seeing no one about — the place being deserted — she crept into the cabin and spent the night. Next morning she searched the patch for some corn, but was sadly disappointed to find that the buffalo, bears, and other wild animals, had utterly destroyed it; she discovered in the ground, however, two small turnips which the animals had failed to find, and on these she made a sumptuous breakfast. Resuming her now solitary journey, she had gone but a short distance when she discovered her late companion on the opposite shore. They halted and held a parley. The old woman professed great remorse and penitence, made all sorts of fair promises for the future, and begged piteously to be brought over, or that Mrs. Ingles would come back to her, that they might continue their journey together. With Mrs. Ingles it was a question between sympathy and safety, but a wise discretion prevailed. After all that had occurred, she concluded that it would be safer to keep the river between them, and, accordingly, each went her way on opposite sides.

From the best reckoning Mrs. Ingles could make, she concluded that she must now be within about thirty miles of home; but much of the remainder of the way was extremely rough, the weather was growing colder, and, worse than all, her physical exhaustion was now so extreme that it seemed impossible that she could continue the struggle much longer. She feared that, after all she had suffered and borne, she would at last have to succumb to hunger, exposure and fatigue, and perish in the wilderness, alone. As her physical strength waned, however, her strong will power bore her up and on, and hope sustained her as wearily and painfully she made mile after mile, eating what she could find in the forest, if anything; sleeping when and where she could, if at all. She had passed up through the "New river narrows," the great rift where New river has cut its way through the solid "Peter's mountain" (so named at the eastern

end for Peter Wright, a famous old hunter and pioneer, but here named after a pioneer family named Peters). It is one of the wildest scenes in the state. She had passed the butte of Wolf mountain and the mouth of Wolf creek. Near here, Peterstown, on the east side, has since been built. She had passed near the present site of Giles C. H., and nearly under the shadows of the towering "Angel's Rest" mountain, on the west side (so named by Gen. Cloyd), 4,000 feet high, with its rock-ribbed sides and castellated towers, said to strongly resemble Mount Sinai, but it brought no rest nor peace to her. She had passed the cliff near Giles C. H., had crawled around or over the huge cliffs just below the mouth of Stony creek. She had by some means gotten beyond that grand wall of cliff jutting into the river for two miles, extending from opposite Walker's creek to Doe creek, and two miles above this, another seemingly impassable cliff had been scaled. She had gotten about two miles beyond these last named cliffs, and was near the base of the "Salt Pond mountain," with its beautiful lake near its summit, 4,000 feet above tide, and one of the greatest natural curiosities of the state; but her mind was not occupied with the grandeur of the scenery, nor the beauty of these then nameless localities she was passing; she only knew that each one passed put her that much nearer home — sweet home! Night was approaching; snow had fallen, and it was bitterly cold (it was now about the last of November); just before her she was confronted by still another gigantic cliff, hundreds of feet high, the base in the water and the crown overhanging. At last her progress seemed utterly barred; there were no ledges, no shelving rocks, no foot-holds of any kind to climb around on. The only chance left, it seemed, was to wade around the base, as she had done in other cases; this she tried, but found that, to her, it was an unfathomable gulf.

Her heart sank within her; night was now upon her; cold before, she was now wet and colder still. She had nothing to eat; she could find no soft couch of leaves, no friendly cave or hollow log. In despair she threw herself down on the bare ground and rocks, and there lay in that pitiable condition, more dead than alive, until next morning. With the dawning of the day there was a feeble revival of hope — for while we live we will hope. She thought of the only possible remaining way of passing this gigantic barrier; this was to climb around and over the top of it, but in attempting to rise she found that her limbs were so stiff, and swollen, and sore from the wet, cold and exposure that she could scarcely stand, much less walk or climb. Still, there was no choice; if she could she must, so again she tried. Slowly, as the effort and exercise relieved her somewhat from the paralyzing chill, she wound her devious, tedious and painful

way, hour after hour, getting a little higher, and a little higher. So feeble and faint from hunger, such soreness and pain from her lacerated feet and swollen limbs, that from time to time she looked down from her dizzy heights, almost tempted, from sheer exhaustion and suffering, to let go and tumble down to sudden relief and everlasting rest. Climbing and resting, resting and climbing, she at last reached the summit, and the day was far spent. While resting here, her thoughts had wandered on up the river to her home and friends. She knew that she must now be within twelve or fifteen miles of that home. "So near and yet so far." If she had strength, how quickly she would fly to it; but, alas! in her now desperate and deplorable condition the chance of reaching it seemed fainter, even, than when she left Big Bone lick with strength, hope and resolution. Now, she did not know what hour her powers might utterly fail; what minute nature might yield and she would be lost. As long as she lived, Mrs. Ingles always referred to this as the most terrible day of her eventful life.

Arousing herself again to the necessities of the hour, she started on her painful and perilous descent; crawling, falling, slipping and sliding, she at length reached the bottom as the day was about departing. I have talked with a friend of mine, born and reared in this neighborhood, and who is perfectly familiar with all this part of New river. He tells me that this cliff is 280 feet high to the top, measured, the first 100 feet overhanging, and that the water in the pool at the base has never been fathomed. He had often tried it in his youth, with long poles and with weighted lines, but never got bottom. There is, he says, a whirlpool, or sort of maelstrom, here, down into which, when the river is high, logs, driftwood, etc., are drawn, coming up again some distance below. No wonder Mrs. Ingles could not wade around the cliff; no wonder it took her a whole day, in her exhausted condition, to climb over it. The highest point of this front cliff, from some real or fancied resemblance to a huge anvil, is called "Anvil Rock." Just across the river, in a corresponding cliff — all of the blue limestone — is a natural arch, which is called "Cæsar's Arch," and near it a natural column called "Pompey's Pillar." "Sinking creek," a considerable stream, which, in low water, loses itself under ground some miles in the rear, finds its cavernous way under the mountains and into the river, below the surface, in the deep pool at the base of Anvil Rock cliff. In freshets, the surplus water finds its way to the river three-fourths of a mile below. Mrs. Ingles, after getting to the bottom of the cliff, had gone but a short distance when, to her joyful surprise, she discovered, just before her, a patch of corn. She approached it as rapidly as she could move her painful limbs along. She saw no one, but there were evident signs of persons about. She ha

looed; at first there was no response, but relief was near at hand. She was about to be saved, and just in time. She had been heard by Adam Harmon and his two sons, whose patch it was, and who were in it gathering their corn. Suspecting, upon hearing a voice, that there might be an intended attack by Indians, they grabbed their rifles, always kept close at hand, and listened attentively. Mrs. Ingles hallooed again. They came out of the corn and toward her, cautiously, rifles in hand. When near enough to distinguish the voice — Mrs. Ingles still hallooing — Adam Harmon remarked to his sons: "Surely, that must be Mrs. Ingles' voice." Just then she, too, recognized Harmon, when she was overwhelmed with emotions of joy and relief — poor, overtaxed nature gave way, and she swooned and fell, insensible, to the ground. They picked her up tenderly and conveyed her to their little cabin, near at hand, where there was protection from the storm, a rousing fire and substantial comfort. Mrs. Ingles soon revived, and the Harmons were unremitting in their kind attentions and efforts to promote her comfort. They had in their cabin a stock of fresh venison and bear meat; they set to work to cook and make a soup of some of this, and, with excellent judgment, would permit their patient to take but little at a time, in her famished condition. While answering her hurried questions as to what they knew about her home and friends, they warmed some water in their skillet and bathed her stiff and swollen feet and limbs, after which they wrapped her in their blankets and stowed her away tenderly on their pallet in the corner, which to her, by comparison, was "soft as downy pillows are," and a degree of luxury she had not experienced since she was torn away from her own home by ruthless savages, more than four months before. Under these new and favoring conditions of safety and comfort, it is no wonder that "nature's sweet restorer" soon came to her relief and bathed her wearied senses and aching limbs in balmy, restful and refreshing sleep.

Mrs. Ingles awoke next morning greatly rested and refreshed. She called to Harmon and told him of her experience with the old woman, her companion, and begged him to send his boys back down the river in search of her, but the boys, having heard Mrs. Ingles relate the story of her adventure with the old woman, and, very naturally, feeling outraged and indignant at her conduct, refused to go, and Harmon, sharing their feelings, declined to compel them; so the old woman was left, for the present, to make her own way, as best she could. Harmon and his sons had been neighbors of Mrs. Ingles at Draper's Meadows, before her capture, and before they came down here to make this new clearing and settlement. As neighbors on a frontier, where neighbors are scarce, they had known each other well. Harmon considered no attention, labor or pains too great

to testify his friendship for Mrs. Ingles and tender regard for her distressful condition. He had brought to this new camp, when he came, two horses and a few cattle to range on the rich wild pea vines which grew here luxuriantly. He had heard in his time, and it impressed itself upon his memory, that beef tea was the best of all nourishing and strengthening diets and restoratives for persons in a famished and exhausted condition; so, although he had, as before stated, plenty of nice, fresh game meat in his cabin, he took his rifle, and, against the protests of Mrs. Ingles, went out, hunted up and shot down a nice, fat beef, to get a little piece as big as his hand, to boil in his tin cup, to make her some beef tea, and make it he did, feeding her, first with the tea alone, and then with tea and beef, until within a couple of days, thanks to her naturally robust constitution and health, she was sufficiently recovered, rested and strengthened to travel; when he put her on one of his horses, himself taking the other, and started with her to her home at Draper's Meadows, some ten or twelve miles distant, up the river; but when they arrived at the settlement there was an Indian alarm, and all the neighbors had congregated at a fort at "Dunkard Bottom," on the west side of the river, a short distance above "Ingles' Ferry," so they went on to this place, arriving about night, and Mrs. Ingles had, with glad surprise, a joyful meeting with such of her friends as were present in the fort.

The next morning, after arriving at the fort, Mrs. Ingles again begged Harmon, now that he had restored her to her friends, to comfort and safety, to go back and hunt for the poor old woman, and, if still alive, to bring her in. This he now consented to do, and started promptly, down the west bank of the river. A few miles after she and Mrs. Ingles had parted company the old woman met with a genuine piece of good luck. She came upon a hunters' camp, just abandoned, apparently precipitately, for what reason she could not tell — possibly from an Indian alarm — but they had left on the fire a kettle of meat, cooking, to which she addressed herself assiduously. She remained here two or three days, resting, eating and recuperating her strength. The hunters had left at the camp an old pair of leather breeches; these the old woman appropriated to her own personal use and adornment, being by no means fastidious about the fit, or the latest style of cut or fashion, her own clothes being almost entirely gone. An old horse had also been left by the supposed hunters, loose about the camp, but no sign of saddle or bridle. The old woman remained at the camp, its sole occupant (no one putting in an appearance while she was there) until she had consumed all the meat in the pot; she then made a sort of bridle or halter of leatherwood bark, caught the old horse, put on him that same bell which was found on the horse

captured opposite Scioto, and taken off by the practical-minded old woman when that horse had been abandoned to his fate among the drift logs in Big Sandy, and carried through all her terrible struggles and suffering to this place. Having taken the wrapper from around the clapper, and so hung the bell on the horse's neck that it would tinkle as he went, as, being so near the settlement, she now hoped to meet settlers or hunters, she mounted him, riding in the style best adapted to her newly acquired dress of leather unmentionables, and again started up the river on her way to the then frontier settlement. Thus slowly jogging along, hallooing from time to time to attract the attention of any one who might be within hearing, she was met in this plight, about the "Horse Shoe," or mouth of Back creek, opposite "Buchanan's Bottom," by Adam Harmon, in search of her, and taken on to the fort. The meeting between Mrs. Ingles and the old woman was very affecting. Their last parting had been in a hand to hand struggle for life or death — not instigated by malice or vindictiveness, but by that first great law of nature, self-preservation, that recognizes no human law; but now that they were both saved, this little episode was tacitly considered as forgotten. Remembering only the common dangers they had braved, and the common sufferings they had endured together in the inhospitable wilderness, they fell upon each other's necks and wept, and all was reconciliation and peace. The old woman remained here for a time, awaiting an opportunity to get to her own home and friends in Pennsylvania. Finding, before long, an opportunity of getting as far as Winchester, by wagon, she availed herself of it, and from there, with her precious bell, the sole trophy of her terrible travels and travails, it was hoped and believed that she soon got safely home. No record of her name has been preserved. In the traditions of the Ingles family she is known and remembered only as "the old Dutch woman." Adam Harmon, having accomplished his mission of mercy, and improved the unexpected opportunity of a social reunion with his late neighbors and friends, took an affectionate leave of Mrs. Ingles and her and his friends, and returned to his new camp and clearing down the river. This settlement of Harmon's was at a point on the east bank of New river, now the site of that well known place of summer resort, the "New River White Sulphur," or "Chapman's," or "Eggleston's Springs," which, for grandeur and beauty of scenery, is probably not excelled by any of the beautiful watering places of the Virginia mountains. The New river branch of the Norfolk & Western railroad runs along the opposite shore of the river, the station for this place being called "Ripple Mead."

The formidable cliff described above, the climbing over which

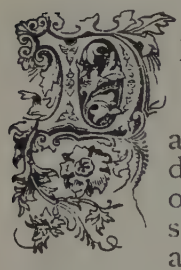
occupied Mrs. Ingles one whole day, the most terrible of her life, is immediately below the springs, is a part of the springs estate, and well known to frequenters of that popular resort. The little cove immediately above the cliff, and the then site of the Harmon cabin and corn patch, is now called "Clover Nook." The writer regrets that he does not know the after-history of Adam Harmon and sons, the pioneer settlers of this beautiful place; but from every descendant of Mrs. Ingles, now and forever, he bespeaks proper appreciation and grateful remembrances of the brave, tender-hearted, sympathetic, noble Adam Harmon. Twenty or thirty years later there was a family of Harmons — Henry and his sons, George and Matthias — who distinguished themselves for their coolness and bravery as Indian fighters in the Clinch settlements of Tazewell. It is presumed that they were of the same Harmon stock, but just what relation to Adam the writer does not know. As stated above, Mrs. Ingles, on her arrival at the fort, had a joyful meeting with such of her friends as she found there; but the two of all others whom she had hoped and expected to find there — the two for whom her heart had yearned with deepest love, and the hope of again seeing whom had sustained her in her captivity and nerved her to her desperate exertions in her escape — her husband and her brother — were not there. They had gone, some weeks before, down to the Cherokee Nation in the Tennessee and Georgia region, to see if they could get any tidings of their lost families, and, if so, to try, through the Cherokees — they then being friendly with the whites and also with the Indian tribes north of the Ohio — to ransom and recover them; but their expedition had been fruitless, and they were returning, sad, disconsolate, dispairing, almost hopeless. On the night that Mrs. Ingles had reached the fort, William Ingles and John Draper stayed within a few miles of it, and about where the town of Newberry, Pulaski county, now stands. Next morning they made a daylight start and arrived at the fort to breakfast, and to find, to their inexpressible joy and surprise, that Mrs. Ingles had arrived the night before. Such a meeting, under such circumstances, and after all that had occurred since they last parted, nearly five months before, may be imagined, but cannot be described. There is propably no happiness in this life without alloy; no sweet without its bitter; no rose without its thorn. Though William and Mary Ingles were inexpressibly rejoiced to be restored to each other, their happiness was saddened by the bitter thought that their helpless little children were still in the hands of the savages; and while John Draper was overjoyed to have his sister return, he could not banish the ever-present and harrowing thought that his wife was still in the far-off wilderness — in the hands of savages and her fate unknown.

William Ingles built at Ingles' ferry a fort for the security of his own family and others who were now settling about him, and several times afterward the neighbors were gathered in this fort for safety and common defense, when Indian attacks were made or threatened. Once, when there was no one at the house or fort but William Ingles and his wife, she discovered, stealthily approaching the house, nine armed warriors in their war paint. She gave the alarm, and William Ingles at once posted himself in a position of defense, but discovered that he had but one bullet, and that was in his gun. Mrs. Ingles soon got the lead and ladle, however, and molded bullets as fast as he fired. Having failed to take the place by surprise, as they had evidently expected, the Indians, after a few rounds, fired without effect, abandoned the attack and left. About this time, William Ingles and a companion, named John Shilling, were on Meadow creek, a branch of Little river. They were fired on by several Indians; all took to trees — white men and Indians — and fought Indian-fashion. The result was that Ingles and Shilling killed two Indians, and the others fled. William Ingles came near having an eye put out by bark from the tree behind which he stood. Just as he started to look round, at one time, to get a shot, an Indian fired at him; the ball struck the tree and glanced, missing him, but dashed the bark into his face and eyes with great force and painful effect. About 1760, a party of eight or ten Indians passed Ingles' ferry and went up Little river and over to a settlement on the head of Smith's river, east of the Blue Ridge, where they murdered some defenseless settlers, took some women and children prisoners, caught their horses, loaded them with stolen plunder, and were returning by way of the New river settlement. Some one from the Ingles' ferry fort had gone out in search of some strayed horses, and discovered the Indian camp, at night, about six miles from the fort. He returned at once and reported what he had seen. William Ingles got together, as speedily as possible, fifteen or eighteen men, then at or near the fort, and, piloted by the man who had made the discovery, they started for the locality, intending to make an attack at daylight the next morning. They were a little late, however, and the Indians were up and preparing to cook their breakfast when the party reached the camp. At a concerted signal the attack was made; the Indians flew to their arms and made fight, but they were taken at a disadvantage and seven of the party shot down; the others fled made their escape. One white man from the fort was killed. The prisoners, horses and plunder, were all recovered. This was the last Indian engagement at or near this settlement; thenceforth they were undisturbed; peace prevailed, and the country began to settle up rapidly.

CHAPTER VI.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

EARLY EXPLORERS — FIRST SURVEYS IN WEST VIRGINIA AND KENTUCKY — EARLY ROUTES OF TRAVEL — WEARY ROADS THROUGH THE WILDERNESS — STORY OF WILLIAM INGLES — HIS LIFE AMONG THE INDIANS — HIS RANSOM AND RELUCTANT RETURN — MOTHER'S JOY — HIS SUBSEQUENT RESTLESS CAREER — BLOODY RAID IN BURKE'S GARDEN — PURSUIT AND VENGEANCE — THE CAPTIVES OF ABT'S VALLEY.



RAPER'S MEADOWS-INGLES' FERRY settlement was an outlying, advanced post of civilization, on the edge of the then great western wilderness, and soon became a place of rendezvous and point of departure, for individuals, families and parties bent on western adventure, exploration, emigration, or speculation. This way passed Dr. Thomas Walker and his first party of explorers, in 1748, and, also, his second expedition, in 1750. From here, in 1754, started out the first four or five family settlements that are known to have been made; that early, west of New river. James Burke went to Burke's Garden, in (now) Tazewell county; whether accompanied by others or not, is not known. There were two families settled on Back creek, now the Cloyd settlement, in Pulaski county; Ingles' ferry, on both sides; Reed at Dublin, McCorkle at Dunkard's bottom, two families on Cripple creek, another tributary of New river, now in Wythe county, and near this, just over the divide, one or two families on the headwaters of the Holston, now in Smythe county. From here started, in 1770, a party of hunters and explorers, reinforced at the then Holston and Clinch settlements, under Lieut. (afterwards Col.) Knox, who, later, founded Knoxville. They penetrated into Kentucky, were on Cumberland, Green and Kentucky rivers, and, from the long time they were gone, have ever since been known in border history as "the long hunters." From here, in 1773, a surveying party, composed of James, George and Robert McAfee, James McCown, Jr., Hancock Taylor and Samuel Adams, started for Kentucky. They came down New river, and were joined on the Kanawha by Col. Thomas Bullitt and party. Col. Bullitt, for military services in the Braddock and Forbes wars, having just located the big bottom survey on which the city of Charleston

now stands; they went by canoes down the Kanawha and down the Ohio rivers to the mouth of Kentucky river, where the party separated. The McAfees and Hancock Taylor went up the Kentucky river, and on the 16th of July, 1773, surveyed six hundred acres where the city of Frankfort now stands, being the first survey ever made on that river. This river, like most other western streams, has had a variety of names and spellings before settling down to its present one. Thus it has been Milewa-kemecepewe, Kan-tuck-kee, Che-no-ee, Cut-ta-wa, Louisa, and now Kentucky. It is generally believed that Dr. Walker named it Louisa, but this may be a mistake, as elsewhere shown. Bullitt and others stopped at Big Bone lick and made a survey of land, July 5th; they then went on to the falls of the Ohio, called by the Miamis "Lewekeomi," where they surveyed, in August, 1773, a body of land at the mouth of "Bear Grass creek," the site of the present city of Louisville; so that this surveying party located, on this trip, and within a few weeks of each other, the sites of the now capital cities of two states — West Virginia and Kentucky — and one of the largest commercial cities of the Ohio valley — Louisville. The surveyors returned overland through Kentucky, by way of Powell's valley and gap; and, after experiencing extraordinary privation and suffering, made their way back to the New river settlement. From here started, the following year (1774), the surveying parties under John Floyd, Hancock Taylor, Douglas, and others, who were in the wilds of Kentucky when the border troubles commenced, which finally culminated in the battle of Point Pleasant; and to notify whom of the Indian dangers, and pilot them safely back, Gov. Dunmore dispatched Daniel Boone, then at the Clinch settlement. Boone's mission was successful; the surveyors (except Hancock Taylor, who was killed), and some colonists, were found, notified, and the surveyors and Boone returned overland, by way of the Clinch settlement; Boone having made 800 miles on foot, going and returning, in sixty-two days. From this New river settlement went many of the early, enterprising settlers of Kentucky, whose descendants have since made honorable records in the history of the state and nation, among whom may be mentioned the Pattons, Prestons, Breckenridges, Floyds, Triggs, Taylors, Todds, Campbells, Overtons, McAfees, etc., etc.

Col. Thomas Speed, of Louisville, Ky., through the "Filson Historical Club," has recently issued, under the above title, a valable and exceedingly interesting contribution to the history of the early routes of travel of the first emigrants to Kentucky. He describes two principal routes — one overland by way of New river, Fort Chiswell, Cumberland Gap and the Boone trace, and the other by the Braddock trail to Red Stone, or to Fort Pitt, and thence down the Ohio river, by boat.

A third and mixed route, partly by land and partly by water, passing down through Kanawha valley, deserves to be mentioned, as it was traveled by a good many, "in an early day." They came from the settlements along the border, or from farther east, by way of the frontier settlements, to this river, by land, and went from here by water; the mouths of Kelly's creek and Hughes' creek, where boats were built, being the usual points of embarkation, by the earlier voyagers. This way went the McAfees, James McCown, Samuel Adams, Hancock Taylor, Col. Thomas Bullitt, Douglas, John May, Jacob Sykes, Charles Johnson, John Flinn, John Floyd, Volney, and others. And many of the officers and men of Lewis' army, who afterward went to Kentucky, followed this route, having learned it in their trip to Point Pleasant. A little later, when settlements began north of the Ohio river, eastern Virginia and North Carolina sent a very large emigration by this route.

To return to the story of William and Mary Ingles and their lost children. These "babes in the wood" were the "skeletons in their closet." However otherwise happy and prosperous, here was an abiding and ever-present sorrow that marred every pleasure of their lives. The first thing heard from the children was that George, the youngest boy, had died not long after he was taken from the tender care of his mother at Scioto. This information first came through Mrs. Draper, on her return from captivity. Some years later, and after many ineffectual efforts had been made to recover, or even hear from the elder boy, Thomas, they met with a man named Baker, who had recently returned from a captivity among the Shawanees, in the Scioto country. It is believed that this was the William Baker who passed here in 1766 with Col. James Smith, a long-time Indian prisoner, on his way to explore the then unknown region between the Tennessee and Cumberland rivers. It turned out that Baker had lived in the same village with the Indian who had last adopted the boy as his son, and knew them both. William Ingles at once bargained with Baker to go back to the Indian country and ransom his boy and bring him home. Baker went down the valley of Virginia by Staunton to Winchester, across by Fort Cumberland (the site of an old Indian town called Cucuvatuc) to Fort Pitt, and thence down the Ohio to the Scioto. He found the Indian and made known his mission. After much negotiation, he succeeded in purchasing the boy, and paid out about $100 for his ransom; but the boy was not at all pleased with the arrangement; he knew nothing of the white parents they told him about, in the far-off country; he knew only his Indian father and mother, brothers and sisters, and playmates, and, last but not least, his sweethearts, the pretty little squaws, and he did not want to be sent away from them. Partly by coaxing and fair

promises, however, and partly by force, Baker got him started, but kept him bound until they got forty to fifty miles from the Indian village. As they passed along, the dusky little maidens, as they got a chance to talk, would try to persuade him not to go, or beg him to come back to them. The little fellow could not withstand their appeals unmoved, and determined to escape; but, as the surest means of doing so, he feigned contentment and perfect willingness to go, until Baker ceased to bind him at night, as he at first did, but only took him in his arms when they went to sleep, thinking the boy could not get out of his embrace without awakening him. When he awoke one morning, however, he found, to his surprise and chagrin, that the boy was missing. Fearing to go home and report his carelessness and the loss of the boy to his parents, Baker went all the way back to the Indian village to try to recover him; but the squaws had concealed him and would not give him up, and Baker had, at last, to go home without him. This was a sad disappointment and blow to Mr. and Mrs. Ingles, especially to the mother, whose womanly heart had been so strongly yearning for her long lost boy. They had found him now, however, and must recover him. William Ingles determined to go for him, himself, and hired Baker to go back with him. They started, and pursued the same circuitous and tedious route, but when they arrived at Fort Pitt they found that hostilities had broken out between the Indians and the frontier white settlements, and it was impossible, then, to prosecute the journey. With deep reluctance they abandoned the trip, for the time, and returned to their homes, to await the restoration of peace. It proved to be more than a year before it was considered safe to renew the effort. William Ingles then again employed Baker to accompany him, and started out over the same circuitous route, by Pattonsburg, Staunton, Winchester, Fort Cumberland, Fort Pitt, and down the Ohio. When they arrived at the Indian town, they found that a party of Indians, the father of the boy and the boy included, had gone to Detroit, and would not return for several weeks. This was a great disappointment, but there was no help for it; they could but wait. When the Detroit party returned, the Indian father and the boy came home with them, as expected. Much to the gratification and relief of the white father, the boy took to him kindly at once. The mysterious influence of "blood" and the instinct of filial love asserted themselves, and the boy promised, freely and without reserve, to accompany his father whenever and wherever he pleased. The terms of his surrender were then negotiated with his Indian father, and the ransom — this time about the equivalent of $150 — again paid. All these negotiations and conferences were conducted through Baker, as interpreter; the boy had lost all recollection of his mother tongue, his

Indian father could not speak English, and William Ingles did not speak Indian. Arrangements being completed, there was a general leave-taking, with good feeling all round. The boy bade a long farewell to his old, and started with his new-found father, and Baker, to the far-off home. After weeks of tedious travel, they at last arrived safely at Ingles' Ferry, and the long-lost boy, his mother's first-born, was again in her arms and smothered with a mother's loving kisses. Notwithstanding he was petted, humored and caressed at home, a wild fit would overcome him now and then, and he would wander off alone in the wilderness, with his bow and arrow, and stay for days at a time, and, when he returned, would give no account of himself, nor explanation of his conduct. These freaks disturbed his mother very much; she feared that he would some day take a notion to return to his Indian friends and wild life, and that she should never see him again. He learned pretty rapidly to speak English, but very slowly to read and write.

After acquiring at home some preliminary and rudimentary foundation for an education, his father sent him to the care of his old friend, Dr. Thomas Walker, of "Castle Hill," Albemarle county (the present seat of the Rives family, who are descendants of Dr. Walker), to see what could be done in the way of educating him. There was a school for young men at or near Dr. Walker's residence, Castle Hill. While in Albemarle, he made some progress in his studies; but books were not to his taste, and study was very irksome to him. While prosecuting his studies here, some three or four years in all, his remarkable history attracted attention, and he made many acquaintances, some of whom were afterward very distinguished people. Among them were Madison, Monroe, Jefferson, Patrick Henry, William Wirt, etc. His friend, Dr. Walker, had been the guardian of young Jefferson, during his minority, after his father's death. Young Ingles used to relate that he and Jefferson, both being musically inclined, took lessons on the violin together, from the same instructor. In after years, Jefferson, when governor of Virginia, gave him (Ingles) a commission of colonel of militia. He formed here another acquaintance, who made a deeper and more lasting impression on his after life. It was that of a young lady who had captured his wild heart. Soon after leaving Albemarle, he volunteered with the forces then being raised, to go with Gen. Lewis' army to Point Pleasant, in 1774. He was made lieutenant in his company, which was part of Col. Christian's regiment. Young Ingles was in one of the companies left to garrison the fort at Point Pleasant during the following winter. When relieved at the Point, he met some of his old Indian friends from Scioto, and, at their earnest solicitation, went home with them, and spent some time in a

social, friendly visit. Shortly after his return from this visit — in 1775 — he married Miss Eleanor Grills, the Albemarle sweetheart of his schoolboy days. Being disposed to settle down, but determined to be in the wilderness, his father gave him a tract of land on Wolf creek, a tributary of New river, in (now) Giles county. He remained here a few years, and had made fair progress in clearing out a farm, when he determined to move to what was then called Absalom's valley, now Abb's valley, on the upper Blue Stone, also a branch of New river, some distance below. This stream is called "Blue Stone" from the deep blue valley limestone over which it flows, and which gives such fertility to the beautiful valley. The same experience was repeated here. After one or two years in opening up a farm, he concluded he was too convenient to the Indian Blue Stone trail for safety, as parties were frequently passing over this route, to make depredations on the settlements farther south. He next located in "Burke's Garden," in (now) Tazewell county — a rich and beautiful little limestone valley, or oval basin, about ten miles by seven, almost surrounded by high mountains, and one of the most charming spots in the state. It is drained by Wolf creek, on which lower down, he had lived some years earlier. His father, William Ingles, had "taken up" the Burke's Garden lands under "Loyal Land Campany" authority, as early as 1753. James Burke, who came here from Ingles' Ferry in 1754, was the first settler, as elsewhere stated, and gave the place his name and his life. Thomas Ingles had but one neighbor in Burke's Garden — Joseph Hix by name, a bachelor, who lived within two miles. Ingles lived here in peace and apparent contentment until April, 1782, when a large party of Indians, led by the noted warrior, "Black Wolf," surrounded his house while he was out on the farm, and after taking his wife, three children and a negro man and woman prisoners, and taking as much as they could carry of whatever they found useful, loading the nego man and woman as well, they burned the house and everything that was left in it. When his attention was attracted by the smoke and fire, and the noise, Thomas Ingles started to his house; but being unarmed and seeing so large a force, he knew he could do no good, so he ran back to where he and a negro man were plowing, unhitched the horses, and each mounting one, they started to the nearest settlement for help. This settlement was in the "Rich Valley," or "Rich Patch," on the north fork of the Holston, and the present site of the "Washington Salt Works," about twenty miles distant. It happened to be a muster day, and most of the settlers round about were congregated here for drill. The messengers arrived about noon, and so soon as the facts were made known, fifteen or twenty men volunteered to go in pursuit of the Indians. They soon made their preparations

and started back, arriving at the site of Ingles' home early next morning; but there was nothing left but a pile of ashes. It so happened that Mr. Hix and his negro man were on their way to Thomas Ingles' house the morning before, when they discovered that the Indians had attacked and were destroying it. They at once started on foot across the mountain, to a small settlement six or seven miles distant. Here they got five or six volunteers and returned, reaching Burke's Garden about the same time that Thomas Ingles' party got there. They united their forces and started in pursuit. It was expected that the route of the Indians would be through or near the Clinch settlement, and it was about here that the whites first struck their trail. There was a company of militia stationed here for the protection of settlers on the frontier. Some of these joined the pursuing party, and Capt. Maxwell was put in command of the whole. The pursuit was made very cautiously, to prevent alarming the Indians and causing them to murder the prisoners. On the fifth day after the capture, some scouts sent in advance by the whites discovered the Indians where they had camped for the night, in a gap of Tug mountain. The pursuers held a consultation and decided that Captain Maxwell should take half the company, flank the Indians, and get round to their front and as near them as practicable, and that Thomas Ingles, with the other half, should remain in the rear, getting as close as possible, and at daylight the attack should be made simultaneously by both parties. Unfortunately, the night being very dark and the ground very rough and brushy, Captain Maxwell missed his way, got too far to one side, and did not get back within reach of the Indians by daylight. After waiting for Maxwell beyond the appointed time, and as the Indians began to stir, Thomas Ingles and his party determined to make the attack alone. So soon as a shot was fired, some of the Indians began to tomahawk the prisoners, while others fought and fled. Thomas Ingles rushed in and seized his wife just as she had received a terrible blow on the head with a tomahawk. She fell, covering the infant of a few months old, which she held in her arms. The Indians had no time to devote to it. They had tomahawked his little five-year-old daughter, named Mary, after his mother, and his little three-year-old son, named William, after his father. His negro servants, a man and woman, captured with his family, escaped without injury. In making their escape, the Indians ran close to Capt. Maxwell and party, and firing on them, killed Capt. Maxwell, who was conspicuous from wearing a white hunting shirt. He was the only one of the pursuers killed. The whites remained on the ground until late in the evening, burying Capt. Maxwell, who was killed outright, and Thomas Ingles' little son, who died from his wounds during the day. Mrs. Ingles and the

little girl were still alive though badly wounded. It was supposed that several Indians were killed in this engagement, but it was not certainly known. While the whites remained on the ground they heard the groans of apparently dying persons, but, as the sounds came from dense laurel thickets, they did not find them. This mountain pass through Tug ridge has ever since been known as "Maxwell's Gap," after the unfortunate Capt. Maxwell who lost his life here. When the dead had been buried, and the wounds of Mrs. Ingles and her little daughter had been dressed as well as practicable under the circumstances, the party started on their return to the settlements. Although only about twenty miles, it took four days to travel it, on account of the critical condition of Mrs. Ingles and her little girl. News of the capture of Thomas Ingles' family and the pursuit had reached the settlement at New river, and his father, William Ingles, had started out to Burke's Garden to see if he could render any assistance, and very thoughtfully, took with him the very best surgeon he could get. He met the returning party at the Clinch settlement. The little girl was beyond the skill of the doctor; she died from her wounds the next morning; but he rendered invaluable service to Mrs. Ingles, probably saving her life. He extracted several pieces of broken bone from her skull, dressed her wounds and attended her carefully until able to travel safely, when she and her husband and infant returned with William Ingles, to Ingles' Ferry, and remained there until next season. Mrs. Ingles, in the meantime, entirely recovered from her terrible wound. It is difficult now to appreciate the constant dangers which beset the early pioneers, or realize the readiness and cheerfulness with which they accepted the dangers, hardships, self-denials and privations incident to such a life. Probably the fullest and truest description of the conditions of border-life and the state of society existing along the western frontiers, about the time the first settlements began, was written by Rev. Dr. Joseph Doddridge, who was himself reared on the western border, on the upper Ohio, and was an unusually close and intelligent observer. His minuteness of detail, and lucidity of style, make his writings invaluable as record-pictures of the primitive condition of life on our western borders a hundred years and more ago.

William Ingles owned a number of slaves at Ingles' Ferry, and gave servants to his children as they were married and settled. These were the first slaves ever west of the Alleghenies, and those above mentioned, that had been given to Thomas Ingles, when he went housekeeping, were the first to cross New river westward.

In another little gem of a valley, not far distant, called "Abb's Valley," from Absalom Looney, its pioneer settler, who

came here in 1771, from about Looney's creek, near Pattonsburg, on James river, another bloody tragedy similar to that of Burke's Garden above described, was enacted about four years later. In July, 1786, a party of Shawanees, from the Ohio towns, led by the same stealthy and blood-thirsty Black Wolf, who had devastated the Ingles-Burke's Garden settlement, and who had also captured James Moore, Jr., in 1784, came up the Big Sandy, over Tug ridge and across the heads of Laurel creek to Abb's valley, where, on the 14th, they went to the house of Captain James Moore, who, with his brother-in-law, John Pogue, had located here in 1772. They found Captain Moore salting his stock, a short distance from the house, and shot him down; then rushing to the house, they killed two of his children, William and Rebecca, and John Simpson, who was a hired man or assistant and sick at the time. There were two other men in the harvest field, who fled and made their escape. These disposed of, the savages proceeded to make prisoners of Mrs. Moore, and her four remaining children — John, Jane, Mary and Peggy — and a Miss Martha Evans, of Augusta, who was living with the family. In their rapid retreat, it soon became evident that the boy, John, who was feeble, was an incumbrance and hindrance in their flight, and he was tomahawked and scalped in his mother's presence, and left by the wayside. Two days later, little Peggy, the babe, was brained against a tree. Arriving at one of the Indian towns on the Scioto, they heard of the death of some of their warriors, who had been killed in some engagement with the whites in Kentucky, and they determined, in council, that two of these prisoners should be burned at the stake, in retaliation. This terrible doom fell to the lot of Mrs. Moore and her eldest daughter, Jane — a pretty and interesting girl of sixteen. They were tied to stakes, in the presence of the remaining daughter and sister, and Miss Evans, and a vast crowd of exulting savages, slowly and crully tortured, after the manner of the fiendish race, with fire-brands and burning splints of pine, etc., until death a now welcome friend, an angel of mercy and a messenger of peace came to release them from their persecutors and their agonizing sufferings. Can pity lead to inflicting pain? Can kindness kill? Can mercy commit murder? Aye, even so, under some circumstances. What tender mercy it would have been in Simon Girty to shoot Colonel Crawford, as he piteously begged him to do, to end his fiery tortures. What cruelty it was not to kill him. In this case, an old hag of a squaw, with the feeble spark of humanity that survived in her savage breast kindled to a glow, and being surfeited by the excessive tortures and sufferings of Mrs. Moore, in gentle mercy and the kindness of her heart, gave the final coup de grace to Mrs. Moore, with a hatchet, thus shortening somewhat her already protracted

agonies. Mary Moore remained some years a prisoner among the Indians, and during the latter part of her stay with a white family, who treated her far more cruelly than the Indians. In September, 1784, two years prior to the circumstances above related, James Moore, Jr., aged fourteen — eldest son of the above mentioned Captain James Moore — had been captured near his father's home, in Abb's valley, by a small party of these Indians, passing through, composed of the Black Wolf, his son and one other, and taken, first, to the Shawanee towns of Ohio, and afterwards to the Maumee settlements in Michigan, and, still later sold to a white family at or near Detroit. Hearing, through Indian channels, of the terrible fate of his father's family, and that his sister Mary was a captive, not very far from him, he managed to communicate with her, first by message and, afterward in person, and to comfort her. In October, 1789, James and Mary Moore, and Miss Martha Evans, were all ransomed by their friends, and restored to relatives in the valley of Virginia where James Moore, Sr., and wife, and Miss Evanas had been reared. James Moore, Jr., not long after, returned to Abb's valley, where he lived, and reared a family, and died, in 1851, in the eighty-first year of his age, and where his son, a venerable and honored citizen, now eighty-eight, still owns and occupies, in peace and happiness, the possessions secured to him and his descendants by the blood and tears of his ancestors. Mary Moore married a distinguished Presbyterian minister, Rev. John Brown, of Rockbridge county, and was the mother of a large family, five or six of whom became Presbyterian ministers; one of whom, the late Rev. James Brown, D. D., whose memory is warmly cherished by all the older citizens of this place (Charleston, W. Va.,) was for a quarter of a century, pastor of the first Presbyterian church of this city. Dr. James Brown had but two sons who attained their majority; both were Presbyterian ministers. The eldest, Rev. Samuel Brown, died at his pastorate in Greenbrier county, in early life. The younger, Rev. John Brown, is, and has been for a number of years, pastor of the Presbyterian church at Malden, Kanawha county. Many years ago, Dr. James Brown, discovering unusual sprightlines in a poor and friendless Irish boy, took him home with him, and in the kindness of his heart, reared and educated him with his own sons. This (then) poor lad became the late distinguished Rev. Dr. Stuart Robinson, D. D., LL. D., who achieved a national reputation as a successful teacher, eloquent preacher and able author. The story of the sufferings of James Moore and family, and especially of the survivor, Mary Moore, was very touchingly told by the late Rev. James Brown, her son, in a little volume called "The Captives of Abb's Valley," published some forty years ago, and which is well remembered by our elderly citizens.

From this little volume, chiefly, the foregoing sketch is condensed. There is another incident connected with the murder and capture of Captain Moore's family which is of interest enough to be perpetuated, especially as it illustrates a fact often mentioned by the early pioneers—that is: that civilized (?) horses have a very strong antipathy to Indians. They scent them at a distance, and show their displeasure and fear by snorting, pawing, etc., and will flee, if they can. After the murders and captures, the Indians proceeded to appropriate the horses, as a matter of course. Captain Moore had a fine black horse called Yorick—a very powerful and a very vicious horse. He was controllable enough by Captain Moore, and by Simpson, who had attended him, but he would let no one else ride him or handle him. One of the Indians, in attempting to mount him, was knocked down and pawed, and killed or crippled; a second one tried it with the same result, when the leader of the party, a very determined and very powerful man, declared that he would ride him or kill him; he mounted him, but was no sooner on than off, and, while down, the horse sprang upon him and, with hoofs and teeth, killed him before he could recover his feet; whereupon the other Indians shot and stabbed the horse to death, after which they buried the large Indian close to the stable and departed. Dr. Brown does not mention this incident in his narrative, but the writer has taken the pains to ask of Mr. William Moore, by letter, what he knows or believes about the tradition. He says he has reason to believe that it is substantially true, and that when his father, Mr. James Moore, the captive, returned to Abb's valley, he plowed up, in plowing his fields, near the old stable, a skeleton of unusual size, which was believed to be that of the large man killed by the horse. It is known that the leader of the several parties who captured Thomas Ingles' family, in Burke's Garden, in 1782, captured James Moore, Jr., in 1784, and destroyed the family of James Moore, Sr., in 1786, was named Black Wolf. As he is not afterward heard of along the borders, it is strongly probable that it was the veritable Black Wolf whose career had been so ingloriously terminated by the horse Yorick; and this suggests the probable identity of Black Wolf and Wolf, the son of Cornstalk. Cornstalk had a son called Wolf, who went to Williamsburg with Lord Dunmore, after the treaty at Camp Charlotte, ostensibly, as a hostage, with other Indians, but more likely, really, to be manipulated in the interest of Dunmore and the English against the colonies. When Gov. Dunmore fled, the Indians returned to their wilderness homes. There is no recorded after history of Wolf, unless it be as Black Wolf, who had just the huge physical frame and bold, daring traits of character that we should expect a son to inherit from such a father. This, of course, is not history, but simply conjecture, based upon reasonable probabilities.

CHAPTER VII.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

REBECCA DAVIDSON — HUNTING IN "YE OLDEN TIME" — HOW THE SPORT WAS ARRANGED — EXCITEMENT AND DANGERS — "BUCK AGUE" — THE INGLES FAMILY CLOCK — TICKING FOR SEVERAL GENERATIONS — MORALIZING ON "YE GRANDFATHER'S" TIME PIECE — A CENTURY'S CHANGES — CONTRAST BETWEEN NOW AND THEN — PICTURE OF PLANTATION LIFE.

NEARLY three years after the destruction of Captain James Moore's family, and about the time of the recovery, from captivity, of James Moore, Jr., and his sister Mary, the family of one of their former neighbors, Andrew Davidson, were the victims of another raid of the Indians into that region. The family of Mr. Davidson consisted of himself and wife, Rececca, two little girls and a little boy, and two bound children, a girl and boy. Andrew Davidson himself had gone on a trip down to the Shenandoah valley; during his absence, there being no male protector about his house, the Indians suddenly made their appearance, and, in broken English, told Mrs. Davidson she and her family must go with them. This was a terrible fate, under any circumstances, but to Mrs. Davidson, it was especially painful and trying, as she was about to become a mother; this, however, was no valid excuse in their eyes. Go she must, whatever the suffering to her. She undertook to carry her little boy, less than two years old; seeing that it was too much for her, the Indians took it from her. She expected to see them kill it before her eyes, but was greatly relieved when, instead, they carried it along, good-naturedly, for her. Somewhere on the route, nature's period being probably somewhat hastened by the unusual physical exertion and mental anxiety, Mrs. Davidson introduced to this world of suffering and sorrow the little expected stranger. Both mother and babe were spared, for the time being; but the circumstance was not allowed to interfere with the progress of the journey. Fortunately for Mrs. Davidson, she enjoyed remarkably fine physical health and strength; unenervated by the inactive life and luxurious habits of the ladies of this day; she was equal to the emergency, and resumed the journey, next morning, with the babe in her arms. After a day

or two, the infant became ill and troublesome, when one of the Indians coolly took it from her and pitched it into Tug river and drowned, together, the little life and its sorrows and sufferings, so inauspiciously begun, regardless of the anguish of the sorrowing mother. When they arrived at the Indian towns, her two little girls, to her great horror, were tied to trees and shot to death, for sport. The little two-year-old boy was given to an old squaw, who started away with him in a canoe, which, by some means, was upset and the little fellow drowned. The two bound children were separated from her, and were never afterward heard of by her. Two years after this, Andrew Davidson visited the Indian towns in Ohio, in search of his wife; he found some of those who had participated in her capture; they told him she was alive, but would not tell him where she was. Next year, they sent him word that she was somewhere in Canada; so he started again in search of her. In passing a comfortable farmhouse, in Canada, about noon one day, he stopped to get some dinner, and, while waiting for the meal, a woman passed him, and seemed to examine him very critically; but, as he was deeply absorbed with the thoughts of his wife, and anxious for his dinner, he paid no attention to her. She went on to where the lady of the house (her mistress) was, and said to her, excitedly: "I know who that man is," and, rushing back into his presence, and throwing herself into his arms, cried out: "Andrew Davidson, I am your wife!" And so she was; but, oh, what changes her grief and sorrows had wrought! She was looking thin and haggard, and her once black and glossy hair had turned snowy white, though she was but a young woman. What happiness! and what sorrow! They were at last restored to each other; but, alas! their little children were all gone. The gentleman with whom Mrs. Davidson was living proved to be a humane man; he gave her up without ransom or reward, and voluntarily contributed to the expense of her return home, though he had paid the Indians a high price for her. They returned to their home, where they lived to rear another family. The Davidsons were related to the Peerys, a prominent family of the Clinch settlement. The Peerys were intermarried with the Crocketts, one of the most numerous families of southwest Virginia, and the Crocketts and Ingles and Draper families were intermarried. Mrs. Ingles and Mrs. Davidson knew each other well. With what thrilling interest they must have compared notes and discussed their painful captive experiences!

William Ingles (the elder) died at Ingles' Ferry, in the prime of life, in the fall of 1782, aged fifty-three. Col. William Christian and Col. Daniel Trigg were the executors of his will, and received 346 acres of Burke's Garden land for their services. Mrs. Mary Ingles, his widow, lived to a ripe old age, dying at

Ingles' Ferry in February, 1815, in her eighty-fourth year. She retained a large amount of physical vigor and mental clearness to the last. Mrs. Gov. John Floyd, who lived near her and knew her well, writing about her in 1843, speaks of meeting her (Mrs. Ingles) at a religious association, or convention, which she had attended on horseback, thirty miles from home, when past eighty. Her step was then still elastic, her figure erect, and her complexion florid and healthy, though her hair was white as snow. The old lady delighted, in her later years, to tell over to her children and grandchildren, the story of her terrible captivity and wonderful escape.

One of the children of John Ingles and Margaret, the late Mrs. Malinda Charlton, an aged and venerable lady, recently deceased, in her eighty-fifth year, was the last surviving grandchild of William and Mary Ingles. She was, to the last, clear in mind, and enjoyed a fair state of health and physical preservation. She remembered her grandmother well, having lived in the same house with her from her own infancy until the death of the old lady, in 1815. To her remarkable memory we are indebted for many facts and incidents related in the foregoing sketches of the family. She was a wonderful connecting link between the past and the present — the old and the new — bringing down the days of her grandmother to those of her own grandchildren, the two lives spanning the great time of more than a century and a half, from the birth of her grandmother, Mary Draper, at Philadelphia, in 1732, nearly to the present writing, in 1890, and she (Mrs. Charlton), but recently deceased. What wonderful changes the world has witnessed in these 154 years! What a wonderful fact, that a person so recently living should have known, and remembered the first white woman (at least, of English descent) ever between the Alleghenies and the Pacific; and that woman her own grandmother!

In illustration of the customs of half a century and more ago, it may not be without interest to describe here an old-time "family fall hunt," an institution now obsolete in this part of the world, and even the recollections of which are fast fading away. In those days game was very abundant, and the fall hunt was one of the events of the year. It was looked forward to for months in advance with pleasurable anticipations, by old and young, male and female. About 1830 and earlier, Col. John Ingles, son of William and Mary, owned large boundaries of wild land on the "Little river" herein above mentioned, and Reed Island creek, tributaries of the upper New river, and had a hunting station between them, on "Greasy creek," a tributary of the latter. There were several log cabins on the premises, for the accommodation of the hunters. A trusted family of old servants lived here to take care of the place, raise poultry and fruit, and

keep bees for honey. About September, invitations would be sent out for twenty or thirty friends, male and female, in several neighboring counties. Out of these, probably a dozen or twenty would attend, of whom about one-third, usually, would be ladies, married and single. Most of the party would rendezvous at Ingles' Ferry, and go together from there; others would join the company at the camp. At the appointed time one or more wagons would start out with bedding, linen, etc., cooking utensils, table-ware, table comforts, some medicinal liquors, a few extra guns and necessary ammunition for those who might come without their own; a keeper of the hounds, with a large pack of dogs, necessary cooks, hostlers, etc., a banjo and a fiddle, a pack of cards and a few books or magazines for the ladies, and the outfit was complete. Arrived upon the ground, and the comfort of the ladies looked after, the first day's hunt would be planned by the old campaigners, choosing the ground over which they should hunt, and allotting to each his separate duty — some to follow the hounds, some to still-hunt, and others to be posted at the well known "stands" where the deer were sure to pass the gaps or ridges, or cross the streams. This done, all would retire to an early rest, to dream of the exciting pleasures of the morrow's hunt. In those days, there was a famous gun-maker in the neighborhood, named Spangler, who was a born mechanic, and had acquired great skill and achieved great reputation in his art. He was the second or third of the name, in line, who had followedthe business. No hunter for many counties around considered his hunting outfit complete, or creditable, unless he had a rifle with the Spangler brand on it. They were plain, old-fashioned rifles, with flint-locks, but wonderfully accurate. Before day the keeper of the hounds would sound his horn, which would set all the dogs howling, making longer sleep impossible, and arouse everybody on the place. Breakfast would be ready by daylight, and, by the time that was over, horses were saddled and ready, and "all hands" were off for the stands or the chase. One half of the dogs would be taken out, and the remainder left in the kennell, and thus alternated day by day, having each day fresh dogs. It was a disappointment if at least one or more deer or bear were not killed each day, beside turkeys, pheasants, etc. The party would return to the camp about four or five o'clock, depending on the distance, the luck, etc. By the time all were in, and washed and ready, a royal game dinner, smoking hot, would be served, probably supplemented by apple dumplings and honey in the comb, all seasoned by that best of all sauces, a sharp appetite. During and after dinner, the gentlemen would recount the adventures of the day, and plan the hunt for the morrow, after which there might be a game of cards, some music by Sambo, and a little quiet courting among the young folks, if the

proper parties happened to be present. After an early rest and refreshing sleep, all would be ready to renew the pleasures of the chase on the following day; and so on, successively, for a week, or ten days, or two weeks, depending upon the weather, the success of the hunt and the congeniality of the company. In these everglades and cranberry meadows on the western slopes of the Blue ridge, where droves of deer and other game then roved at will, unmolested save by these fall hunts, once a year, are now settlements, farms and family habitations, and the game and the exciting sport of the chase are gone forever. In the writer's youth he attended one of the last, if not, indeed, the very last, of these formal family fall hunts, of the order above described. Here he experienced the first touch of the malady termed by the old nimrods "buck ague"—not very fatal, usually, at either end of the gun, but violent and exciting while it lasts. There were, on the occasion mentioned, about a dozen and a half persons present, several of them ladies, married and single. The writer was the youngest person in the party, and is now, save one other, the only survivor. All the others have gone over to the happy—or rather, let us hope, the *happier*—hunting ground beyond.

Beside the writer the old Ingles' family clock now stands ticking. As early as he can remember anything, he remembers the slow, measured tick, tick, tick, of this rare old clock, and the sonorous, silvery notes of its musical bell. And so it has ticked and struck, and counted off the fleeting hours, year after year, for generation after generation. According to the family tradition, the clock was constructed about 1738, and has been running since that time, and is now consequently, over a century and a half old. Its early history, before the time of William and Mary Ingles, is not now accurately known, but after this time it is quite clear, and is identified with the family history. It probably ticked for Thomas Ingles (the immigrant) and his children. It certainly ticked for William and Mary Ingles and their children. It ticked for John Ingles and his children. It ticked for his daughter and her children. It is now ticking for the present owner (J. P. H.), a great-grandson of William and Mary Ingles. The clock is a handsome piece of furniture, has a black walnut case, silvered face, brass works, is eight feet high, runs eight days, records the hours, minutes and seconds, the days of the month and changes of the moon, and bids fair to do duty for an indefinite time in the future as an accurate and reliable time-keeper. From the early date of the Ingles and Draper settlement west of the Alleghenies, it is safe to assume that this remarkable old clock was the *first* that ever crossed the Alleghenies, and was the first in all that vast territory between the Allegheny mountains and the Pacific ocean to tick and tell

of the passing moments which, hitherto, through all past time, had glided by unheeded, unmeasured and unrecorded. This clock suggests some curious and interesting reflections to those inclined to indulge themselves in that way. If every tick records the departure of a soul from this world, as is claimed, then think of the millions of millions of humans that have played their brief parts on the stage of life and passed on since this clock began its monotonous ticking! Think of how many mighty rulers, kings and emperors, have reigned, clothed with brief authority, and gone their way! What dynasties, great and small, have arisen and gone down! What changes in the maps of the World! What progress in art, science, education, general enlightenment and human comfort! Look at the changes that have occurred in our own country — then but a scattered British colony along the Atlantic slope, now a grand republic, the pride of its citizens and the admiration of the world, extending from ocean to ocean, with nearly sixty-five millions of enlightened people, and with more population now, within a radius of five miles around Trinity steeple, New York, than in the whole country "when this old clock was new." It is not possible, of course, to tell how long this clock may continue to run, but it is in good and sound condition, and, if it should meet with no disaster or violent end, there is no good reason why it should not last another 150 years, or more. It is a curious thought, and not without sadness, that of all the millions and millions of living beings on earth when this clock ticked its first second, and rang out its first hour, not one is left to bear witness; and whatever other changes may come in the future, it is safe to say that every soul and every living creature now on earth will have fulfilled its destiny here and gone hence, and their places been filled by countless millions yet unborn, before this old clock ceases to measure, tick by tick, the tiny seconds that go to make up the years and the ages as time rolls on!

In writing the foregoing sketches, the writer has often had occasion to think of the wonderful changes that have occurred in the condition of the world, not only since the Pioneer-Trans-Allegheny-Draper-Meadows-Ingles-Ferry settlements of nearly a century and a half ago, but of the even more rapid progress that has been made within the much shorter time of his own life and recollections — say within a period of about sixty years. So much has he been struck and impressed by a review of the rapid advances of this rapidly advancing age, that he is led to believe that a retrospective glance over the period would astonish, interest and, possibly instruct very many persons who have not had occasion or happened to give the subject special thought. To aid them in such a retrospect he will present, from his own recollections, a short sketch of the condition of every

day life existing in a rich, prosperous and representative agricultural and grazing community, in the upper New river valley, at the time indicated, and will enumerate some of the many items and instances of progress and advance in all the needs, uses and operations of man which scientific invention and discovery have given to them, and to the world at large, within the time named, and let each reader, for himself, compare the past with the present, the old with the new, and each for himself decide whether or not "the good old times" were better than the new.

A large proportion of the families in the region above alluded to — now Montgomery and Pulaski counties, Va. — were, at the time indicated, wealthy or well-to-do, and largely engaged in cultivating the soil and stock-raising, living upon the fat of the land, very independently and very much within themselves; none the less happy and contented, perhaps, because they lacked the innumerable conveniencies and luxuries of this later day, so many of which now seem to us indispensable. Each family had among its servants trained and skilled mechanics — a blacksmith to shoe horses, "upset" the old-fashioned plows, iron the wagons and carts, repair the farm utensils, and other promiscuous work; the carpenter would build and repair the houses, barns, etc., and make or mend the wagons, carts, wheel-barrows, water-pails, butter-ferkins, etc., the shoemaker would make and mend the shoes worn by all the family, white and black. The female servants were all taught to sew, spin and knit, and a certain number of them were taught weaving. On every large estate, the blacksmith's and carpenter's shop, the shoemaker's shop and the loom house were as invariable as the dwelling house, the barn and the crib. The servant women spun and wove linen goods for summer, and woolen flannels and jeans for winter wear; also, nice bedquilts, counterpanes, etc., and the hosiery was knitted by the older women. There were fulling mills near, that "fulled" and dyed the woolen goods. They made a beautiful black jeans, then much worn by men and boys. The mistress of the house was generally expert in cutting garments, for white and black; and, when so cut, the females, white and black, would make them up by hand sewing. They raised their geese and made their own feather-beds and pillows. These farmers raised their own hogs and cured their own bacon for the year. They had beef and mutton, poultry and eggs, butter and cheese, milk and honey, fruit and vegetables, without stint. They never thought of buying any of these things, but sold or bartered their surplus for their sugar, coffee, tea, etc. They never sold fruit, vegetables, etc., to their neighbors, but divided freely with those who needed. Most of them distilled their own peach and apple brandies, and enjoyed an apple-jack toddy, or "peach and

honey." These were kept on the side-board and offered to all comers. The ladies made a nice domestic wine from currants. Every fall, each farmer would send his team to the Washington County Salt works for the year's supply of salt, and land plaster for manure. In season, a stock of wood was provided for winter fires, the winter apples were put up, peaches and apples dried, fruits preserved, the cider and apple-butter made, and honey taken for winter use. They made their own alkali by leaching wood ashes, and made their own soap from this alkali and the kitchen greases. They made a delicious lie hominy by steeping new corn, in whole grains, in this strong alkali, to remove the outer bran. They also made cracked hominy with home-made hominy mortar and pestle. They raised their own hemp, spun their own twine and twisted their own ropes, for all domestic uses. Flax was raised, retted, broken, scutched, hackled, spun, woven, cut, made and worn, at home. Wool was raised, carded, spun, woven or knitted, dyed, made and worn, at home. Servants were allowed private patches, in which they raised their own tobacco, watermelons and some vegetable, and, the more provident, a pig or two and some chickens. In those days, a few tomatoes, then called "love apples," were raised in gardens, as curiosities, but were not eaten. The days of canned fruits and vegetables, fish and meats, had not yet arrived. Patent butter, made from tallow or lard, was not then known; the honest cow still held the monopoly of the butter trade. Horseshoes and horseshoe nails, now made by machinery, were then all made by hand. The modern patent plows and steam plows were not then made. Grain was cut with sickle or cradle, and threshed with the flail or by horses' feet. The patent mowers, reapers, threshers, corn-planters, corn-shellers, and the long list of modern agricultural implements, had not yet taken form in the inventive brains of those who were destined to bless the world with them, and enrich themselves. The travel of those days was mostly by horseback, or private vehicles, or stage-coaches and canal-boats. There were no railroads then, no telegraphs, telephones, microphones, photophones, autophones, etc. No bicycles, no roller skates, no patent spring rubber bottle-stoppers. Therewere no modern buggies then, and no eliptical steel springs for wheeled vehicles. Private carriages, like stages, were hung on leather belts or bands. There were no lever brakes for wagons and carriages. Wheels had to be dead-locked by looped chains. There were no screw-propellers in steam navigation; no sternwheel boats, and but few of any sort. Photography was then unknown. Portraits and miniatures were painted in oil, or sketched with crayons. There were no chromos then, or other cheap pictures; no aniline dyes, no illustrated daily papers. The number of periodicals then published was but a beggarly list as compared with to-day. Percus-

sion caps,needle-guns,fixed ammunition,modern revolvers,breach loaders, gatling and magazine guns, were yet unknown. The flint-lock rifle was then the standard small arm, and its accompaniments were the shot-pouch (generally made out of wild-cat, panther or deer skin), bullet-molds and a carved powder-horn, and, with these, a leather belt and a butcher-knife. There were no rifle nor long-ranged cannon, no armor-plated ships, no torpedo boats, no dynamite, gun-cotton or nitro-glycerine; no monitors, no sub-marine armor, no ocean cables, no suspension bridges, no elevated or underground railways, no pneumatic tubes. The cotton gin was not yet invented. Cotton-seed oil was not made. Lard oil was not known, Peruvian guano and South Carolina phosphates were not discovered, and chemical fertilizers were not manufactured.

There were no deep-well boring tools, no diamond core-drills, no deep-sea soundings.

The gulf streams and ocean currents were not then understood. The atmospheric laws and movements were not then known and charted. "Old Probs," with his weather predictions and records, had not yet come to the front. Geology and chemistry were then in their infancy. Improved telescopes, have, since then, made vast progress in astronomical discovery and knowledge. The spectroscope, then unknown, has revealed the secrets of the far distant fixed stars and nebulæ. The microscope has opened up a new world of wonders in the opposite direction. The little baccillus "comma," recently discovered by it, may yet be brought to a "full stop," and the cholera scourge with it. Inoculation for rabies was not yet tried. Darwin's evolution theory, now generally accepted by the intelligent, had not then been broached. The northwest Arctic passage had not then been sailed through, and thus demonstrated. Livingstone and Stanley had not yet opened up the geographical and race mysteries of Central Africa. The South African diamond fields were then unknown. The California and Australia gold mines, Colorado silver mines, Lake Superior copper mines and the Missouri Iron mountain, were then undiscovered. Sodium, potassium, aluminum, and other metals and metalloids and their alloys, were unknown.. There were then no "jetties" to scour out river mouths, and no adjustible dams for river navigation improvement. There were no steam fire engines, no Holly water system, no steam drills for tunnel boring, no Thames tunnel, no Alpine tunnels for railroads, no railroads for tunnels. There was then no wood paper pulp, no paper twine, no paper bags, no paper collars, no paper car wheels, no wall-paper, no parchment paper for records, no paper-mache. Probably the first paper mill west of the Alleghenies and south of Mason's and Dixon's line, was erected in "'Possum Hollow," between

Ingles' Ferry and Draper's valley. There were no circular saws, no band saws, nor patent log turners for saw mills. There were no steam pressure brick machines, no steel wire-lines, no time-locks for bank safes, no elevators nor enunciators for hotels, no aneroid barometers, no anemometers, no self-registering thermometers, no electrical clocks, no water-tube safety boilers, no hard-brick, board-floor street paving, no Nicholson blocks, asphalt or Belgium-block street-paving, no wood or iron planing machines, no gimblet-pointed screws, no coal-digging machines. There were then no postal stamps, no postal cards, no postal money orders, no envelopes, no blotting paper. The letter was folded, tucked in and stuck with a wafer, or with sealing-wax. The ink was dried with a dark sand, instead of blotting paper. The writing was done with goose-quill pens; steel and gold pens were yet unknown. There were no type-writers, no manifold writers, no fountain pens, no indellible pencils. The postage on a letter was 25 cents, 18¾ cents, etc., prepaid or "C. O. D." Slavery had not then been abolished in America. The Russian serfs had not been emancipated. The African slave trade had not been interdicted by the civilized powers. Universal suffrage and free schools had not been adopted in the United States. Since then Uncle Sam has enlarged his domains by a strip of territory extending from the gulf of Mexico to the Pacific, from Texas to California inclusive, and another Pacific strip from the British line to the frozen oceans. Our population was then but 10,000,000, and is now about 65,000,000. There were then no friction matches, or Lucifers as called when first made, and afterward "Loco-foco" matches. Gentlemen who smoked carried "sun glasses" in their vest pockets, and concentrated the sun's rays to light their pipes; and, in the absence of sunshine, resorted to "flint and steel" (usually a jack-knife and a gun flint), and a piece of punk. The currency, at that day, was reckoned more by pounds, shillings and pence (£ s. d.) than in dollars and cents, but it was based upon the Virginia standard of 16⅔ cents to the shilling. "Uncle Sam" had not then coined the smaller decimal currency. There were no nickels or dimes, but, instead, 6¼ and 12½ cent pieces, called "fourpence-ha'penny" and "ninepence" respectively; 25 cents was "18 pence;" 50 cents was "three shillings," 62½ cents was "three and ninepence," 75 cents was "four and sixpence," $1.60 was "nine shillings," $2.50 was "15 shillings," etc. In some places the 12½ cent piece was called a "bit," in others a "levy," and, farther south, the 6¼ cent piece was called a "picayune." Greenbacks were then unknown, and many have but a slight acquaintance with them yet, Quinine was unknown. Bromine and the bromides were not yet made. Anæsthetics were not yet introduced. If one had to have a tooth pulled, or a leg sawed off, he had to "grin and bear it," taking

the pain in the old-fashioned way. Calomel and jalap, opium and ipecac, bark and the lancet, were the standard remedies of the doctors in those days. The Thompsonian remedies, Nos. 1 to 6, were much in vogue with the quacks. The modern great patent medicine trade was not then developed. The pedagogues of that day prescribed and administered "oil of birch" with great freedom. Parties differed as to the "happy effects" according to the stand-point from which the subject was considered. The preachers prescribed caloric and sulphur with a reckless disregard to economy. Sanitary measures were then less perfectly understood and practiced, and the average duration of human life was considerably less than at present. For lights at night, the common dependence was upon the home-made tallow-dips, with accompanying candlestick and snuffers; and, for a better light, the wax or the spermaceti candle. Star candles were not yet known, and petroleum and coal-oil lamps were far in the future. There were no gas lights (New York was the first lighted with gas, in 1827), no gas engines, no electric lights, no electric motors. There were no street railroads, no horse-cars. Modern cook stoves and ice machines were alike unknown. There were no baking-powders, no patent yeast-cakes. Gas-well fuel was unknown. There were no India-rubber or gutta-percha goods. Jute fiber was not yet utilized. The long lists of patent churns and washing machines were not yet invented. There were no steam tanneries, no steam pumps, no steam hammers, no drawn or lap-welded tubes, no turning-lathes for shoe-lasts, axe-handles, and other irregular forms, no electro-plated goods, no sand-blast carving or glass-cutting, no four-pronged silver table forks, no silver-plated knives. There were no cotton compresses, no grain elevators, no coal elevators. No beet root sugar, sorghum molasses, nor glucose; no rolling mills, no iron, steel or paper hulls for boats, no iron or steel bridges, no iron house-fronts, iron roofs iron mantels, iron bank safes, iron power-punches and shears, no metallic coffins, no machine-made barrels, no steam-cut nor cylinder-sawed barrel staves, no roller-process flour. Wood was the domestic fuel of the country. Iron was melted with charcoal. Anthracite was but just discovered. Coke was not yet manufactured. The world's fairs and national expositions, those great educators, had not yet been inaugurated. Sewing machines had not yet come in response to the "Song of the Shirt" and the wail of the women. "Home, Sweet Home" and "Dixie" had not then been composed and sung; "The Star-Spangled Banner" was but newly written and sung, and "Hail Columbia" was not old. Knitting machines, spinning jennies and power-looms had not yet appeared. Lager beer had not then tickled the throats of the thirsty. Spring-bed mattresses were unknown luxuries. Mosquito bars were equally unknown. Modern extension din-

ning-tables and adjustable reclining chairs were not known. Wooden shoe-pegs were not yet made, nor pegged shoes nor metal-tipped shoes. There were no "incline" tracks and passenger cars in use for elevated sites, like those up the Cincinnati hills. There were no steam whistles to torture human tympanums; no steam calliope music; no steam radiators for warming buildings. In the matter of dress there have been striking, changes, as in other things. Ladies' dresses, and the styles and fashions thereof, come and go, changing often; as the new becomes old, the old becomes new again. The writer is not learned in the mysteries of ladies' wear and fashions. He only knows that the ladies are all pretty, and that they lend beauty and charm to the fashions. Gentlemen's styles change more slowly. Many elderly gentlemen at the time mentioned, still wore queues, ruffled shirts, knee-breeches and long stockings, knee and shoe buckles, etc. Pantaloons were then made with a square flap in front, instead of the up and down seam, as now. Gentlemen's every-day wear was home-made jeans; the formal dress was "broadcloth." There were then no button gaiters, nor patent-leather boots and shoes. Spotted calico shirts, and celluloid cuffs and collars, and even detached linen cuffs and collars were not then worn, or known, by the young bloods. Pins and needles were still made by hand; cloth-covered buttons were unknown; hooks and eyes were largely used by the ladies, instead of buttons.

This seems a formidable list, though it is far from exhaustive, and could easily be very greatly extended; but this is enough to show what tremenduously progressive strides the world has taken within a lifetime, and to excite the wonder of the present generation as to how former generations got along without the comforts, conveniences and luxuries which we now take "as a matter of course," and enjoy unthoughtedly and unthankfully. Will the world continue to advance as it has done? is a question often asked. That continued and rapid progress will still be made seems certain; but that the next or any future sixty years will witness as wonderful a forward bound as the last sixty — which has grown largely out of the unparalleled development of steam and electricity — may well be doubted; although, in view of the infinite mysteries and resources of nature to be discovered, explored and developed, and the, as yet, unknown limit of the power and scope of the human mind to grapple them, it becomes us to be very modest and conservative in limiting our predictions as to future progress. "He is a very bold man," said the wise Frenchman, "who dares to pronounce the word *impossible.*"

CHAPTER VIII.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

DANIEL BOONE — CAREER OF THE ILLUSTRIOUS PIONEER — HIS LIFE IN THE KANAWHA VALLEY — BATTLE OF POINT PLEASANT — ITS FAR REACHING IMPORTANCE — EVENTS LEADING THERETO — FORCES ENGAGED — THE INDIAN SIDE — OUTRAGES THAT INFURIATED THEM — GRAPHIC DESCRIPTION OF THE CONFLICT.

KANAWHA VALLEY was for about twelve years the residence of that remarkable man, Daniel Boone, who deserves more than a mere passing notice, especially as it is not well known to the public, and not now very generally known even here. A few years ago the writer published, in pamphlet form, a short history of his residence in this valley, and will here give a condensed sketch from facts therein contained. His biographers, of whom there are half a dozen or more, devote themselves to his wonderful Kentucky experiences, from 1769 to about 1785, after which they seem to know but little about him, although he lived for thirty odd years after leaving Kentucky. His Kanawha experiences are disposed of in a paragraph or two, to the effect that, about 1792, he settled for a time in Western Virginia, and about 1797 went to Missouri, etc. Instead of in 1792, he probably settled at the mouth of the Kanawha as early as 1786, as there is a deed for land in Kentucky, signed and acknowledged by himself and wife, at Point Pleasant, Va., April 28, 1786, and on record in Fayette county, Ky. While at Point Pleasant, tradition says, he lived on the bank of Crooked Creek, made famous by the battle of the Point. Elderly persons at the point still remember the log cabin, now long gone, in which he is said to have lived. It is supposed that he moved up to this neighborhood about 1788 or '89, and, while here, lived on the south side of the river, nearly opposite the original salt spring. Dr. L. C. Draper, LL. D., who has in preparation and, it is hoped, will shortly publish, an exhaustive biography of Boone, is inclined to think that his residence opposite the salt spring was not a settled family residence, but only a hunting camp, of which he had many. The local traditions here indicate that it was his regular family residence, and his son Jesse Boone, lived at the same place until

about 1816. When the writer came to the county, in 1840, there were still living old men who had hunted and trapped with him; one of them, Mr. Paddy Huddlestone, related many interesting incidents of their joint hunting, trapping and camping experiences. The late Jared Huddlestone, son of Paddy, remembered well to have heard his father tell of his first acquaintance with Boone. A stranger, with rifle and pack, came to his father's (Paddy's) house one evening, about dusk, and asked to stay all night; he seemed tired, did not tell who he was, had but little to say, and soon retired to rest. Next morning, when the family got up for the usual early breakfast, the stranger, with his rifle, was out and gone, but his pack remained, indicating that he had not gone far. It was not long until he came in and got his breakfast, remarking that, as he was an early riser, he had been looking around a little to see if there were any signs of game about, and told them he had discovered fresh beaver signs near the house. He asked if they had any traps; they told him they had no beaver traps, but had a steel trap for catching foxes. "Well," said he to Paddy, "come, young man, get your trap and go with me, and I will show you how to catch beaver." The first day they caught five, and, within a few days, exterminated the colony — about a dozen in all. The steel trap is now in the possession of the writer. The sign which Boone had found was two saplings cut down from a triangle of them, and the beavers had commenced on the third sapling, which, to-day, is a red oak tree, about two feet in diameter, standing at the upper end of Long Shoal, a few miles below the Kanawha Falls. On the 6th of October, 1789, Kanawha county was organized. Of the military organization Col. Samuel Lewis, brother of Gen. Andrew, was colonel, and Daniel Boone, lieutenant colonel. The county was entitled to two representatives in the legislature. The first year, George Clendenin, the founder of Charleston, and Andrew Donnelly, the defender of Donnelly's Fort, in Greenbrier, in 1778, were elected. The next year Daniel Boone and George Clendenin were elected. Boone went to Richmond and returned, on foot. Boone spent much of his time in surveying while here. Mr. T. A. Mathews, surveyor, relates that in re-running the lines of two surveys, of 100,000 acres each, running from the site of Boone C. H. to the Kentucky line, he finds the lines plainly marked, and the names of the party cut in the bark of the trees still legible; they were: "Daniel Boone, George Arnold, Edmund Price, Thomas Upton and Andrew Hatfield. 1795." A report of a survey in this valley made out by him, in his own handwriting, still clear and well preserved, is in the possession of the writer. The last survey made by Boone, before leaving the valley, was on September 8th, 1798; Daniel Boone, marker; Daniel Boone, Jr., and Mathias Van Bibber

chainmen, as shown by the surveyor's books. In one of Boone's hunting and trapping expeditions, up Gauley river, he brought back the top of a sprout of yew pine, an unusual growth, and hitherto unknown to him. He left the brush of pine needles to the end to show to his friends; when it had served this purpose, the end with the needles was cut off, leaving a nice walking-stick. When he left Kanawha, he gave this to his friend, "Tice" Van Bibber, and he left it to his son, David Van Bibber, but recently deceased at about ninety. The cane was presented to the writer a few years ago, and is now in his possession. "In an early day," exact date not known, the family of John Flinn, the earliest settlers on Cabin creek, this county, were attacked by Indians, and Flinn and wife killed. One daughter made her escape alone to Donnelly's fort, Greenbrier, and one daughter and son, Cloe and John, were captured by the Indians. The daughter, Cloe, was afterward rescued by Boone, and, being an orphan, was reared by Boone in his own family, so states Mr. St. Clair Ballard, her grandson, who was a member of the legislature from Logan county, in 1847. When it was proposed to form a new county from Kanawha and Logan, Mr. Ballard related the circumstances of this capture and recovery, and the generous action of Mr. Boone, and proposed, in personal gratitude, and by way of public acknowledgment to Boone, that the new county be called Boone, and his motion was carried by a unanimous vote. The son, John Flinn, who had escaped, or been rescued, was afterward recaptured by the Indians, going down the Ohio, with Skyles, May and Johnson, and burned at the stake. Jesse Boone, son of Daniel, was the first state salt inspector here, when salt was the dominant interest of this valley. His son, Col. Albert Gallatin Boone, himself a famous early explorer, true to the Boone instinct, in the far west, was born here. He was the first white man to camp on the present site of the city of Denver, in 1825. An examination of the old assessors' books of this county to see what property Daniel Boone had, when here, shows that he was not blessed, or cursed, with a large share of the world's goods. He was assessed for taxation with two horses, one negro and 500 acres of land; the land remained on the books in his name until 1803. Boone left here for Missouri in 1799. His starting was the occasion of the gathering of his friends and admirers, from all the region round about, to bid him a friendly adieu and God-speed. They came by land and water — on boats, by horseback and in canoes — and, at the final leave-taking, it is said there was many a dimmed eye and moistened cheek among those hardy, weather-beaten warriors, hunters and pioneers. Boone started from here by water, in canoes, embarking at the junction of Elk and Kanawha rivers. His friend and companion, Tice Van Bibber, went with him to Missouri, but returned to

Kanawha. Boone was never again in Kanawha, but twice returned to Kentucky, once to identify the beginning corner of an important survey, made some twenty or twenty-five years before, and again to liquidate some long-standing indebtedness which he had been unable to pay, owing to the loss of his lands by the gross wrong done him, or permitted, by the State of Kentucky and the general government. The final payment of these debts, which had so long borne upon and disturbed his peace of mind, was, by his own account, one of the happiest incidents and reliefs of his life. While he had but little, it was, he said, a consolation to know that he did not owe a dollar, and that no man could say he had ever wronged him out of a cent. Boone died at the house of his youngest son, Col. Nathan Boone, on the Feme-Osage river, Missouri, September 26, 1820. Col. Albert Gallatin Boone, his grandson, still living, told me, some years ago, that he was with him at the time, and says he passed off gently, after a short illness, almost without pain or suffering. Thus ended the mortal career of one of the most remarkable men the country has ever produced, leaving an imperishable name and fame to after ages. He stands out in history as the great type, model and exemplar of the pioneer, frontiersman, hunter, explorer, Indian fighter and pilot of civilization. His fame is secure forever, without the fear of a rival. The world does not now, and can never again, present an opportunity to duplicate or parallel his life and history. His praises have been sung in the glowing lines of Lord Byron (in "Don Juan"), and by the eloquent tongues and pens of Tom Marshall, Bryan, Flint, Bogart, Filson, Abbott and others, and the history of his wonderful adventures is read with thrilling interest in the mansions of the rich, and the humblest log cabins of the remotest west.

The battle of Point Pleasant, considered merely in relation to the numbers engaged, or the numbers slain, on either side, or both sides, was but an insignificant affair, compared with many of the conflicts of the revolution, which immediately followed, or the mighty shocks of arms of the late civil war; but, up to the time of its occurrence, it was the most evenly balanced, longest continued and desperately contested battle that had occurred in our western country, and its results were freighted with greater, more lasting and far-reaching effects than any other that had occurred. It was a pivotal turning-point, upon which hinged, in great measure, the future destinies of the country. The result of this battle was probably the determining weight in the scale of fortune, so evenly balanced, that decided the fate of the colonies in their struggle for independence. It is, indeed, generally considered, in view of the relations then existing between the colonies and the mother country, and the course pursued by the governor, as the initiatory battle of the revolution; and, by de-

moralizing the Indian tribes, checking for a time their aggressions on the western frontiers and their co-operation with the English, it gave the colonies, who were correspondingly encouraged by their success, time and better opportunities to concentrate their powers and efforts for the mighty struggle about to be, or already inaugurated. Instead of relating simply the isolated story of the fight at the Point; with which persons in this region are already more or less familiar, it may add to the general understanding of the battle and its relations, and a fuller appreciation of its extraordinary importance, to pass in review, briefly, and unincumbered by voluminous details, the long series of preceding steps that led up to, and prepared the way for, this event and the following revolutionary struggle. Beginning this outline review, it is well to go back to 1748, the date of the Ingles-Draper pioneer trans-allegheny settlement, the first on western-flowing waters. At this time, the French occupied Canada and Louisiana, and, by virtue of the earlier discoveries of LaSalle, Marquette, and others, they were claiming the entire Mississippi and Ohio valleys, while Virginia claimed that her boundaries extended from ocean to ocean. The French, to make their claim to the Ohio valley more formal, sent a company of engineers down the Ohio, in 1749, with engraved leaden plates, which they planted at the mouths of prominent tributaries of the Ohio, claiming for the French crown all the lands drained by the respective streams. About the same time, the "Ohio Land Company," recently organized, was making a move to acquire and colonize 500,000 acres of lands lying along the Ohio, and the "Loyal Land Company" was organized, based upon a grant of 800,000 acres, lying north of the North Carolina line and west of the mountains and New river. In 1750–51, Christopher Gist was dispatched by the "Ohio Company" to examine and select desirable lands along the Ohio. The French, meanwhile, were establishing fortified trading posts, intending to have a chain of them from the lakes to the gulf. In 1753, when serious trouble seemed to be brewing between the French and English, the conflicting claimants of this vast western region, Gov. Dinwiddie, of Virginia, dispatched George Washington, a then promising young man, who had been private surveyor of Lord Fairfax, official surveyor of Culpepper county, etc., on a tour of observation, with letters of inquiry and protest, addressed to the French commander on the upper Alleghany. Washington took with him John Davidson, Indian interpreter; Jacob Van Brahm, French interpreter; Christopher Gist as guide, and four attendants. He was courteously received at headquarters by the French commander, M. De St. Piere, as a matter of course, but as positively as politely informed that they should maintain their claims to the country. Washington returned at once to Williamsburg, the then seat of government, and in his

report, which was printed, and copies of which were sent to England, he laid stress, among other things, upon the very eligible site for a fortification at the forks of the Ohio, which would command both streams.

In 1754, the "Ohio company" sent a force there, accompanied by a force of forty Virginia militia, under Lieut. Trent, sent by the state. Before their work was completed, the French commander, Capt. Contrecour, sent down a largely superior force, drove them off, took possession of their fort, built it stronger, and called it Fort De Quesne, after the governor of Canada. This was the overt act that launched the long and bloody French and English war which raged with violence on both continents for several years. Virginia immediately organized a large force, under Col. Joshua Fry and Lieut-Col. Washington, to recapture the position; Col. Fry dying, en route, the command devolved upon Col. Washington. The expedition resulted in the surprise of a party of French, under Capt. Joumondville, near the Great Meadows, in which the leader Capt. Joumondville, was killed, and all his party either killed or captured. Later, Washington was attacked at Fort Necessity, which he had hastily fortified, by a largely superior French force, and was obliged to capitulate. In the following year (1755), the English government sent over Gen. Braddock, with two regiments of English regulars to co-operate with the Virginia troops. This expedition ended in the disastrous defeat of Braddock's army, almost in sight of Fort Du Quesne, by the French and the Indian allies. In 1758, another and more formidable army was organized, under command of Gen. Forbes, who finally succeeded in capturing and holding Fort Du Quesne, and the following year, a formidable stronghold was built and called Fort Pitt, after the then English premier. The subsequent engagements between the English and French along the lakes and the St. Lawrence need not be followed here (being beyond the geographical limits treated of), except to state that, upon the capture of Quebec, the French finally surrendered, to the English, Canada and all their possessions and claims east of the Mississippi, thus terminating the long and bloody war—the final treaty of peace being ratified at Paris in 1763. The French were now out of the way of settlements, but their savage allies, whom they had instigated and encouraged to resist the encroachments of the whites upon their territory, were still there to dispute every advance upon their hunting grounds; and, although the march of settlement continued steadily westward, every pioneer trail was a trail of blood, and every pioneer family numbered among its members victims of the tomahawk and scalping knife. The expedition sent out from Fort Pitt in 1764, under Col. Bouquet, into the Indian country, resulted in

checking their atrocities for a time, in the recovery of over 300 white prisoners, mostly from the Virginia borders, and a treaty of peace, concluded with Sir William Johnson, the following year. This peace gave an impetus to Western emigration, and by 1772–73 settlements had reached the Ohio at several points, and the main tributary streams and their smaller branches.

Another serious and general colonial trouble was now brewing, growing out of the levying of taxes on the colonies by the mother country, for the expenses of the French and Indian wars, and for a standing army to protect them from the Indians. These and other measures the colonies considered unjust and onerous, and they protested against them with great earnestness and strong feeling. In this state of the case, it was charged that the English instigated the Indians to harass the western borders, so as to occupy the attention of the colonial forces in their protection, and thus prevent resistance to the oppressive measures contemplated by the English in the east. Early in the spring of 1774, it was evident that the Indians were combining for aggressive action. About this time, several murders were committed by both parties, on the upper Ohio. A white man in a trading boat was killed by Indians, some distance above Wheeling creek; within a few days, early in April, Captain Michael Cresap and party killed two Indians, near Wheeling, in a canoe, and followed a larger party down the river, to about the mouth of Captina, where they were surprised in camp and nearly all killed. Within a few days, still in April, Daniel Greathouse and a party of whites attacked an encampment of Indians, about the mouth of Yellow creek, near Baker's house, opposite; after plying them with whisky, they were nearly all murdered. In these two Indian parties—at Captina and Yellow creek—some in each, were all of Logan's family, and they were all killed. Logan charged Captain Cresap with the murder of his kin at Yellow creek, but this is probably a mistake. He was undoubted responsible for the killing at Captina (whether justifiable or not, it is impossible to decide now), but it has been pretty conclusively shown that he was not present at the Yellow Creek massacre. About this time, Bald Eagle, an old and friendly Delaware chief, was wantonly murdered by some straggling whites, set up in his canoe, with a pipe in his mouth, and sent floating down the Monongahela, not the Kanawha, as stated by some. The Indians were terribly exasperated by these murders, and it was soon unmistakably evident that they meant to be avenged. Dr. Connally and Capt. Cresap sent messengers to Williamsburg to apprise the governor of the state of affairs. He dispatched Col. Angus McDonald, with four hundred Virginia militia, in June, to make an incursion into Indian territory, to occupy them at home and prevent their raid on border settle-

ments. Later, when the Indians seemed determined on a general border war, Connally and Cresap again communicated with the governor, who sent for Gen. Andnew Lewis, then a member of the House of Burgesses for Bottetourt county, to consult about a plan of campaign. It was decided that an army of two divisions should be organized as speedily as practicable—one to be commanded by Gen. Lewis, and the other by Lord Dunmore, in person. Gen. Andrew and his brother, Col. Charles, then a member from Augusta county, started at once to the valley of Virginia to get their army from Augusta, Bottetourt and Fincastle counties, while the forces of Gov. Dunmore were to be raised in Frederick, Dunmore (now Shenandoah) and adjacent counties. The governor dispatched Daniel Boone and Michael Stoner to Kentucky, to notify the several surveying parties and the few land hunters and explorers then there; while from the Greenbrier region, Capt. John Stewart dispatched two runners—Philip Hammond and John Pryor—to warn the few settlers on Kanawha, from Kelly's creek to Campbell's creek, of the approaching danger. Gen. Lewis' army rendezvoused at camp Union (Lewisburg), about September 1st, and was to march from there to the mouth of Kanawha; while Gov. Dunmore was to go the northwest route, over the Braddock trail, by way of Fort Pitt, and thence down the Ohio river, and form a junction with Gen. Lewis at the mouth of Kanawha. The army of Gen. Lewis was made up as follows:

1. Regiment of Augusta troops, under Col. Charles Lewis, the captains being George Mathews (in whose company not a man was under six feet in height, and most of them over six feet two inches), Alexander McClannahan, John Dickinson, John Lewis (son of William), Benjamin Harrison, William Paul, Joseph Haynes and Samuel Wilson.

2. Botetourt regiment, under Col. William Fleming. The captains were Matthew Arbuckle, John Murray, John Lewis (son of Andrew), James Robertson, Robert McClannahan; James Ward and John Stewart (author of memoir, etc.)

3. An independent company of seventy men, under Col. John Field, raised by him in Culpepper county.

4. The force under Col. William Christian consisted of three independent companies, under captains Evan Shelby, William Russell and——Herbert, from the Holston, Clinch and New river settlements, then Fincastle county; a company of scouts under Capt. John Draper, of Draper's valley, an independent company under Capt. Thomas Buford, of Bedford county.

The aggregate strength of this southern division of the army was about eleven hundred; the strengh of the northern division, under Lord Dunmore, was about fifteen hundred. On the 11th

of September, Gen. Lewis broke camp, and, with Capt. Matthew Arbuckle, an intelligent and experienced frontiersman, as pilot, marched through a pathless wilderness, making as they went, such road as was necessary to get the pack-horses, bearing ammunition and provisions, and their beef cattle over. Their route was by Muddy creek, Keeny's Knobs, Rich creek, Gauley, Twenty Mile, Bell creek and Kelly's creek, to Kanawha, and down Kanawha to the mouth, following the Indian trail at the base of the hills, instead of along the river bank, for the obvious reason that it was thus easier to cross or avoid the creeks and ravines. They reached the Point on the 30th day of September, after a fatiguing march of nineteen days. When Lewis' army started its march from camp Union for the mouth of Kanawha, Col. Field, who in previous service with Lewis in the northwest, had been the senior in command, now manifested some unwillingness to take position under Gen. Lewis, and as his company was an independent one, raised by himself outside of the state order for troops, and as he had recently twice passed through the wilderness, from camp Union to Kelly's creek and back, and knew something of its topography, he started out with his command by a route of his own; on the next or following day, however, two of his men, named Clay and Coward, strayed from the main body to hunt; they were attacked by two Indians, probably spies watching the movements of the army. Clay was shot and killed by one of them, while the other was killed by Coward. After this, Col. Field, acting with judicious discretion, joined the main body of the army, and they marched together harmoniously the remainder of the way. At the mouth of Elk (the present site of Charleston) the army halted long enough to construct some canoes, or "dug-outs," into which the commissary stores, ammunition, etc., were transferred from the backs of pack-horses, and taken the remainder of the way by river. In most or all the accounts of the battle, it is stated that Col. Christian and his regiment were delayed in getting together, and did not arrive in time for the battle. This is, in part at least, an error. Col. Christian did not arrive until late in the afternoon, when the fighting was nearly over, bringing with him the portions of his companies that had been too late in reaching the rendezvous; but captains Russell, Shelby, and Buford, and parts of their companies, were certainly on the ground at the beginning of the fight.

The four men who had made a daylight hunting excursion up the Ohio river bank, on the morning of the 10th, who were the first to see the Indians, and one of whom (Hickman) was killed —the first blood drawn—were members of captains Russel's and Shelby's companies; and Capt. Buford was present, and himself wounded during the day. The army had been gotten together

hastily, as were, also, the supplies, which were not overly abundant. The army was neither well clad nor well fed; they were, perforce, "teetotalers." They had no spirit rations, and neither tea nor coffee, yet they were in good health and spirits, though tired and worn by the hard march through the wilderness. Gen. Lewis waited several days, anxiously expecting the arrival of Lord Dunmore, who, by appointment, was to have joined him here on the 2d of October. Having no intelligence from him, Lewis dispatched messengers up the Ohio river to meet him, or learn what had become of him. Before his messengers returned, however three messengers (probably McCulloch, Kenton and Girty) arrived at his camp on Sunday, the 9th of October, with orders from Lord Dunmore to cross the river and meet him before the Indian towns in Ohio. This is, substantially, the current version of matters; but authorities differ. Some say the messengers arrived on the night of the 10th, after the battle was fought; others say they did not arrive until the 11th, the day after the battle, and Col. Andrew Lewis, son of Gen. Andrew, says his father received no communication whatever from Lord Dunmore after he (Lewis) left camp Union, until after the battle had been fought, and Lewis of his own motion, had gone on into Ohio, expecting to join Dunmore and punish the Indians, when he received an order to stop and return to the point. This order (by messenger) Lewis disregarded, when Lord Dunmore came in person, and after a conference and assurances from Dunmore that he was about negotiating a peace, Lewis reluctantly retraced his steps. In the very excited state of feeling then existing between the colonies and the mother country, it was but natural that the sympathies of Lord Dunmore, a titled English nobleman, and holding his commission as governor of Virginia at the pleasure of the crown, should be with his own country; but it was not only strongly suspected, but generally charged, that, while he was yet acting as governor of Virginia, and before he had declared himself against the colonies, he was unfairly using his position and influence to the prejudice of his subjects. These suspicions, and the supposed grounds for them, will be more fully discussed in a subsequent chapter on Lord Dunmore. According to the account of Col. Stewart, when the interview was over between Gen. Lewis and the messengers of Lord Dunmore, on the 9th, Lewis gave orders to break camp at an early hour next morning, cross the river, and take up their march towards the Indian towns; but the fates had decreed otherwise. At the hour for starting, they found themselves confronted by an army of Indian braves, eight hundred to one thousand strong, in their war paint, and commanded by their able and trusted leaders, Cornstalk, Logan, Red Hawk, Blue Jacket and Elinip-

sico, and some authors mention two or three others. Instead of a hard day's marching, Lewis' army had a harder day's fighting —the important, desperately contested, finally victorious, and ever-memorable battle of Point Pleasant. No "official report" of this battle has been preserved, or was ever written, so far as can be learned. There are several good reasons, apparently, for this omission. In the first place, the time, place and circumstances were not favorable for preparing a formal official report. In the second place, Lord Dunmore, the superior officer, to whom Gen. Lewis should, ordinarily, have reported, was himself in the field, but a few miles distant, and Gen. Lewis was expecting that the two divisions of the army would be united within a few days; and, in the third place, the "strained relations" between the colonies and the mother country were such, and the recent action of Gov. Dunmore so ambiguous, that Gen. Lewis was probably not inclined to report to him at all. In the absence of an official report there is given below, an account of the battle which probably comes nearer to it than anything else extant. Being in Belfast, Ireland, in 1874, a short time before the centennial celebration of the battle at Point Pleasant, and knowing that Belfast, Ulster district, and the north of Ireland generally, had sent a large early emigration to the valley of Virginia, many of whose descendants were in Gen. Lewis' army, and in this battle the writer went to the city library to see if he could find anything there relating to the battle. In examining the files of the *Belfast News Letter* a city paper, which he found preserved in annual bound volumes from its commencement, in 1737 (and now over one hundred and fifty years old), he turned to 1774, and his search was soon rewarded by finding the following very interesting letter, a copy of which was sent to the "Charleston Courier" in time for publication and circulation at the Point Pleasant celebration:

BELFAST.

Yesterday arrived a mail from New York, brought to Falmouth by the Harriot packet boat. Capt. Lee.

WILLIAMSBURG, VA., November 10th.

The following letter is just received here from the camp on Point Pleasant, at the mouth of the Great Kenhawa [as then spelled], dated October 17, 1774:

"The following is a true statement of a battle fought at this place on the 10th instant: On Monday morning, about half an hour before sunrise, two of Capt. Russell's company discovered a large party of Indians about a mile from the camp, one of which men was shot down by the Indians; the other made his escape, and brought in the intelligence. In two or three minutes after, two of Capt. Shelby's company came in and confirmed the account.

"Col. Andrew Lewis, being informed thereof immediately ordered out Col. Charles Lewis, to take command of one hundred and fifty of the Augusta troops, and with him went Capt. Dickinson, Capt. Harrison, Capt. Wilson, Capt. John Lewis of Augusta, and Capt. Lockridge, which made the first division. Col. Fleming was also ordered to take command of one hundred and fifty more of the Botetourt, Bedford and Fincastle troops, viz.: Capt. Thomas Buford, from Bedford; Capt. Love, of Botetourt; Capt. Shelby and Capt. Russell, of Fincastle, which made the second division.

"Col. Charles Lewis' division marched to the right, some distance from the Ohio, and Col. Fleming, with his division, on the bank of the Ohio, to the left.

"Col. Charles Lewis, division had not marched quite half a mile from the camp when, about sunrise, an attack was made on the front of his division, in a most vigorous manner, by the united tribes of Indians—Shawnees, Delewares, Mingoes, Tawas, and of several other nations—in number not less than eight hundred, and by many thought to be one thousand.

"In this heavy attack, Col. Charles Lewis received a wound which, in a few hours, caused his death, and several of his men fell on the spot; in fact, the Augusta division was obliged to give way to the heavy fire of the enemy. In about a second of a minute after the attack on Col. Lewis' division, the enemy engaged the front of Col. Fleming's division on the Ohio, and in a short time the Colonel received two balls through his left arm, and one through his breast, and, after animating the officers and soldiers in a most calm manner to the pursuit of victory, retired to the camp.

"The loss in the field was sensibly felt by the officers in particular; but the Augusta troops, being shortly after reinforced from the camp by Col. Field, with his company, together with Capt. McDowell, Capt. Mathews and Capt. Stewart, from Augusta; Capt. Paulin, Capt. Arbuckle and Capt. McClannahan, from Botetourt, the enemy no longer able to maintain their ground, was forced to give way till they were in a line with the troops, Col. Fleming being left in action on the bank of the Ohio.

"In this precipitate retreat Col. Field was killed. During this time; which was till after twelve, the action in a small degree abated, but continued, except at short intervals, sharp enough till after 1 o'clock. Their long retreat gave them a most advantageous spot of ground, from whence it appeared to the officers so difficult to dislodge them that it was thought most advisable to stand as the line was then formed, which was about a mile and a quarter in length, and had sustained till then a constant and equal weight of the action, from wing to wing.

"It was till about half an hour of sunset they continued firing on us scattering shots, which we returned to their disadvantage. At length, the night coming on, they found a safe retreat.

"They had not the satisfaction of carrying off any of our men's scalps, save one or two stragglers whom they killed before the engagement. Many of their dead they scalped, rather than we should have them, but our troops scalped upwards of twenty of their men that were first killed.

"It is beyond doubt their loss, in number, far exceeded ours. which is considerable.

"The return of the killed and wounded in the above battle, same as our last, as follows:

"Killed — Colonels Charles Lewis and John Field, captains John Murray, R. McClannahan, Samuel Wilson, James Ward, Lieut. Hugh Allen, ensigns Cantiff and Bracken, and forty-four privates. Total killed, fifty-three.

"Wounded — Col. William Fleming, captains John Dickinson, Thomas Buford and I. Skidman, lieutenants Goldman, Robinson, Lard and Vance, and seventy-nine privates. Total wounded, eighty-seven; killed and wounded, one hundred and forty."

Looking further through the *Belfast News Letter* to see if he could find any additional particulars, the writer found the following Williamsburg letter in relation to the movements of Gov. Dunmore:

"AMERICA.

"WILLIAMSBURG, IN VIRGINIA, December 1, 1774.

"We have it from good authority that his excellency, the governor, is on his way to this capital, having concluded a peace with the several tribes of Indians that have been at war with us, and taken hostages of them for their faithful complying with terms of it, the principal of which are that they shall totally abandon the lands on this side of the Ohio river, which river is to be the boundary between them and the white people, and never more take up the hatchet against the English.

"Thus, in a little more than the space of five months, an end is put to a war which portended much trouble and mischief to the inhabitants on the frontier, owing to the zeal and good conduct of the officers and commanders who went out in their country's defense, and the bravery and perseverance of all the troops." — Copied from the *Belfast News Letter* of February 10, 1775.

It will be observed that the foregoing Point Pleasant letter has no signature to it. The letter was, doubtless, signed when written, but why the name was omitted at Williamsburg or Belfast is not known. While there is no name to the letter as printed, it is circumstantially conclusive, that it was written by Capt. Matthew Arbuckle, whom Gen. Lewis had left in command

of the garrison, and charged with the care of the wounded at the Point. There were no enterprising newspaper correspondents at the front in those days; no literary camp-followers or hangers-on; no amateur aids-de-camp, or other fancy gentleman, to write sensational battle reports; there was no Point Pleasant town there then; no citizens nor neighbors to write army letters or battle reports. Outside of Capt. Arbuckle's camp, there was absolutely not a white man within one hundred miles of Point Pleasant, or nearer than the armies then out on Pickaway Plains. It may be assumed. therefore, that the letter was written by Capt. Arbuckle, possibly by order of Gen. Lewis, to be forwarded to the state capital. It was, probably, sent by runners to camp Union, forwarded thence to Williamsburg, and published in the little weekly *Virginia Gazette*, published by Purdie & Dickson, and the only newspaper then published in the colony. This report of the battle is quite meager, it is true, and it is to be regretted that it had not given more of detail; but, as far as it goes, it is evidently a true and accurate account of what transpired, as seen by the writer, himself an active participant throughout. The style of the letter is plain, simple and clear, with no effort at fine writing; no thought of making or glorifying pet heroes, and no wish to be sensational. It was written on the ground, just one week after the battle, with all the facts fresh and clear upon his own mind, and the memories of his garrison and wounded, with whom, doubtless, he had discussed the exciting events over and over, and compared notes, day by day, during the week past. Though short, the simple and unpretentious style of the report is probably calculated to give the average general reader as clear a comprehension of the prominent facts and features of the battle as a half-dozen-column article from a modern army correspondent, largely made up of fulsome flattery of incipient heroes, and of sensational incidents of doubtful authenticity. About ten years after the battle, Col. John Stewart, who had been one of the first permanent settlers of Greenbrier, and who had taken a most active and efficient part in the prominent Indian wars and raids of the period, in this region, wrote a not very full, but exceedingly interesting, memoir of these early times, and troubles, including the battle of the Point; and to this memoir, probably more than to any other one document, we are indebted for what has been preserved of the eventful history of this valley at that period, and it is the basis of much of the history of the region since written. Many years later, Dr. S. L. Campbell, of Rockbridge, wrote a somewhat similar sketch the material being gathered from the recollections of those who had taken part in the events described, chiefly from Mr. Alexander Reed and Mr. William Moore, of Rockbridge. Later, Col. An-

drew Lewis, of the Bent mountain, Va., son of Gen. Andrew, gave, briefly, his recollections of the long ago; and many other longer or shorter sketches relating to the battle of the Point, and other events of this region have been written mostly from traditions, more or less imperfectly and inaccurately transmitted from those who were personal actors or witnesses. Each of these sketches contains some fact, item or incident unknown to or omitted by the others, but as each item fills a gap and helps to make up the general picture, it is only possible now to get a tolerably full and clear idea and understanding of the conditions then existing by gleaning from all the accounts, each of which, alone, gives so little of circumstantial detail. That there are some discrepancies, and conflicts of statement is but natural and to be expected under the circumstances; they are generally unimportant, however, and must be reconciled by comparisons and weight of probabilities. Col. Stewart, one of the first to write about the battle, after Arbuckle's short account, was himself present, was well known to Gen. Lewis (and a relative by marriage), says Gen. Lewis received a message from Gov. Dunmore, on the 9th, telling him to cross the Ohio and join him. and he (Stewart) mentions McCulloch as one of the messengers. Burk, and others, say the messengers came after the battle, and mention Simon Kenton and Simon Girty among the messengers. Col. Andrew Lewis says his father received no communication of any sort from Gov. Dunmore, until ordered to return from Ohio. Dr. Campbell says there was considerable dissatisfaction in Lewis' camp, for some days before the battle growing out of the manner of serving the rations, and especially the beef rations; the men claimed that the good and bad beef were not dealt out impartially. On the 9th, Gen. Lewis ordered that the poorest beeves be killed first, and distributed to all alike. The beef was so poor that the men were unwilling to eat it, and, although it was positively against orders to leave camp without permission, about one hundred men started out before day, next morning (the 10th), in different directions, to hunt and provide their own meat. Many of these did not get back, nor know of the battle, until night, when it was all over. This was a serious reduction of the army at such a time. This circumstance has not been mentioned, so far as known by any other of the early writers. Of the several men belonging to Captains Russell's and Shelby's companies who went immediately up the bank of the Ohio, the two (Hickman and Robinson) who first encountered the Indians belonged, as Arbuckle tells us, to Capt. Russell's company. Of these, Hickman was killed, as above stated, and Robinson escaped to the camp with all speed, and reported an army of Indians that would cover four acres or more. When the approach of the Indians was re

ported, it is said that Gen. Lewis first quietly lighted his pipe, and then cooly gave his orders for the disposition of the forces as described by Capt. Arbuckle, and generally confirmed by others. Nearly all the accounts of the battle state that Col. Charles Lewis was shot down on the first round, and soon expired at the root of a tree. Dr. Doddridge says he was carried to his tent by Capt. Morrow and Mr. Blair, from Capt. Paul's company, while Col. Andrew Lewis says he received his wound early in the action, but did not let it be known until he had gotten the line of battle extended from the Ohio to Crooked creek; he then asked Capt. Murray, his brother-in-law, to let him lean on his shoulder and walk with him to his tent, where he expired about 12 o'clock. This does not conflict with the statement of Capt. Arbuckle, who says: "He received a wound which in a few hours caused his death." The terrific grandeur of a battle scene can not well be described in cold, common-place language. We shall not attempt the elevated strain necessary to do the subject justice, but will quote briefly, from two authors who have written on this battle. De Hass says:

"The battle scene was now terribly grand. There stood the combatants — terror, rage, disappointment and despair riveted upon the painted faces of one, while calm resolution and the unbending will to do or die were marked upon the other. Neither party would retreat, neither could advance. The noise of the firing was tremendous — no single gun could be distinguished — was one common roar. The rifle and the tomahawk now did their work with dreadful certainty. The confusion and perturbation of the camp had now arrived at its greatest height. The confused sounds and wild uproar of the battle added greatly to the terror of the scene. The shouting of the whites, the continued roar of fire-arms, the war-whoop and dismal yelling of the Indians, were discordant and terrific."

Col. J. L. Peyton, in his valuable history of Augusta county, says:

"It was, throughout, a terrible scene — the ring of rifles and the roar of muskets, the clubbed guns, the flashing knives — the fight, hand to hand — the scream for mercy, smothered in the death-groan — the crushing through the brush — the advance — the retreat — the pursuit, every man for himself, with his enemy in view — the scattering on every side — the sounds of battle, dying away into a pistol shot here and there through the wood, and a shriek — the collecting again of the whites, covered with gore and sweat, bearing trophies of the slain, their dripping knives in one hand, and rifle-barrel, bent and smeared with brains and hair, in the other. No language can adequately describe it."

After these eloquent and thrilling descriptions of the desper-

ate conflict, one can hardly fail to be surprised, when he comes to foot up results, to find that the casualties are so few. Different accounts of the battle state the losses on the part of the whites, in killed and wounded, at 140 to 215; but it may be assumed that Capt. Arbuckle's account, above given, is correct; that is: nine officers and forty-four privates (53) killed, and eight officers and seventy-nine privates (87) wounded; total, killed and wounded, 140. All the early writers claim that the losses of the Indians were greater than those of the whites, but this admits of much doubt. The historians all claim that the Indians were seen throwing their dead into the river all day, but it seems only a vague "they say" sort of a statement, not given upon the positive authority of any reliable person who saw it. While, per contra, Colonel James Smith, who was several years a prisoner among the Indians, spoke their language, knew many of them well, and communicated with them after this battle, says they only admitted the loss of twenty-eight killed outright, and eight who died from their wounds — total, thirty-six; but as they had no muster rolls, and the tribes scattered, they had probably overlooked at least five, as twenty-one were found lying as they fell, and twelve where their friends had partially buried or secreted them, making thirty-three, and the eight who afterwards died from their wounds would increase their loss to forty-one — one of whom Cornstalk himself had killed. This Col. Smith was one of the most intelligent and observant of the many early pioneers who had the hard fate to serve a captivity of several years among the Indians; but to his misfortune we are indebted for his published narrative, after his release, of his personal adventures and results of his observations, which is probably the best record extant, of the manners and customs, and every-day life of the Indians at that period of their history. Among the eighty-seven wounded whites, it would seem probable that some died of their wounds in the hospital; but, if so, there is no published list or mention of them. To Col. Christian, who, as generally stated, arrived about four o'clock, when the battle was nearly over, was assigned the duty of gathering up and burying the dead whites; most of them were buried in a common grave or trench, with only their blankets for coffins and shrouds. A few, whose friends wished to remove them, were buried in separate graves. The Indians were not given burial at all, but left to pollute the air until the birds, the animals and the elements had disposed of them. The Indians, during the battle, had some of their warriors stationed on both sides of the river, below the Point, to prevent the possible escape of the whites by swimming the river from the extreme point, in the event of defeat. Col. Fleming was early wounded by two balls through his left wrist, but he continued to give his orders with

coolness and presence of mind, calling loudly to his men: "Don't lose an inch of ground! Try to outflank the enemy! Get between them and the river!" but he was about to be outflanked himself, and was only saved by the coming up of Col. Field, with reinforcements, when he was again shot, through the lungs, and carried off the field. Several times the Indians retreated, to draw out the whites from cover—a favorite ruse of theirs—and then advanced again. During one of these moves, Col. Field was leading on his men in pursuit, when he was fatally shot. Gen. Lewis, warned by the loss of so many brave officers and men, of the danger of possible disaster, put a large force of his reserves to cutting and felling trees in a line across the angle between the rivers, making a breastwork for his men, and protection for the camp, if he should be driven back to it. It is rather remarkable that not one of the Indian leaders was killed or wounded. They certainly fought bravely. During the battle it is said that the stentorian voice of Cornstalk was often heard, commanding and encouraging his men. Capt. Stewart at one time asked some one near him, who understood something of the Indian language, what it was that Cornstalk was saying; in reply he said, the English equivalent of the expression is: "Be strong! Be strong!" To punish an individual act of cowardice, during the battle, and to serve as a warning to others, and, possibly, prevent demoralization in his army, it was said that Cornstalk cleft the skull of one of his own men with his tomahawk. This is given on the authority of Cornstalk himself, subsequently obtained; he also stated that he had opposed the battle, and advised a conference with Gen. Lewis, on the eve of the fight, to treat for peace, but he was overruled, when he said to them: "Then if you will fight, you shall fight, and I will see that you do fight!" It was about four o'clock in the afternoon when Gen. Lewis detailed Captains Shelby, Matthews and Stewart to make a detour and flank movement up Crooked creek. This was entirely successful, and was the decisive move of the day. As soon as the Indians discovered it, thinking it was Col. Christian arriving with fresh reinforcements, they began their final retreat. They kept up a show of fighting by desultory fighting, to keep the whites in check while getting away with their wounded, which they accomplished with entire success. Some historians of the battle claim that the Indians were pursued, on their retreat, by the whites, from one to three miles, but the evidence is not satisfactory. Gen. Lewis' army had fought from sunrise to sunset, without food or rest, and were, consequently, fatigued, hungry and exhausted, and in no condition to pursue. To have attempted it in the darkness of the night would have been to risk being

ambushed and exterminated. In the exhausted condition of the armies, we assume that one side was as glad to be let alone as the other, and that there was no pursuit. Probably the first man killed when the battle opened, and after the hunter, Hickman, had been killed a mile above the camp, was Capt. Frogg. He was not commanding a company, but was a sutler. When the order was given to advance, he took his gun and volunteered to fight with the rest. He was a nervous, excitable man, and kept not only even with the front rank, but generally several steps in advance, as there were yet no Indians in sight. He was gaudily dressed in bright colors, and had his hat rigged with ribbons or feathers; suddenly the Indians arose from an ambush in a paw-paw thicket, and fired a volley into the advance. Capt. Frogg, from his advanced position and gaudy dress, had probably been mistaken for an officer of rank, and was riddled with bullets. He had, unfortunately for himself, drawn the fire of the enemy, and, possibly, saved the lives of several others. A few days after the battle, there was a sale, at auction, of sundry articles captured from, or lost by, the Indians during the day. They brought, in the aggregate, £74. 4s. 6d. These two last items are given on the authority of Col. B. H. Smith's centennial address at Point Pleasant in 1874, and he got them from the traditions of his ancestors, who were in the battle. It is said that three Indians were successively shot down over one body in the, at last, unsuccessful effort to secure a much-coveted scalp. The wonderful powers of endurance of the Indians may be estimated from the facts that they occupied the night of the 9th in crossing the river, marched three miles by sunrise on the morning of the 10th, fought from sunrise till dark, remarched three miles, and recrossed the river on the night of the 10th, with little or no opportunity for food or rest. Collins, in his admirable history of Kentucky, says that Capt. James Harrod, who had a company of forty-two colonists in Kentucky, taking up lands and building improvers' cabins, in 1774, left the country with the surveyors and others, when warned out by Boone, took most of them with him up to the point, and "lent a helping hand" in the bloody fight. The weather on the 10th of October, the day of the memorable battle, was clear and pleasant, and the rivers were low. On Tuesday, the 11th, Gen. Lewis strengthened the fort, provided for the wounded and prepared for the march, and on Wednesday, the 12th, crossed the Ohio and started to join Lord Dunmore. It is believed that he crossed not far below the mouth of "Old Town creek," and about where the Indians had crossed and recrossed. The original camp and fort at the point stood in the angle of the rivers, a little nearer the Ohio, and a little below the present Virginia street; and here the brave Virginians,

who had lost their lives in defense of her borders and their own homes, were laid to rest. Since that day the Ohio has cut away its banks very much, encroaching upon the site. One of the last official acts of Gov. Dunmore, before fleeing from the wrath of his unloving subjects, was to order the disbanding of the garrison at the Point, in 1775, hoping thus to encourage and facilitate Indian raids upon the western settlements. The governor was then fully committed to the English side in the revolutionary struggle. It was not long, however, till a larger fort was constructed, changing the location to the site of the large brick storehouse of the late James Capeheart, and it was called Fort Randolph. How long this fort stood, is not now known, but Col. Andrew Lewis says he was at the Point in 1784, when there was little or no sign of it left.

CHAPTER IX.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

LORD DUNMORE — HIS CONDUCT WHILE GOVERNOR OF VIRGINIA COLONY — HIS TREACHERY TO THE FRONTIERSMEN — HIS SUBSEQUENT RASCALLY CONDUCT — POINT PLEASANT AS A MILITARY SCHOOL — NOTABLE CHARACTERS OF THE PLACE — GENERAL ANDREW LEWIS — LOGAN, THE MINGO CHIEF — CORNSTALK, THE FAMOUS INDIAN COMMANDER.

IT has been stated that there were not only suspicions, but grave charges, that Governor Dunmore acted a double part, and that he was untrue and treacherous to the interests of the colony he governed. As he is inseparably connected with this campaign (often called the Dunmore war), and its accompanying history, and the inauguration of the revolution, it may be well to briefly allude to his official course just before, during and after the campaign that his true relations to it, and to the colony, may be understood; and, also, to show that the "revolution" was really in progress; that this campaign was one of the important early moves on the historical chess-board, and that the battle of Point Pleasant was, as generally claimed, the initiatory battle of the great drama. In the summer of 1773, Governor Dunmore made, ostensibly, a pleasure trip to Fort Pitt; here he established close relations with Dr. Connally, making him Indian agent, land agent, etc. Connally was an able active and efficient man, who thereafter adhered to Dunmore and the English cause. It is charged that Connally at once began fomenting trouble and ill-feeling between the colonies of Virginia and Pennsylvania in regard to the western frontier of Pennsylvania, then claimed by both colonies, but held by Virginia, hoping by such course to prevent the friendly co-operation of these colonies against English designs; and, also, to incite the Indian tribes to resistance of western white encroachments upon their hunting grounds, and prepare the way for getting their co-operation with England against the colonies, when the rupture should come. In December, 1773, the famous "cold-water tea" was made in Boston harbor. In retaliation the English government blockaded the port of Boston, and moved the capital of the colony to Salem. When this news came, in 1774, the Virginia assembly, being in session, passed resolutions of sympathy with Massachusetts, and strong

disapproval of the course of England; whereupon Governor Dunmore peremptorily dissolved the assembly. They met privately, opened correspondence with the other colonies, and proposed co-operation and a colonial congress. On the 4th of September, 1774, met, in Philadelphia, the first continental congress —Peyton Randolph, of Virginia, president; George Washington, R. H. Lee, Richard Bland, Patrick Henry, Benjamin Harrison and Edmund Pendleton members from Virginia. They passed strong resolutions; among others, to resist taxation and other obnoxious measures; to raise minute men to forcibly resist coercion; and, finally resolved to cease all official intercourse with the English government. In the meantime, Dr. Connally had been carrying out the programme of the northwest. He had taken possession of the fort at Fort Pitt, and renamed it Fort Dunmore; was claiming lands under patents from Governor Dunmore, and making settlements on them; had been himself arrested and imprisoned for a time by Pennsylvania; had the Indian tribes highly excited, united in a strong confederacy and threatened war; then came the massacre of Indians above Wheeling, at Captina and at Yellow creek, said to have grown out of Connally's orders. While the continental congress was passing the resolutions above mentioned, and which created a breach between the colonies and the mother country past healing, Governor Dunmore and General Lewis were organizing and marching their armies to the west. Instead of uniting the forces into one army, and marching straight to the Indian towns and conquering or dictating a lasting peace, Lord Dunmore took the larger portion of the army by a long detour by Fort Pitt, and thence down the Ohio, picking up on the way Dr. Connally and Simon Girty, whom he made useful. At Fort Pitt, it is said, he had held a conference with some of the Indian chiefs, and came to some understanding with them, the particulars of which are not known. Instead of uniting with Lewis at the mouth of Kanawha, as had been arranged, but which was probably not intended, he struck off from the Ohio river at the mouth of the Hockhocking and marched for the Indian towns on the Pickaaway plains, without the support of Lewis' army, delaying long enough for the Indians to have annihilated Lewis' division, if events had turned out as Cornstalk had planned. He (Cornstalk) said it was first their intention to attack the "Long Knives" and destroy them, as they crossed the river, and this plan would have been carried out, or attempted, but for the long delay of Lewis' awaiting the arrival of Lord Dunmore. They afterwards, upon consultation, changed their plans, and determined to let Lewis cross the river and then ambush him somewhere near their own homes, and farther from his (Lewis') base; but the Indians had no organized commissary or transportation

arrangements, and could only transport such amount of food as each brave could carry for his own sustenance; this was necessarily, a limited amount, and Lewis' delay in crossing had run their rations so short that they were obliged to cross, themselves, and force a fight, or break camp and go to hunting food. They crossed in the night, about three miles above the point, on rafts previously constructed, and expected to take Lewis' army by surprise; and it has been seen how near they came to accomplishing it. It was prevented by the acident of the early hunters, who where out before daylight, in voilation of orders. Col. Andrew Lewis (son of General Andrew,) in his account of the Point Pleasant campaign, says: "It is known that Blue Jacket, a Shawanee chief, visited Lord Dunmore's camp, on the 9th, the day before the battle, and went straight from there to the Point, and some of them went to confer with Lord Dunmore immediately after the battle." It is also said that Lord Dunmore, in conversation with Dr. Connally, and others, on the 10th, the day of the battle, remarked that "Lewis is probably having hot work about this time."

When Lewis had crossed the river, after the battle, and was marching to join Dunmore, a messenger was dispatched to him twice in one day, ordering him to stop and retrace his steps — the messenger in each instance, being the afterward notorious Simon Girty. Gen. Lewis had, very naturally, become much incensed at the conduct of Lord Dunmore, and took the high-handed responsibility — advised and sanctioned by his officers and men — of disobeying the order of his superior in command, and boldly marching on towards his camp. When within about two and a half miles of Lord Dunmore's head-quarters, which he called Camp Charlotte, after Queen Charlotte, wife of his master, George III., he came out to meet Lewis in person, bringing with him Cornstalk, White Eyes (another noted Shawanee chief), and others, and insisted on Lewis' returning, as he (Dunmore) was negotiating a treaty of peace with the Indians. He sought an introduction to Lewis' officers, and paid them some flattering compliments, etc. Evidently it did not comport with Lord Dunmore's plans to have Gen. Lewis present at the treaty, to help the negotiation by his suggestions, or to have the moral support of his army to sustain them. So much did Lewis' army feel the disappointment and this indignity, that Col. Andrew, his son, says that it was with difficulty Gen. Lewis could restrain his men (not under very rigid discipline, at best) from killing Lord Dunmore and his Indian escort. But the result of the personal conference was that Gen. Lewis, at last with the utmost reluctance of himself and army, consented to return, and to disband his army upon his arrival at Camp Union, as ordered. Suppose Lewis had attempted to cross the river, and been de-

stroyed, or had crossed and been ambushed and demolished in the forest thickets of Ohio, or that Cornstalk had succeeded, as he came so near doing, in surprising him in his own camp, on the morning of the 10th, or after that; suppose the Indians had succeeded in turning the so evenly balanced scale in their favor, during the fight, as they came so near doing, and had annihilated Lewis' army, as they might then have done, having them penned up in the angle of two rivers, who can doubt, in view of all the facts above noted, that Lord Dunmore would have been responsible for the disaster? Who can doubt, as it was, that he was responsible for the unnecessary sacrifice of life, at the Point, on the 10th? Who can doubt that, with the two divisions of the army united, as per agreement, and Lord Dunmore and Lewis acting in unison and good faith, they could have marched to the Indian towns, and utterly destroyed them, or dictated a favorable and lasting peace, and maintained it as long as they pleased, by holding important hostages? But, clearly, the policy of the governor was dictated by ulterior and sinister motives; his actions were not single-minded. Col. Andrew Lewis says: "It was evidently the intention of the old Scotch villain to cut off Gen. Lewis' army." Burk, the historian, says: "The division under Lewis was devoted to destruction, for the purpose of breaking the spirit of the Virginians." Withers, Doddridge, and others, express the same views. Gen. Lewis and his army were convinced of the fact; Col. Stewart had no doubt of it, and nearly every one who has written on the subject has taken the same view of it. A few only are willing to give him the benefit of a doubt. If this design to destroy Lewis' army had succeeded, it is almost certain that the English, through Lord Dunmore, would have perfected an alliance, offensive and defensive, with the victorious Indians, against the colonies, and every white settlement west of the Alleghenies would probably have been cut off. It would have been difficult or impossible, for a time, to raise another army for the defense of the western border; the tory element would have been encouraged and strengthened, the revolutionary element correspondingly discouraged, the rebellion (?) crushed, and Lord Dunmore would have been the hero of the age. Upon what slender and uncertain tenures hang the destinies of nations, and the fate of individuals! The closely-won success of Lewis was not only an immediate victory over the Indians, but a defeat of the machinations of the double-dealing governor, and the projected Anglo-Indian alliance. In this view of it is established the claim of the battle of Point Pleasant as being the initiatory battle of the revolution; and, although small in itself, when its after results and influences are considered it stands out in bold relief as one of the important and decisive victories of history. A few words more and we shall be done with Lord

Dunmore. Upon his return to Williamsburg, the Assembly, upon his own ex parte statement of the results of the campaign, passed a vote of thanks for his "valuable services," etc., which, it is said, they very much regretted when they learned more of the facts. Just after the battle of Lexington (April 18, 1775), he had all the powder that was stored in the colonial magazine at Williamsburg secretly conveyed on board an armed English vessel lying off Yorktown, and threatened to lay Williamsburg in ashes at the first sign of insurrection. Patrick Henry raised a volunteer force to go down and compel him (Dunmore) to restore the powder; but as this was impracticable, he agreed to pay, and did pay, for it, and then issued a proclamation declaring "One Patrick Henry and his followers rebels." He had previously threatened Thomas Jefferson with prosecution for treason, and had commenced proceedings. About this time, having previously sent his family on an English naval vessel, he made his own escape, by night, to the English fleet, and commenced a system of depredations along the coast, burning houses, destroying crops, etc. He tried to bring his scheme of Indian co-operation to bear, and sent a message to his old friend, Connally, with a commission as Colonel, and instructed him to secure the co-operation of as many of the western militia commanders as possible, by large rewards; to form an alliance with the Indians, collect his forces at Fort Pitt, and march through Virginia and meet him. Fortunately, Col. Connally was captured and imprisoned, and the scheme exposed and thwarted. He (Dunmore) issued a proclamation granting freedom, to all the slaves who would flock to his standard, and protection to the Tories. Among other acts of violence, he burned Norfolk, the then largest and most important town in Virginia. Upon his flight, the Assembly met and declared his office vacant, and proceeded to fill it; and, for the first time, Virginia had entire "home rule." Upon the petition of citizens of Dunmore county, which had been named in his honor, the name was abolished, and the county called Shenandoah. In 1776, Lord Dunmore and his fleet and hangers-on were at Guynne's Island, in the Chesapeake Bay, where, as an interesting example of poetic or retributive justice, Gen. Lewis, in command of the Virginia troops, attacked, defeated and drove them off, with heavy loss, Gen. Lewis, himself, firing the first gun, soon after which the ex-Governor, a sadder and wiser man, "left the country for the country's good."

Point Pleasant was a sort of developing high school, which prepared a class of military heroes and statesmen from the apt pupils who had been learning and practicing the preliminary lessons of border warfare in the isolated settlements, and occasional Indian raids that had been made upon their families,

all along the western frontiers, and sent them out to serve their country usefully, and make honorable records for themselves, in after years, all along the borders and newly developing western states, and elsewhere. A brief sketch of, or allusion to, the more prominent persons known to have been present on this memorable occasion, or otherwise connected with it, may be of interest. Gen. Andrew Lewis, one of the high professors and proficients in this military school, had had eventful experiences. He commenced his military career with Washington at Great Meadows and Fort Necessity, in 1754, where he was twice wounded. In the following year, with three brothers, he was with Braddock and Washington, in Braddock's disaster, where three of the four brothers were wounded. In the following year (1756), he commanded the "Big Sandy expedition" against the Shawanees; in 1758 he was with Gen. Forbes and Washington at the capture of Fort Du Quesne, where he was again wounded. Subsequently, he was in the service of his colony in defending her western borders, acting as commissioner in negotiating treaties, or as member of the House of Burgesses. It was at the treaty of Fort Stanwix that the governor of New York, in commenting on his majestic figure and commanding appearance, said of him: "He looks like the genius of the forest, and the very ground seems to tremble under him as he walks along." Col. Stewart, in his memoir, says of him: "He was upwards of six feet high, of uncommon strength and agility, and his form of the most exact symmetry. He had a stern countenance, and was of a reserved and distant deportment, which rendered his presence more awful than engaging." Mr. Alexander Reed, of Rockbridge, who was in the battle of the Point, says of him: "He was a man of reserved manners, and great dignity of character — somewhat of the order of Gen. Washington.' It is known that Washington considered him one of the foremost military men of the country, and recommended him as commander-in-chief of the armies. Gen. Lewis had beside his brother Charles, three sons in the battle of Point Pleasant; John, a captain, and Samuel and Thomas, privates. Samuel was wounded. There were a number of others here, his relatives by blood or marriage and a large part of his army was composed of the sons of his friends and neighbors. It was a class of material not accustomed to restraint, and not amenable to very rigid discipline. This may account for the statement sometimes made that the discipline of his camp was somewhat lax. He knew their metal, and knew that when fighting was to be done he could depend upon them, and contented himself with this knowledge. Up to this time, Gen. Lewis had fought under British colors, against the French and against the Indians, but this battle was the pivotal point; henceforth his guns were turned

against the British flag (and, strangely enough, in conjunction with the French), until it was driven from our shores. Like Moses of old, he was not permitted to enter into the rewards of his long and arduous labors. He was taken ill with fever, not long before the surrender at Yorktown, and started for his home on the Roanoke, in then Bottetourt, now Roanoke county, but died on the way, at the house of his friend, Col. Buford, at the eastern base of the Blue Ridge. He was brought home and buried on his own magnificent estate, called "Dropmore," lying just outside the limits of the town of Salem, where he rests, solitary and alone, under the spreading branches of the forest trees, on an eminence overlooking, for many miles, up and down, the river and valley of the beautiful Roanoke. But there is yet more to be told, though it is painful to report the sad condition of this lonely grave; there is no marble shaft, nor granite column, nor slab of stone, nor mound of earth, to mark the spot where the hero sleeps. It is enclosed by no wall of stone, or brick, no railing of brass, or iron, or wood, and loose stock roam over it at will. Shall the grave of the old patriot, who fought his country's battles for twenty-seven years — from 1754 to 1781 — from "Great Meadows" almost to Yorktown; who mingled his own blood with the first French blood shed in the first engagement of the great Anglo-French war; who saw his brother slain and his son wounded at the battle of the Point, the first blood shed in the great revolution that gave us our liberties, and who drove the last foreign governor from our colonial shores; the friend and companion of the immortal Washington, longer suffer this cold neglect?

Will not some appreciative and patriotic American in our halls of congress do himself the honor to bring this matter to the attention of our justice-loving and merit-rewarding government, that is spending millions in pensions to the brave men who fought her more recent battles, and hundreds of thousands to honor the memories of the brave officers who led them, or served their country in other fields, and give them the opportunity to honor themselves by doing the tardy justice to embalm in marble, or granite, or brass, either on the site of his grave or at the capital of the nation, the memory of the "Hero of Point Pleasant?" Col. Charles Lewis, a younger brother of Gen. Andrew, and the youngest of five brothers, was, by many, considered "the flower of the flock." He was a man of magnificent physique, as were all the family. He was credited with a more amiable temperament and genial disposition than Gen. Andrew, and was more beloved by his neighbors and his soldiers, while both, alike, were honored and esteemed for their acknowledged bravery, high character and spotless integrity. Col. Charles was said to be the idol of the army.

He had had large, active and honorable military experience, from Braddock's war down to date, and it is believed that he would have achieved greater honors and distinction in the revolutionary struggle if his life had been spared; but his brilliant career was ended in glory on this field. Col. William Fleming was a Scotchman of high lineage by birth, a doctor by profession, a resident of Bottetourt county, a man of learning and culture. He was thrice severely wounded in this battle, but recovered, and was afterwards, for a time, acting governor of Virginia, but not an elected Governor, as sometimes stated. Col. John Field was a native of Culpepper county, Va., had seen active service in Braddock's war and after, had been on the Kanawha a few months before, entering and surveying lands at Field's creek (named after him), and Kelly's creek, where Walter Kelly was shot down by his side, and he narrowly escaped by running eight miles through the wilderness, to the Greenbrier settlements. Col. Field raised a force of volunteers in his own county for this campaign, and united it with Gen. Lewis' army. It was his timely and vigorous advance on the field that checked the retreat both of Lewis' and Fleming's forces, when both leaders had been wounded. He received his fatal wound at the front, after he had succeeded in turning the tide of battle, and was bravely leading on his command in active pursuit of the then retreating foe. Col. Field's remains were never removed from the Point, but still lie there, surrounded by the other brave men who fell around him. Col. Christian was descended from an ancient Scotch family of high degree, who lived on the Isle of Man. The immediate ancestors of Col. William were among the earliest to settle in the valley of Virginia, on Christian's creek, near the site of Staunton. Col. William was a man of education and refinement. He married a sister of Patrick Henry. He was not, himself, present in the early part of the battle of the Point, though a portion of his regiment was, and he arrived, with the remainder, about four o'clock in the afternoon, when the fighting was nearly over. He removed to Kentucky a few years after this date, and was finally killed, near the falls of the Ohio, while in pursuit of a raiding party of Indians, who had committed some depredations upon his neighbors. Col. William Preston, of Smithfield, intended to accompany Gen. Lewis and participate in the events of this campaign, but, as his young wife was on the eve of becoming a mother, he remained at home to await the interesting event, which occured about the date of the battle, and too late to join the army. The child born afterwards became Governor James Preston, of Virginia, the father-in-law of Governor John Floyd, and the grandfather of Governor John B. Floyd.

Capt. Evan Shelby, originally from Maryland, settled on the

Holston, in southwest Virginia, about 1771. He raised a volunteer company for Lewis' army, and joined Col. Christian's regiment. He was present when the fight began. After Colonels Lewis, Fleming and Field had been killed or disabled, he was the ranking officer, until Col. Christian arrived. He it was who led the three companies (his own, Matthews' and Stewarts') on the flank movement up Crooked creek, which was so successful in finally putting the Indians to flight, and deciding the fortunes of the day. Capt. Shelby afterwards became Col. Evan Shelby, and had a distinguished career in Kentucky and Tennesee.

Capt. George Matthews, of Augusta county, with his splendid company, nearly every man of whom, as heretofore stated, was over six feet two inches in height, was one of the three captains who made the successful Crooked creek detour. He afterward became the distinguished Gen. George Matthews of the Revolution, hero of Brandywine, Germantown and Guilford, Governor of Georgia. Uuited States Senator, etc. Capt. John Stewart, one of the first permanent settlers and defenders of Greenbrier, and one of the three captains who executed the Crooked creek flank movement, afterward became Col. John Stewart, took an active part in several subsequent Indian engagements, built on his estate a private fort, called "Fort Spring," was first clerk of Greenbrier county, author of the fullest account of this battle, and ancestor of a large and honorable family of descendants. Capt. William Russell raised a volunteeer company in the Clinch and New river settlements, and joined Col. Christian's regiment. He was in the battle at its commencement; the first blood shed was that of Hickman, one of his men, who had started out for an early hunt up the Ohio river. Capt. Russell afterward became Col. William Russell, and father of Col. William Russell, both distinguished citizens of Kentucky. Capt. Moore became Gen. Andrew Moore, of Rockbridge county, United States Senator, etc. Capt. McKee became Col. William McKee, of Kentucky. Lieut. Shelby became Gen. Isaac Shelby, a prominent factor at King's Mountain, Long Island (Holston), battle of the Thames, and other engagements, first Governor of Kentucky, and afterward secretary of war, under Monroe. Lieut. Thomas Ingles, who hnd been the first white child born west of the Alleghenies, and had been thirteen years prisoner among the Indians, became Col. Thomas Ingles, and had a very eventful career, as herein elsewhere related. William and John Campbell became Gen. William and Col. John Campbell, the heroes of King's mountain. Charles Cameron became Col. Charles Cameron, of Bath county, Va. Bazaleel Wells became Gen. Bazaleel Wells, a distinguished citizen of Ohio. John Steele, who was shot through the lungs here, survived and became Col. John Steele, of the Revolution, a large land owner and

salt dealer in this valley, and Governor of Mississippi. John Lewis became Maj. John Lewis, a prominent citizen of Monroe county, Va. Lieut. Tate became Gen. Tate, a distinguished citizen of Washington county, Va. Lieut. John Draper, who had been one of the founders of the "Draper's Meadows" settlement, was the ancestor of the prominent and honorable family of Draper's valley, Va. Capt. Ben Harrison, according to the family tradition, was engaged in the successful flank movement up Crooked creek, with Shelby and others. The Harrisons were a prominent and influential family in the valley of Virginia, and founders of Harrisonburg; related to Benjamin Harrison, signer of the declaration of independence, Pres. W. H. Harrison, etc. Capt. Daniel Smith was with Col. Charles Lewis at the front, when Lewis received his fatal wound. Capt. Smith was afterwards a prominent man in the valley of Virginia, was long the presiding justice in his county, was the ancestor of Judge Daniel Smith, of that district, and of Col. B. H. Smith, of this city. Capt. John Dickinson, a few years later, "entered" and surveyed the five hundred and two acres of land at and about the mouth of Campbell's creek, containing the original salt spring, or Buffalo Licks. George Clendenin afterwards became the founder of Charleston, the capital of West Virginia; was first member of the legislature from Kanawha county, and, next year, fellow-member with Daniel Boone. He was father-in-law of Gov. Return Jonathan Meigs, of Ohio. William Clendenin (brother of George) became Col. William Clendenin, a prominent citizen and long-time representative, first of Kanawha, and afterwards of Mason county, in the legislature James Trimble was afterwards the founder of the distinguished family of that name in Kentucky and Ohio, father of Gov. Allen Trimble, U. S. Senator Trimble, etc. Anne Trotter, made a widow by the death of her husband in this battle remarried and became the eccentric and renowned "Mad Anne Bailey," the useful border scout, reliable messenger and valuable conveyor of ammunition, etc., between the forts at Point Pleasant Charleston, Lewisburg and Jackson's river. She is still remembered by some of our older citizens, and is said to have been nearly 120 years old when she died. Capt. Matthew Arbuckle, who is said to have been the first white man to pass down through this valley to the Ohio and return (in 1764), and was guide and pilot of Gen. Lewis' army to the point, was the commander of the garrison left at the point after the battle, and was probably the author of the first written account of the battle, above given. James Welch was afterwards appointed by Gov. Patrick Henry, first surveyor of Greenbrier county. After the death of Capt. Arbuckle, Mr. Welch married his widow, and, upon his death, his brother, Mr. Alexander Welch,

succeeded to the surveyorship. John and Peter Van Bibber, brothers, came with the army from the Greenbrier, and afterwards settled in this valley, and became the ancestors of a large and prominent family. One of them, Matthias, called "Tice," was the companion of Boone in his hunting and trapping excursions, and chain carrier on his surveys. He became the father-in-law of Jesse Boone, Col. Andrew Donnally, Col. John Reynolds and Mr. Goodrich Slaughter, all prominent citizens of the valley, and, still later, through the daughters of Jesse Boone, he became the grandfather-in-law of Gov. Boggs, of Missouri, and Mr. Warner, a member of congress from Missouri. Capt. James Harrod, who brought up his colonists from Kentucky and took part in the battle, as elsewhere related, next year founded Harrodsburg, Ky., became Col. James Harrod, and one of the most prominent citizens of the state. Philip Hammond and John Pryor, who had come down from camp Union to warn the few settlers on the Kanawha, remained in the garrison at the Point, and, in 1778, volunteered as runners to Greenbrier, to warn the citizens of the approach of the Indians, and then helped to fight them at Donnally's fort, having passed the Indians on the way. Mr. Robertson, one of the two soldiers who met the Indians above the point, on the morning of the battle, and who made his escape, his companion (Hickman) having been killed, became Brig. Gen. Robertson, of Tennessee. Col. Daniel Boone was not in the battle, but was the commander of three frontier garrisons (believed to have been the three Greenbrier forts,) to protect the citizens while the fighting men were absent with the army. He, next year, founded Boonesborough, Ky.

Simon Kenton was not in the fight, but was pilot, scout and messenger for Lord Dunmore, in connection with Simon Girty, and, on account of the friendship then formed, Girty afterward saved his life, when a prisoner, and after Girty had gone over to the Indians. Kenton was the first white man ever to camp in this valley (1771,) and he was the first to raise corn in northern Kentucky. He became Gen. Simon Kenton, and had a most eventful career as frontiersman, Indian fighter, etc. Samuel McCulloch was one of Lord Dunmore's scouts and messengers. He was one of the bearers of orders from Dunmore to Lewis, on the day before the battle. He lived to become one of the most renowned and successful Indian fighters on the western borders. Capt. Logan, afterward Gen. Benjamin Logan, was with Dunmore. He became, next year, the founder of St. Azaph; or Logan's fort, one of the first permanent centers of settlement in Kentucky, and a distinguished commander in the early Kentucky Indian troubles. George Rogers Clarke was with Dunmore; had, probably, joined him at Wheeling, where he planned and laid out the Wheeling fort, called Fort Henry.

He went to Kentucky the following year, where he, Boone, Harrod, Logan and Kenton became the founders, developers and defenders of a great commonwealth. A little later, Gen. George Rogers Clarke became the hero of Vincennes and Kaskaskia, among the most brilliant achievements in history, winning for himself the proud appellation of "The Hannibal of the west." Major (afterward colonel) Crawford, the unfortunate, was also with Dunmore. William Eastham was the father of Mr. A. G. Eastham, a prominent citizen of Mason county, sometime member of the West Virginia legislature, and now, as he believes, the last surviving immediate descendant of any of the participants in the Point Pleasant battle. The admittedly last survivor of those who personally participated in this memorable fight was Mr. Ellis Hughes, one of the remarkable family of border settlers and Indian fighters of that name. After Wayne's treaty, he and a neighbor, Radcliff, removed to Ohio, and were the first to settle in (now) Licking county. Hughes died in 1845, near Utica, aged in the nineties. There were, probably, others connected with this memorable Point Pleasant campaign, who afterward attained to positions of prominence or eminence in the stirring times that followed, as most of them, when disbanded, re-enlisted in the revolutionary armies, but of whose connection with this event no record has been preserved. While the names of those above mentioned will long be remembered and cherished with pride and pleasure by their descendants, there is one other whose "bad eminence" will ever be remembered with execration and horror. Simon Girty had joined Dunmore at Fort Pitt and was acting as scout and pilot. He had not then turned Judas, forsworn his race and betrayed his color, kith and kin; he was an active and useful scout, and probably, up to that time, loyal to the whites. There is a tradition that, while at the point, with the other scouts and messengers (McCulloch and Kenton), the day before the battle, Girty made some demand of Gen. Lewis in regard to pay for his services. Gen. Lewis, very properly, replied that it was not his business to settle such accounts, and referred him to the proper authority; at this Girty became quite insolent to Gen. Lewis, who rapped him severely, with his cane, over the head, and put him out of his tent. Girty left, bleeding profusely from his scalp wounds, threatening vengeance, and swearing that the camp should "run with blood" for the insult. This incident was, doubtless, considered trifling at the time, and, in view of the tragical events of the following day, was probably very nearly lost sight of and forgotten; but, it seems highly probable, if the account of this incident be true, that Girty's defection and renegadeism dated from this time, and was probably occasioned by this unfortunate circumstance, as he very soon, if not immediately

after, joined his fortunes with the Indians and the English, and became the bitter, relentless and dangerously efficient enemy of his former friends, probably causing them, directly and indirectly more bloodshed and suffering, for the next twenty years, than any half dozen of the most bloodthirsty Indian warriors. Girty had not far to go when he "went over to the enemy;" he did but little violence to his feeling. He, with his brothers, George and James, had been captured near Fort Pitt, in their early youth and retained as captives eight or nine years, trained up in all the habits and imbibing the feelings and prejudices of the Indians, learning their language thoroughly, while nearly forgetting their own, acquiring a strong taste and lasting fondness for the roving, unrestrained and exciting Indian life, and thus these wild Irish lads were converted into wilder savage Indians It has frequently been said that it is impossible to make a white man of an Indian, but very easy to make an Indian of a white man; the history of the Girtys fully illustrates the latter. Of the Indians who participated in this memorable battle of the point, two — Cornstalk and Logan — stand out in bold relief above all the rest. In physical development, manly beauty and intellectual capacity, they were magnificent specimens of their race. For bravery they could not be excelled, and for self-composed dignity of bearing, ease of manner and fervid eloquence they will, from the accounts we have of them, compare favorably with the best orators of any age. Mr. Jefferson, who has immortalized Logan and his touchingly eloquent speech, thought him equal to any of the ancient Greek or Roman orators. It has been doubted by many whether Logan was the author of the speech, but it has also been doubted whether Mr. Jefferson was the author of the Declaration of Independence; whether Shakespeare or Lord Bacon wrote Hamlet; William Tell has been pronounced a myth, and Barbara Fritche is said never to have had any visible, tangible existence. There are always believers -- always doubters. Following is given the speech of Logan as it was reported by Col. John Gibson, who was with Lord Dunmore at camp Charlotte, who claimed to have heard it direct from Logan, and vouched for its authenticity. Let those believe who can, those doubt who must. Voltaire said: "History does not *always* lie." When Lord Dunmore was holding his peace conference with the Chiefs, at his camp, it was observed that Logan was not present. Feeling the importance of securing his assent to the terms of the treaty, Lord Dunmore sent Col. Gibson to his tent, where he found him brooding over his wrongs. In reply to the request to attend the council, he said: "I am a warrior, not a counselor, and I will not go," but instead he sent his famous speech which appears elsewhere.

Logan, weighed down by his sorrows, gave himself up to

intemperance, becoming a sot, and was finally murdered by a brother-in-law, on his return from a trip to Detroit.

The dominant character, not only in this Indian army, but probably throughout the Ohio tribes, at this period, was the great Shawanee chief, and king of the confederacy, Cornstalk. He was born in this valley, within the present limits of Greenbrier county, says Col. Peyton in his "History of Augusta county." Col. Benjamin Wilson, who was with Lord Dunmore at camp Charlotte, heard Cornstalk at this peace conference, and says of him:

"When he arose, he was in no wise confused or daunted, but spoke in a distinct and audible voice, without stammering or repetition, and with peculiar emphasis. His looks, while addressing Dunmore, were truly grand and majestic, yet graceful and attractive. I have heard the first orators in Virginia—Patrick Henry and Richard Henry Lee—but never have I one whose powers of delivery surpassed those of Cornstalk on this occasion."

Some one else present says:

"His clear, bugle voice could be distinctly heard all through the camp."

Col. Andrew Lewis (son of Gen. Andrew) says:

"I have often heard my father speak of his being the most dignified looking man, particularly in council, he ever saw."

That greatness and great misfortunes are apt to go together there are many examples among the illustrious names of the white race, and the histories of Cornstalk, Logan, Pontiac, Tecumseh, and others, illustrate the same rule in their race.

CHAPTER X.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

MURDER OF CORNSTALK — "RED HAWK" — HIS EFFORT TO SHOOT WASHINGTON AT BRADDOCK'S DEFEAT — BLOODY RAIDS BY INDIANS TO AVENGE THEIR LEADER — ATTACK ON POINT PLEASANT — ITS REPULSE — RAID UP THE KANAWHA AND ATTACK ON DONNALLY'S — SPIRITED BATTLE — HANNAH DENNIS — HER CAREER AMONG THE INDIANS.

THREE years after the battle of the Point, the brave Cornstalk, who had here led his army almost to victory, who had himself withstood the flying bullets of a thousand murderous rifles, from sunrise to sunset, and escaped; who was now here as a messenger of peace, unarmed, and trusting his life to the protection of the garrison, was foully and shamefully murdered. The most reliable, indeed, the only reliable, account of it is that by Col. John Stewart, who happened to be present on the occasion, and was an eye-witness of the unfortunate occurrence. Col. Stewart's account is quoted entire, as it also gives valuable collateral history:

"In the year 1777, the Indians, being urged by British agents, became very troublesome to frontier settlements, manifesting much appearance of hostilities, when the Cornstalk warrior, with the Red Hawk, paid a visit to the garrison at Point Pleasant. He made no secret of the disposition of the Indians, declaring that, on his own part, he was opposed to joining in the war on the side of the British, but that all the nation, except himself and his own tribe, were determined to engage in it; and that, of course, he and his tribe would have to run with the stream (as he expressed it). On this, Capt. Arbuckle thought proper to detain him, the Red Hawk, and another fellow, as hostages, to prevent the nation from joining the British.

"In the course of that summer, our government had ordered an army to be raised, of volunteers, to serve under the command of Gen. Hand. who was to have collected a number of troops at Fort Pitt, and, with them, to descend the river to Point Pleasant, there to meet a reinforcement of volunteers expected to be raised in Augusta and Botetourt counties, and then proceed to the Shawanee towns and chastise them so as to compel them to

a neutrality. Hand did not succeed in the collection of troops at Fort Pitt, and but three or four companies were raised in Augusta and Botetourt, which were under the command of Col. George Skillern, who ordered me to use my endeavors to raise all the volunteers I could get, in Greenbrier, for the service.

"The people had begun to see the difficulties attendant on a state of war, and long campaigns carried on through wildernesses, and but a few were willing to engage in such service. But as the settlements which we covered, though less exposed to the depredations of the Indians, had show theirn willingness to aid in the proposed plan to chastise the Indians, and had raised three companies, I was very desirous of doing all I could to promote the business and aid the service. I used the utmost endeavors and proposed to the militia officers to volunteer ourselves, which would be an encouragement to others, and by such means to raise all the men who could be got.

"The chief of the officers in Greenbrier agreed to the proposal, and we cast lots who should command the company. The lot fell on Andrew Hamilton for captain, and William Renick lieutenant. We collected in all, about forty, and joined Col. Skillern's party on its way to Point Pleasant.

"When we arrived, there was no account of Gen. Hand or his army, and little or no provision made to support our troops, other than what we had taken with us down the Kanawha. We found, too, that the garrison was unable to spare us any supplies, having nearly exhausted, when we got there, what had been provided for themselves. But we concluded to wait there as long as we could for the arrival of Gen. Hand, or some account from him.

"During the time of our stay, two young men, of the names of Hamilton and Gilmore, went over the Kanawha one day to hunt for deer; on their return to camp, some Indians had concealed themselves on the bank, among the weeds, to view our encampment, and as Gilmore came along past them, they fired on him and killed him on the bank.

"Capt. Arbuckle and myself were standing on the opposite bank when the gun was fired, and while we were wondering who it could be shooting, contrary to orders, or what they could be doing over the river, we saw Hamilton run down the bank, who called out that Gilmore was killed.

"Gilmore was one of the company of Capt. John Hall, of that part of the country now Rockbridge county. The captain was a relative of Gilmore's, whose family and friends were chiefly cut off by the Indians in the year 1763, when Greenbrier was cut off. Hall's men instantly jumped into a canoe and went to the relief of Hamilton, who was standing in momentary expectation of being put to death. They brought the corpse of

Gilmore down the bank, covered with blood and scalped, and put him into the canoe.

"As they were passing the river, I observed to Capt. Arbuckle that the people would be for killing the hostages as soon as the canoe would land. He supposed that they would not offer to commit so great a violence upon the innocent, who were in no wise accessory to the murder of Gilmore; but the canoe had scarcely touched the shore until the cry was raised, 'Let us kill the Indians in the fort,' and every man, with his gun in his hand, came up the bank, pale with rage. Capt. Hall was at their head, and leader. Capt. Arbuckle and I met them, and endeavored to dissuade them from so unjustifiable an action, but they cocked their guns, threatened us with instant death if we did not desist, rushed by us into the Fort, and put the Indians to death.

"On the preceding day, the Cornstalk's son, Elinipsico, had come from the nation to see his father, and to know if he was well or alive. When he came to the river, opposite the Fort, he hallooed. His father was, at that instant, in the act of delineating a map of the country and the waters between the Shawanee towns and the Mississippi, at our request, with chalk upon the floor. He immediately recognized the voice of his son, got up, went out, and answered him.

"The young fellow crossed over, and they embraced each other in the most tender and affectionate manner. The interpreter's wife, who had been a prisoner among the Indians, and had recently left them, on hearing the uproar the next day, and hearing the men threaten that they would kill the Indians, for whom she retained much affection, ran to their cabin and informed them that the people were just coming overto kill them, and that because the Indians who had killed Gilmore had come with Elinipsico the day before. He utterly denied it; declared that he knew nothing of them, and trembled exceedingly.

"His father encouraged him not to be afraid, for the Great Man above had sent him there to be killed and die with him. As the men advanced to the door, the Cornstalk rose up and met them. They fired upon him, and seven or eight bullets went through him.

"So fell the great Cornstalk warrior, whose name was bestowed upon him by the consent of the nation, as their great strength and support. His son was shot dead as he sat upon a stool.

"The Red Hawk made an attempt to go up the chimney, but was shot down. The other Indian was shamefully mangled, and I grieved to see him so long in the agonies of death.

"The Cornstalk, from personal appearance and many brave acts, was undoubtedly a hero. Had he been spared to live, I be-

lieve he would have been friendly to the American cause, for nothing could induce him to make the visit to the garrison at the critical time he did but to communicate to them the temper and the disposition of the Indians, and their design of taking part with the British.

"On the day he was killed we held a council, at which he was present. His countenance was dejected, and he made a speech, all of which seemed to indicate an honest and manly disposition. He acknowledged that he and his party would have to run with the stream, for that all the Indians on the lakes and northwardly were joining the British. He said that when he returned to the Shawnee towns, after the battle at the Point, he called a council of the nation, to consult what was to be done, and upbraided them for their folly in not suffering him to make peace on the evening before the battle. 'What,' said he, 'will you do now? The Big Knife is coming on us, and we shall all be killed. Now you must fight, or we are undone.' But no one made an answer. He said: 'Then let us kill all our women and children, and go and fight till we die.' But none would answer. At length he rose and struck his tomahawk in the post in the center of the town-house. 'I'll go,' said he, 'and make peace,' and then the warriors all grunted out, 'ough! ough! ough!' and runners were instantly dispatched to the governor's army to solicit a peace, and the interposition of the governor on their behalf.

"When he made his speech in council with us he seemed to be impressed with an awful premonition of his approaching fate, for he repeatedly said: 'When I was a young man and went to war, I thought that might be the last time, and I would return no more. Now I am here among you; you may kill me if you please. I can die but once, and it is all one to me, now or another time.' This declaration concluded every sentence of his speech. He was killed about one hour after our council."

Thus fell this rude child of nature, and denizen of the forest, who, with the lights before him, and true to the nature within him, had lived and acted well his part. His creed required an eye for an eye, blood for blood, life for life, and he had lived up to it bravely and fearlessly. He had fought for his country and his race, when duty, as he saw his duty, required it; but he was a lover of peace, and a counselor of peace, when peace was practicable. He was here now, this rude savage, in the interest of peace, when he and his son, the pride of his heart, and his companion in arms, Red Hawk, were cruelly murdered by those who had been reared in the light of the eighteenth century civilization, and under the teaching and preaching of peace gospels. Which were the savages?

Kercheval, in his "History of the Valley," says, on the authority of Maj. Lawrence Washington, that Dr. Daniel Craig, of

Winchester, met this Indian brave, Red Hawk, soon after Braddock's defeat, when Red Hawk told him that he had fired eleven well aimed shots at Washington during that memorable day, and had then desisted, believing Washington to be under the protection of the Great Spirit, as his gun never missed its mark before.

It is related by one of the biographers of Washington that, in 1770, when at the mouth of the Kanawha, looking after his lands, he met an Indian, who gave him the same story. This was probably Red Hawk himself, though no name is given. Cornstalk was first buried not far from the camp where he fell, near the intersection of the present Virginia and Kanawha streets, but in after years (1841) his remains were removed to the court house enclosure, where they yet remain; but, like the grave of his illustrious adversary of 1774, there is neither stone nor mound — nothing — to indicate the spot. Mr. V. A. Lewis, a citizen of the county, and well informed in her history, says that the spot is where a westward extension of the southern jail wall bisects a southern extension of the western old court house wall. Prior to the late civil war, Mr. Charles Dawson, son of the then jailor, at his own expense and pains, put a rail fence around the grave, and his sister, Miss Susan Dawson, in the kindness of her heart, planted rose bushes upon it, but during an occupation of the town by federal troops, about 1863, they burned the rails and fences, and stock destroyed the rose bushes, since when the grave has had no care. When Gen. Lewis' monument shall be erected, shall not Cornstalk also be remembered, in acknowledgement of the good that was in him, and in atonement of the wrong that was done him? The directing brain and executing right arm of the great Cornstalk were stilled forever, but his blood cried aloud to his tribe and his race for revenge, and revenge they took in large measure. Who can estimate the amount of blood-shed, the number of innocent lives sacrificed, and the consequent heart-aches, all along the Virginia border, in retaliation for the wicked murder of Logan's kindred, and Cornstalk and his party? It is said that Logan, in retaliation for his wrongs, himself brought in nineteen scalps and one prisoner, and yet he was kind to that prisoner, a Mr. Robinson, and afterward helped Girty to save Simon Kenton's life, when Girty was about to fail. Would the slayers of his family, and of Cornstalk, have been as humane under like circumstances? Many of the individual murderers, interior raids, and attacks in force on the forts, all along the frontier, from the Kanawha to the Monongahela, within the next year or two, were largely due to the determination, on the part of the Indians, to avenge the death of their honored chief. When the news of Cornstalk's death, and the attendant circumstances, reached the capitol, the governor of Virginia, Patrick Henry, offered a reward for the apprehension and conviction of

the guilty parties. As a result, Capt. Hall and some of his men were arrested in their county (Rockbridge), and went through the forms of a pretended trial, but there was scarcely a family in that region that had not, at some time, suffered from Indian raids and murders, or had not lost friends or relatives in the battle of the Point, or other Indian wars, and their prejudices were so strong against Indians generally, that, although the facts were generally known, there was no one to prosecute, no one to testify; the trial was a farce, and the case was dismissed by default. Public sentiment went so far as to condemn the act, but was not willing to punish the guilty parties.

In the fall of 1777, not long after the death of Cornstalk, a small party of Indians made their appearance near the fort at Point Pleasant, and Lieut. Moore was dispatched from the garrison, with some men, to drive them off. Upon his advance, they commenced retreating, and the lieutenant, fearing they would escape, ordered a quick pursuit. He did not proceed far before he fell into an ambuscade. He and three of his men were killed at the first fire; the rest of the party saved themselves by a precipitate flight to the fort. In the following May (1778,) a few Indians again came in view of the fort, but as the garrison had been reduced by the removal of Capt. Arbuckle's company, and the experience of the last season had taught them prudence, Capt. McKee, the then commander, forebore to detach any of his men in pursuit of them. Disappointed in their expectations of enticing others to destruction, as they had Lieut. Moore in the winter, the Indians suddenly rose from their cover, and presenting an unbroken line, extending from the Ohio to the Kanawha river, and in front of the fort. A demand was then made for the surrender of the fort, and Capt. McKee asked till next morning to consider it. In the course of the night the men were busily employed bringing water from the river, expecting that the Indians would continue before the fort for some time. In the morning, Capt. McKee sent his answer by the Grenadier squaw (sister to Cornstalk, and who, notwithstanding the murder of her brother and nephew, was still attached to the whites, and was remaining at the fort in the capacity of interpreter,) that he could not comply with their demand. The Indians immediately began the attack, and for one week kept the garrison closely besieged. Finding, however, that they made no impression on the fort, they collected the cattle about it, and, instead of returning toward their own country with the plunder, proceeded up the Kanawha river toward the Greenbrier settlements. Some accounts state that Capt. McKee and three or four others met as many of the Indians, under a flag of truce, and had a conference. Capt. McKee disclaiming for himself and garrison all part in the murder of Cornstalk, explained that it was a sudden act

of lawless violence, done under excitement, deprecated and deplored by all conservative people, etc. Some of the Indians seemed satisfied and returned home, but the larger number were bent on revenge, and moved off up the Kanawha. Satisfied that so large a force would be able to destroy these settlements, if unadvised of their approach, Capt. McKee started two men to Col. Andrew Donnally's (the then frontier house,) with intelligence. These men soon came in view of the Indians, but finding that they were advancing in detached groups, and dispersed in hunting parties through the woods, they despaired of being able to pass them, and returned to the fort. Capt. McKee then made an appeal to the chivalry of the garrison, and asked, "Who would risk his life to save the people of Greenbrier?" John Pryor and Philip Hammond at once stepped forward and replied: "We will." They were then habited after the Indian manner, and painted in Indian style by the Grenadier squaw, and departed on their hazardous, but noble and generous, undertaking.

Traveling night and day, with great rapidity, they passed the Indians at Meadow river, where they were killing and eating some of Mr. McClung's hogs for their breakfast, and arrived, about sunset that day, at Donnally fort, twenty miles further on. Col. Donnally at once had all the neighbors advised, and during the night they collected at his house. He also dispatched a messenger to Capt. John Stewart, at fort Union, to acquaint him with the facts, and make every preparation practicable to resist the attack. Pryor and Hammond explained how the precaution of Capt. McKee in providing a plentiful supply of water had saved the garrison at the Point from suffering, and advised similar precaution here. Accordingly, a hogshead was filled and rolled behind the door of the kitchen, which adjoined the house. Early next morning, John Pritchet (a servant of Col. Donnally's) went out for some firewood, and was fired at and killed. The Indians then ran into the yard, and endeavored to force open the kitchen door, but Hammond and Dick Pointer (a negro belonging to Col. Donnally), who were the only persons within, aided by the hogshead of water, prevented their accomplishing it. They next proceeded to cut the door into pieces with their tomahawks. Hammond, seeing that they would soon succeed in this way, with the assistance of Dick, rolled the hogshead to one side, and, letting the door suddenly fly open, killed the Indian at the threshold, and the others who were near gave way. Dick then fired among them with a musket heavily charged with swan shot, and no doubt with effect, as the yard was crowded with the enemy. A war club with swan shot in it was afterward picked up near the door. The men in the house, who were asleep at the commencement of the attack, being awakened at

the firing of Hammond and Dick, now opened a galling fire upon the Indians. Being chiefly up stairs, they were enabled to do greater execution, and fired with such effect, that about one o'clock, the enemy retired a short distance from the house. Before they retired, however, some of them succeeded in getting under the floor, when they were aided by the whites below, in raising some of the puncheons of which it was made. They (the whites) did this for a purpose, and profited by it. Several Indians were killed in this attempt to gain admittance, while but one white man received a wound, which but slightly injured his hand. When intelligence was conveyed to Capt. Stewart of the approach of so large a body of savages, Col. Samuel Lewis was with him, and they both exerted themselves to save the settlement from destruction, by collecting the inhabitants at fort Union (now Lewisberg.) Having succeeded in this, they sent two ment to Donally's, to learn whether the Indians had advanced that far. As they approached, the firing became distinctly audible, and they returned with the tidings. Capt. Stewart and Col. Lewis proposed marching to the relief of Donally's fort with as many men as were willing to accompany them, and in a short time commenced their march with sixty-six men. Pursuing the most direct route, without regard to road, they approached the house from the rear, and thus escaped an ambuscade of Indians placed near the road to intercept and cut off any assistance which might be sent from the upper settlements. Adjoining the yard was a field of well grown rye, into which the relief from Fort Union entered about two o'clock, but as the Indians had withdrawn to a distance from the house, there was no firing heard. They soon discovered the savages, however, in the field, looking intently towards Donnally's, and it was resolved to pass them. Capt. Stewart and Charles Gatliff fired at them, and the whole party rushed into the yard, amid a heavy discharge of balls from the savage forces. The people in the fort, hearing the firing in the rear of the house, soon presented themselves at the port-holes to resist what they supposed was a fresh attack on them; but quickly discovering the real cause, they opened the gates, and all the party, led by Stewart and Lewis, entered safely. The Indians then resumed the attack, and maintained a constant fire at the house until near dark, when one of them approached, and, in broken English, called out: "Me want peace." He was told to come in and he should have it; but he declined the invitation to enter, and they all retreated, dragging off those of their slain who lay not too near the fort. Of the whites, only four were killed by the enemy — Pritchet before the attack commenced, James Burns and Alexander Ochiltree as they were coming to the house, early in the morning, and James

Graham, through a port-hole, while in the fort. It was impossible to ascertain the entire loss of the Indians. Seventeen lay dead in the yard, and they were known to have carried off others of their slain. There were twenty-one men at Donnally's before the arrival of the reinforcements under Stewart and Lewis, and the brunt of the battle was over before they came. The Indian force exceeded two hundred men. It was believed that the invasion of the Greenbrier country had been projected some time before it was actually made. During the preceding season an Indian, calling himself John Hollis, had been very much through the settlements, and was observed to take particular notice of the different forts, which he entered under the garb of friendship. He was with the Indians in the attack on Donnally's fort, and was recognized as one of those who were left dead in the yard. On the morning after the Indians departed, Capt. Hamilton went in pursuit of them with seventy men, but following two days, without perceiving that he gained on them, he abandoned the chase and returned. After this unsuccessful attack on Donnally's fort, the Greenbrier settlements were not again molested until sometime in 1780, when a party of twenty-two warriors made a raid into that country. The first act of atrocity committed was at the house of Lawrence Drennon, above the Little Levels. Here they shot Henry Baker and Richard Hill. Baker was killed, but Hill escaped into the house.

Mr. Drennon dispatched a messenger to the Little Levels for assistance. He soon returned with twenty men, who remained all night, but next morning, seeing nothing of the Indians, and supposing they had departed, they buried Baker, and, with Drennon and family, started to the Levels. Two brothers, named Bridges, to save distance, took a narrow pathway, which the Indians had waylaid, supposing the whites would go that way. They were both killed. The Indians next proceeded to the house of Hugh McIver, whom they killed, and made his wife prisoner. In going from here, they met John Pryor and his wife and child, on their way to the south side of the Kanawha. Pryor was shot through the breast, but, anxious for the fate of his wife and child, stood still, till one of the Indians came up and laid hold of him. Notwithstanding the severe wound he had received, Pryor proved too strong for his opponent, and disengaged himself from him. Pryor, then, seeing that no violence was offered his wife or child, walked off without any attempt being made to stop or otherwise molest him. The Indians, it was supposed, suffered him to depart, expecting that he would obtain assistance and endeavor to regain his wife and child, and that an opportunity would be given them of waylaying any party coming with this view. Pryor returned to the settlement, related the facts

above mentioned, and died that night. His wife and child were never again heard of. It was supposed that they were murdered by the Indians on the way, being unable to travel as rapidly as the Indians wished. Thus, at last, perished the brave John Pryor and his family. He was a noble fellow and deserved a better fate. We cannot learn what became of Philip Hammond, his partner in danger, and equal in daring and endurance. They deserve to be remembered by their country. This party of Indians next went to a house occupied by Thomas Drennon and a Mr. Smith, and captured Mrs. Drennon, Mrs. Smith and a child. Thence, going toward their homes, they wounded Capt. Samuel McClung, and killed an old man named Monday. Withers, to whom, chiefly, we are indebted for this account, says this was the last murder committed by them in the Greenbrier settlements, but there was at least one other instance of murder. During the same season, Mr. William Griffith, his wife and daughter, were killed, and a son, a lad, taken prisoner. In passing through the Kanawha valley, some hunters got on their trail. Mr. Atkinson says that John Young, Ben Morris, Bob Aaron, William Arbuckle, and two others, followed them across to Elk, up Little Sandy and branches, toward Poca, and discovered their camp. There were but two men and a boy. They fired and killed one man, the second man took to his heels, and the boy was unhurt. The man killed proved to be a white man painted as an Indian, the man who escaped was an Indian, and the boy was the captive Griffith lad. The stream on which this incident occurred is, to this day, called White Man's fork of Aaron's fork of Little Sandy.

In 1760, a party of Shawanees made a raid by way of the Kanawha and Greenbrier rivers, then unsettled, over to the then frontier settlement in that direction, on Jackson's river. They killed several persons, among them Robert Renix and Thomas Dennis, and took a number prisoners, among them Mrs. Hannah Dennis, and Mrs. Renix and her five children. They were pursued by a party of whites, under Capt. Matthews; they were overtaken, and in the engagement that followed nine Indians and three whites were killed, but the remainder of the Indians made good their escape, with their prisoners. In accordance with the stipulations of Col. Boquet's treaty, Mrs. Renix and her sons, William and Robert, were returned to their friends in 1765. William and Robert became prominent citizens of Greenbrier; another son, Thomas, came in, in 1783, but returned and settled on the Scioto. Joshua never returned; he married an Indian wife, became a Miami chief, and rich and influential among the tribe. The daughter Betsy, died in captivity. Mrs. Hannah Dennis was separated from the other captives and alloted to live at the Chilicothe towns. She learned their language, she dressed and painted herself as they

did, and conformed to their manners and customs. Finding them very superstitious, she professed witchcraft, and claimed to be a prophetess. She was attentive to the sick and wounded, and soon became a great favorite with them, and acquired great influence over them. She was all the while meditating an escape, and awaiting a favorable opportunity. At last, in June, 1763, she made a start; she was pursued, but after many hair-breadth escapes, she reached the mouth of Kanawha, where she crossed the Ohio on a drift log, and then made her way up Kanawha and Greenbrier rivers. She traveled chiefly by night to avoid discovery, and lived upon river mussels, green grapes, herbs, etc. She finally sat down by Greenbrier river utterly exhausted with fatigue and hunger, and gave up, thinking it impossible to proceed any farther. Here she was found by Thomas Athol and three others, who took her to Archibald Clendenin's house, where she was kindly cared for, and, when sufficiently recuperated to travel, was sent on horseback to Young's Fort, on Jackson's river, and to her relations. At this time there were but two settlements in the Greenbrier country; these were on Muddy creek and the Big Levels, and the two contained about twenty families, or, say, one hundred souls of all ages. Within a few days after Hannah Dennis had left Clendenin's, in the Muddy Creek settlement, about sixty Indian warriors made their appearance, led by the afterwards distinguished Cornstalk. They came professing friendship, and, as the French and English war had but recently been terminated by treaty of peace, the settlers did not doubt their sincerity, and treated them with hospitable kindness; when, suddenly, they fell upon the unsuspecting whites and killed every man, and killed or made every woman and child prisoners. They then hurried on to the Big Levels, fifteen miles distant, where the same treacherous and murderous scenes were re-enacted. Mr. Archibald Clendenin had just returned from a successful hunt, bringing in three fine elk, upon which they had a glorious feast, and after which, at a concerted signal, the massacre was executed upon their helpless victims. Thus, within a few hours, two prosperous and happy settlements were exterminated.

Only Conrad Yolkum, out of the 100 persons in both settlements, escaped death or capture by timely flight. The brave Mrs. Clendenin, as below related, made her escape from captivity, but with the sacrifice of her infant child. At Clendenin's, a negro woman, who was endeavoring to escape, was followed by her crying child. To facilitate her own escape, and to prevent the child falling into Indian hands, she stopped and murdered it herself. Mrs. Clendenin, who seems to have been a woman of fearless nerve and strong force of character, boldly denounced the Indians for their perfidy and treachery, alleging that cowards only

could act with such duplicity. To silence her, they slapped her face with the bloody scalp of her husband, and raised a tomahawk in a threatening attitude over her head; but she was not to be silenced or intimidated. She would not hold her peace, nor her tongue. In passing over Keeny's Knobs, on the retreat, the Indians being in the front and rear, and the prisoners in the center, Mrs. Clendenin handed her infant to another woman to hold, and she slipped aside in the brush, and succeeded in making her escape. The crying of the child soon led to the discovery of her absence, when one of the Indians, observing that he could "bring the cow to her calf," took it by its heels and beat its brains out against a tree. Mrs. Clendenin returned to her home, about ten miles distant, that night. She covered the remains of her husband with brush, and weeds, and fence rails, to protect it from the wild beasts, and after an effort to get some rest and sleep in an adjoining cornfield, tortured by visions of murderers and murders, she resumed her flight and finally reached, in safety, the settlements on Jackson's river. These melancholy events, occurring so immediately after the escape of Mrs. Hannah Dennis, whom they were so unwilling to lose, induced the supposition that the raid was made in pursuit of her. If such were the fact, dearly were others made to pay the penalty of her fortunate deliverance.

CHAPTER XI.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

CHRONOLOGICAL RECORD OF EVENTS ALONG THE BORDER — DATES OF BATTLES, SIEGES AND SETTLEMENTS.

BELIEVING that dates, systematically arranged, very much aid the general reader in understanding the relation of facts to each other and help the memory to retain them, there is herewith given a table of dates, chronologically arranged, of the more important and interesting events that have occurred along the New-river-Kanawha and tributaries, relating to their early settlement and after history. To get early historical dates with accuracy is no easy task, and those who have tried it know. This trouble arises from the fact — heretofore stated — that those who made the history did not themselves record it at the time. This was generally done years after, either by themselves, or by their friends from their dictation, after the dates — never much regarded by them — had become somewhat dim and uncertain. Those who have enjoyed the pleasure of listening to the interesting traditions of old, as related by the lingering members of the rear guard of a generation now past and gone, those whose experiences dated back to the primitive days of border life, cannot fail to remember how often they used this almost stereotyped phrase, "in an early day," in recounting the incidents of "the long, long ago," away back in the dim distant past. "The good old times," which they remembered with so much interest and pleasure, forgetting, or but dimly remembering, the dangers and hardships which accompanied their daring but successful, and therefore pleasurable, adventures. Their goings and comings and their doings were not guided by fixed rules nor programmes, nor cramped and fettered by cold records. They had a contempt for calendars and a negligent disregard of dates. Facts they remembered, and could relate with minutest detail; but they neither knew nor cared whether the events related occurred five, or ten, or twenty years earlier or later; all they knew or cared to remember was, that they occurred "in an early day" — in the dim, indefinite and distance-enchanted past. We have taken great pains, however, to examine and compare dates, as given by all the authorities, records, traditions and other sources available, and believe that the

accuracy of those given below may be relied on with reasonable certainty.

1654. Col. Abraham Wood was the first to cross the Blue ridge, and the first to discover New river, and to name it "Wood's river."

1666. Capt. Henry Battle was the next to cross the Blue ridge. It is possible that he was in the Kanawha valley, as he says he followed a westerly flowing river for several days to near where a tribe of Indians made salt.

1727. Cornstalk was born in this valley. Col. J. L. Peyton, in his valuable history of Augusta county, says he was born 1747, within the present limits of Greenbrier county, but the date is probably too late by twenty years, as his son, Elinipsico, was old enough to be a commanding officer under him at the battle of Point Pleasant, in 1774.

1730. John Salling, captured on James river, crossed New river on his way to the Cherokee towns. He was probably the first white man to cross it.

1734. Orange county was formed, and embraced this and all Virginia territory, west of the Blue Ridge.

1738. Augusta county, covering all western Virginia territory, was formed, but was not organized until 1745.

1744. Rapin DeThoyer's map issued, giving wild guesses at the geography of the great west.

1748. Dr. Thomas Walker and party crossed New river westward, and were the first, from this direction, to penetrate into Kentucky.

Draper's Meadows' settlement, the first west of the Alleghenies, was made by the Ingles and Draper families.

1749. The Loyal Land company, organized by Walker, Patton and others, based on a grant of 800,000 acres of land, lying north of the North Carolina line and west of the mountains.

"In April, first Indian depredation west of the Alleghenies, upon Adam Harmon, one of the Draper's Meadows settlers.

"A lunatic from about Winchester wandered across the mountains westward. He was much surprised to find the waters flowing westward, and reported the fact on his return."

1749. Capt. DeCeleron, a French engineer, planted an inscribed leaden plate at the mouth of Kanawha, claiming all the country drained by the river for the French crown.

1750. William Ingles and Mary Draper were married, at Draper's Meadows, the first white wedding west of the Alleghenies.

"Jacob Marlin and Stephen Sewell, influenced by the account of the lunatic, settled on the waters of Greenbrier, in what is now Pocahontas county, W. Va. They occupied the same camp for a time in peace and harmony; but, one being a Catho-

lic and the other a Protestant, they quarreled on religious subjects and separated; the seceder taking up his abode in a hollow tree, within speaking distance of his late associate. Every morning, when they got up, they exchanged salutations across the way and that was the last communication of the day. They were thus found by Col. John Lewis, who came to survey lands on the Greenbrier in 1751. Soon after this, Marlin returned to the settlements; Sewell came, alone, down to New river, about Sewell mountain and creek, which bear his name, and was there killed by the Indians.

"Dr. Thomas Walker make his second trip with a second party, crossing New river and going up Peak creek, Cripple creek, Reed creek, over to Holston, to Clinch, to Cumberland gap, etc. Returning, he came along the Flat Top moutain, by the present site of Pocahontas, down to New river, down New river to Greenbrier, up Greenbrier and Antony's creek, over the mountains, and by the Hot and Warm springs, home."

1751. Thomas Ingles born to William and Mary at Draper's Meadows; the first white child born west of the Alleghenies.

Col. John Lewis and son, Andrew, surveying lands on Greenbrier River, which they so named from the green briers which greatly annoyed them in their surveying; and the county was named from the river.

1752. Peter Fontaine, a surveyor, by order of the governor of Virginia, made a map, giving what was then known of the wester part of the state. The map shows how little was known.

1753. Col. James Patton and William Ingles taking up lands, under the "Loyal Land Company," on Peak creek and in Burke's Garden.

1754. Ingles' Ferry located and settlements about it begun.

"Jame Burke settles in Burke's Garden and is murdered by Indians.

"Two families settle on Back creek, opposite Draper's Meadows.

"James Reed settles and names the first "Dublin," of this neighborhood.

"A McCorkle family and colony of Dunkards settle at Dunkard Bottom, near Ingles ferry.

"Two families settle on Cripple creek, a few miles above.

"One family settles at or near the head of Reed creek.

"All these being on the west side of New river."

1755. Draper's Meadows settlement attacked, and all present massacred or captured.

1755. Mary Ingles and Bettie Draper, the first white persons ever in Kanawha valley.

"Mrs. Ingles and Mrs. Draper help make the first salt ever

made by white persons in Kanawha, or elsewhere west of the Alleghenies."

1756. Settlements again made west of New river.

"Vass' fort built under direction of Capt. Hogg, and advice of Col. George Washington.

"A stockade fort built at Draper's Meadows, under direction of Capt. Stalnaker.

"Vass' fort captured by a party of French and Indians, and the inmates murdered or taken prisoners."

1756. The New river lead mines were discovered by Col. Chiswell, and operations begun.

1760. An Indian raiding party surprised by William Ingles, and others, near Ingles' ferry; six or seven Indians killed, and a few escaped. One white man killed. This was the last Indian raid or trouble that occurred in that region.

"Selim, the Algerine, of remarkable history, passed up the Kanawha valley in search of the white settlements to the east. Selim was a wealthy and educated young Algerine; he was captured in the Mediterranean by Spanish pirates; was sold to a Louisiana planter, escaped, made his way up the Mississippi, and up the Ohio. Somewhere below the Kanawha he met with some white prisoners; and a woman among them told him, as best she could in sign language, to go toward the rising sun, and he would find white settlements. As it was just about this time that an Indian raid had been made through this valley over to the Jackson's river settlements, and captured the Renix family and Mrs. Hannah Dennis, I think it is possible, and even probable, that they were the prisoners he met, and who told him of the eastern settlements. At any rate, he turned up Kanawha, then Greenbrier, etc., and was finally discovered, nearly naked, and on the point of starvation, not far from Warm Springs, and kindly taken care of. Through a Greek testament in possession of some minister who saw him, it was discovered that he was a good Greek scholar; and thus communication was opened up between him and the minister, who understood Greek. Selim studied English, became a Christian, returned to his home in Algiers, was repudiated by his parents because he had given up the Moslem for the Christian religion. He returned to America, heart-broken, and finally died in an insane hospital."

1762. Archibald Clendenin, and others settled on Muddy creek and the Big levels, now Greenbrier county.

"Ingles' ferry established by law — the first on New or Kanawha rivers."

1763. Mrs. Hannah Dennis, having escaped from Indian captivity, made her way up through this valley, and, after great suffering, reached the Muddy creek settlement.

"Soon after this, a large Indian raiding party, under Corn-

stalk, passed up the valley to Greenbrier, and exterminated the Muddy creek and Big levels settlements."

1764. Capt. Paul, pursuing a returning raiding party of Indians with prisoners, surprised them in camp at the mouth of Indian creek, on New river, killed several and recovered the prisoners.

1764. Matthew Arbuckle, a hunter and trapper from the Greenbrier region, passed down the Kanawha valley with peltries, to a trading post at the mouth, and returned, being the first white man to do so.

1766. Butler and Carr hunted and trapped about the heads of Bluestone and Clinch.

"Col. James Smith, Joshua Horton, Uriah Stone and William Baker passed by New river and Holston settlements, and explored the country between the Cumberland and Tennessee rivers."

1767. Butler, Carr, and others, settled families about the heads of Clinch and Bluestone.

1768–69. George Washington, R. H. Lee, F. L. Lee and Arthur Lee petition King George for two and a half million acres of Western lands, for "The Mississippi Company."

1769. John Stewart, Robert McClennahan, Thomas Rennix and William Hamilton settled in the Greenbrier country, about where Frankfort now is.

1770. George Washington (says Collins' history of Kentucky), surveyed for John Fry 2,084 acres of land at the forks of Big Sandy, the present site of Louisa. Washington was also at the mouth of Kanawha the same year, looking after his own lands, and his agent, Col. Crawford, is said to have been with him.

"Camp Union, or Fort Savannah, now Lewisburg, was built."

1771. Kenton, Yeager and Strader, the first white men to camp in Kanawha valley, settled about the mouth of Two-mile creek of Elk river.

"Absalom Looney, from Looney's creek, on James river, settled in Abb's valley, on the Bluestone."

1771–72. Col. Andrew Donnally built "Donnally's Fort;" Col. John Stewart, "Fort Spring;" and Capt. Jarrett, the "Wolf creek" or "Jarrett's Fort," all in the Greenbrier country.

1772. The medicinal virtues of the Greenbrier white sulphur waters first tested by the whites. It had long been a famous elk and deer lick, among the Indians.

"A German, named Stroud, settled in the glades of Gauley river, where his family were murdered by the Indians."

1773. Tradition (from Ballinger, the recluse,) of the highest water ever known in New river or Kanawha.

"Walter Kelly, a refugee from South Carolina, settled at the

mouth of a creek nineteen miles above Charleston, now Kelly's creek.

"Col. Thomas Bullitt, Thomas Alsbury, Joshua Morris, John Campbell, and, perhaps, others, were in this valley, looking up lands.

"Kenton, Yeager and Strader were attacked at their two-mile camp by Indians, Yeager being killed, and the other two wounded.

"The McAfee brothers, McCown, Adams, and others, from the New river settlements, joined by Col. Bullitt, Hancock Taylor and others, on Kanawha, go to Kentucky to locate and survey lands. Bullitt surveyed Big Bone Lick, July 5th; McAfee brothers and Hancock Taylor, the site of Frankfort, July 15th; and Bullitt, the site of Louisville, August 5th.

"John and Peter Van Bibber, Rev. John Alderson, and Matthew Arbuckle, came down through the Kanawha valley from the Wolf creek fort.

"The Kanawha burning spring was first discovered by these parties, on this trip."

1774. William Morris settled at the mouth of Kelly's creek, on Kanawha, Leonard Morris at the mouth of Slaughter's creek, John Flinn on Cabin creek, and Thomas Alsbury, and perhaps others, at points lower down. The family of John Lybrook, on Sinking creek, now Giles county, was attacked by Indians; five of the children were murdered, and Lybrook narrowly escaped by secreting himself in a cave.

"In the same neighborhood, Jacob and John Snidow, and a smaller brother, were captured and taken to the Indian country. Jacob and John made their escape and returned, not long after; but the boy remained among them until he was completely Indianized; and, although he afterward came home on a visit, he returned to the Indians, and spent his life with them.

"A Miss Margaret McKinsie was, also, captured; she remained a prisoner eighteen years, when she was recovered and returned to New river; she married a Mr. Benjamin Hall, and lived to a very old age."

1774. Capt. Stewart, of Greebrier, was notified of the impending danger of an Indian outbreak and he dispatched runners (tradition says Hammond and Pryor) to notify the few settlers on Kanawha.

"Walter Kelly was killed at the mouth of Kelly's creek (Kanawha), Col. Field narrowly escaping.

"Gen. Lewis' army, about eleven hundred strong, left camp Union (now Lewisburg), for Point Pleasant, September 11th, piloted by Capt. Matthew Arbuckle."

1774. Daniel Boone was left in command of three frontier

garrisons (probably camp Union, Donnally's fort, and Wolf creek or Jarrett's fort).

1774. Gen Lewis' army arrived at Point Pleasant, September 30th.

"October 9th, three messengers arrive in camp, with dispatches from Lord Dunmore, changing the plans of the campaign. No one authority mentions the names of all the messengers, but McCulloch, Kenton and Girty, one by one, are mentioned by several authors, and I have seen no other names mentioned by any.

"There is a tradition that, for some insolence on the part of Girty, on this occasion, Gen. Lewis caned him over the head and drove him out of his tent.

"October 10th, the ever-memorable battle of Point Pleasant was fought.

"October 12th Gen. Lewis crossed his army over the Ohio, and started to join Lord Dunmore before the Indian towns.

"Capt. Matthew Arbuckle was left in care and command of the wounded and the garrison at the Point."

1775. Gens. Washington and Lewis "took up" 250 acres of land at and embracing the famous Kanawha burning spring.

"Rev. John Alderson cut out the first wagon road across the mountains as far west as the Greenbrier.

"Thomas Ingles settled on Wolf creek of New river."

1776. Robert Hughes, the first settler at the mouth of Hughes creek, Kanawha, was captured by Indians, and remained two years a prisoner.

1777. Cornstalk, Elinipsico, Red Hawk, and another Indian, murdered at Point Pleasant.

1777. Augusta, Botetourt and Greenbrier volunteers, under Col. Skillern, march to Point Pleasant, to join forces under Gen. Hand, from Fort Pitt, but Hand's forces did not arrive.

"Lieut. Moore, and three men, killed by a small pary of Indians, near the fort, at Point Pleasant—Fort Randolph."

1778. Fort Randolph (Point Pleasant) was besieged by a large force of Indians. Having failed to take the fort, they started up Kanawha toward the interior settlements. Capt. McKee, then in command, called for volunteer "runners," to go to the Greenbrier settlements and warn the settlers of the approach of the Indians. Hammond and Pryor at once volunteered and, being rigged out in Indian disguise, by the "Grenadier squaw," then at the fort, acting as interpreter, they reached the settlement safely, and their timely notice, no doubt, saved a terrible massacre.

"Donnally's Fort was attacked, in May, by the Indian party above mentioned; but, having been fore-warned by Hammond and Pryor, and reinforced by volunteers from Camp Union,

under Stewart and Lewis, they successfully resisted the attack; the Indians retired with considerable loss.

"Thomas Ingles settled in Abb's valley."

1780. Thomas Ingles resettled Burke's Garden.

"An Indian raid into Greenbrier resulted in the killing of John Pryor, one of the brave messengers, and Hugh McIver, and the capture of their wives; also, Henry Baker and two Bridger brothers, and an old man, named Monday, and his wife, were killed, and the wives and children of Thomas Drennon and Mr. Smith made prisoners.

"A little later, William Griffith, his wife and daughter, were murdered, and a son, a lad, taken prisoner. This was the last Indian raid made, or murder committed, in the Greenbrier country.

"The trail of this last raiding party, only two in number, was discovered and followed by John Young, Benjamin Morris, William Arbuckle and Robert Aaron, as they passed down Kanawha, crossed Elk and went up Little Sandy; their camp was discovered on a fork of Sandy; they were fired on, one was killed and one escaped; the lad, young Griffith, was recovered. The one killed proved to be a white man, disguised as an Indian. The fork on which he was killed was, from this circumstance, called White Man's fork of Aaron's fork (from Bob Aaron) of Little Sandy.

"A Mr. Carr and two children murdered near the mouth of Bluestone, and a woman at Culversom's Bottom."

1782. Thomas' Ingles' family captured, and part murdered, in Burke's Garden.

"Lewisburg established as a town, with Samuel Lewis, James Reid, Samuel Brown, Andrew Donnally, John Stewart Arthur Matthews, William Ward and Thomas Edgar, trustees.

"Thomas Teays, captured below the mouth of Coal river, taken to Ohio and condemned to be burned, with Col. Crawford. He was recognized and saved by an Indian, with whom he had hospitably divided his salt, when surveying in Teay's valley, the year before.

1784. Jamas Moore, Jr., captured in Abb's valley.

1785. Captain John Dickinson located five hundred and two acres of land at and about Campbell's creek, including the "Big Bufialo Lick," or Salt spring.

1786. The first wagon road, called "Koontz's new road," was opened from Lewisburg to Kanawha river. Its route was by Muddy creek, Keeney's Knobbs, Rich creek, Gauley, Twenty-Mile, Bell creek and Campbell's creek, with side trails down Kelly's creek and Hughes' creek to the "Boat Yards."

"James Moore, Sen., of Abb's Valley, and two of his children killed, and the balance of the family made prisoners."

1787. The state of Virginia ordered the construction of a wagon road from Kanawha Falls to Lexington, Ky.

1788. George Clendenin built the first house and fort (Fort Lee) where Charleston now stands. (See chapter on Charleston.)

1788. Lewis Tackett was captured by Indians, and, on the way dow the Kanawha river, was tied to a pine tree at Knob Shoals, while the captors went off hunting; a rain storm coming on, loosened his buckskin thongs, and allowed him to make a remarkable escape. The "Tackett pine" stood until within the last few years, a prominent landmark.

"Tackett, after this, bult a fort at the mouth of Coal river, lower side."

Later, this fort was captured, and several persons murdered. There are two versions of the story of the capture of fort Tackett. I adopt that given by Mr. Atkinson, in his history of Kanawha, derived from Mr. George Harmon, It is the less sensational, but probably the most reliable. John and Lewis Tackett, and their mother, were captured near the fort, while gathering turnips. Chris. Tackett and John McElhany were the only men in the fort when captured. Chris. Tackett was killed in the action, McElhany and wife, Betsy Tackett, Sam Tackett, and a small boy, were taken prisoners; McElhany was tomahawked near the fort. John Tackett succeeded in making his escape, but Lewis Tackett and his mother were taken to the Indian town on the Scioto, where they remained, as prisoners, two years, when they were ransomed and returned. In the Young family, of this valley, is preserved an interesting tradition in relation to the capture of Tackett's fort. When the attack commenced, John Young with a young wife and a one-day-old babe, was in the fort, but upon the final surrender, and under the friendly cover of the approaching shades of night, Young picked up his wife and babe and the pallet on which they lay, made his way, unobserved, to a canoe at the bank, laid them in, and, through a drenching rain, poled his canoe, with its precious freight, up the river, during the night to Clendenin's fort, and they were saved. Neither father, mother nor babe suffered any harm from the effort, fright or exposure. That babe, Jacob Young, died but recently, aged about ninety years, leaving a large family of worthy descendants in this valley.

"Ben Eulin was out in the hills below Point Pleasant, hunting; he was pursued by Indians, and, to escape them, jumped over a cliff, just below and in sight of the point, which proved to be fifty-three feet high. He fell in a clump of pawpaw bushes and grape vines which broke his fall and saved breaking his

neck; he then jumped over another cliff, twelve feet high, and finally escaped, but little worse for the wear and tear.

"About this time, the family of Capt. Van Bibber was attacked, near the Point; his daughter, Miss Rhoda, was killed and scalped, and Joseph, a younger brother, taken prisoner to Detroit: he escaped and returned home, in 1794, soon after Wayne's victory. Capt. Van Bibber, aided by his faithful negro servant, Dave, killed two or three Indians during the attack above mentioned."

1788--1789. Daniel Boone and Paddy Huddlestone caught the first beavers in Kanawha valley, at Long shoal. The steel trap is still preserved.

1789. Mad Ann Bailey made her famous solitary ride, through the wilderness, to camp Union, for amunition for the Clendenin fort. (Fort Lee.)

1789. Kanawha, or "Kenhawa," county was formed. (For organization, etc., see chapter on Charleston.)

"William Wyatt, who lived at the mouth of Paint creek, dreamed that he was bitten by a snake, and interpreted it to mean that he would be shot by an Indian. To quiet his fears, his young wife went with him to the field, where he was working, and kept watch over him; but, sure enough, he was shot and killed by an Indian.

"A party left the Clendenin settlement by boat, bound for the new settlements of Maysville and Lexington, Ky. They consisted of John May, after whom Maysville was named; Jacob Skyles, a large land operator, and the father-in-law of James Rumsey, the original inventor of the steamboat; Charles Johnson, from Botetourt county, the agent and clerk of Skyles; and John Flynn, Jr., once an Indian captive, and son of the murdered John Flynn, of Cabin creek. At Point Pleasant, they picked up the Misses Fleming, two sisters, recently from Pittsburgh. The expedition had a most thrilling and tragical ending. Descending the Ohio river, they were attacked by Indians; John May and one of the Misses Fleming were killed, Skyles badly wounded, and Johnson, Skyles, Flynn and remaining Miss Fleming taken prisoners. Skyles and Johnson, after enduring great privations and tortures, succeeded in making their escape, by separate routes, and returned to the settlements; John Flynn was burned at the stake; and Miss Fleming was rescued, after being sentenced to be burned, tied to the stake and wood piled up around her. Charles Johnson, after his escape, published in book form a history of the personal experiences of each of the members of this unfortunate expedition; and it is one of the most thrilling narratives of early border dangers, sufferings and hairbreadth escapes that has ever been published.

"Matthias (Tice) Van Bibber and his little brother, Jacob,

were fired on by Indians, near Point Pleasant. Tice was struck in the forehead and slightly wounded, but succeeded in escaping. Jacob, the lad, was caught and made prisoner; he made his escape and got home, some two years later.

"William Carrol and family, of Carroll's branch, Kanawha, narrowly escaped being murdered; they escaped, but the Indians burned their house.

1790. Leonard Cooper and William Porter made the first settlements on Elk river, about Cooper's creek and Porter's island.

"'Squire Staten was killed on his way home from court in Charleston, at the mouth of a branch which still bears the name of 'Staten's Run.'

"James Hale was killed in the branch opposite the Clendenin fort, which still bears the name of 'Hale's Branch.'

"Fleming Cobb poled a canoe, with ammunition for the Clendenin fort (Fort Lee), sixty miles, up stream, from Point Pleasant, in fourteen hours.

"The Indians killed some cows on a creek in the upper end of Kanawha county, and hung the bells on swinging limbs, so they would ring as the wind blew. When the citizens went out to bring their cows home they were shot down. The creek was named, from this circumstance, 'Bell creek.'

1791. Jerry and Ben Carpenter, and some others, from Bath county, settled on the Upper Elk, and, soon after, O'Brien. They had not been there long when Ben Carpenter and wife were killed, and their house burned; the others, being warned by the burning of Ben Carpenter's house, fled, secreted themselves, and escaped.

"Thomas Lewis established the first ferries, at Point Pleasant, across both rivers, December 9th.

"In May, a party of eighteen whites were attacked by about thirty Indians, about half a mile up the Ohio from the Point Pleasant fort. Michael See and Robert Sinclair were killed; Hampton and Thomas Northup, and a black boy belonging to See, were made prisoners. The boy was the son of Dick Pointer, who fought so bravely to defend Donnally's fort, in 1782. He became an Indian (?) chief, and fought with the friendly Indians on the side of the Americans, against the English, in the war of 1812.

"Mr. Atkinson, in his 'History of Kanawha,' gives an interesting account of the sad fate of a Mr. Strange. He came over on to the upper waters of Elk with a surveying party. He was not an experienced woodsman, and, becoming separated from the party, soon got lost. His companions fired guns to indicate where they were, but it is supposed he thought the Indians were after him, and he fled for life. He was never seen alive again;

but, some years after, his skeleton, portions of his shot-pouch, and the remains of his rusted rifle were found, forty miles distant from where he was lost, at the foot of a beech tree, at the mouth of a creek emptying into Elk, which, from that time, has been called 'Strange creek.' Before he finally succumbed to hunger and exhaustion, he cut, with his penknife, in the bark of the tree, the tollowing lines.

'Strange is my name, and I'm on strange ground,
And strange it is that I can't be found.'

"Two daughters of Henry Morris, who lived on Peters' creek of Gauley, were murdered by Indians. Morris made the Indians suffer dearly for it afterward.

"George Clendenin and Daniel Boone were elected to the legislature of Virginia.

"By a ruse with cow bells, Indians captured the Misses Tyler, near the fort at Point Pleasant.

"John Wheeler, with wife and four children, lived opposite the mouth of Cabin creek. They were attacked by Indians, all killed but one boy, Nat, and their house and the bodies burned.

"Christiansburg, Montgomery county, Va., was established (October 10th) and the following named gentlemen appointed trustees: Christian Snydow, Byrd Smith, James Barnett, Hugh Crockett, Samuel Eason, Joseph Cloyd, John Preston, James Charlton and James Craig.

1793. Collins says the *first* line of packet boats established on the Ohio were keel and flat-bottomed, making one round trip between Cincinnati and Pittsburg per month, passing the mouth of Kanawha river. Passengers were allowed to work their passage, if short of cash. There was one boat fortnightly, soon increased to one weekly; they each carried six one-pound guns. The cabins were bullet-proof, and had port holes to fire from. There was a separate cabin for ladies.

1794. Shadrach Harriman, then living at the mouth of Lower Vanable branch, two miles above Charleston, on the south side, was the *last* person killed by Indians in the Kanawha valley.

"Gen. Wayne's crushing defeat of the Indians, at 'Fallen Timbers,' August 20th, gave after peace and security to this region.

"December 19th, the legislature of Virginia established the town of 'Charlestown.' (See chapter on Charleston.)

"The legislature enacted 'that forty acres of land, the property of Thomas Lewis, at the mouth of Kenhawa, and in the said county of Kenhawa, as they are already laid off into lots and streets, shall be established a town by the name of Point Pleasant, and Leonard Cooper, John Van Bibber, Isaac Tyler, William Owens, William Allyn, Allyn Pryor, John Reynolds, George Clen-

denin and William Morris, gentlemen, appointed trustees thereof, December 19, 1794.'

1796. Volney, the distinguished French author and infidel, was in the valley.

1797. The late Gen. Lewis Ruffner was born October 1st, in the Clendenin block house, probably the first white child born within the present limits of Charleston.

" Elisha Brooks erected a small kettle furnace and commenced the manufacture of salt, above Campbell's creek.

1798. Peter Bowyer, father of the late Col. John Bowyer, of Putnam county, made the *first* settlement in the New river gorge, and established a ferry at Sewell.

" Daniel Boone made his *last* survey in Kanawha (September 8th,) and probably the *last* he ever made.

1799. He left Kanawha for the Spanish Missouri territory.

1808. David and Tobias Ruffner bored the *first* salt well and erected a larger furnace for the manufacture of salt.

1809. William Whitteker bored the *first* salt well and built the first salt furnace on the south side of Kanawha.

1810–12. Audubon, the naturalist, was here.

" Hon. Thomas Ewing, the elder, boiled salt and studied law and Latin here.

1815. Capt. James Wilson, boring for salt water, struck the *first* natural gas well of America.

" Last buffalo killed in the Kanawha valley.

1817. David and Tobias Ruffner *first* discovered and used coal here.

1819. The steamboat Robert Thompson, the first ever in the river, came as far as Red-House, but could not get farther up.

1820. The failure of the Thompson to get up induced the State of Virginia to direct the James River and Kanawha Company to improve the navigation of Kanawha river so as to give three feet of water from the mouth to Kanawha falls, all the year, and to construct a turnpike road across the mountains to the Kanawha falls.

" Last elk killed in the Kanawha valley.

1820. The Andrew Donnally was the first steamboat to reach Charleston.

1823. The Eliza was the next steamer to ascend the river as high as Charleston.

1838. Ingles' bridge built; the *first* bridge across New river or Kanawha.

1840. Billy Morris invented the 'slips,' or 'jars,' a simple tool which made deep well boring possible. It is now used wherever deep well boring is done, and its great utility and value entitle him to be ranked, among inventors, as a great public benefactor.

1841. William Thompson 'struck' natural gas near the burning spring, and used it for boiling salt. He was the first person in America to utilize natural gas for manufacturing.

1843. Dickinson & Shrewsberry got natural gas on the Burning spring tract originally taken up by Generals Washington and Lewis. Messrs. D. & S. also used the gas in the manufacture of salt, as did several others in the neighborhood soon after.

1845. McAdam turnpike constructed from Buchanan, on James river, to the Tennessee line, crossing New river.

1846. Sutton Matthews discovered, on Falling Rock creek of Elk, the first cannel coal known in the Kanawha valley; perhaps the first in America.

1855. The Virginia & Tennessee, now Norfolk & Western railroad, was opened — the first railroad to cross the New River.

1855-6. The first commercial shipments of coal from Kanawha commenced.

" The first coal oil works (Cannelton) erected in this valley.

1861. The battle of Scary, one of the first during the late civil war, was fought, July 17th.

" The highest water in Kanawha since the settlement of the valley — September.

" The southern forces, under Gen. Henry A. Wise, retired from the valley, and it was occupied by the federals, under Gen. J. D. Cox, July 24th.

" Battle of Cross Lanes and Carnifex's ferry, on the Gauley. Gen. Lytle wounded, but not killed, as generally stated — September.

1862. The confederates, under Gen. Loring, re-entered the Kanawha valley; the federals, under Gen. Lightburn, retiring — September.

" Gen. Loring retired from the valley, and Gen. Cox again came in — October.

1863. Virginia divided, and West Virginia established as a separate state — June 20th.

1864. Battle of Cloyd's mountain, Pulaski county, May 9th; Gen. A. G. Jenkins, killed; Col. T. L. Broun and Col. Tom Smith, wounded.

1873. Chesapeake & Ohio railroad opened.

" United States government commenced improving Kanawha river.

" The Quinnemont company established the first iron furnace and the first coke works on New river.

1874. Centennial celebration of the battle of Point Pleasant, at the Point.

1878. William Wyant established the first coke works on Kanawha river.

1883. The New river branch of the Norfolk & Western railroad opened to Pocahontas.

1883–84. The late Col. P. W. Norris, who, it is claimed, was the original suggestor of the Yellowstone National park, and through whose efforts, largely, the government was induced to reserve and set apart that wonderland as a national pleasure park, and who was, for several years, the government superintendent of the park, make several visits to this (Kanawha) valley, under the auspices of the Smithsonian institution, to examine and explore the numerous and extensive earthworks, stone cairns and other interesting remains of the pre-historic mound-builder race, which, at some early period, seems to have been very populous in this valley. Col. Norris opened and explored many of the mounds, cairns, graves, fortifications, etc., and collected and forwarded from here to the Smithsonian institution several thousand relics of this ancient, interesting and mysterious people.

The Bettie Black-band Iron Furnace, the first in the immediate Kanawha valley, and the Davis' creek railroad, were constructed.

1884. The most disastrous mine explosion at Pocahontas (in March) that has ever occurred in America, causing the loss of over one hundred lives.

The Ohio Central, now Kanawha & Michigan, opened to Charleston.

1885. The railroad bridge across the Ohio river, at Point Pleasant, completed.

"The state capital of West Virginia permanently established at Charleston, and the new capitol building occupied.

1887. Ohio River R. R. built. and bridge over Kanawha river at Point Pleasant.

1890. Steel bridge erected across Kanawha at Charleston.

"Peace, health, plenty, and a fair degree of prosperity prevail in the New-river-Kanawha valley, and throughout the borders of West Virginia generally."

CHAPTER XII.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

THE KANAWHA RIVER AND KANAWHA VALLEY.

HAT is known as the Kanawha river is formed by the junction of the New and Gauley rivers in Fayette county, and runs thence, in a northwesterly course, 98 miles through the counties of Fayette, Kanawha, Putnam and Mason, to its junction with the Ohio river at Point Pleasant. There is almost no level or bottom land for ten or fifteen miles down from the upper end of the valley. The bottoms then widen gradually until at Charleston the valley attains a width of about a mile from hill to hill. And from Charleston to the mouth, it maintains a width of one to two miles. It is noted for its picturesque beauty of scenery, mild, genial climate and rich productive alluvial soil, producing the cereals, tobacco, grasses, fruits and vine in great perfection. For something of the prehistoric of the valley, see chapter on the mound-builders. For the history of the first white pioneers and early white setttements, see historical sketches, For a history of the navigation of the river, see chapter on the lock and dam improvement of the river. The four counties through which the river flows, and within which the Kanawha valley lies, are, in the order of the priorities of their organization: Kanawha, Mason, Fayette and Putnam.

Kanawha county. For the organization of Kanawha, which was formed in 1789, see chapter on Charleston.

Mason county. Mason county was formed by act of Assembly, Jan. 2d, 1804, and named after George Mason, a prominent actor in the days of the revolution.

The following named justices composed the first court of the county: Francis Walkins, William Clendenin, William Owens, John Roach, Maurice Reynolds, Edward McDonaugh, John Henderson, John McCulloch, Michael Rader and Andrew Lewis. The first court was held at the house of William Owens, in the town of Point Pleasant, July 3d, 1804. Francis Walkins, sheriff, opened court. William Sterrit qualified as clerk. Sylvester Woodward, John Kerr and Robert Robinson were granted license to practice law in the courts of the county. Mr. Woodward was appointed commonwealth attorney, and Samuel

Clements, commissioner of the revenue. Robert McKee was appointed county land surveyor. William Owens was commissioned as colonel of the county and Jesse Bennett, major of the same.

The first permanent settlement within the county was at Point Pleasant, and dates from time of the battle between the Indians and whites at that place in October 1774. Cornstalk, the great Indian chief, who was unwarrantedly murdered here, in 1777, lies buried in the court house yard.

On the 19th of December, 1794, the General Assembly of Virginia, enacted "that 200 acres of land, the property of Thomas Lewis, at the mouth of Kanawha river, in the said county of Kanawha, as they are already laid off in lots and streets, shall be established as a town by the name of Point Pleasant, and Leonard Cooper, John Van Bibber, Isaac Tyler, William Owens, William Allyn, John Reynolds, Allen Pryor, George Clendenin and William Morris, gentlemen, appointed trustees thereof." The town was incorporated in 1833.

Gen. Washington was on the site of Point Pleasant in 1770, accompanied by his physician, Dr. Craik; his friend and surveyor — the afterwards unfortunate martyr — Col. William Crawford; Joseph Nicholson, Robert Bell, William Harrison, Charles Morgan and Daniel Reuden. They proceeded to locate and survey large tracts of land on the Ohio and Kanawha, under military land warrants.

For a history of the ever memorable battle of Point Pleasant, see chapter on that subject.

The other towns and villages of Mason county are Leon, West Columbia, Mason City and Hartford City.

The Ohio River railroad passes down the Ohio river, crossing the Kanawha by steel bridge at Point Pleasant, and the K. & M. R. R. passes down Kanawha, crossing the Ohio by steel bridge at Point Pleasant.

Fayette County — Was formed in 1831, from Kanawha, Nicholas, Greenbrier and Logan. It was named in honor of Gen. LaFayette. The county is rapidly increasing in wealth and population, growing largely out of its valuable steam and coking coals and timber.

Along the upper Kanawha and New rivers, there is, within this county, very wild and grand natural scenery. The Chesapeake & Ohio railway passes through this county, along the Kanawha and New rivers.

The towns of the county are Fayettville, the county seat, a village at Kanawha Falls, and Coal Valley, a mining and trading town, central to a large coal mining district on the upper Kanawha.

Putnam County was formed by act of the general assembly

of Virginia, March 11th, 1848. It was named in honor of Gen. Israel Putnam. It was taken from Kanawha, Mason and Cabell.

The first court was held on the 22nd of May, 1848, at the house of Talleyrand P. Brown, on the site of the present town of Winfield. The justices present were Matthew D. Brown, Alexander W. Handley, John C. Thomas, Sr., Mahlon S. Morris, Lawrence A. Washington, Lewis S. Boling, John Morgan, John Ruffner, William A. Alexander and James Smith. Elijah Kimberling was chosen crier, pro tem. H. C. Forlen was appointed county clerk; Geo. W. Summers prosecuting attorney; Daniel B. Washington, commissioner of the revenue; Samuel F. Wyatt, surveyor of lands and Addison Wolf, coroner. Matthew D. Brown was chosen first high sheriff of the county. At the June term of court James Hednick and James M. Laidley were granted license to practice in the courts of the county. The towns of the county are: Winfield, the county seat, named after Gen. Winfield Scott; Redhouse, a village on the opposite side of the Kanawha; Buffalo, founded by Benjamin K. Craig, in 1834, and named after Big Buffalo creek, near the mouth of which it is, and Raymond city, at the mouth of Pocatalico river, named after John I. Raymond, the eminent editor of New York. Some other mining and other villages are springing up. Putnam county is rich in land, coal and timber.

The Raymond City coal company and several other companies are working the equivalent of the Pittsburgh seam of coal, which is here of large size and fine quality. The C. & O. and K. & M. railroads pass through the county.

CHAPTER XIII.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

CHARLESTON, WEST VIRGINIA.

UNDER this head it is not our purpose to attempt a very full history of Charleston; that would exceed the intended limits of this chapter; but as there is very little of its early history recorded — our older citizens knowing it chiefly by tradition, and our later population scarcely at all — it may be well to give here a brief outline sketch of its early settlement and after-progress; though such a sketch can be expected to have but a local interest. Previous to 1755, so far as known, no white person had ever trodden upon the site where Charleston now stands. In July of that year, as elsewhere stated, Mrs. Mary Ingles and Mrs. Bettie Draper passed over it, as captives, on their way to the Indian towns north of the Ohio. The next white person here was Matthew Arbuckle, an enterprising frontier hunter and trapper from the Greenbrier country, who passed down the valley in 1764, to a French trading post at the mouth of the Kanawha, to barter his peltries, and returned. The next we hear of were Simon Kenton and his companions, Yeager and Strader, in 1771, when they passed over it and built a camp at or near the mouth of Two-mile creek of Elk, and occupied it, and hunted and trapped until the spring of 1773, when they were attacked by Indians, Yeager killed, and Kenton and Strader both wounded, but succeeded in making their escape to the mouth of Kanawha, where they were cared for by the traders. In 1773, Col. Thomas Bullitt, who had distinguished himself for bravery and efficient service in the Braddock war, in 1755, and in the expedition against Fort Du Quesne, under Gen. Forbes, 1758, came here to locate his military lands. He was attracted by this fine bottom, and "took up" 1,030 acres lying along the Kanawha, from Elk river up to Wilson's branch. Later, Col. Bullitt sold this tract to his brother, Cuthbert Bullitt, a distinguished judge, and president of the court of appeals of Virginia. His son, Cuthbert Bullitt, Jr., was a judge in Maryland; and another son, Alexander Scott Bullitt, was member of the legislature, president of the senate, president of the state convention, and lieutenant governor of Kentucky. After the battle of Point Pleasant, in 1774, this valley began to fill up rap-

idly; but as this tract was held by non-residents, no settlement was made on it, and nothing done with it until some thirteen or fourteen years later. In December, 1787, a Mr. Clendenin, who had seen the land in 1774, when going to, and returning from, the battle of the Point, and again in 1785–86, when he was one of the state commissioners for laying out and constructing the first wagon road from Lewisburg to the Kanawha, met Judge Bullitt in Richmond, purchased the tract, and at once began his preparations to settle on it.

There seems to be no record of the exact date of his commencing his settlement; but it is known that he and his party reached the locality on the last of April, and as they were not persons to waste time, it is safe to assume that the settlement of Charleston dates from the 1st day of May, 1788. Tackett's fort, at the mouth of Coal river, was built a little later, during the same year. Clendenin built the first house on this bottom, near the river, at the northeast corner of what are now Kanawha and Brooks streets. It was a two-story, double, hewed, bullet-proof, log house, with two rooms below and two above. Immediately in front of this was also built a stockade fort. Both were used, as occasion required, for protection. Several other settlers came out with Clendenin. These were: His brothers, William, Robert and Alexander, Josiah Harrison, Francis Watkins, Shadrach Harriman, Charles McClung, John Edwards, Lewis Tackett, and, perhaps, others; and it was probably they, or some of them, who immediately after, built the first six or seven houses. This was then Greenbrier county, and Clendenin got the then surveyor of the county, Mr. Alexander Welch, who lived at Lewisburg, to come down and lay off a town for him. A block of forty acres was divided and laid off into as many one-acre lots. There were two streets, called "Front" and "Main," now Kanawha and Virginia streets. The cross streets were numbered, not named. This town extended from Elk river up to now Capital street. A plat was made of it by the surveyor; but, from some neglect, was never recorded. According to tradition, the first half dozen houses built here, after Clendenin's, were: One at the upper corner of now Truslow and Kanawha streets, where Mr. L. A. Can now resides; one at the northeast corner of Kanawha and Court streets, where the Barlow building now stands; one between Alderson and Summers streets, where Dr. Rogers' drug-store now stands; one at the northeast corner of Kanawha and Summers streets, where the Frankenberger block now stands; one at the northwest corner of Capital and Kanawha streets, where the Kanawha Valley bank now stands, and one at the northeast corner of Kanawha and Hale streets, where J. P. Hale now resides. In 1789, when Kanawha county was formed, there were but seven houses. In 1798, these had increased to twelve,

and in 1803 to 1810, to about twenty. No name was given to the town for several years after it was laid out. It was called, indiscriminately, "Clendenin's Settlement," or "The Town at the Mouth of Elk." After the formation of the county, Mr. Reuben Slaughter, the county surveyor, made another plat of the town, following substantially, if not exactly, the plat of Surveyor Welch, up to Capital street; but extended it up to now Dunbar street. This plat is on record in the clerk's office of the county. Some years ago, the late Mr. John Dryden, then clerk of this county, through some friend in Lewisburg, found among the old private papers of Mr. Welch, in possession of some of his descendants, the original plat of the town. Though never recorded, it is, fortunately, preserved. It is an interesting historic relic.

On the 19th of December, 1794, the legislature of Virginia formally established the town, and fixed its name as "Charlestown." It is a curious fact that, although the legislature had officially established the county, in 1789, as "Kanhawa." and now the town, in 1794, as "Charlestown," both names, by common consent, became changed — one to Kanawha and the other to Charleston. How, why or when, nobody knows. Some years ago there was much trouble and annoyance about our mail matter, growing out of the confusion of the post-office names of our Charleston, and Charlestown, Jefferson county. With a view to remedy this, a public meeting was called here to discuss the propriety of changing the name of our town from Charleston to "Kanawha City." It was warmly discussed, but defeated, mainly on the sentimental ground that it would be sacrilege to abolish the name of the dear old pioneer who had shed his blood and risked his life here, "in an early day," among the Indians; had founded the town, given it his own name, and built a fort to protect and defend his neighbors as well as himself, etc. Sentiment prevailed, and the name remained unchanged; but the writer took some pains to look up the early history of the settling and naming of the town. It was soon discovered that the founder's name was George, not Charles. This somewhat staggered the sentimentalists, but they recovered, saying that George was a very modest gentleman, and, instead of taking it himself, he had conceded the honor of the name to his brother, whose name was Charles; and they clinched this by quoting Howe, who, in his History of Virginia, so states; and other historians all follow Howe. But a further investigation of the family records showed that George had no brother Charles; then it was conjectured that the name was probably given in honor of his son Charles, but a still further investigation of the family genealogies proved that he had no son. After much search of records, and tracing of traditions among the old timers, the writer has but recently arrived at the facts of this case through Mr. C. C. Miller, of Mason

county, a descendant of the Clendenins. He says the town was named by George Clendenin, the founder, in honor of his *father*, whose name was Charles. He was an elderly gentleman, who came here with his sons, died in the Clendenin block house, and was buried near the upper end of the garden, and near the front fence. The fences have been somewhat changed here within recent years; but from Mr. Miller's description of the place, and the writer's knowledge of the lines, he concludes that the grave of Charles Clendenin, whose name the town bears, lies between the present sidewalk on Kanawha street and the roadway, about thirty feet above, midway between Brooks and Morris streets, and at a right angle from the river, about opposite the gum of the old gas well. It would be a graceful act for the city to mark the spot with a durable monument and suitable inscription. Shortly after the Clendenin fort was built, a smaller block house was built about a mile above, and just in front of the present residence of Mr. Franklin Ruffner. This small block house was probably built by Clendenin as a protection to his tenants and farm hands, as it was before he had sold all the bottom above the town, as he afterward did, in 1796, to Mr. Joseph Ruffner.

In 1793, at a time when the Indians were quite numerous hereabout, and hostile, a Mr. James Van Bibber, passing early one morning from the lower fort to the little block house above, saw an Indian in war paint suddenly rise up from behind a log in front of him. Each raised his gun and fired as quickly as possible, the shots being so nearly simultaneous as to make but one report. The Indian fell, and his ball had grazed the body of his opponent. Van Bibber not knowing how many more there might be, made all possible speed toward the upper fort, and met some of the inmates coming to the scene of danger, being warned by what they supposed a single shot, which was an agreed danger signal. Van Bibber exclaimed that he had just "fought a duel," and related the circumstances. Upon repairing to the scene of the conflict, they found the blood of the victim, but the enemy had disappeared. Some days after, the weather being quite warm, the vultures were hovering about the base of the hill back of the bottom, and upon examining into the cause, the remains of the dead Indian were found in a crevice of the rock in the ravine which leads from the present Piedmont road to Spring Hill cemetery, where they had been conveyed and secrected by his companions. This incident was contributed by our worthy citizen, Dr. E. A. Summers, to the "American Pioneer," a periodical published in Cincinnati, in 1843.

In 1790, an interesting, but tragical incident occurred at the Clendenin fort. As related by the old traditions, it is as follows: The neighboring families were all gathered in the fort for safety, as the Indians were known to be prowling about the

neighborhood. One of the inmates, a beautiful young lady, was very ill with a fever. It so happened — and it always so happens — that this fair young lady had a gallant young lover, also in the fort, and whose name was James Hale. As there were no ice houses, nor ice machines, in those days, the gallant young lover determined, at the risk of his life, to go to a fine spring across the river, for a bucket of fresh water to cool the parched tongue and fevered brow of his lady-love; so he took his life in one hand and a bucket in the other, and crossed over, but just as he was in the act of dipping up the cool, sparkling water, he was pierced by several shots from the Indians, and fell dead in the spring; upon hearing of which, his fair sweetheart was so shocked that she swooned, and sank, and died. How could she have done less in recognition of the brave and generous act of her daring lover, who had risked and lost his own life in endeavoring to save hers? Unfortunately — or, perhaps fortunately — there is another version of this highly romantic story. As there may be matter-of-fact, commonplace readers as well as sentimental ones, I shall give both versions, that persons may choose according to their tastes and mental idiosyncrasies. The reverse of the picture above given is as follows: Mr. Clendenin had in his household employment a buxom country lass who cooked the frugal fare, milked the cows and washed the dishes. She was, probably, never sick in her life, and if she ever loved anybody, she probably did not know it, or "let concealment, like a worm in the bud," etc., Mr. Clendenin also had as farm hands, one James Hale, and another, whose name may have been — Smith. These were strapping young fellows, who plowed the corn, fed the stock, and did other farm work, and would sometimes, "while resting," go over to the spring for some fresh water. On one occasion, when they were both over, they were both fired on by Indians; Hale was killed and Smith made his escape by jumping into and swimming across the river, diving, from time to time, to avoid the bullets fired after him. Whichever version of this story is accepted, the central historical fact remains — that James Hale, while at the spring opposite the fort, for water, was shot and killed by the Indians, and the branch, hitherto nameless, was called after him, and still bears the name of "Hale's Branch." It is generally claimed for Mr. Norris Whittaker, one of our oldest citizens, who was born in 1807, on the lot where the writer now resides, was the first white child born within the present limits of the city of Charleston; this, however, is a mistake, as he remembers frequently to have heard the late Gen. Lewis Ruffner relate that he was born in the Clendenin fort, on the 1st of October, 1797, ten years before Whittaker. It may be as well here to correct an error of fact in regard to the old fort, fallen into Mr. Atkinson, in his valuable

history of Kanawha county. He says: "The Clendenin fort was *torn down* by Mr. C. C. Lewis, in 1874, to make room for the elegant mansion in which he now resides." The facts are as as follows: The old stockade fort proper, being nearly rotted down, was torn away and removed about 1815, but the Clendenin block house, or resident fort, continued to be used as a family residence. After the death or removal of George Clendenin the property passed into the possession of Col. David Ruffner; next into that of Capt. James Wilson; after his death into that of Mr. Frederick Brooks, who long resided there, and after him of Mr. John A. Truslow, from whom the writer purchased it in 1872. Wishing to make room for more modern buildings, and being unwilling to sacrifice so interesting a historical land-mark, he went to great expense and trouble to remove the building bodily, about five hundred feet, to a vacant lot near the southeast corner of Brooks and Virginia streets, where it was located, thoroughly repaired, painted, and made sightly and comfortable. Having long been a weather-boarded house, the logs are not visible, and it has every appearance of a frame house. It is at present owned and occupied by Mrs. Marie L. Jeffries. It was, as stated, the first house built within the limits of Charleston, is now over one hundred years old, is in excellent repair and good for another century. The writer is glad to say that it was *not* pulled down and destroyed, and proud to say that he was instrumental in preserving it. The lot from which it was removed was sold to Mr. C. C. Lewis, who built upon it his present elegant residence.

In about 1789—90, when Indians were troublesome and threatening, the famous female spy, scout, messenger, etc. "Mad Ann Bailey," made her daring ride, alone through the wilderness, from here to fort Union (Lewisburg), and brought back a supply of powder and lead for the fort. Ann was English by birth and never got rid of her cockney dialect. She was a first rate rifle shot, and, in telling some of her friends, at one time, of one of her recent feats she said she had just "killed a howl hoff a helm tree across Helk river." At another time, about 1790—91, the Clendenin fort was short of ammunition, and Fleming Cobb, an expert woodsman and waterman, was detailed to go to Point Pleasant for a supply. He started by canoe with his ready rifle and enough cooked food for the trip. He floated down by night to avoid being seen by Indians along shore. By daylight, next morning, he had made fifty miles of the sixty miles' distance. He drew his canoe into the mouth of Ten Mile creek, and secreted it and himself under overhanging boughs, and took a refreshing sleep in the bottom of the canoe. During the day, while he was waiting the darkness of a north night to complete his journey, he saw passing up on the opposite

side of the river about twenty Indians; they did not discover him, but the sight at once suggested to him the danger he should have to encounter on his up trip. When night came, he went on safely to the fort at the Point. Next day he got his powder, lead and flints, and, at dark, set out on his perilous return. After a few hours travel, poling his canoe up stream, he was discovered and pursued by a party of three Indians, but, as they were on the opposite side of the river, and as he kept his canoe close to his shore, he managed, during the night, to escape harm. Next morning, being about the mouth of Coal river, one of the Indians undertook to swim the Kanawha, so that if he (Cobb) escaped the two on one side, he would inevitably fall within reach of the one on the opposite side. Cobb at once saw the danger that threatened him, and started his canoe full speed for the crossing Indian, being determined to kill him if possible. When within good range he fired and wounded his man. He did not wait to see results, as the other two were firing upon him, but started his canoe up stream with all the energy he could command; and while the two Indians were rescuing the wounded one from the water and taking care of him, he (Cobb) had gotten out of sight; and, about ten o'clock reached the Clendenin fort safely, having made sixty miles by canoe, up stream, without food, sleep or rest, most of the way by night, and most of the way pursued by three armed Indians, one of whom he succeeded in killing or wounding, and thereby escaping them all. What wonderful powers of physical endurance these early frontiersmen had! Without it they could not, with all their nerve and pluck, have executed such daring, dangerous and desperate undertakings. The bottom on which Charleston stands was, originally, largely covered by beech timber. Bears and turkeys are very fond of beech mast, and used to congregate here in great numbers in the fall and fatten on it. The early settlers used to kill and "put up" bear meat for their winter's bacon. Tradition says that Ben. Morris, a noted hunter, killed thirteen bears near here in one afternoon. It is not stated whether it was an extra good day for bears. Mr. John L. Cole, whose memory is well stored with the early traditions of the valley, tells me of an interesting one in the Price family, to the effect that Archibald Price, "in an early day," was making sugar at a sugar camp across the river, probably about where the C. & O. depot now stand, when he discovered that there were Indians in very dangerous proximity, and that his canoe was on the wrong side of the river; but, "Necessity is the mother of invention." He gathered up his sugar kettle, inverted it over his head, thus making a diving bell of it, and walked into and waded through the river on the bottom, saving his life and his—kettle. It is well known to hunters and woodsmen that buffalo,

deer, bears, etc., have regular trails of travel through the forests, and especially regular crossing places along the streams. It is said that there was a regular bear crossing just in front of the present court house; and a deer crossing opposite the fort and month of Hale's Branch. The year that Kanawha county was established (1789) was an eventful one. In this year the first United States Congress met, the United States Constitution became operative, and George Washington took his seat as first president of the United States. When the county was organized, it extended from the mouth of Pond creek, five miles below the mouth of the little Kanawha, to the mouth of Big Sandy river, up Big Sandy to Cumberland mountains, and across by Sewell's, etc., containing about ten thousand square miles. Charleston, although it had then but seven houses, was the capital and county-seat of this vast territory. Until the county buildings were erected the courts were held in the Clendenin blockhouse. The first public building erected was a jail, in 1792; it was built of logs, stood on, and partly in, the bank near the fort, was 12x12 feet square and 7 feet high. The next jail was on part of the present court house lot, on the corner of Kanawha and Court streets. The first court house built was of logs, in 1796, on the lot where the present (or late) court house stood. It was 40x30 feet, one story, with two jury rooms 14x14 feet. The first clerk's office was about 14x14 feet, built in 1802, of stone, on the present Hotel Ruffner lot. It was the first stone building in the valley. The last court house lately torn down was built in 1817. The present county clerk's office and the stone jail in 1829, the circuit court office in 1873 and the brick jail in 1888. The lot upon which the county public buildings stand was acquired from George Alderson, in settlement of an unpaid balance of about one hundred dollars due from Alderson to the county. In front of the court-house lot there was an open, covered, public market house. This stood until about 1845. There were no special meat markets then as now.

In the early years of Kanawha county there was but one votting precinct, and that was at the Clendenin fort or fort Lee. The polls were then kept open three days. At the first election held, there were but thirteen votes polled. Of course the candidates were elected by "overwhelming majorities."

In 1790, George Clendenin and Andrew Donnally, Sr., were the first members elected to represent the county in the legislature. In 1791, George Clendenin and Daniel Boone were elected. While on the subject, we will give here as a valuable table for reference, a complete list of all the delegates from Kanawha, from the organization of the county in 1789 until the division of the State in 1863. This list is the more valuable from the fact that the poll-books in our clerk's office, which contained these early

records, were destroyed during the late war. The list from 1789 to 1847, inclusive, the writer cut from the "Kanawha Republican," in 1847, and it is probably the only complete list extant:

1790. George Clendenin, Andrew Donnally.
1791. George Clendenin, Daniel Boone.
1792. Henry Banks, Wm. Morriss.
1793. George Clendenin, Wm. Morriss.
1794. Wm. Morriss, George Clendenin.
1795. Thos. Lewis, George Clendenin.
1796. William Clendenin, William Morriss.
1797. Edward Graham, William Morriss.
1798. William Morriss, Thomas Lewis.
1799. Thomas Lewis, David Ruffner.
1800. William Morriss, Thomas Lewis.
1801. William Clendenin, David Ruffner.
1802. R. McKee, D. Ruffner.
1803. William Clendenin, Andrew Donnally.
1804. D. Ruffner, Carroll Morriss.
1805. Nehemiah Wood, William Morriss.
1806. John Reynolds, William Morriss.
1807. John Reynolds, William Morriss.
1808. John Reynolds, Edmund Morriss.
1809. John Reynolds, David Cartmill.
1810. John Reynolds, Claudius Buster.
1811. John Hansford, David Ruffer.
1812. David Cartmill, John Hansford.
1813. John Wilson, John Hansford.
1814. John Wilson, John Hansford.
1815. John Wilson, John Hansford.
1816. John Wilson, Thomas S. Buster.
1817. John Hansford, Lewis Summers.
1818. John Hansford, P. R. Thompson.
1819. Joseph Lovell, Claudius Buster.
1820. Joseph Lovell, N. W. Thompson.
1821. Joseph Lovell, Lewis Ruffner.
1822. Matthew Dunbar, James Wilson.
1823. James Wilson, Van B. Reynolds.
1824. Joseph Lovell, John Welch.
1825. Lewis Ruffner, Van B. Reynolds.
1826. James H. Fry, Lewis Ruffner.
1827. James C. McFarland, Daniel Smith.
1828. Daniel Smith, Matthew Dunbar.
1829. Daniel Smith, Matthew Dunbar.
1830. George W. Summers.
1831. George W. Summers.
1832. James H. Fry.
1833. James H. Fry.

1834. George W. Summers.
1835. George W. Summers.
1836. A. Donnally.
1837. Daniel Smith.
1838. Daniel Smith.
1839. Van B. Reynolds.
1840. Andrew Donnally.
1841. Daniel Smith.
1842. Andrew Parks.
1843. John Lewis.
1844. Daniel Smith.
1845. Spicer Patrick.
1846. Spicer Patrick.
1847. Andrew Parks.
1848. James M. Laidley.
1849. Dr. Spicer Patrick.
1850. Gen. Daniel Smith.
1851. Maj. Andrew Parks.

Two delegates were now again allowed and the session made biennial.

1853. A. P. Fry, Dr. S. Patrick.
1855. Col. B. H. Smith, Col. Charles Ruffner.
1857. Col. Charles Ruffner, Maj. N. Fitzhugh.
1859. Isaac N. Smith, Isaiah A. Welch.
1861. I. A. Welch represented the state in Richmond and Gen. Lewis Ruffner and Greenbery Slack in Wheeling.
1863 I. A. Welch re-elected by the Confederates to represent the state at Richmond.
1863. June 20th, the state was divided and West Virginia organized as a separate state.

At the first court for Kanawha county, held at the Clendenin fort, in Charleston, Virginia, October 6, 1789, the following "Gentlemen Justices" were severally sworn and qualified as members of the court:

Thomas Lewis, Robert Clendenin, Francis Watkins, Charles McClung, Benjamin Strother, William Clendenin, David Robinson, George Alderson, Leonard Morris and James Van Bibber. Thomas Lewis, being the oldest member of the court, was by the law of the State entitled to the sheriffalty of the county. He was duly commisioned, and he appointed John Lewis his deputy. William H. Cavendish was appointed clerk and Francis Watkins his deputy. The *first* "will" he recorded was the *last* will and testament of William Morris, the first permanent settler at Kelly's creek. Reuben Slaughter was appointed county surveyor. The first survey he entered was one for 1,000 acres, lying about the mouth of Coal river, made for Phineas Taylor,

grandfather of the great showman Phineas Taylor Barnum. David Robinson and John Van Bibber were appointed commissioners of the revenue, and William Drowdy and William Boggs, coroners. In those days counties had military organizations. For Kanawha, George Clendenin was county lieutenant; Thomas Lewis, colonel; Daniel Boone, lieutenant-colonel; William Clendenin, major; Leonard Cooper and John Morris, captains; James Van Bibber and John Young, lieutenants, and William Owens and Alexander Clendenin, ensigns. It was six years after the beginning of the Clendenin settlement, and five years after it had become the county seat of Kanawha, before it was formally incorporated as a town. The legislature then (December 19,1794,) enacted that "Forty acres of land, the property of George Clendenin, at the mouth of Elk river, in the county of 'Kenhawha,' as the same are already laid off into lots and streets, shall be established as a town, by the name of 'Charlestown; and Reuben Slaughter, Andrew Donnally, Sr., William Clendenin, John Morris, Sr., Leonard Morris, George Alderson, Abraham Baker, John Young and William Morris, gentlemen, are appointed trustees." Surely no set of men ever had such a "corner" on public offices as these few gentlemen who first settled about Charleston. Up to 1805, there was no grist mill at or very near Charleston. Tin graters, not yet quite obsolete in the rural districts, were then largely used. Thomas Alsbury had, "in an early day," built a little water-power tub mill at the falls of Coal river, about twelve miles distant, and to this the few settlers had to send their grists of wheat and corn to be ground, and wait their respective turns, according to millers' rule. No flour or meal was kept on sale here at that day. The first mill built near the town was a little floating tub mill in Elk Shoal, below the mouth of Elk river, in 1805. The Ruffners had built a little corn-cracker at the mouth of Campbell's creek, five miles above town, two years before (in 1803) and, later, William Blaine one at Blaine's Island.

The first sawed lumber used here was all whip-sawed, by hand. The first saw mills established were about 1815 to 1820, on Two-Mile creek of Elk. There were three of them, and two of them had corn-cracker attachments. The first steam flour mill and steam saw mill erected in the town, were by David and Daniel Ruffner, in 1832. Mr. Joseph Bibby, then just arrived from England, and who had learned milling there, engaged with the Messrs. Ruffner to operate the flour mill, and, in 1837, he became the purchaser of it. This mill is still in successful operation. Mr. Bibby is still living, and a well preserved man, and has now been connected with this mill, as operator and owner, for fifty-eight years. The first sermon ever preached in Charleston, according to Mr. Atkinson, was by Rev.

William Steele, January 1, 1804, at the house of Mr. Williams, who lived at the upper corner of Hale and Kanawha streets. He came from the Little Kanawha Methodist Circuit, and for some time after preached here once a month. Rev. Asa Shinn, a Methodist, was the first minister to be regularly appointed to this circuit, a few months later. Rev, Henry Bascom, the afterwards distinguished and eloquent Bishop Bascom, preached here for a while, in 1813. The first Methodist brick church was erected on Virginia street, between Summers and Alderson streets, in 1833. Rev. Dr. Henry Ruffner was the first Presbyterian preacher here, about 1816, and was the father of Presbyterianism in the valley. He organized the first Presbyterian congregation in Mercer academy, in March, 1819. After him, Rev. Francis Crutchfield was the first ordained minister to locate here, later in 1819; and he was followed, in 1820, by Rev. Calvin Chadwick. The first Presbyterian church building was erected on Virginia street, between Hale and Capital, in 1828. And a more commodious and elegant church on Quarrier St. in 1890. The Kanawha Presbyterian church, on Virginia, between McFarland and Dunbar streets, was completed in 1885. The first Episcopal minister was Rev. Joseph Willard, in 1816, followed by Rev. Charles Page, in 1821. This church, corner of Virginia and McFarland streets, was built in 1834. The elegant new church at the corner of Broad and Quarrier Sts., in 1888. The first Catholic congregation and St. Mary's academy were organized in 1866, by Rev. Father Joseph W. Stenger. Their church building was completed in 1869, and the convent in 1872. The first Baptist congregation was organized by Rev. P. H. Murry, in 1869, and a church was built on the corner of Donnally and Laidly streets. The first Jewish congregation was organized in 1873. Rabbi Sched was their first teacher, followed by Rabbi Strauss. Their synagogue was built on State street near Court, in 1876, The colored Methodists erected a church, at the corner of Quarrier and Dickinson streets, in 1867, and a larger, finer church on the same site in 1889. Rev. Charles Fisher was the first colored minister. The colored Baptists erected a church on Washington street, near Dickinson, in 1873, Rev. Frank James being their first colored minister. The first colored free school was established in 1867, Miss Lucy James being their first teacher. The first attorney admitted to practice in our courts was Mr. Edward Graham, August 1, 1796. He was appointed Commonwealth's Attorney, at a salary of forty dollars a year. Capt. Cartmill and Scotch Jamie Wilson were among the earliest lawyers. A little later came Charles Baldwin, Judge Matthew Dunbar, Col. B. H. Smith, Col. Joseph Lovell, Maj. Andrew Parks, etc.

As evidence that the early courts had due regard for the

moralities and proprieties, the records show that they fined one Ben Lemasters fifteen shillings, at a court in 1792, for "saying cuss words" in the presence of a member of the court. He could, probably, have sworn in the presence of common mortals for half price. In 1796, the grand jury indicted Joseph Burwell for hunting on Sunday, and William Jones for "taking the name of the Lord in vain."

Tobacco was an important crop, and was largely raised by the early settlers. It was used as a "legal tender," in place of money.

At the May term of court for 1792 it was "Ordered that 4,800 weight of tobacco be levied upon the tithables of this county for the extra services of the clerk for four years last past;" also, "that 3,300 weight of weight of tobacco be levied on the tithables of this county for extra services performed by Thomas Lewis, as sheriff, from the 5th of October 1789, until the 2d day of July, 1792;" also "that William Clendenin be allowed 1,300 pounds of tobacco for his services as sheriff from the 2d day of July, 1792, until the 6th day of August 1793;" also, "that George Clendenin be allowed 1,920 pounds of tobacco for books furnished for the use of this county;" also, "that a deposit of 10,000 pounds of tobacco be applied to the use of the county; and, further, it is ordered that the sheriff proceed to collect the above quantity of tobacco, and settle with the county at the February court, next."

November term, 1793: "Judgment for 1,525 pounds of tobacco in favor of John Stewart, clerk of Greenbrier, against John Edwards, of Kanawha."

The first resident physician here was Dr. Eoff, who came in 1811 or 1812, and was followed by Dr. N. W. Thompson. The late venerable Dr. Spicer Patrick came in 1816, and after a long, active, useful and honorable career, recently went to his rest at but little short of one hundred years of age.

The first taverns, or inns, as they were then called, so far as can now be learned, were the Buster Tavern, at the northeast corner of Court and Kanawha streets, and the Griffin Tavern, at the northeast corner of Summers and Kanawha streets.

The prices of accommodations at such places of public entertainment were prescribed by the courts. The following is a list of prices established at a court in 1820:

Breakfast, dinner, or supper, each	25c.
Lodging, per night	12½c.
Horse at hay, per night	25c.
Horse at pasture, per night	12½c.
Jamaica Spirits, Cogniac Brandy, and Madeira Wine, per gallon	600c.
Cherry Bounce and Country Gin, per gal.	300c.

Whisky and Peach Brandy, per gal.....200c.
Beer and Cider, per gal..... 50c.

Clearly, they were not prohibitionists.

Col. Joel Ruffner (in "Atkinson's Kanawha") says that John Greenlee, who came here from Rockbridge, "in a very early day," was the first blacksmith. Probably the next was the negro, Jack Neal, who had such an eventful history. He was captured near Georgetown, though a free man, and was attempted to be carried South, into slavery. He got loose, killed his captor, escaped, was recaptured near Gallipolis, Ohio, brought here for trial, confessed, was convicted and pardoned. He was the first criminal ever in our little 12x12 jail, and the first tried before the courts. He opened his blacksmith shop soon after his pardon in 1804 or 1805.

Among school teachers Herbert P. Gaines is said to have been the first, with Levi Welch a good second. Jacob Rand, James A. Lewis, Lewis Ruffner and Ezra Walker were all very early. Mercer academy was built in 1818. The lot on which it and the First Presbyterian church were built was donated by Col. David Ruffner.

The first drug store was established by Dr. Henry Rogers, father of Dr. J. H. Rogers, about 1825. The first cabinet and furniture maker was James G. Taylor, about 1833. The first regular undertaker and furniture dealer was S. A. Skees, 1867, succeeded by R. R. Skees.

The first tan-yard was started by William Blaine, below Elk, "at an early day."

Fleming Cobb, of canoe memory, brought out from old Virginia the first fruit trees. Ann Bailey brought out the first pair of geese, and also brought, on horseback, from Lewisburg, the first copper worm still.

The first clock and watch maker was the elder Thomas Matthews, who came from eastern Virginia in 1808. He was a most ingenious and skillful workman. He made many of the old eight feet high eight-day clocks for those who were able to buy them. Some of them are still extant. Mr. Matthews was an eccentric, as well as ingenious man. He used to say that the primitive settlers here were as healthy, peaceable, moral and happy a people as he ever saw, until the doctors, lawyers and preachers came in; then, he said, they began to get sick, to quarrel and law each other, and to develop all sorts of meanness. It is not known whether he claimed to have established the relation of cause and effect between these phenomena, or whether he regarded them as merely curious coincidences.

The first postoffice established here was April 1, 1801, and called "Kanawha C. H." The first postmaster was Edward Graham; the second was Francis A. Dubois, January 1, 1803,

followed by William Whitteker, October 1, 1808. The post-office was in the old log house that stood on the northeast corner of Kanawha and Hale streets. The official name of the postoffice remained Kanawha C. H. until September 30, 1879, when it was changed by the postoffice department to Charleston. Up to as late as 1810, and probably later, there was only a fortnightly mail here, brought from Lewisburg on horseback.

The first newspapers established here were the *Kanawha Patriot*, by Herbert P. Gaines, in 1819, followed by the *Western Courier* by Mason Campbell, in 1820, and by the *Western Register* by Messrs. J. M. & A. T. Laidley, in 1829. Mr. Mason Campbell is but recently deceased, and Messrs. J. M. & A. T. Laidley both still survive.

The first bank established here was a branch of the bank of Virginia, in 1832 — J. C. McFarland, president; Samuel Hannah, cashier; John M. Doddridge, teller. The first local brass band was organized and instructed by Prof. Carl Fine, a German music teacher, in 1858.

The first ferry was a sort of double-barreled affair, crossing both Kanawha and Elk rivers from the point at the junction. The legislature granted the franchise to George Clendenin, December 19, 1794. Later, there was an opposition ferry, crossing Kanawha from the mouth of Ferry Branch, landing on the upper or lower side of Elk, as desired. It was started, in 1809, by John and Langston Ward, but not officially established until 1812. The Wards lived on the south side of Kanawha, at the mouth of Ferry Branch, which took its name from their ferry. The Alexander Quarrier ferry and the James Wilson ferry, afterward the Goshorn and Hale ferries, now owned by Ruffner Bros., or the "Charleston Ferry Company," were established in 1820.

The wire suspension bridge, over Elk river, was built by a stock company in 1852. The Keystone bridge was built chiefly by Mr. J. Brisbin Walker in the interest of his "West End" extension, in 1873; was destroyed by an ice gorge in 1879, and rebuilt by the city in 1886, when the suspension bridge was purchased and both made free bridges. The Elk log boom was constructed about 1869 by Messrs. Huling and Brokerhoff.

The first circuit court held here was on the 24th of April, 1809, Judge John Coulter presiding, about whom the following anecdote is told: Having, at this first sitting, fined some transgressor for some infraction of law, the victim, probably not a prohibitionist, got up and addressing the court said: See here Mr. Judge, ain't you a settin' of your Coulter a leetle too deep for new ground?" Judge James Allen followed Judge Coulter in September, 1811, and Judge Lewis Summers succeeded Judge

Allen on the bench, in 1819, and held the position until 1843, about a quarter of a century.

The first steamboat ever at Charleston was the "Andrew Donnally," in December, 1820, the next was the "Eliza," in 1823. She was built at Wheeling for Andrew Donnally and Isaac Noyes. She went to Cincinnati, but never returned. She was a failure. The next was the "Fairy Queen," built at Cincinnati in 1824, by Andrew Donnally and A. M. Henderson. She ran for some time as a Charleston and Cincinnati packet.

The next was the "Paul Pry," in 1826, built and owned by Joel Shrewsbury, Jr., and Captain John Rogers. She ran in the trade for two years, when she "blew up" at Guyandotte. In 1830, Armstrong, Grant & Co. bought the "O. H. Perry" and put her in the Kanawha trade. Her name was afterward changed to the "Daniel Webster." In 1830, the "Enterprise," built at Pittsburgh, and commanded by Captain James Payne, was the first towboat ever in Kanawha. Her machinary was afterward put on the "Hope," built by Messrs. Payne and Hall.

In 1832, Captain Andrew Ruffner built the steamer "Tiskelwah," at the mouth of Elk, and ran her for a while in the Charleston and Cincinnati trade. She was the first steamer ever built in Charleston. About this time Captain Payne built the "Jim," at Red House, putting on her the "Hope's" machinery. In 1837, the Summers Bros. built the "Texas" and ran her for a time. In 1838, Dr. Putney, William Atkinson and Samuel Summers built the "Osceola," at Buffalo, on the Kenawha river. In 1839, James M. Laidley built the steamer "Elk." In 1843, Captain Payne built the "Ark" and put on her the machinery of the "Julia Gratiot." In 1846, Captain B. J. Caffrey built and ran the "Triumph." In the same year, Warth & English built the "Blue Ridge" and sold her to Captain Payne. She exploded her boilers in 1848 killing half a dozen or more persons. In 1851, Ruffner, Donnally & Co. bought the steamer "Salem" at Pittsburgh and brought her to this river. She is said to have had on her the first steam whistle ever in the Kanawha river, and she was the first boat ever to ascend to the Kanawha Falls. After this, Kanawha packets and towboats became too numerous even to be mentioned here.

The first little up-river packet, Charleston and above, was the "Here's Your Mule," built in 1864 by I. P. Hale. The next two built here expressly for the upper trade were the "Wild Goose" and "Lame Duck" in 1878 by J. P. Hale.

In the early days of steamboating here, about 1833, there was a very exciting and long famous steamboat-canoe race. Mr. Sutton Matthews got up the race and backed the canoe for $500, against the steamer "Daniel Webster," Captain N. B. Coleman, commander. The canoe keel was polished and varnished to les-

sen friction, and she was manned by six vigorous, young, athletic rowers, of whom Mr. J. H. Goshorn was one, and the shores were lined with people to witness the race. The canoe soon came to grief, was upset by the steamer's waves, and the rowers got an unexpected and involuntary bath. Although the original bet between the steamer and the canoe was but $500, it is said that $5,000 to $8,000 changed hands on the result. Several gentlemen won or lost several hundred dollars each, and the smaller bets were innumerable. Opinions were about equally divided and nearly everybody backed his judgment with a bet, from staid sober-sided citizens to the deck hands on the steamboats and the salt packers about the furnaces. Clerks and laborers drew their wages up to date, and bet every dollar they could raise. A sensational account of the race was published in the papers, at the time, throughout the west.

The two gentlemen above named (Captain Coleman and Mr. J. H. Goshorn), are now the only two survivors who participated in the exciting race.

In 1822 occurred one of the highest rises known in the Kanawha river. The water was around the court house. In 1832, and again in 1849, Charleston had severe visitations of the cholera. In May, 1844, a very narrow, but very violent hurricane or cyclone, passed over the lower end of the town. Mr. Joseph Caldwell lived in a two-story brick house, just above the present Farley House. After uprooting trees on both banks of the river, the hurricane, or cyclone, struck this house, taking off the upper story evenly, and took a bed, with two children sleeping in it, and landed them "right side up with care" in the garden, in the rear of the house, unhurt and unharmed. The course of the cyclone was soushwest to northeast. It passed up Elk, up Two-Mile, over to Blue creek, and on. Its path was easily traceable from central Kentucky to central Pennsylvania, and how much farther is not known.

In 1861, Charleston was mostly inundated by the greatest "flood" that has occurred in the Kanawha since the valley was settled. Its extreme height above the present government standard low water gauge was 46 feet 10½ inches. The next highest water was in September, 1878, when the gauge marked 41 feet 7 inches. The first frame house was on Kanawha street, immediately below the court house lot. The next, on the south side of Kanawha, above Alderson street; and, about the same time, the old Central House, or Hoge building, on the northwest corner of Kanawha and Alderson streets. The date of these was 1812 to 1815. The first brick house was the Gabriel Garrou hatter's shop, on the bank, between Truslow and Alderson streets.

The first regular merchants were Henning & McFarland, in

1813; followed closely by Bureau, Scales & Summers, on the northwest corner of Summers and Kanawha streets.

In 1870, the first brick street pavement ever laid in America was laid here, in Capital street, by J. P. Hale.

In 1871, the street nomenclature of the city, which was in a very confused and unsatisfactory condition, was entirely reconstructed and officially recorded.

In the same year Spring Hill cemetery was established and laid out, by A. J. Vosburgh, C. E. It was named from the Chalybeate spring, on the hillside, near the cemetery road. The same year the Piedmont road was constructed. In May, 1871, Charleston was first lighted with gas, and in 1889 by electricity. In 1871, the first steam ferry was established here by J. P. Hale. In January, 1872, the Hale house, built by J. P. Hale, the finest hotel in West Virginia, was opened. It was destroyed by fire in 1885. To meet the growing wants of the rapidly growing city, a still larger hotel building was erected on the site of the old one, by Messrs. Ruffner Bros. in 1887. In January, 1872, the West Virginia legislature met here. In 1873, the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad was opened to travel.

In 1873, Summers street was paved with a combination pavement of hard-burned brick, with sand and board floor foundation, which has proved so satisfactory that no other street paving has since been used in the city. In 1873, the United States government began the improvement of the navigation of the Kanawha river, and established the engineer's office in this city. In 1875, Judge Lynch held his first court here. On the night of the 24th of December, some two or three hundred men marched orderly into town, took from the jail three murderers, Estep, Dawson and Hines, marched them up to the Campbell's creek bridge, swung them up by their necks and quietly dispersed to their several homes. In 1875, the "State Capitol on Wheels" was removed from Charleston to Wheeling. In 1885, it was again returned to Charleston, its now "permanent location." In 1884, the government post-office building was completed and occupied. Enlarged in 1889. In the same year (1884) the O. C. R. R., now K. & M., was completed to Charleston. In 1880, the Kanawha Military Academy was established by Maj. Thomas Snyder. In the same year, the Eureka Detective Agency was established by Capt. A. W. Burnett.

About 1883, the Ward patent water-tube boiler was perfected, and a manufactory established here by Mr. Charles Ward, the patentee.

Table of approximate population of Charleston at different periods since its first settlement:

1788 to 1790, seven houses	say	35	persons
1798 to 1800, twelve houses	say	60	"
1805 to 1810, twenty houses	say	100	"
1820	say	500	"
1830	say	750	"
1840	say	1,200	"
1850	say	1,500	"
1860	say	1,800	"
1870	say	4,000	"
1880	say	4,500	"
1886	say	6,500	"
1890, incuding suburb	say	10,000	"

About twenty per cent. of the population is colored.

In 1852, a young lady from one of the northern cities, who had been reared amid all the conveniences and luxuries of city life, came to Charleston to visit one of her "country cousins." Upon her return home, she reported that the Charlestonians were a charmingly simple-minded and worthy sort of people, but with, oh, such primitive ways! "Would you believe," said she, "that they still preach hell fire down there, and haul their water in barrels?"

Since 1886 a water works company is distributing an abundant supply of the wholesome beverage that "refreshes, but not inebriates." In 1885 the first ice machinery was erected here, by Lieut. M. Staunton, since when our citizens are enabled to keep cool, independently of Jack Frost, who, in this latitude, is capricious and unreliable. In 1884, the city hall, including the mayor's office, etc., was erected. In 1890 the first street railway was constructed and put in operation. In 1890 the first bridge was constructed across the Kanawha river at Charleston.

The first mayor of the city, under the organized city government, in 1861, was Mr. Jacob Goshorn. The first building here for theatrical purposes was a temporary wooden structure, with a seating capacity for eight hundred persons, erected by J. P. Hale, in 1872. In 1873, the first substantial opera house was built by Dr. J. T. Cotton, Col. T. B. Swann and Mr. Joseph Shields, and called the Cotton Opera house; when the temporary structure above mentioned was converted into the first regular livery stable of the city, by W. L. Moffit, S. M. Smith, and others. The first dry docks were established at the mouth of Elk, in 1873, by J. J. Thaxton & Co., succeeded by Mr. J. E. Thayer, and later by the Charleston Dry Dock Co.

The first machine barrel factory (with capacity for one thousand barrels per day) was started by Morgan & Hale, in 1872. The first foundry and machine shop was erected by O. A. & W. T. Thayer, on the south side, in 1871. The first woolen mill had a small beginning by Messrs. Rand & Minsker, about 1866, in-

creased in 1868 by Messrs. Parsons, Appleton & Co., and largely extended in 1875 by Mr. Frank Woodman. The first wharf boat was established by H. W. Goodwin, in 1865. The temporary capitol building was erected in 1871; the permanent capitol was partly occupied in 1885, but only completed in 1886. The first public school building was put up in 1870. The first steam-power brick machinery was introduced in 1870, by J. P. Hale.

In 1815, Capt. James Wilson, who then owned and occupied the Clendennin blockhouse, bored a well near it, for salt water; he struck, at a few hundred feet, a large yield of natural gas. This is believed to have been the first natural gas well in America. In 1859, the Clendennin blockhouse property, which had but recently been occupied by Mr. F. Brooks, and known as the Brooks farm, lying between the present Brooks and Morris streets, and back to the hills, was cut up into building lots and sold out.

In 1862, a company called the "Charleston Extension Company," bought the Cox farm, or, as then more recently called, the Clarkson farm, and cut it up and sold it out for building purposes. Within a few years after, all the property lying back of the original town, and from Elk up to Bradford street, hitherto farms and orchards, were subdivided into building lots and put upon the market, and much of it is now built over.

In 1871, Mr. J. Brisbin Walker bought land on the lower side of Elk, had it laid out in a town plat, calling it "West Charleston," and sold lots. In 1884, the "Glen Elk company" purchased the land extending from the suspension bridge up Elk, on the lower side, laid it out in building lots for still another "annex" to the town called it Glen Elk, and are rapidly selling lots. Next the Glen Wood addition, below Elk, was laid out, then the Ruffner addition, above the city, and more recently the "South Side" hills have been bought up to lay out for suburban residences, and last, the Patrick farm down to Two Mile creek. So that, altogether, enough space is now appropriated for building purposes to make quite a large city when it shall all be occupied; and it has been growing more rapidly recently than at any former period of its history.

Upon the inauguration of the civil war in 1861, the following military companies were raised in Charleston and vicinity, in the interest of the southern cause: the Kanawha Riflemen, by Capt., afterward Col., George S. Patton; the Elk River Tigers, by Capt., afterward Col., T. B. Swann; the Charleston Sharp-shooters, by Capt. John S. Swann; the Hale Artillery, by Dr. J. P. Hale; and a cavalry company, mostly from the upper end of the valley, by Dr. Ervin Lewis. These companies formed parts of the Twenty-second and Thirty-sixth Virginia regiments.

Later, several Federal companies were gotten up in the coun-

try round about Charleston, by Capt. Wood Blake, Maj. L. Martin, Maj. H. Slack, Dr. R. H. Lee, Capt. Green Slack, Jr., Maj. Gramm, etc. These companies were united with the Fourth, Seventh, Eighth and Thirteenth regiments.

In July, 1861, Gen. Wise, then in command of the southern forces here, evacuated the valley and it was occupied by the Federals, under Gen. J. D. Cox.

In September, 1862, the southern army, under Gen. Loring, re-entered the valley, and Gen. Lightburn, then in command, retired. There was a slight skirmish in and about Charleston, and a few killed on each side, eight or ten in all. The Federals, before retreating, burned several of our prominent buildings, among them the bank of Virginia, the Kanawha house, the Southern Methodist church, the Brooks store and warehouse, etc.

In October following, Gen. Loring, and a few days later, Gen. Echols, again retired, and the town was re-occupied by the Federals, under Gen. Cox; and remained in Federal possession, under several successive commanders until the termination of the war. The writer will not attempt a history of the military campaigns of the valley during the late war. This is being done by more competent hands.

The first dray and hearse were introduced here by Noah Colley, an enterprising colored man, early in the thirties, and for a long time he had a practical monopoly of the town transportation, *for* the living and *of* the dead. Previous to that time the transportation to and from the river and steamboats and elsewhere was chiefly by sleds and carts, drawn by oxen, and the country transportation was by pack-horses, on pack-saddles.

The first pottery-ware establishment for manufacturing milk crocks, whiskey jugs, etc., was by Stephen Shepherd, about 1818.

The first to carry on the hatter's trade was Gabriel Garrou, about 1816. The first tailor was James Truslow, about 1815. The first regularly established shoemaker was, probably, George Mitchell, about 1815. The wagon and cart makers were not established in town, but up among the salt furnaces. Up to 1840, and after, there were few or no mosquitoes here, and, consequently, mosquito bars were unknown. The first wholesale grocery established here was by Messrs. Ruby & Hale, in 1872, followed by Messrs. Ruffner Brothers, in 1876, and Messrs. P. H. Noyes & Co., in 1883. The first wholesale dry goods house was by Messrs. Jelenko Brothers, in 1874, followed by Messrs. Arnold & Abney, in 1882. The first wholesale hardware dealers were Messrs. W. F. & J. H. Goshorn, in 1875, followed by Messrs. N. Berlew & Co., in 1883. The first liquor wholesalers were Messrs. S. Strauss & Co., in 1876; followed by Charles Capito, in 1885. The first wholesale shoe house was by Messrs. Jelenko & Loeb, in 1877, followed by Mr. John Anderson, in 1878.

Near the intersection of Kanawha and Goshorn streets there seems to have been an ancient burying ground of some primitive race. The caving of the bank and occasional excavations expose the remains and relics of this departed people. The writer has a handsome celt dug up there about six feet below the surface.

Charleston was visited, in 1796, by Volney, the distinguished French historian, philosopher and free thinker; and, in 1812, by the great naturalist, Audubon.

Gen. Washington, Gen. Lewis, Col. Bullitt, Albert Gallatin, DeWitt Clinton and others were extensive land locators here "in an early day."

In the early salt, flat-boating times, here, the boatmen gave the Kanawha the nick-name of "Old Greasy," on account of the petroleum that then flowed in greater or less quantities from the salt-wells, and covered the surface of the water with its beautiful iridescent hues.

Charleston and Cincinnati were both settled in the same year (1788), the former in May and the latter in December, so that Charleston is the older by several months.

To go back to the semi-centennial of Charleston, or half a century ago, and half a century after the first settlement — say to 1838 to '40 — and give the names and occupations of the then citizens, who were worrying themselves over the same social, political, financial and bread and butter problems that are exercising us now, may interest some readers and serve to pleasurably revive the recollections of those whose memories go back that far. The following approximate list is given for such as may feel an interest in it:

"Charley Brown, ferryman and farmer; (Scotch) James Wilson, lawyer; Joseph Caldwell, merchant; Charles Neal, carpenter; Gabriel Garrou, hatter; John Hull, blacksmith; J. Mays, boatman; Judy Grinnan, colored, washerwoman; Nancy Gibson, colored, washerwoman; Henry B. Saunders, hotel keeper and stage runner; John Snyder, preacher; George Goshorn, hotel and ferry keeper; Justin White, baker; William Hutt, constable; Silas Cobb, carpenter; Matthew Dunbar, lawyer; Crockett Ingles, merchant and salt maker; John Mays, hotel keeper and builder; Andrew Beach, shoemaker; John Wilson, carpenter; George W. Summers, lawyer; John and Charles Allen, grocers and bakers; Aaron Whittaker, hotel keeper and merchant; Franklin Reynolds, salt inspector; Samuel Hannah, bank cashier; Captain James Wilson, hotel and ferry keeper; Lewis D. Wilson, hotel and ferry keeper; Mrs. Aletha Brigham, young ladies' school teacher; Benj. H. Smith, lawyer; William Whittaker, Sr., river toll collector; Thomas Whittaker, merchant and saw miller; Norris Whittaker, brick maker and builder; Dr. Car-

uthers, physician and author; John Hall, blacksmith; William Honeyman, silversmith and watchmaker; Garrett Kelley, tailor; Gilbert Adams, merchant; James C. McFarland, bank president; Dr. Spicer Patrick, physician; Mason Campbell, editor and merchant; John Truejohn, carpenter and builder; Rev. James M. Brown, preacher; Henry Fitzhugh, Sr.; Rev. James Craik, preacher; Joseph Friend, saltmaker and merchant; Dr. Thompson C. Watkins, physician; Isaac Noyes, saltmaker; Frederick Brooks, salt maker; C. E. Doddridge, lawyer; William J. Rand, merchant and saltmaker; Henry McFarland, merchant; James H. Fry, sheriff and salt maker; Bradford Noyes, farmer; James Y. Querrier, deputy sheriff; Ezra Walker, superintendent James river and Kanawha improvement; James L. Carr, lawyer. James Hendricks, lawyer; Noah Colley, colored, dray and hearse runner; Dock & Gabe, colored, coal haulers; Andrew Cunningham, brickmason; Thomas C. Thomas, carpenter and builder; Mrs. Snyder, widow; William W. Kelley, saddle and harness maker; William A. Kelley, jailer; Thomas R. Fife, carpenter and builder; Alexander W. Quarrier, county clerk; Mrs. Todd, widow; James A. Lewis, merchant and postmaster; Franklin Noyes, merchant and salt maker; William R. Cox, salt maker and farmer; Mrs. Chilten, widow; James G. Taylor, cabinet maker; John M. Doddridge, bank teller; James M. Laidley, lawyer; John Welch, merchant; Joel Shrewsberry, Jr., merchant and salt maker; Snelling C. Farley, tailor and steamboat captain; Dr. Henry Rogers, druggist and physician; Jacob Rand, teacher; John A. Truslow, tailor; James Truslow, tailor; John F. Faure, merchant and salt maker; Joseph Lovell, lawyer and salt maker; Stephen Shepherd, crockeryware maker; John Starks, carpenter; Nelson B. Coleman, merchant, salt maker and steamboat captain; Joseph Bibby, miller; Rev. James R. Baldwin, preacher; John G. M. Spriggle, butcher; Dr. Noah Cushman, physician; William Hatcher, deputy clerk and jailer; William Gillison, magistrate; Mrs. S. Cook, widow.

Just above the town, to the head of the bottom, lived Blackwood Chilton, Mrs. Harshbarger, Daniel Ruffner, and the several sons of the latter: Charles, Joel, Augustus, Andrew and James.

The early settlers of a new locality are generally an enterprising, wide-awake, progressive people. It is such people who have the pluck and energy to sever their relations with an old community and go to a new; to "go West and grow up with the country"; or to go West and build up a country. From all the accounts we have of them, the earlier settlers of Charleston and vicinity were no exception to this rule. On the contrary, these characteristics were probably exceptionally emphasized in their cases; and for racy, sprightly wit and fresh originality, in addi-

tion to their general intellectual developments, I doubt if they were excelled by the builders of any other western town.

There is still afloat here, handed down traditionally, a fund of humorous and racy anecdote in relation to the smart sayings, doings. and practical jokings of these old worthies that would fill a volume, if gathered together; and there are still surviving a few connecting links between the past and the present, who still delight to tell over, and their listeners are delighted to hear, the oft told stories of these lingering remnants of the rear-guard of the long-ago.

"They were such men, take them for all in all,
We shall not look upon their like again."

CHAPTER XIV.

ORANGE COUNTY.

VIRGINIA organized the county of Orange, so-called from the color of the soil of that portion lying east of the Blue Ridge, in 1734. Orange county embraced not only the area east of the Blue Ridge, but all the indefinite territorial claims of the colony from the Blue Ridge to the Pacific ocean. In 1738, the bounds of Orange were curtailed by the formation of Augusta and Frederick counties, covering all Virginia territory west of the Blue Ridge, and limiting Orange to the small area lying east of the Ridge.

In 1748, when settlements were begun west of the Alleghenies, Augusta county (excepting the comparatively small area in the lower part of the valley of Virginia covered by Frederick county) included the same great scope of western country lately Orange county.

By the treaty of Paris, in 1763, its western bounds were limited by the Mississippi river; but, even then, it covered (excepting Frederick, as above), the vast territory now embracing all of the state of Virginia west of the Blue Ridge, West Virginia, Kentucky, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan and Wisconsin.

In 1748, the entire white population of this vast area was but a few hundred souls, all within the valley of Virginia, between the Blue Ridge and the Alleghenies; now, the aggregate population is about 10,000,000.

It may be a matter of curious interest to some, and valuable as a table of reference to others, to give a list of the progressive subdivisions into smaller counties, and the dates thereof, of that portion of this vast county (and of Frederick) still within the limits of Virginia and West Virginia, and between the Blue Ridge and the Ohio river:

AUGUSTA COUNTY AND ITS SUBDIVISIONS, INCLUDING FREDERICK.

Augusta and Frederick formed	1738	Fincastle	1772
Hampshire	1754	Montgomery, Washington, Kentucky, Fincastle abolished	1776
Bottetourt	1770		
Berkely	1772		
Dunmore	1772	Ohio county formed	1776

Bounds of West Augusta defined	1776
Monongalia	1776
Youghiogheny*	1776
Shenandoah†	1777
Greenbrier	1777
Rockbridge	1777
Rockingham	1778
Harrison	1778
Hardy	1786
Russell	1786
Randolph	1787
Pendleton	1788
Kanawha	1789
Wythe	1790
Bath	1791
Lee	1792
Grayson	1793
Brooke	1797
Monroe	1799
Tazewell	1799
Wood	1799
Jefferson	1801
Mason	1804
Giles	1806
Cabell	1809
Scott	1814
Tyler	1814
Lewis	1816
Preston	1818
Nicholas	1818
Morgan	1820
Pocahontas	1821
Allegheny	1822
Logan	1824
Page	1831
Fayette	1831
Floyd	1831
Smyth	1831
Jackson	1831
Marshall	1835
Braxton	1836
Clarke	1836
Mercer	1837
Roanoke	1838
Pulaski	1839
Carroll	1842
Marion	1842
Wayne	1842
Ritchie	1843
Gilmer	1843
Barbour	1843
Taylor	1844
Doddridge	1845
Wetzel	1446
Highland	1847
Boone	1847
Wirt	1848
Hancock	1848
Putnam	1848
Wyoming	1850
Raleigh	1850
Upshur	1851
Pleasants	1851
Calhoun	1855
Wise	1855
Roane	1856
Clay	1856
Tucker	1856
McDowell	1858
Buchanan	1858
Webster	1860
Bland	1861
Mineral	1866
Grant	1866
Lincoln	1867
Summers	1871
Dickinson	1880

*Youghiogheny abolished when the State line between Virginia and Pennsylvania was settled.
†Instead of Dunmore, and Dunmore abolished.

CHAPTER XV.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

THE GREAT KANAWHA RIVER — HISTORY OF ITS NAVIGATION AND IMPROVEMENTS — ABORIGINAL METHODS — SILENT GLIDE OF THE BIRCH-BARK CANOE — ADVENT OF THE PIONEERS — FLAT-BOATS AND BATTEAUX — FIRST STEAMBOAT — REVOLUTION ACCOMPLISHED THEREBY — PLANS TO IMPROVE THE CHANNEL — ELABORATE SYSTEM OF LOCKS AND DAMS — CHARACTER AND COST OF THE WORK — STATISTICS OF COAL SHIPMENTS.

BEFORE the advent of the white man the only water crafts that had ever floated on the bosom of this beautiful stream were the bark canoes and more substantial dug-outs of the aboriginal tribes. The first record of its navigation by whites was in September, 1774, when Gen. Andrew Lewis, on his way to Point Pleasant with his army, had some canoes constructed at the mouth of Elk river, on the present site of this city, in which he transported at least a portion of his army supplies and ammunition, which had been brought this far by pack-horses, which were much jaded and worn by the hardships of the rough journey. In 1788, when Clendenin's fort, or Fort Lewis, at this point was apprehensive of an attack by Indians, Fleming Cobb, an expert waterman and woodsman, was dispatched to Fort Randolph, at Point Pleasant, by canoe single-handed, for a supply of powder and lead. He made the trip snccessfully, though at great risk and by a narrow escape from Indians, by whom he was pursued. During the same year the inmates of Fort Tackett, at the mouth of Coal river, being out of salt, sent a canoe up to the Salt spring at the mouth of Campbell's creek, filled it with salt water, floated it back to their fort, where they dipped it out and boiled it down in their kettles and pots, saving the residual salt. Not long after this, Fort Tackett was attacked by the Indians, and nearly all the inmates killed or captured; but John Young made his escape under cover of darkness, by carrying his young wife and a one-day-old babe in his arms to a canoe at the river banks (probably the same that had brought down the salt water) and "poled" his way up to the Clendenin fort, during the night, and through a rain storm.

When salt began to be made here in quantities greater than the neighborhood demanded, it was shipped to the new settlements

down the river, in canoes. The first shipment on a more pretensious scale was in 1808, when a log raft was formed by fastening the logs together with hickory poles, when a lot of salt was packed in empty bacon hogsheads and barrels and placed on it and floated down the river to the new settlements.

When the Indian troubles and dangers were somewhat quieted, and settlements were begun, first in northern Kentucky, and later in southern Ohio and Indiana, there was a large emigration through this valley to those new and wild western homes. They came across the mountains to this river, embarking at the mouths of Hughes' and Kelley's creeks, where there where boat-yards, and family moving boats were constructed for their accommodation. The salt interest, as it grew in extent and importance, adopted this method of transportation, increasing the size and capacity of the boats until they finally got up to over 300 tons burden, carrying 2,000 to 22,000 barrels of salt. This class of boats was not suited to up-stream navigation, and were usually sold for what they would fetch below. The early up-stream freighting of family supplies &c., was by ribbed, keel bottomed boats, called batteaux. These goods came to this valley in the early days from the new towns of Cincinnati, Pittsburgh and Limestone (now Maysville).

The first steamboat to attempt the navigation of this river in the early days of steamboating on the western waters, was the Robert Thompson, in 1819. She ascended as far as Red House Shoals, but lacking power to stem the swift current at that place, abandoned the effort and returned. In December, 1820, the Andrew Donnally, a steamer built for Messrs. Andrew Donnally and Isaac Noyes, salt-makers of this neighborhood, made the first successful run to Charleston, and others soon followed, thus inaugurating the era of steam navigation on this river. Previous to 1820 there had been no formal or organized effort made to improve the navigation of the river. A few rocks and sunken logs had been removed from the natural channel, and projecting trees and pendant limbs cut off by the early flat-boatmen who steered out the primitive salt-boats and moving plunder-boats of the early western emigrants; but the failure of the Thompson and the success of the Donnally were so significant and suggestive, and were considered of so much importance by the legislature of Virginia, that at their session of 1820–21 they passed an order directing the James River & Kanawha Company — in which the state held large stock — to so improve the navigation of the Kanawha river as to secure not less than three feet depth of water for navigation all the year round, from the mouth to the falls, about ninety miles. Little did they then appreciate the magnitude of the problem they had attempted to solve

The execution of this order was delayed, awaiting preliminary

examinations and surveys, until 1825, when a system of sluices and wing dams was commenced and prosecuted for some years.

Messrs. Moore & Briggs were the contractors. They cut the old chute through the rock at Red House; the chute between the Islands and through the tow-head at Tyler; cut the sluice and built the wing dams at Debby, Eighteen, Knob, Tackett, Johnson, etc., so well remembered by the old salt flat-boatmen of thirty to fifty years ago.

In 1838 the James River & Kanawha company ordered a thorough survey of the river, with a view to securing 3½ feet of navigable water at all seasons. This survey was made by Mr. Edward H. Gill, engineer, under Col. Charles Ellett, Jr., chief engineer of the company, but no further steps were taken at the time.

About 1855–6 there were commenced large shipments of Cannel coal from Cannelton and from Elk river; Splint coal from Fields' creek, from about Paint creek, Armstrong's creek, etc. Also large shipments of Cannel coal oil, manufactured at Cannelton, on Paint creek, on Elk river, etc. This was before the days of oil wells, and as both the coal and the oil shipments were then expected to increase to a very large extent, and as salt was then very largely manufactured here, a better navigation soon was urgently demanded.

The James River & Kanawha company, acting with and through a sub-board of directors at Kanawha, undertook to provide such facilities for navigation as the then wants of the country required. A new survey of the river was made in 1855, by Engineer John A. Byers, under Charles B. Fisk, chief engineer of the company. Two systems of river improvements were pretty thoroughly examined and discussed by the board; the sluice and wing dam plan, and the reservoir plan; the latter proposed in 1860, and advocated by the late eminent engineer, Charles Ellett. This plan, which contemplated large lake-like reservoirs near the heads of the streams — chiefly on Gauley river — the water to be let out as required to keep up a navigable stage of water in the Kanawha, below, received very favorable consideration; but though plausible, it was an untried experiment, and the conservative boards decided to enlarge, improve and extend the old sluice and wing-dam system; and about 1860 put the work under contract to Messrs. Barton & Robinson, and it was in progress when suspended by the late war.

After the separation of the state, in 1863, West Virginia took charge of the Kanawha river, and created a Kanawha river board to carry on this improvement, collect the tolls, etc., as the James river & Kanawha company had been doing.

Notwithstanding the fact that the navigation had been greatly improved within the past few years, it was manifestly

inadequate to the wants of the rapidly increasing population and business of the valley. Having admittedly the finest coal field on the continent, it was practically almost valueless for want of safe, reliable and economical transportation to markets. As there was no local financial ability equal to the task of constructing such an improvement as would fully develop this great interest, and effectually serve it and the other rapidly growing interests of the valley, it was determined to apply to the general government for aid in the matter.

About 1871–2 a lively interest was gotten up throughout the west in relation to the improvement of the navigation of the internal water ways by the general government. A commission was appointed by the several states bordering on the Ohio river and tributaries, to gather facts and statistics in regard to the trade, the capacities and the wants of the improvable rivers.

In the line of their duties the commission went to Washington and submitted to the senate committee on trasportation, facts, figures and arguments in relation to the improvement of the several rivers, the Great Kanawha included; they also had a conference with President Grant, who was very favorable to, and encouraged this class of public improvements.

About this time there was a strong revival of the old Washingtonian idea of connecting the Ohio river and tide water, through the James and the Kanawha rivers, and the extension of the James river and Kanawha canal. At the suggestion of the commission, supported by the representatives of the states above mentioned, congress appointed a senatorial committee composed of Senators Windom, Conklin, Sherman, Bayard, Beck and Henry G. Davis, accompanied by the able government engineers, Gen. Q. A. Gilmore, Col. Godfrey Weitzell and Col. W. E. Merrill to go over the ground, investigate the subject generally and fully, and report as to the importance, practicability and cost. They published a voluminous and thoroughly favorable report, and the government decided to at least improve the navigation of the Kanawha river, which was needed as a local work, and could be used as a part of the through line, if that should ever be constructed.

Commencing in a small way the government, in 1872–3, made two small appropriations of $25,000 each, and work was begun on the river in June, 1873, under charge of Col. W. E. Merrill, of the United States engineer corps. The first work was to extend, on a large scale, what the Kanawha board was doing in a smaller way, that is, dredging out the sluices and building wing-dams, to accommodate the immediate and current needs of navigation; but, it was conceded that nothing short of slack water, by locks and dams, would give a reliable, safe and permanent navigation.

In August, 1874, the work was placed under charge of Col.

William P. Craighill. In March following, congress appropriated $300,000, with which to commence the permanent improvement of the river. Soon after, a board of engineers, consisting of Gen. H. G. Wright, Col. William P. Craighill and Gen. O. M. Poe, recommended the adoption of the lock and dam slack-water improvement, with the use of permanent dams at or above Paint creek, and movable, or adjustable dams below that point. The recommendation was approved and adopted by the authorities at Washington, and in the fall of 1875 locks Nos. 4 and 5 were put under contract.

It was at first contemplated to have eleven locks and dams from the falls to the mouth of the river; the three upper ones to be fixed, or permanent dams, and the eight lower ones to be moveable or adjustable. The plan has since been somewhat modified. One of the eight movable dams will be dispensed with, dividing the fall between the other seven, thus somewhat increasing the lift of each. The original estimate of the cost of the entire work, was $4,071,216, which will probably be somewhat varied by the changes made. Listing the dams in numerical order, commencabove:

No. 1 was to have been located at or near the mouth of Loup creek, about thirty-two miles above Charleston. This has not been built. No. 2 is one mile below Cannelton and Coal valley, and twenty-six miles above Charleston. It is a fixed dam, has a lift of twelve feet and pools the water to Loup creek, about six miles above. It was completed in 1887.

No. 3 is just below the mouth of Paint creek, about twenty-one miles above Charleston. This is also a fixed dam, has a lift of twelve feet and pools the water to No. 2, about five miles. It was completed in 1882.

No. 4 is just below the mouth of Cabin creek, about fifteen miles above Charleston. This is an adjustable dam, has a lift of seven feet and pools the water to No. 3, about six and one-fourth miles. It was completed in 1880.

No. 5 is just below Brownstown about 9¼ miles above Charleston, is an adjustable dam, has a lift of 7 feet and pools the water to No. 4, about 5¾ miles. It was completed in 1880.

No. 6 is near the mouths of Tyler and Davis creeks, about 4½ miles below Charleston, is an adjustable dam, has a lift of 8¼ and pools the water to No. 5, about 13 ¾ miles. It was completed in 1886.

No. 7 is located 1¼ miles below the mouth of Coal river, 14 miles below Charleston, is an adjustable dam, with 8¼ feet lift, and pools the water to No. 6 about 10 miles.

No. 8 is located 2½ miles below Raymond City, about 22 miles below Charleston, has a lift of 8½ feet, and pools the water to No. 7, about 8¼ miles.

Nos. 7 and 8 are under contract and now under construction and are expected to be completed during the summer of 1891.

The remaining three locks and dams, Nos. 9, 10 and 11, are to be located as follows: No. 9, 6¾ miles below Winfield and about 33 miles below Charleston, will have a lift of 6½ feet and a pool of 10½ miles. No. 10, near Debby's Ripple, 2½ miles below Buffalo and 39½ miles below Charleston, will have a lift of 7½ feet and a pool of 7 miles. No. 11, and the last, about 1¾ miles above the mouth of the Kanawha and 56¼ miles below Charleston, will have a lift of 9½ feet and a pool of 16¾ miles. These three last named will all have the movable or adjustable dams. If the necessary appropriations are made, one or more of them will probably be put under contract in time for work to be commenced on them next spring, and it is now hoped that they will be completed by the summer or fall of 1894.

These movable or adjustable dams are so constructed that they can be raised or lowered at pleasure, according to the stage of water in the river. The ingenious arrangement by which the wickets are hung and the raising and lowering of the dams and bridges are accomplished is the invention of M. Chenoine, a French engneer. The dams are largely introduced and in use in France, but those of Kanawha were the *first* to be introduced in America. Both Col. Craighill, engineer in charge, and Mr. Addison M. Scott, resident engineer, have visited France within a few years past, and carefully inspected this type of dams and their operation there. This, together with a thorough knowledge of our local wants, brought out some adaptive modifications of details to more thoroughly fit them for satisfactory service in our river. As the building and operating of each lock and dam naturally suggested changes and improvements, it is believed that No. 6, the last completed, is more nearly perfect than any of its predecessors. The improvements in No. 6 are being adopted in Nos. 7 and 8 and doubtless will be in Nos. 9, 10 and 11.

As many will no doubt be interested to know more in detail of the modus operandi of constructing and operating this Chenoine system of adjustable dams, Mr. Scott, the resident engineer, has kindly prepared a descriptive statement relating chiefly to No. 6, which is so full, minute and accurate as to leave nothing further to be desired.

His statement here follows:

Lock and Dam No. 6—The Lock.—The extreme length of the lock is 410½ feet. It is 342 feet long between quoins and 55 feet wide, in the chamber, at top of miter sill.

It is all of first class mortared masonry, faced with cut and smooth pointed stone, built on the solid rock. The rock was found here at depths from 11 to 22 feet below low water mark.

The top of the coping is 21 feet 9 inches above the miter sills.

The foundations extend from 5½ to 16½ feet below the sills, making the walls from about 27 to 38 feet in height from the rock.

The walls are from 15 to 19 feet thick at the bottom, and from 5 to 17 feet thick at the top. The lock-gates are of white oak, strongly bolted and ironed. The filling and emptying valves are in the gates, 5 valves in each leaf. Each gate leaf weighs about 38 tons. They rest and turn on steel pivots and are suspended at the top by iron, steel and bronze fastenings, attached to heavy wrought anchors built in the masonry. The upper fastenings are all below level of coping and are covered with movable cast iron plates.

The lock chamber has a clear working space of 312 feet in length by 55 in width, sufficient to admit one of our largest tow-boats, with three of the largest sized coal barges, at once.

The lift of the lock in extreme low water, before No. 7 is built will be 11 feet. After No. 7 is built, the maximum lift will be 8 feet 3 inches.

The Movable Dam.—The entire length of the dam, between the outer face of lock wall and abutment, embracing the navigation pass, the central pier and the weir, is 568½ feet. The foundations are entirely of masonry and concrete resting on solid rock. The average depth of rock, on the line of the dam, is about 12 feet below low water mark.

The sill of the pass is 2 feet 7 inches below low water. There will be 12½ feet of water on the pass sill when the dam is up and the pool full. The foundations of the pass are 50 feet long up and down stream. The pass is closed by 62 Chanoine wickets. The wickets are 3 feet 8 inches wide, or 4 feet between centers (there being a 4 inch space between each), and 13 feet 5½ inches long. The pass bridge is composed of 30 wrought iron trestles. The trestles are nearly 12 feet wide on the bottom, 4 feet 1 inch on top and 16 feet 8 inches high. They are connected, when standing by 4 inch "I" beams, which form the track for the maneuvering winch, and light wrought iron aprons, which make the floor to walk on. The pass is separated from the weir by the central pier. This is of cut stone masonry 34½ feet long and 10 feet wide. It is built on bed rock, and is about 26 feet high, the top of it being level with the top of the service bridge. The bridge, when lowered falls toward the pier, and there is a deep recess in the pier into which the nearest trestle lies when the dam is down. The weir is 310 feet 6 inches long. It is closed with 69 Chanoine wickets each 7 feet 8 inches high and 4 feet 3 inches wide. The weir bridge is like that for the pass, in construction, but the trestles are not as high. It is connected, when standing, with rails and aprons like the pass, and with those of the latter form a continuous track for the traveling winch, and a foot walk the whole length of the dam, from the abutment to lock. The foundations

of the weir are built entirely of masonry, concrete and iron. A peculiar feature of this weir is the cast iron sills. The wooden sills, etc., at dams 4 and 5, of this improvement, were found to decay rapidly, and iron was accordingly used at No. 6. The iron sills, trestles and wicket boxes etc., are bolted to the cut stone coping, making the upper surface of this part of the dam practically indestructible.

As before mentioned, the foundations of this dam, throughout, are of masonry or concrete. In dams 4 and 5 (both finished in 1880) a great deal of oak timber was used in the foundations of both navigation pass and weir. This timber was framed and bolted together and filled in with concrete. It was found generally more expensive than masonry and was abandoned, as far as possible, in the construction of No. 6. The stone work was found not only better and cheaper than timber, but could be placed faster and saved valuable time in construction. The foundations of the dam were constructed within coffer dams built in sections across the river, from which the water was kept exhausted by large steam pumps.

The pool formed by this work (lock and dam No. 6) is nearly 14 miles long; one of the longest and finest slack-water lakes anywhere to be found. At lock No. 5, the head of the pool, it raises the water 3 feet 9 inches above low water mark, making 7 feet depth on the lower miter sill there. It will, with a small amount of dredging at two or three high points, make good 6½ feet for navigation everywhere in the pool at extreme low water. It raises the water at Charleston, 4 feet 8 inches above low water mark, and makes good 7 feet depth for tows at that old "sticking place"—the foot of Elk shoal. It makes miles of splendid holding ground for loaded coal barges, affording good water for this purpose, almost every where in the pool. At Campbell's creek, where there has, heretofore, been so much trouble with boats getting on the bottom in low stages, it makes plenty of water for full loaded boats. No. 6 pool is no doubt destined to be one of the largest and most important coal harbors in the world.

Lock and dam No. 6 were built almost entirely by contract, and the government was fortunate in getting good contractors, particularly so for the important parts of the work—the building of the lock and the foundations and masonry of the dams. The contractors for the lock were Harris & Black, of Pennsylvania, who began in the spring of 1881, and finished in November, 1883. Owing to lack of funds the dam was not commenced till the fall of 1884. Harrold & McDonald, of Pittsburgh, were the contractors for the foundations and masonry of the dam. They were a little over two years employed—from September, 1884, to October, 1886. The irons for the work were furnished under regular contracts by the following parties: Irons for founda-

tions by O. A. & W. T. Thayer, of Charleston; irons for movable parts of navigation pass by the Sneed & Company Iron Works of Louisville, Ky.; irons for weir, including the winches, by Ainslie, Cochran & Co., of Louisville, Ky.; the valves and other irons for lock gates, also by Ainslie, Cochran & Co. The total cost of lock and dam No. 6, including grounds, buildings and outfit complete, was a little under $337,000. Movable dams are kept up during low stages, and down in high water. Their advantages over permanent dams, on a river like the Kanawha, are of course very great. On Kanawha we have on an average about five months in the year when there is plenty of water in the river for open coal boat navigation, during which time it would, of course, be a serious inconvenience and delay to pass everything through the locks. Permanent dams compel the use of the locks the whole year round. With movable dams, the locks are used only when the water is so low as to make them necessary. At all other times the dams are down, flat on the river bottom, out of the way, affording a free unobstructed open navigation; an important consideration for all classes of commerce, but particularly so for coal, handled, as it is, in large fleets.

The First Movable Dams in America.—The great advantages of movable dams have long been recognized in Europe. In 1878 there were 124 movable dams in operation in France alone. The Great Kanawha had the honor of possessing the first movable dam in America. Dams Nos. 4 and 5 (the latter located at Brownstown, nine miles above Charleston, and the other at Cabin creek, six miles farther up), were completed in July, 1880, and have been in successful operation ever since. Dams 4 and 5 are both of the Chanoine type (the Davis Island dam on the Ohio below Pittsburgh, completed in 1885, is the same pattern), and although at Dam No. 6 a great many improvements have been made in construction and details, the general principles of all three of the Kanawha movable dams are about the same. They are practically the same, too, as regards width of navigation pass and dimensions of the pass wickets. The pass wickets at No. 6, as before stated, are thirteen feet five and one-half inches long; those at dams 4 and 5 are thirteen feet ten inches long. The Davis Island wickets are thirteen feet long. The Great Kanawha wickets, with the exception of one dam in France, are thought be the largest ever constructed.

The wickets, when erected form the dam. They are raised and lowered by men from the bridge, operating a winch which runs on the bridge track. The wickets are hung or hinged near their center to an iron frame called the horse. The bottom of the horse is attached, by journals, to the foundations of the dam. The wicket, when erect, is mainly supported by a heavy iron bar

called the prop, which has journal connection with the top of the horse. The lower end of the prop, when the dam is up, rests against a cast iron piece called the hurter. When the dam is to be lowered, the top of the wickets, one wicket at a time, is pulled a few inches up stream (by the winch from the bridge), which disengages the foot of the prop and allows the wicket, with its horse and prop to fall down. After the wickets are all down the bridge is next lowered (it falls across the river) trestle by trestle. The wickets and trestles when down all lie flat on the masonry foundation of the dam, behind the sills, out of the way of passing boats.

In raising, the bridge is first put up, trestle by trestle (they are all connected together by chains), and the rails forming the track placed as fast as the trestles are raised. When the bridge is all up, the traveling winch is put on the track, and the raising of the wickets, or the dam proper, begins. Each wicket has a strong chain fast to the bottom end, the other end of which is fastened to the trestle when the dam is down. In raising the wickets the wicket chain is made fast to the drum of the winch, and wound up till the lower end of the prop comes in place in the hurter seat, which holds the wicket erect. The wickets are not righted as fast as drawn up, however, but left "on the swing" as it is called, that is, with the horse erect and the end of the prop in place in the hurter, but the wicket in a horizontal position at the top of the horse. In this position the water passes under the wicket unobstructed. If the wickets were righted as raised, the head of water would become so great, before all were up, that the last wickets could not be safely handled. For this reason they are all first put on the swing, as described, and then righted, one after the other as rapidly as possible.

Four men are employed regularly about each lock and dam. The same nnmber are required at the permanent dams as at the movable ones. The average time taken to entirely raise one of the Great Kanawha dams may be taken at about nine hours. To lower the dam entirely usually takes the four men about four hours, though this maneuver has frequently been made, at dams 4 and 5, inside of three hours. Dam 6 has been lowered in two hours.

The following shows the amount expended in maintaining and operating the three (then completed) locks and dams on the Great Kanawha, during the year ending June 30th, 1886. It is from Col. Craighill's report to the chief of engineers, and includes repairs, pay of lock hands, and all expenses. About $450 of the expenditure at lock No. 3 was for rip-rapping the banks:

Lock and dam No. 3 (Permanent dam), - - - - -	$2,575.63
Lock and dam No. 4 (Movable dam), - - - - - -	2,182.58
Lock and dam No. 5 (Movable dam), - - - - - -	2,245.11

At each lock and dam completed the government has erected comfortable houses for the accomodation of the lock-keepers; and the employes at each lock are in telephonic communication with the engineer's office in this city, and with each other at all times. The engineer force keeps a small steamer, the "B," to transport their supplies, material and labor from one point on the improvement to another, and to tow their dredges, boats &c.

The engineering force on the work from the commencement to date, was as follows: Col. William E. Merrill, of the U. S. corps of engineers, was in charge of the work from the commencement, in 1873, to August, 1874. Col. William P. Craighill has been in charge from August 1874, to date, a period of over sixteen years. Mr. Addison M. Scott, C. E., was the local or resident engineer from the commencement of the work by the government in 1873, to August, 1876, when Capt. Thomas Turtle was appointed, and remained in local charge till the fall of 1880, Under Capt. Turtle the following engineers were employed: Mr. Addison M. Scott, principal assistant, mainly on construction of locks and dams Nos. 4 and 5, Mr. C. K. McDermott, Mr. John S. Hoge, Mr. N. A. Bailie and Mr. Charles Humphries. Capt. E. H. Ruffner was the resident engineer during 1881 and 1882 with about the same assistants and organization.

Mr. Scott has been the resident engineer since January, 1883, assisted mainly by Thomas E. Jeffries, engaged particularly on locks and dams Nos. 6 and 7, and by Mr. T. Shoonmaker at lock and dam No. 2, and latterly at No. 8. The Kanawha board continued their dredging and other work, co-operating with the government engineers until 1883, when the board was discontinued, the tolls abolished and the river and improvement fully turned over to the government. The elevation of the Kanawha river at its mouth, at low-water stage, is 510 feet above sea-level. At the foot of Loup creek shoal, the upper point to which slack water goes, it is 596 feet, thus giving a fall of 86 feet in 90 miles, a small fraction less than 1 foot per mile. This 86 feet divided between 10 locks gives an average lift of 8.6 feet each. The velocity of current due to a fall of 1 foot to the mile is 2 to 6 miles per hour, according to stage of water. Measurements to ascertain the water discharge of the river at different stages have several times been made, with results as follows: In 1881, when the water was lower than since 1838 (the lowest ever known), and one-tenth of a foot below the zero gauge, the discharge, below Elk river, was 1,183.5 cubic feet per second.

In 1878, measurements were made when there was 34½ feet water above low-water mark. The discharge below Elk river was 188,347 cubic feet per second. Of this it was shown by measurement, that Elk river furnished 32,959 cubic feet per second,

The discharge between these two wide extremes would, of course, vary according to the stage of water.

This improvement when completed will put this region in more reliable, safe and economical communication with the great and rapidly increasing coal markets of the Ohio and Mississippi valleys than any other source from which supplies can be derived. When the improvement was commenced, in 1873, there were but a few hundred thousand bushels of coal shipped from this valley, per year; now the shipments have reached nearly 50,000,000 bushels per year, and it is reasonably probable that with the increased development of the mines now in operation, together with the many new ones that will doubtless be encouraged to start up as the work progresses toward completion, the annual output will be doubled or trebled by the time the work is completed. The effect of this development, current and prospective, on all the other interests of the valley will be readily seen, and need not be dwelt upon here.

Records kept by the engineers for a number of years show that in Kanawha river (below the locks) there is six feet and over of navigable water, for an average of 136 days per year. In the Ohio river a like stage for an average of 155 days per year, and from the mouth of Kanawha down. The Ohio river has a like stage for 248½ days.

It will be seen from this that when the locks and dams are completed, the Kanawha coals can go to the mouth of the river all the year, and down the Ohio 248½ days in the year, instead of 136, as now, while the Pittsburgh coals will still be limited to the 155 days of six feet navigation in the Ohio, above Point Pleasant.

In short, the completion of the work will not only nearly or quite double the time of practical coal shipping from Kanawha, but will, in effect, owing to time saved in getting out, put the great Kanawha coal field about 300 miles nearer the great consuming markets of the Ohio and Mississippi valleys.

The following table, kindly furnished by Mr. Addison M. Scott, resident engineer, gives the coal shipments of the valley below the Falls of Kanawha, from 1875 to 1877, inclusive, and 1881 to 1889, inclusive:

Year Ending	Shipments by River.	Shipments by Railroad.	Total.
June 30, 1875	4,048,300	5,798,925	9,841,225
June 30, 1876	5,024,050	6,609,650	11,633,700
June 30, 1877	5,183,650	7,758,800	12,942,450
June 30, 1881	9,628,696	6,631,660	16,260,356
June 1, 1883	15,370,458	13,290,255	28,660,713
June 1, 1884	18,421,084	12,059,172	30,480,256
June 1, 1885	17,812,323	12,972,217	30,784,540
June 1, 1886	17,861,613	13,953,745	31,815,358
June 1, 1887	23,233,374	19,160,896	42,394,270
June 1, 1888	20,100,625	20,962,686	41,063,311
June 1, 1889	26,921,788	22,031,121	48,952,909

I learn further from Engineer Scott that the several appropriations made by the government for the dock and dam improvement to date, aggregate $2,579,500. Of this there is nearly or quite enough on hand to complete locks and dams, Nos. 7 and 8, now under construction, and it is estimated that $1,100,000 more will construct the three remaining locks and dams Nos. 9, 10 and 11, which will complete the slack water improvement to the mouth of the river, furnishing full 6½ feet of available water for navigation all the year round.

The $2,579,500and the $1,100,000 yet needed will make the cost of the entire work, when completed, $3,679,500, or $391,716 less than the original estimate of $4,071,216. It is quite unusual to construct public works for less than the original engineer's estimates. It is largely due in this case, no doubt, to the ability, prudent management and watchful economy of those who have had the work in charge.

The cost of operating the several locks and dams (including all repairs) was, for the year ending July 30th, 1890, according to Mr. Scott, as follows:

No. 2	$2,357 49
No. 3	7,062 50
No. 4	2,482 40
No. 5	2,225 60
No. 6	2,967 13

In 1837 the government established, and are since maintaining, beacon lights on the Kanawha river, as they had previously done on the Ohio. These lights add very greatly to the facility and safety of navigating the river at night.

CHAPTER XV.

BY JOHN P. HALE.

SALT MANUFACTURE IN THE KANAWHA VALLEY — DEVELOPMENT OF THE INDUSTRY BY SLOW DEGREES — CRUDE BEGINNINGS — FIRST SALT MADE — PIONEERS IN THE BUSINESS — PETROLEUM OIL — DISCOVERY AND EFFECTS — "OLD GREASY" — NATURAL GAS — FIRST APPEARANCE AND WONDEFUL RESULTS — A HARVARD PROFESSOR'S EXPERIMENT WITH A MATCH AT THE WELL — DISASTROUS CONSEQUENCES TO THE INQUISITIVE SCIENTIST — NOT SO PRETTY BUT MUCH WISER — INTERESTING STATISTICS.

FOR about three quarters of a century the manufacture of salt was the leading and dominant industrial interest of the valley. For a long time the newly populating states of the west were almost entirely dependent upon Kanawha for their supply of salt. Later as the country settled up, the markets were extended from the lakes to the gulf, beyond the Ohio, the Tennessee and Cumberland valleys, to the upper Mississippi and Missouri, and as far west as Colorado and New Mexico, the annual product, at its least, reached to between 3,000,000 and 4,000,000 bushels, giving profitable employment to a large amount of invested capital, and in all the branches of manufacturing, barreling, shipping and selling, employed a vast number of men. For a long time the only competing salts were the imported Liverpool and the Onondaga. In quality Kanawha salt had no superior; indeed for pork packing, butter curing and domestic uses it was preferred to any other salt.

In the rapid growth and development of the great west, and the consequent evolutionary changes of all industrial and other enterprises the conditions of the salt manufacture and trade, like many others, have been entirely changed. Other salt producing localities have been developed on the Ohio river, in Michigan western New York, Kansas, Louisiana, etc. These have stronger brines and more economical access to the great consuming markets of the west and northwest. In the struggle for supremacy, in competition against such odds, the inexorable law has prevailed: the fittest have survived, and the weaker gone to the wall. The salt industry in Kanawha is now almost extinct. Out of the forty-five furnaces in active operation here in 1840 to 1850, only ten remained in 1873; and now, only one survives to answer to roll call, that of I. Q. Dickinson, Esq.

It may be worth while to sketch a short history of the beginning, development and decadence of this once prosperous and promising interest, which was so important a factor in the early settlement and development of this valley, and the early settlement of the west that depended upon it for that indispensable necessity of human health and comfort—common salt.

The existence of salt springs here has been known to and the brines used by the Indians from a very remote past; certainly long before the country was settled by the whites.

In 1755, when all this region, and from the Alleghenies to the Pacific, was an unbroken wilderness unknown to the white man, a party of Shawnees who dwelt upon the Scioto, in what is now Ohio, made a raid upon the frontier settlements of Virginia (Draper's Meadows) (in now) Montgomery county. Having taken the settlers unawares, and after killing and capturing prisoners and burning houses, as was their custom, they retreated, with their captives, down New River, Kanawha and Ohio, to their homes. One of these captives, Mrs. Mary Ingles, the great grandmother of the writer, who afterward made her escape, and was returned to her friends, related that the party stopped several days at a salt spring on the Kanawha river, rested from their weary march, killed plenty of game and feasted themselves on the fat of the land; in the meantime, boiling salt water and making a supply of salt, which was carefully packed and taken with them to their western homes. This is not only the first account we have of salt making on the Kanawha, but anywhere else west of the Alleghenies. In fact, if there is any earlier record of salt-making from brine springs, anywhere in the United States, the writer is not aware of it.

The earliest settlement made by the whites in the Kanawha valley, was by Walter Kelley and family, at the mouth of the creek, which bears his name, in the spring of 1773. Kelley and his family paid the forfeit of their lives to their temerity; they were all killed by the Indians; but after the battle of the Point, when there was greater security for life, the valley was rapidly settled, mostly by Virginians, and in great part by the hardy soldiers who had followed Lewis to Point Pleasant.

The early pioneer settlers, in a wilderness, without communication with other settlements, except by foot or bridle paths, depended upon the Kanawha licks for their scanty supply of salt. In those days of simple economy and provident thrift, when everything useful was made the most of, the women's wash-kettles were put under requisition for a fourfold duty; they boiled the daily hog and hominy, and other wholesome, frugal fare; and once a week they boiled the clothes, on wash day; semi-occasionally they boiled the salt water for a little of the precious salt, and every spring they went to the sugar camp, to boil the annual supply of maple sugar and molasses.

It is related that at one time, when there was an apprehended attack from the Indians, the few early settlers were posted at the mouth of Coal river for protection. Being out of salt, and suffering for the want of it, they sent some of their hardy and daring young men in canoes up to the salt spring, where they dipped the canoes full of salt water; and, getting safely back, the water was boiled, and the precious salt made under cover of the fort.

Among the earliest land locations made in the valley, was one of 502 acres, made in 1785, by John Dickinson, from the valley of Virginia, to include the mouth of Campbell's creek, the bottom above, and the salt spring. Dickinson did not improve or work the property himself, but sold to Joseph Ruffner, an enterprising farmer from the Shenandoah valley, Virginia, in 1794. Ruffner purchased the 502 acres upon Dickinson's own report, without himself seeing it, agreeing to pay for it 500 pounds sterling without condition, and other sums conditioned upon the quantity of salt to be made which might increase the price to 10,000 pounds sterling. Having gone thus far he sold out his Shenandoah estates, and in 1795 removed himself and family to Kanawha to look after his salt property. He did not live to execute his pet salt scheme or realize his cherished hopes. Dying in 1803, he willed the property to his sons, David and Joseph, enjoining it upon them to carry out, as speedily as practicable, his plans of building up extensive salt manufactories to supply not only the increasing local demand, but a larger and still more rapidly growing demand which was now coming from the many thrifty settlements throughout the Ohio valley. During the elder Ruffner's life, however, he had leased to one Elisha Brooks the use of salt water and the right to manufacture salt; and in 1797 this Elisha Brooks erected the first salt furnace in Kanawha, or in the western country. It consisted of two dozen small kettles, set in a double row, with a flue beneath, a chimney at one end and a fire bed at the other.

To obtain a supply of salt water he sank two or three "gums," some eight or ten feet each in length, into the mire and quicksand of the salt lick, and dipped the brine with a bucket and swape, as it oozed and seeped in through the sands below. In this crude, rough-and-ready way, Brooks managed to make about 150 pounds of salt per day, which he sold at the kettles at 8 and 10 cents per pound. No means were used to settle or purify the brines or salt, as the salt water came from the gum, so it was boiled down to salt in the kettles, with whatever impurities or coloring matter it contained. As it issues from the earth it holds some carbonate of iron in solution; when it is boiled, this iron becomes oxidized, and gives a reddish tinge to the brine and salt. This Kanawha salt soon acquired a reputation for its strong, pungent

taste, and its superior qualities for curing meat, butter, etc. A great many who used it and recognized these qualities in connection with its striking reddish color, came to associate the two in their minds in the relation of cause and effect, and orders used to come from far and near for some of "that strong red salt from the Kanawha licks."

Almost the only mode of transporting salt beyond the neighborhood, in those early days, was by pack-horses, on the primitive, backwoods pack-saddle. So much of this was done, and so familiar did the public mind become with the term, as used in that sense, that even to this day, among a large class of people, the verb "to pack" is always used instead of other synonymous or similar terms, such as carry, transport, fetch, bring, take, etc., and the "tote" of Old Virginia. It was not until 1806, that the brothers, David and Joseph Ruffner, set to work to ascertain the source of the salt water, to procure, if possible, a larger supply and of better quality, and to prepare to manufacture salt on a scale commensurate with the growing wants of the country.

The Salt lick, or "The Great Buffalo Lick," as it was called, was just at the river's edge, twelve or fourteen rods in extent, on the north side, a few hundred yards above the mouth of Campbell's creek, and just in front of what is now known as the "Thoroughfare Gap," through which, from the north, as well as up and down the river, the buffalo, elk, and other ruminant animals made their way in vast numbers to the lick. It may be mentioned *en passant*, that so great was the fame of this lick, and the herds of game that frequented it, that the great hunter, explorer, and conqueror of the "bloody ground" of Kentucky, Daniel Boone, was tempted up here, made a log cabin settlement, and lived just on the opposite side of the river, on what is now known as the Kanawha city property. But to return to the Lick, and the operations of the Ruffner brothers. In order to reach, if possible the bottom of the mire and oozy quicksand through which the salt water flowed, they provided a straight, well-formed, hollow sycamore tree, with four feet internal diameter, sawed off square at each end. This is technically called "gum." This gum was set upright on the spot selected for sinking, the large end down, and held in its perpendicular position by props or braces, on the four sides. A platform, upon which two men could stand, was fixed about the top; then a swape erected, having its fulcrum in a forked post set in the ground close by. A large bucket, made from half of a whiskey barrel, was attached to the end of the swape, by a rope, and a rope attached to the end of the pole to pull down on, to raise the bucket. With one man inside the gum, armed with pick, shovel, and crowbar, two men on the

platform on top to empty and return the bucket, and three or four to work the swape, the crew and outfit were complete.

After many unexpected difficulties and delays, the gum, at last, reached what seemed to be rock bottom at thirteen feet; upon cutting it with picks and crowbars, however, it proved to be but a shale or crust, about six inches thick, of conglomerated sand, gravel and iron. Upon breaking through this crust the water flowed up into the gum more freely than ever, but less salt. Discouraged at this result, the Ruffner brothers determined to abandon this gum, and sink a well out in the bottom, about 100 yards from the river. This was done, encountering as before, many difficulties and delays; when they had gotten through forty-five feet of alluvial deposit, they came to the same bed of sand and gravel upon which they had started, at the river. To penetrate this, they made a 3½ inch tube of a twenty foot oak log, by boring through it with a long shanked augur. This tube, sharpened, and shod with iron at the bottom, was driven down, pile-driver fashion, through the sand to the solid rock. Through this tube they then let down a glass vial with a string to catch the salt water for testing. They were again doomed to disappointment; the water, though slightly brackish, was less salt than that at the river. They now decided to return to the gum at the river, and, if possible put it down to the bed rock. This they finally succeeded in doing, finding the rock at sixteen to seventeen feet from the surface.

As the bottom of the gum was square, and the surface of the rock uneven, the rush of outside water into the gum was very troublesome. By dint of cutting and trimming from one side and the other, however, they were, at last, gotten nearly to a joint, after which they resorted to thin wedges, which were driven here and there as they would "do the most good." By this means the gum was gotten sufficiently tight to be so bailed out as to determine whether the salt water came up through the rock. This turned out to be the case. The quantity welling up through the rock was extremely small, but the strength was greater than any yet gotten, and this was encouraging. They were anxious to follow it down, but how? They could not blast a hole down there, under water; but this idea occurred to them; they knew that rock blasters drilled their powder holes two or three feet deep, and they concluded they could, with a longer and larger drill, bore a correspondingly deeper and larger hole. They fixed a long iron drill, with a 2½ inch chisel bit of steel, and attached the upper end to a spring pole, with a rope. In this way the boring went on slowly and tediously till on the 1st of November, 1807, at seventeen feet in the rock, a cavity or fissure was struck, which gave an increased flow of stronger brine. This gave new encouragement to bore still further; and so, by

welding increasing length of shaft to the drill, from time to time, the hole was carried down to twenty-eight feet, where a still larger and stronger supply of salt water was gotten.

Having now sufficient salt water to justify it, they decided, and commenced, to build a salt furnace; but while building, continued the boring, and on the 15th of January, 1808, at forty feet in the rock, and fifty-eight feet from the top of the gum, were rewarded by an ample flow of strong brine for their furnace and ceased boring. Now was presented another difficulty: how to get the stronger brine from the bottom of the well, undiluted by the weaker brines and fresh water from above; there was no precedent here; they had to invent, contrive, and construct anew. A metal tube would naturally suggest itself to them; but there were neither metal tubes, nor sheet metal, nor metal workers — save a home-made blacksmith — in all this region, and to bore a wooden tube forty feet long, and small enough in external diameter to go in the two and a half inch hole, was impracticable; what they did do, was to whittle out of two long strips of wood, two long half tubes of the proper size, and, fitting the edges carefully together, wrap the whole from end to end with small twine; this, with a bag of wrapping near the lower end, to fit, as nearly as practicable, water tight, in the two and a half inch hole, was cautiously pressed down to its place, and found to answer the purpose perfectly; the brine flowed up freely through the tube into the gum, which was now provided with a water tight floor or bottom, to hold it; and from which it was raised by the simple swape and bucket.

Thus was bored and tubed, rigged and worked, the first rock-bored salt well west of the Alleghenies, if not in the United States. The wonder is not that it required eighteen months or more to prepare, bore and complete this well for use, but, rather, that it was accomplished at all under the circumstances. In these times, when such a work can be accomplished in as many days as it then required months, it is difficult to appreciate the difficulties, doubts, delays, and general troubles that beset them then. Without preliminary study, previous experience or training, without precedents in what they undertook, in a newly settled country, without steam power, machine shops, skilled mechanics, suitable tools or materials, failure, rather than success, might reasonably have been predicted. The new furnace, which for some time had been under construction, was now complete. It was simply a reproduction of the Elisha Brooks kettle furnace, on a larger scale. There were more kettles, of larger size, and better arranged.

On the 8th of February, 1808, the Ruffner Bros. made their first lifting of salt from this furnace, and simultaneously reduced the price to the, then, unprecedently low figure of four cents per

pound.* From this time forward, salt making, as one of the leading industries of Kanawha, was an established fact, and Kanawha salt one of the leading commercial articles of the west; and wherever it has gone, from the Alleghenies to the Rocky mountains, from the Lakes to the Gulf, its superior qualities have been recognized and appreciated. The neighboring property owners, who had watched the progress and result of the Ruffner well with such deep interest, now instituted borings on their own lands, on both sides of the river. Among the early enterterprising experimenters, were William Whitaker, Tobias Ruffner, Andrew Donally, and others. All were more or less successful in getting a supply of brine, at depths varying from 50 to 100 feet, and by 1817 there were some thirty furnaces and fifteen or twenty wells in operation, making in the aggregate 600,000 to 700,000 bushels of salt. In this year an important revolution in the manufacture of salt was effected by the discovery of coal. Although, in one of the finest coal fields of the world, coal had not, hitherto, been found here in workable seams nor been used at all, except for blacksmith purposes. Wood had been the only fuel used in salt making, and for other purposes, and all the bottoms and convenient hill slopes for several miles up and down the river had been stripped of their timber to supply this demand.

David Ruffner, true to the spirit of enterprise and pluck which bored the first well, was the first here to use coal as a fuel. This would appear to be a very simple matter now; but was not so then. It was only after many months of discouraging efforts, and failing experiments, that he finally succeeded in getting it to work to his satisfaction. Its value established, however, its use was, at once, adopted by the other furnaces, and wood ceased to be used as a fuel for salt making in Kanawha. Other important improvements were gradually going on in the manner of boring, tubing and pumping wells, &c. The first progress made in tubing, after Ruffner's compound wood-and-wrapping-twine tube, was made by a tinner who had located in Charleston to make tin cups and coffee pots for the multitude. He made tin tubes in convenient lengths, and soldered them together as they were put down the well. The refinement of screw joints had not yet come, but followed shortly after, in connection with copper pipes, which soon took the place of tin, and these are recently giving place to iron. In the manner of bagging the wells, that is, in forming a water-tight joint around the tube to shut off the weaker waters above from the stronger below, a simple arrangement,

*For interesting facts in this history of the boring of the first well, I am indebted to a MS. by the late Dr. Henry Ruffner—and for personal recollections and traditions I am indebted to Gen. Lewis Ruffner, Isaac Ruffner, W. D. Shrewsberry, Col. B. H. Smith, Col. L. I. Woodyard, W. C. Brooks, and others, and my own experiences for the last fifty years.

called a "seed-bag," was fallen upon, which proved very effective, which has survived to this day, and has been adopted whereever deep boring is done, as one of the standard appliances for the purpose for which it is used. This seed-bag is made of buckskin, or soft calf-skin sewed up like the sleeve of a coat or leg of a stocking; made twelve to fifteen inches long, about the size of the well hole and open at both ends; this is slipped over the tube and one end securely wrapped over knots placed on the tube to prevent slipping. Some six or eight inches of the bag is then filled with flaxseed, either alone or mixed with powdered gum tragacanth; the other end of the bag is then wrapped, like the first, and the tube is ready for the well. When to their place—and they are put down any depth, to hundreds of feet—the seed and gum soon swell from the water they absorb, till a close fit and water-tight joint are made.

The hydraulic contrivance for raising salt water from the gums, consisting of a bucket, a swape and a man, was simple, slow and sure; but the spirit of progress was abroad and it soon gave place to a more complicated arrangement, consisting of a pump, lever, crank, shaft, and blind horse or mule, that revolved in its orbit around the shaft. This was considered a wonderful achievement in mechanical contrivance, especially by the men who had worked the swapes. For several years this "horse-mill," as it was called, was the only mode of pumping salt water on Kanawha, but in the fullness of time it also went to the rear in 1828 and the steam engine came to the front, not only for pumping, but also for boring wells and various other uses. About 1840 William Morris, or "Billy" Morris, as he was familiarly called, a very ingenious and successful practical well borer, invented a simple tool, which has done more to render deep boring practicable, simple and cheap, than anything else since the introduction of steam. This tool has always been called here "Slips," but in the oil regions they have given it the name of "Jars." It is a long double-link, with jaws that fit closely, but slide loosely up and down. They are made of the best steel, are about thirty inches long, and fitted, top and bottom, with pin and socket joint, respectively. For use they are interposed between the heavy iron sinker, with its cutting chisel-bit below, and the line of augur poles or rope above. Its object is to let the heavy sinker and bit have a clear, quick, cutting fall, unobstructed and unencumbered by the slower motion of the long line of augur poles or rope above. In the case of fast augur or other tools in the well, they are also used to give heavy jars upward or downward, or both, to loosen them. From this use the oil well people have given them the name of "Jars."

Billy Morris never patented his invention and never asked for nor made a dollar out of it, but as a public benefactor, he deserves

to rank with the inventors of the sewing machine, reaping machine, planing machine, printing cylinders, cotton gin, etc. This tool has been adopted into general use wherever deep boring is done, but, out-side of Kanawha, few have heard of Billy Morris, or know where the slips or jars came from. The invention of this tool, the adoption of the heavy sinker and some other minor improvements in well boring, gave a great impetus to deep boring in Kanawha. Wells were put down 500, 1,000, 1,200 and 1,500 feet and one, the deepest in Kanawha, by Charles Reynolds, to about 1,700 feet. These borings would doubtless have been carried to a much greater depth, but that the fact soon got to be understood, that the salt bearing strata had been passed, and that no brines were obtained at a greater depth than 800 to 1,000 feet. The limit of the salt-bearing rocks is readily told by the character of the borings. Within this limit are sandstones, shale, coal, etc., of the coal measures lying nearly horizontal, though dipping slightly to the northwest; below is the carboniferous limestone which underlies the coal measures, and crops out 100 miles to the eastward. This limestone when penetrated is known to the well-borers as the "long running rock," from the fact that a boring-bit will run a long time in it without being dulled.

No regular suites of samples of borings from the Kanawha wells have ever been kept. This is not important, however, as the strata are wel known, and can be examined along the New river canon as they crop out to the eastward. The Kanawha borings have educated and sent forth a set of skillful well-borers, all over the country, who have bored for water for irrigation on the western plains, for artesian wells for city, factory or private use, for salt water at various places, for oil and gas all over the country, for geological or mineralogical explorations, etc.

Nearly all the Kanawha salt wells have contained more or less petroleum oil, and some of the deepest wells a considerable flow. Many persons now think, trusting to their recollections, that some of the wells afforded as much as 25 to 50 barrels per day, undoubtedly very largely exaggerated. This was allowed to flow over from the top of the salt cisterns, on to the river, where, from its specific gravity, it spread over a large surface, and by its beautiful iridescent hues, and not very savory odor, could be traced for many miles down the stream. It was from this that the river received the familiar nickname of "Old Greasy," by which it was for a long time familiarly known by Kanawha boatmen and others.

At that time this oil not only had no value, but was considered a great nuisance, and every effort was made to tube it out and get rid of it. It is now the opinion of some competent geologists, as well as of practical oil men, that very deep borings, say 2,500 feet, would penetrate rich oil-bearing strata, and possibly

inexhaustible supplies of gas. This theory is being put to the test by borings now going on.

In 1841, William Tompkins, in boring a salt well a short distance above the burning spring, struck a large flow of gas, which he turned to account by "boiling his furnace" and making salt with it, effecting a great saving in fuel and economy in the cost of salt. In 1843, Messrs. Dickinson and Shrewsberry, boring a few rods below, tapped, at about 1,000 feet in depth, nature's great gas reservoir of this region. So great was the pressure of this gas, and the force with which it was vented through this borehole, that the augur, consisting of a heavy iron sinker, weighing some 500 pounds, and several hundred feet more of augur poles, weighing in all perhaps 1,000 pounds, was shot up out of the well like an arrow out of a cross-bow. With it came a column of salt water, which stood probably 150 feet high. The roaring of this gas and water, as they issued, could be heard under favorable conditions for several miles.

It would have been difficult to estimate with any approach to accuracy, the quantity of gas vented by this well, and no attempt was made to measure it, as no suitable means of measuring then existed. It was roughly estimated by some as being enough to light London and Paris, with, perhaps enough left to supply a few such villages as New York and Philadelphia. But as this is a *salt* well, as well as *gas* well, the gas estimates had better be taken "*cum grano salis*."

As part of the history of this well an incident semi-humorous and semi-tragical may be related. While the well was blowing it was the custom of the stage drivers, as they passed down by it, to stop and let their passengers take a look at the novel and wonderful display. On one occasion a professor from Harvard college was one of the stage passengers, and being a man of investigating and experimenting turn of mind, he went as near the well as he could get for the gas and spray of the falling water, and lighted a match to see if the gas would burn. Instantly the whole atmosphere was ablaze, the professor's hair and eyebrows singed, and his clothes afire. The well-frame and engine-house also took fire, and were much damaged. The professor, who had jumped into the river to save himself from the fire, crawled out, and back to the stage, as best he could, and went on to Charleston, where he took to bed, and sent for a doctor to dress his burns.

Col. Dickinson, one of the owners of the well, hearing of the burning of his engine-house and well-frame, sent for his man of affairs, Col. Woodyard, and ordered him to follow the unknown stage passenger to town, get a warrant, have him arrested and punished, for wilfully and wantonly burning his property,—unless, concluded Col. Dickinson, as Woodyard was about starting, unless you find that the fellow is a natural d—d fool, and didn't know

any better. Arriving at Charleston, Woodyard went to the room of the burnt professor at the hotel, finding him in bed, his face and hands blistered, and in a sorry plight generally. He proceeded to state in very plain terms, the object of his visit, at which the professor seemed greatly worried, and alarmed, not knowing the extent of this additional impending trouble, which his folly had brought upon him. Before he had expressed himself in words, however, Woodyard proceeded to deliver, verbatim, and with greath emphasis the codicil to Dickinson's instructions. The professor notwithstanding his physical pain and mental alarm, seemed to take in the ludicrousness of the whole case, and with an effort to smile through his blisters, replied that it seemed a pretty hard alternative; but under the circumstances, he felt it his duty to confess under the last clause, and escape. "Well," said Woodyard, "if this is your decision, my duty is ended, and I bid you good morning."

The salt water and gas from this well were partially collected, and conveyed through wooden pipes, to the nearest furnace, where they were used in making salt. For many years this natural flow of gas lifted the salt water 1,000 feet from the bottom of the well, forced it a mile or more through pipes, to a salt furnace, raised it into a reservoir, boiled it in the furnace, and lighted the premises all around at night. About the only objection to the arrangement was, that it did not lift the salt and pack it in barrels. The success of this well induced other salt makers to bore deep wells for gas, and several were successful. Messrs. Worth & English, Tompkins, Welch & Co., Wm. D. Shrewsberry, J. H. Fry, and J. S. O. Brooks, got gas wells and used the gas either alone, or in connection with coal, for fuel in salt making. Gas was also struck in a few other wells, but did not last long, and was not utilized.

Of the many wells in the neighborhood, that have furnished gas, some have stopped suddenly, and some by a slow and gradual process. Whether these stoppages have been from exhaustion of the gas, or sudden, or gradual stoppage of the ventways, has not been definitely determined. It is known, however, that in the Dickinson and Shrewsberry well, which blew longer than any other, that the copper pipes in the well, and the wooden pipes leading to the furnace, were lined with a mineral deposit, in some places nearly closing them. This deposit has not been analyzed, but may possibly be silicate of lime. A sytem of torpedoing might break up these incrustations from the walls of the well and rock cavities, and start the gas again.

After the introduction of steam power, and the use of coal for fuel, no striking change was effected in the process of salt manufacture for a number of years. What improvements were made, were simply in degree. Wells were bored deeper, the

holes were bored larger, the tubing was better, the pumps and rigging simpler. The furnaces were larger, better constructed, and more effectively operated, the quality of the salt improved and the quantity increased, but still they were kettle furnaces of the original type. The mammoth furnace of the kettle era was that of Joseph Friend & Son at the mouth of Campbell's creek, on which they made 100,000 bushels of salt per annum. The usual capacity of other furnaces was 25,000 to 50,000 bushels per annum. This was about the condition of the salt manufacture here in 1835, when there were, all told, about forty furnaces, producing annually about 2,000,000 bushels of salt. During this year George H. Patrick, Esq. of Onondaiga, New York, came here, to introduce a patent steam furnace. The furnace proper, after it was developed and improved, consisted of cast iron pans or bottoms, eight to ten feet by three feet. Eight or ten of these pieces were bolted together by iron screws, forming one section twenty-four to thirty feet long, by eight or ten feet wide. There were two, three, or four of these sections according to the size of the furnace. Over each of the sections was constructed a wooden steam chest, bolted to the flanges on the sides of the pans, and otherwise held together by wooden clamps and keys, and iron bolts and rods, all made steam and water tight by calking. These several sections are set longitudinally on the furnace walls to form one continuous furnace.

After the furnace comes a series of wooden vats or cisterns, a usual size for which, is about ten feet wide and 100 feet long. The number of these cisterns varies according to the size of the furnace. They are constructed of poplar plank, four to five inches thick, dressed to joints, and fitted in a frame of oak by sills and clamps. They are tightened by driving wooden keys, and then calked to make them water tight. This system of clamping and keying cisterns, was introduced here from a model brought by Col. B. H. Smith from the navy yard at Norfolk. It was very simple and effective, and has been retained to this day, without improvement or change. There are two sets of these cisterns, the first in which the brines, after boiling in the furnace proper, are settled, and at the same time strenghtened up to saturation. The latter in which the salt is graduated from the clear saturated brines. These settling and graining cisterns are very much alike, except that the grainers are usually but fifteen to eighteen inches deep while the settlers may be double that or more. Through each and all of these cisterns from end to end are three rows of copper pipes, usually five inches in diameter. After the salt water is boiled in the furnace proper, it runs into these settling cisterns, and after being thoroughly settled and saturated, is drawn into the grainers, where the salt is deposited,

and, once in twenty-four hours is lifted out by long handled shovels, on to a salt board, suspended above the grainer, and from which, after proper draining, it is wheeled in wheelbarrows to a salt house, where it is packed in barrels ready for shipment.

The steam generated by the boiling in the furnace proper, is carried from the steam chest by wooden pipes, to the copper pipes and through the settlers and grainers. This steam giving up its heat in passing through these cisterns, keeps up the temperature of the brines, and causes rapid evaporation. The temperature of these cisterns varies from 120 to 190 degrees, an average would probably be 165 degrees. This, in short, is a description of the steam furnace after it was improved, and the first mistakes and crudities were eliminated. In the first experiments only very slight heat was imparted by the steam to the brines, and only very coarse or alum salt made. It was very simple, accomplished all that was expected, and so soon as it was fairly tested, improved up to its working condition, and its advantages demonstrated; the days of kettle furnaces were numbered. Andrew Donnally and Isaac Noyes were the first to try and adopt, the plan. Then followed John D. Lewis, Lewis Ruffner, Frederick Brooks, and others, till all had made the change; and when the Ohio river furnaces were built, the system was fully adopted there. It is now about fifty-five years since George Patrick introduced the steam furnace, but it still holds its position securely. Minor improvements were made, and the furnaces much enlarged, but the general plan has not been changed. From the 2,000, or 3,000, or 4,000 bushels per month of the earlier furnaces, the production was increased to 20,000, 30,000, or 40,000 bushels per month. Snow Hill (the furnace of J. P. Hale) made, in one year, independent of all stoppages, delays, etc., 420,000 bushels, the largest single month's run being 41,000 bushels. This furnace had 20,000 square feet of evaporating cistern surface, and over 1,300 square feet of metal-pan furnace-surface. About 1,200 bushels of coal per day were consumed in the furnace proper, and about 300 more for engines, houses and other purposes. The same progress has occurred in freighting salt, as in the manufacture. In the days of Elisha Brooks, the neighbors took the salt from the kettles in their pocket handkerchiefs, tin buckets, or pillow cases. Later it was taken in meal bags, on pack-horses and pack-saddles.

The first shipment west, by river, was in 1808, in tubs, boxes, and hogsheads, floated on a raft of logs. Next came small flatboats, 50 to 75 feet long, and 10 to 18 feet wide, "run" by hand, and in which salt was shipped in barrels. These boats increased in size up to 160 feet or more long, and 24 to 25 feet wide, and carried 1,800 to 2,200 barrels of salt. These boats were all run by hand, at great risk, and although the Kanawha boatmen were

the best in the world, the boats and cargoes were not unfrequently sunk, entailing heavy loss upon the owners of the salt. The late Col. Andrew Donnally used to ask, when he heard of one of his boats sinking, whether any of the boatmen were drowned; if not, he contended it was not a *fair sink*. But all this was changed. Salt was later shipped eastward by rail, and to the nearer westward markets by daily and weekly steamboat packets, and to the more distant markets by towboats and barges. A towboat will take 8,000 to 15,000 barrels at one trip, landing them at Louisville, Evansville, Nashville, Memphis, St. Louis or elsewhere. In the matter of packages, no change has occurred here since the first use of barrels, the principal change being a gradual improvement in the quality of the cooperage. Our neighbors in Mason county, ship some salt in bulk, and some in bags, but the larger portion in barrels. Kanawha uses barrels exclusively. Two sizes were used — 280 pounds and 350 pounds net salt, respectively. The pork packing trade took the larger size, and the retail trade the smaller, chiefly. These barrels were made of white oak staves and hickory hoops, and it is believed that nothing cheaper or better can be devised for salt packages. They are cheaper than bags, more convenient to handle, more convenient to store, stand rougher usage and more exposure to the weather. Markets having choice of salt in bags or barrels, generally prefer the barrels.

In the earlier times of salt making here, various substances were experimented with for the purpose of settling or separating the impurities from the brine. Blood, glue, jelly, lime, alum, etc., were used. Something of the sort was necessary when the brine was boiled down in kettles with all its impurities, but they are all useless, and worse than useless in the present process, and have long been abandoned. Plenty of settling-room and plenty of time, are all that are needed to have the brines as clear as spring water. The bitterns, after the salt is granulated, are thrown away, or used for manufacturing bromine. It has long been known that a small portion of some greasy or oily substance, on the surface of the brine helped "to cut the grain," and hasten the granulation. Butter, tallow, lard, rosin, oils, etc., have been tried. Of these, butter is far the best, and next to butter, tallow; lard and some of the others are positively detrimental. Heat, too, is an important condition in making fine salt. The higher the temperature, other things being equal, the finer the salt. In making the finer grades of table and dairy salt, it is necessary to have the brine up to, or near, the boiling point. On the other hand, the coarser grades of salt, preferred for meat packing and other purposes, are made at temperatures of from 100° to 150° F.

A still coarser grained, or larger crystalled salt, known as alum salt or solar salt, and made in the open air by solar evaporation,

is not made here, but there is no reason why it should not be to great advantage, as we have longer summers and warmer suns, than at Onondaga, New York, where it is very largely made, and with more profit than other grades of salt.

The best furnace will make 100 bushels of salt with 80 to 90 bushels of coal. A good average result is a bushel of salt for a bushel of coal, and the least economical consume about 125 bushels of coal per 100 bushels of salt.

The cost of boring a salt well here, say 1,000 feet, after engine, well frame, etc., are ready, is $1,200 to $1,500. The time necessary to bore and ream it complete, is 60 to 90 days. The cost of a salt furnace, complete, depends upon the size, etc., and varies within wide limits. It may be stated roughly at $40,000 to $100,000. The people of the United Stats consume more salt than those of any other country, the estimated average consumption being one bushel of 50 pounds, per capita, for the entire population.

It is well known to chemists that salt is a valuable fertilizer on most soils for wheat, cotton, grass, potatoes, turnips and other crops; and as an ingredient in compound manures it has a wide range of value. It is often recommended by the highest authorities, but, as yet, very little is so used in this country. When agriculture gets to be better understood and practiced, and agricultural people understand their interests better, a large demand and consumption will doubtless be developed in that direction.

Pure salt, or chloride of sodium, is the same under all circumstances, but no commercial salt is entirely pure. Sea water, brine springs, rock salt, and all sources of commercial supply contain, associated with common salt, other saline ingredients. These are chiefly sulphates and chlorides, in greater or less quantity, and varying proportions. Probably the most common, as well as the most deleterious of these compounds is sulphate of lime. Kanawha salt has the advantage of being absolutely free from lime and other sulphates, our process of manufacture, perhaps better, than any other, enables us to separate the hurtful compounds and purify the brines.

The salt when carefully made analyzes 98.00 to 99.00 per cent of pure chloride of sodium, the remaining fraction being made up of chlorides of magnesium, and calcium. These absorb a little moisture from the atmosphere, relieve the salt from a chaffy dryness, and impart to it that valuable property of penetrating and curing meat in any climate or whether, for which it has so long enjoyed a high reputation. In fact the distinctive characteristics of Kanawha salt may be stated as follows: 1st. It has a more lively, pungent and pleasant taste as a table salt than any other known. 2nd. It is the only commercial salt that is absolutely free from sulphate of lime. 3rd. It does not

under any conditions of climate and weather, cake or crust on the surface of the meat, but penetrates it and cures it thoroughly to the bone. 4th. On account of it pungency and penetrating qualities a less quantity of it will suffice for any of the purposes for which it is used—whether table, dairy, grazing or packing.

STATEMENT SHOWING THE PRODUCTION OF SALT IN KANAWHA.

Date.	Bushels.	Date.	Bushels.
1797	150 pounds per day.	1858	No records.
1808	25 bushels per day.	1859	
1814	600,000 bushels per year.	1860	
1827	787,000 bushels per year.	1861	
1828	863,542 bushels per year.	1862	
1829	989,758 bushels per year.	1863	
1830	906,132 bushels per year.	1864	1,300,991 bushels per year.
1831	956,814 bushels per year.	1865	861,973 bushels per year.
1832	1,029,207 bushels per year.	1866	1,275,017 bushels per year.
1833	1,288,873 bushels per year.	1867	1,321,066 bushels per year.
1834	1,702,956 bushels per year.	1868	1,528,282 bushels per year.
1835	1,960,583 bushels per year.	1869	1,822,430 bushels per year.
1836	1,762,410 bushels per year.	1870	1,721,963 bushels per year.
1837	1,880,415 bushels per year.	1871	No records.
1838	1,811,076 bushels per year.	1872	
1839	1,593,217 bushels per year.	1873	
1840	1,419,205 bushels per year.	1874	
1841	1,443,645 bushels per year.	1875	967,465 bushels per year.
1842	1,919,389 bushels per year.	1876	No records.
1843	2,197,887 bushels per year.	1877	
1844	1,874,919 bushels per year.	1878	
1845	2,578,499 bushels per year.	1879	
1846	3,224,786 bushels per year.	1880	
1847	2,690,087 bushels per year.	1881	
1848	2,876,010 bushels per year.	1882	
1849	2,951,492 bushels per year.	1883	
1850	3,142,100 bushels per year.	1884	
1851	2,862,676 bushels per year.	1885	
1852	2,741,570 bushels per year.	1886	
1853	2,729,910 bushels per year.	1887	
1854	2,233,863 bushels per year.	1888	
1855	1,493,548 bushels per year.	1889	
1856	1,264,049 bushels per year.	1890	Estimated 150,000 bushels.
1857	1,266,749 bushels per year.		

CHAPTER XVI.

BY VIRGIL A. LEWIS.

CHURCH HISTORY OF THE KANAWHA VALLEY — FIRST LAW PASSED IN THE NEW WORLD COMMANDS RELIGIOUS ATTENDANCE — "BLUE LAWS" BY THE FANATICS OF OLD VIRGINIA — HOW IT WAS BEYOND THE MOUNTAINS — PIONEER PREACHERS — SELF-SACRIFICE AND ZEAL — FIRST BAPTIST MINISTER ON THE KANAWHA — PRIMITIVE MEETIN' HOUSES — WIDELY SCATTERED CONGREGATIONS — THE BAPTIST CHURCH AND ITS HEROES — THE PRESBYTERIANS — HISTORIC SPLIT IN THAT DENOMINATION — METHODIST EPISCOPAL — EARLY MISSIONARY WORK — PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL — UNITED BRETHREN — THE CATHOLIC CHURCH, ITS WORK IN THE VALLEY — THE LUTHERANS.

THE men who first found homes at Jamestown were adherents of the Church of England, and devoted Christians, and the oldest law now extant, enacted by the Virginia house of burgesses — the first representative body in the New World — had reference to the worship of the living God and the burial of the dead. It bears date 1623, 21st year of James I., and is as follows:

"That there shall be in every plantation, where the people use to meete for the worship of God, a house or roome sequestered for that purpose, and not to be for any temporal use whatsoever, and a place empaled in, sequestered only to the buryal of the dead." At the same time it was enacted: "That whosoever shall absent himselfe from divine service on Sunday without an allowable excuse shall forfeit a pound of tobacco, and he that absenteth himselfe a monthe shall forfeit 50 lb of tobacco."

The antiquarian who peruses the earliest laws of the ancient commonwealth is surprised to find that almost or quite half of them were designed to operate in the interest of the church, and the famous Blue Laws of Connecticut were scarcely more severe than were those enacted more than 250 years ago by the adherents of the Church of England, on the banks of the James. The church-warden's oath, prescribed in 1631, is characteristic of the legislation of that day. It was as follows:

"You shall sware that you shall make presentments of all such persons as shall lead a prophane or ungodlie life, of such as shall be common swearers, drunkards or blasphemers, that shall

ordinarlie profane the saboth dayes or contemne God's holy word or sacraments. You shall also present all adulterers or fornicators, or such as shall abuse theire neighbors by slanderinge, tale caryinge, or back bitinge, or that shall not behave themselves orderlie and soberlie in the church duringe devyne servise."

The church history of the tide water region of the Old Dominion is of the greatest interest, but cannot be more so than that on the West side of the Alleghenies, to which we must now turn our attention.

The records of western civilization present to the student nothing of greater interest than the efforts of pioneer ministers of the gospel, to keep the teachings of Christianity abreast of the most daring frontiersmen. Scarcely was the roof on the rude cabin before some one of these self-sacrificing, zealous heralds of the cross found his way to it. With Bible in hand and clad in the roughest garb, they went from one cabin to another proclaiming the glad tidings of "Peace on earth and good will to men," and by them the first congreations were organized. No lofty spire or sounding bell guided these worshipers to the place of devotion, for it was within the walls of the log cabin or beneath the spreading boughs in the dark shade of the forest primeval, for here, as in earlier ages, "The groves were God's first temples." Devoted men were they, and they carved out a society and established a code of morals as rigid as any known in older lands. The records of their first courts contain many entries relative to indictments for Sabbath-breaking and profanity. What is true of the western border, is true of the great Kanawha valley, in the occupation and settlement of which were blended all the elements of that civilization which had been previously transplanted in the valley of Virginia. To that fertile region had come the Scotch-Irish, renowned for their devotion to the principles of Christianity, and here they were met by the devoted Huguenot, the pious Cavalier of Virginia, the strict Catholic of Maryland, the steady Quaker of Pennsylvania, the Baptists and Presbyterians of New Jersey, the sternly religious Puritans from New England, and the Lutherans and Moravians from the banks of the Rhine. From such an ancestry have descended a large proportion of the inhabitants of the Great Kanawha valley, the religious history of which is here briefly told. Its record properly begins in the Greenbrier valley, and from thence we trace it westward through the counties of Fayette, Kanawha, Putnam and Mason, even to the banks of the Ohio.

The first Baptist minister on the western waters of the Kanawha was Rev. John Alderson, in memory of whom the town of Alderson, in the county of Monroe, was named. He was pastor

of the Lynnville Baptist church, in Rockingham county, in the valley of Virginia, but no sooner did the settlements on the west side of the Alleghenies assume the appearance of permanency, than he carried the glad tidings to them. Between the years 1775 and 1777, Mr. Alderson made no less than three visits to the Greenbrier valley, then a wild uncultivated and almost uninhabited country, and while on these visits baptized three persons, two of whom were John Griffith and Mrs. Keeney. These were the first persons ever baptized in the western waters of Virginia.

Mr. Alderson now resolved to remove to the west, and accordingly early in the year 1777—the darkest of the Revolutionary war—set out with his family. On reaching Jackson's river, he learned that a few days before the Indians had attacked the house of Col. James Graham, on Greenbrier river, and had killed one member of his family and carried another into captivity. In consequence of this information he halted for some months, but reached his destination in October. His first location was in Jarrett's Fort, on Wolf creek, now in Monroe, but after a short time he settled on the east bank of Greenbrier river, where Alderson now stands, and cleared a farm on which he afterward followed the plow with his gun swung to his shoulder. In going from fort to fort to fulfill his engagements, he was often guarded by a body of armed men. In two years he succeeded in organizing a church of twelve members, himself and wife included. They considered themselves as a branch of the Lynnville church, but transacted business as a separate body. On the 24th of October, 1779, they were regularly constituted a working body known as the "Greenbrier Baptist Church," and the following year it was admitted into the Ketocton association of Loudoun county, Va.

At this time the members were very much scattered, some living twenty miles from the location of the church, and because of this, the regular church meetings were held in different localities. Occasionally such meetings were held at Second Creek Gap, on the Big Levels, near where Lewisburg now stands, and on New river. Notwithstanding the members were dispersed over such a wide area, measures were taken as early as 1783, to erect a house of worship, and in May of that year, the site on which the Greenbrier church has since stood, was fixed upon as a suitable location. In July, the following year, the building was so nearly completed that it was used for public worship. This is believed to have been the first church building erected on the western waters of the Kanawha. Accessions continued to be made, and in 1785, some of the members resided at Second Creek Gap, some on New river, some on Indian creek, others on the Big Levels, and one named Burr, on Spring creek, thirty miles distant from the church building, and yet the rec-

ords states, "that these members were in the habit of attending the regular church meetings." Mr. Alderson continued his labors here seven years before he met with a single Baptist preacher, but in 1785, Rev. James Johnston came over the mountains and was induced to settle on the Kanawha.

Nineteen and one-half miles above Charleston, on the south side of the river, and one and one-half miles below the mouth of Paint creek, is a small stream known as Meeting House branch, and it was here that Rev. Johnston halted, and in 1793 organized the Kanawha Baptist church, the first in the valley west of Kanawha Falls. Here the first church was erected, by John Hansford, but the building was burned by the Federal soldiers, and the congregation now worship in a building erected by Felix G. Hansford, son of John, at Clifton, three miles farther up the river. Among the members composing this primitive body of Christians were: Leonard Morris (the first permanent settler of the valley), Levi Morris, Benjamin Morris, William Morris and wife, Katie Carroll, William Morris, Jr., John Jones, John Hansford, Jane Hansford, David Janett, William Huddlestone, Edward Hughes, Lewis Jones, Mary Malone, Susanna Malone, Levi Alderson, Thomas Trigg, Polly Ellison, Polly Winsor, Nancy Harriman, Richard Hughes, Matilda Winsor and John Meadows. The Teays Valley association met with this church in 1819, when Rev. John Young preached the annual sermon from Psalms 38: 12, 13. Rev. Johnston served the church as pastor until 1803, when he removed to Kentucky. Some of his successors in the pastorate have been, Rev. John Lee, from 1815 to 1825; W. A. Wood, from 1825 to 1832; William C. Ligon, from 1832 to 1843; M. M. Rock, from 1843 to 1848. Among others who preached for the church were, John Young, John Morris, Thomas Harmon, James Michael, Hezekiah Chilton, Lewis A. Alderson, Mathew Ellison, Felix Ellison and James E. Ellison.

From 1793 to 1807, a period of fourteen years, all the Baptist churches of the New River, Kanawha region, belonged to the New River association, but in the last named year, the Greenbrier association was organized, and comprised all the churches down the Kanawha toward the Ohio.

In the year 1800—three years before Rev. Johnston removed to Kentucky—Rev. John Lee came west of the mountains and halted in Teays Valley, now in Putnam county. He was born and reared in southwest Virginia, and when he entered the ministry he was very illiterate, but by constant application he not only learned to read but became well acquainted with the Scriptures. He was remarkably successful in the ministry, and in him was verified the Scriptural declaration that, "God hath chosen the weak to confound the mighty." By the year 1806 he had organized the Teays Valley church, which, the next year, was ad-

mitted into the Greenbrier association, with a membership of fifty-two. Mr. Lee extended his field of labor and continued to gather in the sheaves, and at the meeting of the association in the year 1808, the Mud River church, organized entirely by his own labor, was admitted into that body with twenty-two members. When we remember the sparsely settled condition of the country at that time we are struck with surprise at the success which crowned the labors of this lowly man. He remained with these churches until 1825, when he removed beyond the Ohio, where he continued his labors until he fell by the hand of death.

In the years that followed the churches of this denomination multiplied rapidly and spread throughout the valley. The Cole River church was organized in 1803; Upper Falls church (on Cole river), 1817; Green Bottom church, now in Mason county, in 1820, from which time they have increased to perhaps seventy organizations in the valley.

In 1834, the church throughout the United States divided on the question of mission work, and from that time to the present the student of its history meets with missionary and anti-mission Baptists. The disaffection extended to the Kanawha valley, and in 1834 the Teays Valley association was rent asunder. Rev. William C. Ligon, then pastor of the old Kanawha church, led the missionary movement, and in the same year the anti-mission members of the lower part of the valley met and organized the Pocatalico association, their champion being the Rev. William Martin. They are now styled by church historians, Primitive Baptists. The Pocatalico association has within its jurisdiction several churches, among which are Liberty and Hopewell, in Kanawha county; Zoar, in Putnam; Enon, in Mason, and Eliun and Little Flock, in Jackson.

Presbyterian Church.— The oldest church organization of this denomination on the western waters of Virginia, is the Lewisburg church, organized by the Rev. John McCue, in 1783. He continued to be the pastor for about six years when he returned to the east, and was succeeded by Rev. Benjamin Grigsby, who remained until the coming of Dr. John McElheny, in 1808. This remarkable man was born in North Carolina, in March, 1791, and early in life entered Washington college, Virginia. On leaving that institution, he was licensed as a minister by the Lexington Presbytery, and in 1808, was sent to perform mission work in the counties of Greenbrier and Monroe. Now began that long and laborious career which he followed with such cheerfulness and devotion, and which terminated only with life itself. For a period of sixty-three years, 1808 to 1871, he was pastor of this church, and it is safe to say that no one has lived within the state who has wielded a greater influence for good than he.

Soon after the organization of the church, a log building

was erected, and in this it continued to worship until 1795, when the present "Old Stone Church" was erected. It was built of irregular blocks of blue lime-stone, and is of Gothic architecture. It is the oldest church edifice on the waters of the Great Kanawha.

The first Presbyterian minister who visited that part of the valley below the Falls, was Rev. William Graham, whose name is inseparably connected with the educational and religious history of the valley of Virginia. He was for twenty-one years at the head of Liberty Hall academy, the first Virginia institution of learning west of the Blue Ridge.

In 1798, imbued with the missionary spirit, he resolved to plant the banner of Christianity on the banks of the Ohio, and with this object in view he purchased the "Poulson Grant," of 6,000 acres, which had been surveyed by Washington, in 1770, and which was situated on the Ohio river in what is now known as Graham district, in Mason county.

To reach these lands, Mr. Graham journeyed down the Great Kanawha, having with him several families as colonists. The destination was reached; a fort was erected, and here Mr. Graham hoped to organize a church, and in time there would spring up around him a community of like faith with himself, and, in which should be reared a patriotic, virtuous, healthy, classic, obedient and religious posterity. But, alas, for human hope! The next year he returned to Richmond on business and while there sickened and died of a fever, January 8, 1799. His colonists, when they heard of the death of their leader—both spiritual and temporal—became discouraged, abandoned their settlement and returned to the land whence they came. Thus failed the efforts of a great and good man, who left nothing behind him on the banks of the Ohio, save his name which is commemorated in that of "Graham Station," which the place of his settlement still bears.

Thenceforward there appears no record of the work of this denomination in the valley until the year 1815, when the Rev. William Gould, of Gallipolis, Ohio, began to preach at Point Pleasant and other points on the Kanawha. Almost contemporary with him, Rev. Henry Ruffner began preaching in the upper part of the valley, and it was due to his labors that the First Presbyterian church of Charleston was organized. The following account of its institution is taken from the records:

"Charleston, Kanawha county, March 14, 1819. On this day the Rev. Henry Ruffner attended at the academy according to appointment for the purpose of constituting a church to be in connection with and under the care of the Lexington Presbytery and Synod of Virginia. Upon invitation given a number of persons presented themselves as candidates for membership, and an

election being held for two persons to serve as ruling elders, Samuel Beaumont and Thomas Law, who had previously been members of the church, were chosen and thereupon ordained to the office of ruling elder in this congregation. The aforesaid elders, with the officiating minister, having convened in session, several persons were upon examination, received into the church."

The church thus organized gradually increased, and provided itself with a comfortable house of worship. It has always been one of the most influential churches in this part of the state.

In 1838, when the synod of Virginia formed the presbytery of Greenbrier from the western portion of the territory of Lexington presbytery, the church of Charleston came under the jurisdiction of the new presbytery, and through this presbytery it still is under the synod of Virginia according to the terms of its original organization.

The Rev. Henry Ruffner, who had been the pioneer of Presbyterianism in and around Charleston, was elected in 1820, to a professorship in Washington college, Virginia, and removed from the field. He was succeeded the same year by the Rev. Calvin Chadock, a Congressional minister, who supplied the church until his removal by death on the 25th of April, 1825. The congregation remained without any supply until January, 1826, when the church, consisting of about twenty members, engaged the ministerial services of Rev. Nathaniel Calhoun. He continued to labor successfully until January 4, 1835, when owing to difficulties between himself and a portion of the congregation, he resigned, leaving the church with nine elders, three deacons and 121 members.

In the month of August of the same year, the Rev. Andrew S. Morrison was engaged to serve the church for one year. In April, 1837, the Rev. James M. Brown, D. D., was called to the pastorate of the church and was duly installed in the month of September, the same year. He was a wise and godly man, and continued to labor with great acceptance and usefulness until his lamented death on the 8th of June, 1862.

After the death of Dr. Brown, Rev. J. McC. Bluney was engaged as stated supply of the church, and continued until September, 1867, when he accepted a call to the Presbyterian church of Frankford, Ky. From November, of the same year, until September, 1869, the pulpit was supplied by Rev. J. C. Downing. Upon the withdrawal of Mr. Downing, Rev. J. C. Barr, who was principal of the Charleston institute, and his assistant, Rev. N. G. Geddes, were engaged to supply the pulpit jointly. Mr. Geddes, finding his duties too onerous, retired, leaving Mr. Barr permanent supply of the church, in which relation he still continues.

Owing to the division of the Presbyterian church, into the

northern and southern general assemblies, there was a divided state of feeling and opinion in this church. But, in 1865, the congregation agreed to occupy a neutral position, and for some years it sent no representative to either presbytery. This, however, proved unsatisfactory, and at a meeting held February 21st, 1872, two rolls were prepared, and after a kind and fraternal discussion, 150 members enrolled themselves with the church, resuming its former relations with the Greenbrier presbytery, and twenty-one enrolled themselves with the church to be in connection with the presbytery of West Virginia. The property was then amicably divided, and thus from one common parentage, have grown two flourishing bodies of Christians.

As mentioned above, Rev. William Gould, of Gallipolis, continued preaching in the valley until 1825, at which time, several persons residing therein had become members of the church, at Gallipolis. From 1825, to 1834, there was no regular preaching, but the Rev. Dr. McElheny, Dr. McGuffie and perhaps others, preached occasionally during this interval as they were passing through the valley. At that time, all the territory now embraced in the Greenbrier and West Virginia presbyteries was included in the Lexington presbytery, and it is not strange that it was unable to hold regular preaching through such an extensive field.

In 1834, however, Rev. Francis Dutton, a licenciate, under the care of that presbytery, began his labors in this field, and on Saturday preceding the first Sabbath in August, 1835, the First Presbyterian church at Point Pleasant was organized. Mr. P. L. McAboy, of the Athens (Ohio) presbytery, who was then stationed at Gallipolis, preached the sermon on the occasion from Genesis 13: 8. The church thus organized consisted of fourteen members dismissed from the church at Gallipolis. Mr. Dutton continued to be the pastor until his death, August 15, 1839, when the church register showed a membership of seventy-six.

From these parent organizations at Charleston and Point Pleasant, have come numerous others. From that at Charleston have grown those of Malden, St. Albans and others, while from that at Point Pleasant have come that of Town Flats, in 1837; Upper Flats, in 1849; Buffalo, in 1860; and Winfield and McLean chapel, of a later date.

Among the men who have devotedly worked to spread the teachings of the church throughout the valley, have been Rev. Robert Osborn, J. M. Brown, Stewart Robinson, Thomas N. Paxton, George S. Woodhull, John Rowe, and John C. Brown. This is among the most active denominations of the valley.

Methodist Episcopal Church.—In the settlement of the trans-Allegheny region, Methodism has ever been abreast with the frontiersmen. Francis Asbury, who was one of the greatest ex-

pounders of its doctrines in America, set an example for his co-workers and successors, by traveling through the wilderness to find the small and widely separated settlements, and when he had found them, by declaring unto them the truths of Christianity. As might therefore be expected, this denomination early began its work in the Kanawha valley; but, because of the neglect in keeping records, and the destruction and loss of the same during the late war, much of great interest has been irretrievably lost.

Of the first ministers who traversed the country drained by the New river, Kanawha and their tributaries, we know but little, and of some their very names have been forgotten. But as early as 1796, they were so numerous in this region, that a conference, the first west of the Alleghenies, was held at Lewisburg, in Greenbrier county. Bishop Asbury presided, and at the close of the session he set out on a horseback journey through the mountains to Morgantown. From his journal we make the following extract:

"About seven o'clock, after crossing six mountains and many rocky creeks and fords of Elk, we made the *Valley of Distress*, called by the native Tygart's valley, where we had a comfortable lodging at Mr. White's. * * * Thence we hastened on at the rate of forty-two miles a day, and after encountering many difficulties, known only to God and ourselves, we reached Morgantown. I doubt whether I shall ever request any person to come and meet me at the Levels of Greenbrier, or accompany me across the mountains again, as brother D. Hill has now done."

The bishop seems to have carried his resolution into effect, for it does not appear that he ever held another conference in the Greenbrier country. But the work went on and was rapidly extended to the Ohio.

An old record bearing publisher's date, 1822, notices the work at "Guyandot"—then in Kanawha county, but now in Cabell—and in connection therewith, says: "An old man by the name of Miller—a member of the society from Washington county, Pennsylvania, had settled near a place called Green Bottom, between Big and Little Guiandot, and seeing the deplorable state of the people, his pious soul was grieved, and he got up a petition signed by near one hundred persons of every sex and character, and sent it to some of the preachers of the Redstone District, Pennsylvania. The result was, that some time in the year 1803, William Steele, then a traveling preacher belonging to the Baltimore Conference, was sent to explore the country." Thus we find the Kanawha valley at this date within the bounds of that conference. But it was not long to continue, for on the 23d day of May, 1804, the general conference in session at Baltimore, declared that the Greenbrier district should be included in the Baltimore conference, while the Great Kanawha valley should

be a part of the Western conference, which then included the states of Ohio, Kentucky, Tennessee, the Illinois country, and the Natchez mission.

But owing to neglect in making and preserving records, we know comparatively little of the introduction of Methodism into the valley. It is certain, however, that Rev. Asa Shinn was one among its earliest expounders here and probably the first, who visited this immediate region. Among those who were contemporary with him, or who came soon after him, were Jacob Truman, Samuel Brown, John Cord, Samuel Dement, William Pickett and the distinguished Henry Bascom, afterward a bishop in the Methodist Episcopal church, south, and, who, it is claimed, preached the first Methodist sermon ever delivered in the town of Charleston. This was in 1813, and two years later another, destined to the bishopric—Rev. Thomas A. Morris—delivered a series of sermons in Charleston. He deserves more than a passing notice.

Descended from a family who were the first permanent settlers of the valley, he was born April 29, 1794, in a log cabin which stood seven miles east of the present site of Barboursville, then in Kanawha county, but now in Cabell. His parents were members of the Baptist church, but the son united with the Methodists in August, 1813, and on Christmas night, 1814, preached his first sermon in the presence of an audience numbering about 200, composed of his relatives and friends of the Kanawha valley, among whom he had been reared.

Of this, his first sermon, he thus spoke to some friends on his seventy-ninth birthday: "I had a long, hard struggle to find peace. On Christmas day, 1814, there being no minister present, Thomas Buffington, a licensed exhorter, and I, held a meeting for exhortation and prayer. He exhorted and I prayed. When about to dismiss, he suggested a meeting for the evening. I said, 'Just as you like.' Said he, 'If we do have a meeting, will you exhort?' With some hesitation I replied, 'Yes, if you judge it best.' Whereupon he announced, 'There will be a meeting to-night at father's and brother Morris will exhort.' This meeting was on the lower point at the junction of the Ohio and Guyandotte rivers. As it was my first attempt at public speaking, I began with fear and trembling, though I had often felt before that I should make an effort in that direction. I spoke some forty minutes with a freedom and unction that surprised myself. I was filled with a strange peace of mind, and concluded, 'This is what I have prayed for so long'—that is, I am converted."

He married his first wife, Abigail Scales, in Cabell county, in 1814, in 1815 traveled the Kanawha Valley, and in 1816 joined the Ohio conference. For several years he traveled a circuit, then served as elder, and in 1836, was elected a bishop. He was

the last of the Methodist bishops that made the rounds of his conferences on horseback. He died at Springfield, Ohio, September 2, 1874.

The church appears to have been organized in Charleston, as early as 1816, and the congregation then worshiped in a log house which stood near the site on which the brick church was afterward built on Virginia street. From this time onward the names of Thomas Lowery, Burwell Spurlock, Stephen Spurlock, Francis Wilson, Alexander Cummins, Joseph Farrow, William McComas, William Herr, Henry S. Fernandus, David Kemper, Isaac C. Hunter and John H. Power, are remembered as among the early Methodist ministers of the valley.

Rev. Robert O. Spencer with a colleague, Joseph Deter, who died a few weeks after his arrival, came to the valley in 1833. The Charleston congregation then, as it had done for some years previously, worshipped in a frame building which stood on what is now Virginia street, but in the year 1834, Rev. Spencer W. Young, largely assisted by Charles R. Baldwin, a prominent and talented lawyer of Charleston, having at the time but recently become a member of the church, and the co-operation of the laity, among whom were Thomas C. Thomas, Luke Wilcox and Henry New, undertook and in the same year, completed a commodious brick edifice, which became known as "Asbury Chapel." It was dedicated by Rev. William Young. The renowned Henry Bascom had been engaged for that purpose, but was unable to be present. The first trustees appointed in 1833, were Thomas C. Thomas, William S. Hutt, John Trudgian, James S. Stark and Charles R. Baldwin.

From 1834 to 1844, the pastors, named in the order of their succession, were Revs. William T. Hand, David Reed, John W. Fowble, Thomas Gorsuch, H. Z. Adams and B. N. Spahr.

It was on Charleston circuit in 1837, that the distinguished Bishop Randolph S. Foster preached his first sermon. Thus it is seen that three bishops—Morris, Bascom and Foster—each of whom made for himself almost a world-wide reputation, were all identified with the pioneer work of the church in the Great Kanawha valley.

Point Pleasant, though the oldest English settlement on the Ohio river south of Pittsburg, seems to have been a difficult point at which to establish mission work, or to organize a church. There was a current tradition, that because of the brutal murder of Cornstalk here, November 10, 1777, a curse had been laid on the town, which was to continue for a hundred years. Society was at its lowest ebb, and there was not a church in the place for more than fifty years. It is a matter of record that as late as 1825, there was no church building and no resident minister. But Methodist itinerants came soon after, and about 1840 an or-

ganization was effected. Of the original membership but little is known, because of the destruction of the records several years since. Those most active in building up the cause of Methodism in this old town, appear to have been Revs. Guthrie and Burwell Spurlock. They were most active ministers, and their memory is still cherished throughout the whole extent of the Kanawha valley. Both lived to a ripe old age, and both are long since dead. The latter sleeps the last long sleep overlooking the valley of the Twelve Pole river, at the Wayne Court House, West Virginia.

The Protestant Episcopal Church.— The earliest account of an Episcopal minister in the Great Kanawha valley is that of the coming of the Rev. Joseph Willard, D. D. About the year 1816 he was sent out by the North American Land company of New York, to look after its interests in Kanawha county, where some of its lands were located. The records of the county clerk's office of that period contain entries showing that Dr. Willard, as agent of the company, made deeds to numerous persons for portions of these lands. While here he is known to have officiated as a minister of the Episcopal church in Charleston and at other points in the valley, but no organization was effected.

Soon after this the convocation at Richmond sent several missionaries into western Virginia, one of whom was designed for the field embraced in the counties of Kanawha and Mason, but who he was, what he did, or whether he ever reached the valley, is not known. But it is still a matter of record that Rev. Charles H. Page, who died in Washington City in 1876, was, in 1821, employed by the church in Virginia, as a missionary for the counties of Kanawha, Cabell and Mason. He came at once to the valley and remained for several years. Philip R. Thompson, Sr., for many years the owner of the lands at the mouth of Cole river, built, at his own expense, a church on his lands in which his own family, together with his neighbors, worshipped. It was in his family that Mr. Page made his home, and while officiating as pastor of this congregation preached frequently at Charleston, the court-house serving as a church. Mr. Page appears to have left the valley about the year 1828, from which time until 1834, there was no regular pastor, but the congregation was visited by Rev. ——— Good and others. In 1836 the erection of a church building was begun, and in October of the following year it was dedicated by the distinguished Bishop Meade.

Rev. John Martin was now installed as pastor of the church, in which capacity he continued until 1842, when he was succeeded by Rev. Dr. James Craik, who died in Louisville, Ky., June 9, 1881. He was succeeded by Rev. Henry Dana Ward, late of Philadelphia, who was followed in the rectorship by Rev. F. M.

Whittle, now bishop of Virginia. His successor was Rev. R. Temple Brown, who after a short period removed to Maryland, leaving Rev. Thompson L. Smith in charge. He remained until the beginning of the civil war, when he removed to Kansas, where he became pastor of a Reformed church.

During the war the church at Charleston was closed and without a rector, but in 1865, Rev. W. F. M. Jacobs was called to the work but resigned in 1866 and died the following year. He was succeeded by Rev. Joseph A. Nock, late of Michigan, who served the church until 1870, when he was followed by Rev. C. M. Calloway, who in turn was succeeded in 1875 by Rev. R. A. Cobbs. The membership is now more than two hundred and the structure in which it worships is one of the architectural ornaments of the capital city.

From 1820, Episcopal ministers frequently visited Point Pleasant, but no organization was effected until 1859, when Rev. Mr. Sturgess became the rector. The vestrymen, at the date of organization, were William Minturn, William Smith, Tob. Stribling, John S. Lewis and C. P. T. Moore. The rectors named in their order of succession have been: Revs. Sturgess, Thompson B. Maury, H. E. Haden, Joshua Copland and C. C. Pearson, the present incumbent.

The United Brethren Church.—In the year 1836, this numerous and energetic body of Christians began its work in what is now West Virginia, and its first organization was perfected in Mason county.

In the above year, Rev. Moses Michael, of the Virginia conference, came to Mason county as the first missionary of this denomination west of the Alleghenies, and in August, effected the first organization in a log building on Broad run, near where New Haven now stands. It is now used as a barn. The members of the class at the time of organization was as follows: Henry Nease, Elizabeth Nease, John Hoffman, Sr., John Hoffman, Jr., Christena Hoffman, Thomas Oliver, Savina Oliver, Mark Roush, Mary Roush, Peggy Morgan, Catherine Gibbs, Susan Rickard, Barbara Rickard, Mary Nease, Catherine Hoffman, Susan Riffle, Barbara Yeager, Elizabeth Hoffman and Winnie (colored). Such are the names of those comprising the first United Brethren in West Virginia or west of the mountains. Rev. J. Rhinehart was present at the organization. He died at Fishersville, Va., about the year 1852.

Rev. Michael is not only known as a pioneer minister, but also as one of the founders of the town of West Columbia. It was largely due to his energy and influence that the first salt wells were drilled at that place. There, too, he organized a congregation which reared the walls of the "Old Brick Church," which

stood on land which he himself deeded to the church. Later he removed to the west where he died several years ago.

Rev. Michael was succeeded in the pastorate of the Mason county churches by Rev. Henry Jones, who served until 1841, when Rev. B. Cohler was placed in charge, but he was relieved in 1841, by Rev. —— Appleman, his successor being Rev. George M. Livingston, who was noted for his revival work. It was under his ministery that Hon. Lewis Bumgardner, long prominent in the affairs of Mason county, united with the church.

In 1845, Rev. Jonas Frownfelter was sent to the work, and he is yet remembered because of his zeal in building up the church. Nothing, save an impossibility, prevented him from reaching his appointments. As an illustration of this, we have the following, still remembered by many yet living. Coming to the Ohio river near where Syracuse now stands, he found the stream so much swollen that the ferryman refused to pull him over. Seating himself firmly in the saddle, he spurred his horse into the water, and when in midstream, he could be heard singing the familiar hymn, beginning:

"From every stormy wind that blows."

Thus swimming the turbulent river, he reached his waiting congregation on the other shore.

Other ministers came and went, and in 1846, the work was visited by Elder Markwood (afterward bishop), and on his recommendation, was taken into the bounds of the Virginia conference, and Rev. George W. Statton became the pastor. From this time, until 1858, when the Parkersburg conference was organized, the Virginia conference sent Elders J. J. Glosbrenner, Jacob Bechtel, Benjamin Stickley and others, who traveled the territory, while among the regular ministers were Revs. John Haney, John W. Perry, J. K. Statton, W. McCain and Z. Warner. Meanwhile, the membership increased rapidly, church buildings were reared, a high school was established at Hartford City (buildings now occupied by the public schools of that town) and, the publication of a paper, *The Virginia Telescope*, was begun at West Columbia, and now it was deemed wise to organize a conference west of the mountains. This was done at Centreville, in Tyler county, in March, 1858, and the body thus created, has ever since been known as the Parkersburg conference, in the bounds of which the great Kanawha valley is included.

The new conference began its existence with eleven ministers, ten present and one absent. The former were Revs. J. W. Perry, Jacob Bechtel, L. Hess, Z. Warner, Samuel Martin, Eli Martin, William James, J. W. Miles, J. P. White and H. R. Davis. The latter was Rev. D. Engle. Nine hundred and fifty members were reported, and an average salary per minister of $102.02.

The territory embraced within the conference included a large portion of what is now West Virginia, and was divided into several fields, viz.: West Columbia circuit, Jackson circuit, Ripley mission, Elk River mission and Kanawha mission, forming the western district, with Rev. J. W. Perry as presiding elder; the eastern district, with Rev. J. W. Miles as presiding elder, included Taylor circuit; West Union mission, Lewis circuit, Middle Island circuit, Parkersburg mission and Glenville circuit.

From this beginning this denomination has spread its work over almost the entire state, including the counties of the Great Kanawha valley, where it has a large membership with valuable church property, especially in Mason and Putnam counties.

The Catholic Church.—In the occupation and settlement of the new world, the Catholic missionary journeyed side by side with the explorer, and wherever the banners of Castile and France were planted, there too, was reared the cross—emblem of the faith of those who thus dared the perils of the wilderness. Champlain, the founder of Quebec, was accustomed to say that "the saving of a soul was worth more than the conquest of an empire," and so thought the men who first bore the standard of civilization to the Ohio valley, the banks of the Mississippi, and the shores of Lake Superior.

One of these—Rev. Father Bonnecamps—was the first Catholic who saw the mouth of the Great Kanawha river. He was the chaplain of the French expedition, which buried the leaden plates on the banks of the Ohio in 1749. Because of his scholarly attainments, he was styled the "Jesuitte Mathematicien." The expedition reached the mouth of the Great Kanawha, August 18, 1749, where storms delayed it for two days. Whether Father Bonnecamps performed any part of the church service here is not known, but it is to be presumed that he did.

On the 20th, the voyage down the Ohio was continued, and when three leagues below the mouth of the Kanawha, Father Bonnecamps made an observation from which he determined the longitude west to be 80 degrees 1 minute, and latitude north to be 38 degrees 39 minutes 57 seconds, and all calculations made since that time, through the heart of the American wilderness, and with the rude instruments of that day, he erred by only a few seconds. From his observations on this journey, he drew the first map of the Ohio valley. It is still preserved, and is a model of accuracy.

Who the first Catholics were that settled in the Kanawha valley we do not know, but that there were some residing here at an early date is a matter of record. But no organizations were effected for a number of years. The first priest known to have visited Charleston was Rev. Father Hitzelberger, who came

on a visit to relatives or friends about the year 1836, when he preached in the court house. Subsequently he was pastor of the church at Norfolk, Va.; later joined the order of Jesuits and died there many years since.

Right Rev. Bishop Richard Vincent Whelan visited the Kanawha valley for the first time in 1842. He came from Richmond in a stage coach to Kanawha Falls, whence he went to Nicholas county to visit the Duffy's there residing. On a later visit to the valley he fell sick at a hotel in Charleston, but was removed to the residence of George Jeffries, where he was attended by Dr. Cotton.

Rev. John H. Walters visited Charleston previous to the civil war, and baptized several persons there and at Valcoulon on Coal river. Fathers Joseph Heidencamp, Henry F. Parke, Patrick McKernan and —— Kallenberg from Pomeroy, Ohio, visited Charleston and other points in the valley during the civil war, but there was no stationed priest until the coming of Father Joseph W. Stenger to whose energy and zeal is due the flourishing condition of the church in the valley at the present time.

He was born in Bavaria, but accompanied his parents to Wheeling when but two years of age. There he grew to manhood; went to Maryland to study, and then to Paris, where he completed his theological studies. Returning to Wheeling he became professor of Latin, Greek and history in St. Vincent's college, in that city. Thus he continued until ordered to the Kanawha valley by Bishop Whelan. He arrived at Charleston June 5, 1866, and in August of the same year, Bishop Whelan joined him and purchased property. A school was organized that year, and Father Stenger converted the office of the late Judge Dunbar into a chapel, where the congregation worshiped until December, 1869, when the church building was completed.

Among the pioneer Catholic families in Charleston and vicinity, were the Barretts, Bellers, Beatzs, Bobnests, Brannons, Callaghans, Cavins, Crowleys, De Gruyters, Egans, Flahertys, Forgartys, Foleys, Grieshabers, Higgins, Harberers, Höferers, Hubers, Kiefers, Lockmans, Longs, Messerers, Nugents, O'Conners, Reeds, Saunders, Kenras and Sullivans.

The church at Coal Valley, in Fayette county, together with a school, was organized in 1882, and the same year the church building was completed. For some years it was connected with the work at Charleston, but in 1888 was erected into a separate mission.

Many Catholic families early found homes in Fayette county, among them being those of James Gallagher, Martin O'Brien, John Long, John Canby, Charles Dyer, William Kenny, William Chatworth, John Holey, Denis Hector, James Lynch, James

Riley, Jaques Massot, John Waldron, Thomas O'Gara and Joseph Schweitzer.

The congregation at Coalburg was organized in 1866, simultaneously with that at Charleston. In 1877, a store room was bought and converted into a chapel, but a neat and handsome church was erected in 1884. The organization is that of a mission attached to the work at Charleston. Early Catholic families here were the Burks, Diamonds, Dunns, Conways, Farrys, Quinns, Mulcaheys, Collepys, Fenucans, Dorseys, Cusicks, Neylons, Clarks, McAulays, Hoys, Sherrys and Laydens.

The church building, erected by Miss Alphonsini Vintroux, on the battle-field at the mouth of Scary, was deeded by her to Rt. Rev. Bishop John J. Kain, of Wheeling, and dedicated several years ago.

St. Joseph's church, at Mason City, was in no way connected with the mission work at Charleston. The salt and coal interests at West Columbia, Mason City and Hartford City, were developed during the years from 1852 to 1858, and in these years numerous Catholic families settled at these places. Their first pastoral visits appear to have been made by Father Shinn in 1856, who, in connection with Joseph Ryan, began the collection of funds for the purpose of erecting a church.

The organization, which was effected at the house of Edward Ryan, at Mason City, in 1857, was the result of the labors of Rev. Father Henry F. Parke. Among the members at that time were: Mathias Collet and wife, Edward Ryan, Mary Ryan, Francis Bowers, Anna Bowers, Michael Farry, Mary Farry, Patrick McDormitt, Mary McDormitt, Joseph Conley, Mary Conley, Jane Conley, James Smith, John Hamilton, Thomas Means, Mary Means, James Hart, Isabel Hart, Harry Hart, Thomas Hart, John O'Neil, Thomas Ryan, Joseph Ryan, Peter Donley, John Blank, Elizabeth Blank, George Gress and wife, James Hart, Annie Hart, John McGrill, Patrick McGrill, Austin McGrill, John Young, Matt. Young, Cornelius McGuckin, Mary Ryan, Julia Ryan, Jane Ryan, Ann Ryan, Nicholas Swartzweller, and Jacob Meiger.

The pastoral succession has been Fathers H. F. Parke, Joseph Heidencamp, Joseph Heflinger, P. T. McKernan, T. J. Duffy, and P. F. Burk, the present incumbent.

The Lutheran Church.— This denomination, although one of the most active and influential in the eastern portion of the state, has done but little to extend its field of work into the Kanawha valley. Consequently, there are now but two organizations— one at New Haven and the other in the Upper Flats, both in Mason county.

The first of these appears to have been organized about the

year 1830 by Rev. Gideon Hinkle, who, with his own hands, assisted in cutting the logs used in the erection of their first church building. Joseph Seagrist and wife, Abraham Roush, Daniel Roush, Catharine Roush, Anthony Roush and Elizabeth Roush, were members at the time of the organization.

The Hebrew Educational Society.— The title by which the Jewish religious society of Charleston is known, was incorporated in March, 1873. The body owns a neat frame church building located on State street between Court and Summers, and has a seating capacity of 400. The organization was effected by Rev. Mr. Schwed, who was succeeded in the pastorate in 1875 by Rev. M. Strauss, formerly of Baltimore. To this body belong a number of the representative business men of Charleston. It is the only Jewish organization in the Kanawha valley.

CHAPTER XVII.

BY VIRGIL A. LEWIS.

EDUCATIONAL HISTORY — GOVERNOR BERKELEY'S FAMOUS DICTUM AGAINST SCHOOLS — PROGRESS OF TWO CENTURIES — VIRGINIA'S BACKWARDNESS IN EMBRACING THE FREE SCHOOL SYSTEM — THE "PAUPER SCHOOLS" — VARIOUS OLD TIME STATUTES — BUT LITTLE PROGRESS — THE "OLD FIELD SCHOOLS" — WHAT THEY WERE — PEN PORTRAIT OF BUILDING AND SURROUNDINGS — THE PIONEER TEACHER — READIN,' 'RITIN', AND 'RITHMETIC — "BOARDING AROUND" — NAMES OF "SCHOOL-MASTERS" OF YE OLDEN TIME GRADUAL IMPROVEMENTS — MODERN PROGRESS — SCHOOLS UNDER THE NEW CONSTITUTION — FIRST OFFICIAL REPORTS — PRESENT STATUS.

SIR WILLIAM BERKELEY, governor of Virginia, in his report on the condition of the colony in 1670, said: "Thank God! there are no free schools or printing presses, and I hope there will be none for a hundred years; for learning has brought disobedience and heresy and sects into the world, and printing has divulged these and other libels." Such was the expressed sentiment of Virginia's chief executive, two hundred and twenty years ago. This was not, however, the sentiment of the people over whom he held despotic sway. They saw that the great advantages which civilized and polished nations enjoyed over those of savage and barbarous tribes were due to, and principally derived, from the invention and use of letters, and that however firmly republican government might be founded on the principles of equal liberty, justice and order, yet no real stability or lasting permanency could be hoped for if the minds of the citizens be not rendered liberal and humane, by intellectual development. They saw that national growth and national prosperity was the result of the cultivation of the arts and sciences; that the school is the nursery of mental culture; hence in less than twenty-five years after Berkeley gave utterance to the above, they were rearing the walls of William and Mary college, the oldest institution of learning south of the Potomac river.

But Berkeley spoke of "free schools," and to that kind of school there was among the people an opposition, the influence

of which stayed the progress of popular education that is of a free school system in Virginia for more than two centuries. The student of the various educational methods of the state at different periods of her existence, sees the evidence of constant antagonism which even was at work in the schools of a state which produced the best examples of the educated few, while the many remained in ignorance. That we may properly understand the history of education in our own valley, it becomes necessary for us to review briefly that of the old commonwealth of which it was so long a part.

The first reference to a school of any character in Virginia, appears in the records of the house of burgesses for the year 1642. It appears that upon the death of Benjamin Symms, he left an estate in Elizabeth City county, to be used in establishing a free school, and the burgesses in the above year declared: "Upon consideration had of the godly disposition and good intent of Benjamin Symms, deceased, in founding by his last will and testament a free school in Elizabeth county, for the encouragement of all others in the like pious performances, that the said will and testament with all donations therein contained concerning the free school, shall be confirmed according to the true meaning and godly intent of the said testator." It also appears that soon after Thomas Eaton died, and prompted by the "good intent" of Symms, left an estate in the same county for a similar purpose.

The provisions of both wills were carried into effect and two schools were established, but both must have perished under the fierce denunciation of Berkeley, for we hear no more of them for 162 years. But, January 12, 1805, the assembly passed an act providing for the appointment of trustees for these estates, and the preamble recited: "That the schools which were to have been supported by them, had been shamefully neglected, the buildings suffered to tumble into ruins, and the land dismembered of its timber. In these two schools, indigent children were to be educated free, but those able to pay tuition were required to do so. This was the germ from which grew the Virginia "Pauper Schools" of later years.

The first semblance of a primary school in the state were those known as "Charity Schools." The Revolution forever put an end to the established church in Virginia, and an act of assembly passed soon after the close of that struggle, provided for the sale of the Glebe or church lands throughout the state, and from this source, many of the eastern counties secured a considerable sum. The action of the people of King George county was similar to that of numerous other counties. By petition to the assembly, they represented that they had a large fund on hand, the result of the sale of the "Glebe Lands," and, Janu-

ary 1, 1808, that body passed an act appropriating the money to the establishment and maintenance of free schools. No teacher was to be employed therein who did not produce a certificate of good moral character. The trustees were authorized "to determine the description of the scholars to be admitted," and we therefore know nothing of the conditions of attendance.

New Kent county had a fund similar to that of King George, but of much smaller amount, and February 4, 1808, the assembly authorized the inhabitants of said county to use the same, in building houses and employing teachers for the education of poor children. The funds were placed at the disposal of the overseers of the poor, who were in the event of a deficiency, to make a levy sufficient to cover the same. This is the first instance in which Virginia authorized a direct tax for the support or partial support of a primary school. Thus came the "Charity school," from the wreck of the established church. But as parts of an educational system, they were failures. Parents, no matter how destitute, would not send their children to a school in which their very presence was evidence of poverty. Thus, thousands of children grew up without even being able to read and write, and thus was made a large per cent. of illiteracy for the state.

Coexistent with these schools was another class denominated "Academies," which were designed to be schools of a higher grade. The records of the assembly for the first fifty years of the commonwealth, teem with acts of incorporation, creating joint stock companies by which these schools were generally managed. So numerous were they that there was scarcely a county east of the mountains, in which one or more of the corporations did not exist, and to the west of the mountains were many more. The act of incorporation frequently empowered the stock-holders to raise funds by the establishment of a lottery, such as they might design, to the amount of $5,000 or $10,000. Many of these schools were put in operation and did efficient work, but once equipped, they depended upon tuition for their support, as well as dividends for the stock-holders, consequently, they were out of reach of the poor, who were thus placed between two systems—one, too low, and the other too high. Neither the academies nor charity schools were in the line of popular education. There was great illiteracy in the state, whose sons had been most prominent in laying the corner stones of the Republic and rearing the governmental structure thereon.

To remedy existing defects, the assembly, December 26, 1796, enacted a law, entitled, "An act to establish public schools." It provided that in every county in the commonwealth, there should be elected "three honest and able men," to be called aldermen, who should, at any time it appeared expedient to them, proceed to divide their respective counties into sections, each to contain

a sufficient number of children to make up a school. Then the voters of the section were to meet at some point within it, and by their votes determine upon the most suitable location at which to build a school-house. This done, the aldermen were to proceed to build the house, then employ a teacher competent to teach "reading, writing and common arithmetic." In these schools all free children, male and female, were entitled to receive three years' tuition gratis, and as much longer *at their own expense*, as their parents, friends or guardians might think proper. This plan, though still having the pauper feature, might have been partially successful, had it not been for the provisions of the last section, which was fatal to the whole bill.

By it the aldermen were forbidden to enter upon their duties until authorized so to do, by the county court or a majority of the magistrates of their counties. Of this, the anti-free school element availed themselves and it was only necessary, in order to stop the entire system, to have the county court refuse to issue the order Thus the law itself placed a nullity upon the very system it was designed to establish. But when it became operative, it was the origin of what was known as the "Old Field School," to be noticed further on. These, with academies and "Charity schools," constituted the Virginia educational system during the first half of the present century. This is not remarkable when we remember that the state constitution of 1776, the organic law of the state made no mention of education.

Early in the century the state established what was known as the "literary fund," which was a kind of irreducible school fund, and by act of assembly, March 22, 1836, it was provided that the income from this fund should be distributed to the several counties of the state according to population, the same to be used for the education of the poor children. The quota thus disbursed was placed in the hands of the school commissioners of the county; the teacher who was engaged in teaching at any point in the said county was by them authorized to admit to his school the children of poor parents, that is of these who were unable to pay tuition; to make report of the attendance of said children and from the last mentioned fund their tuition was to be paid. Here was still the pauper feature, the rock which had wrecked the Virginia educational system for two centuries.

Fifty years had come and gone since the enactment of the Aldermen school law of 1796, and there were murmurings of discontent because of the defective system. Other states had flourishing school systems and were marching to the anthem of progress. The assembly saw that something better must come to Virginia, and March 5, 1846, passed an act establishing a "district public school system." Its provisions were as follows:

Upon the petition of one-third of the qualified voters of any

county, the court should authorize a vote to be taken upon the question of adopting the district school system, and if two-thirds of the ballots cast were in favor of the same, then the school commissioners elected for the purpose should divide the county into suitable districts. Then the voters of each district should elect a district commissioner, those for the entire county to be a corporate body. A board of trustees, three in number, was to be appointed for each school established. They were to select and purchase a site and build a good and sufficient school-house; to furnish the same with proper fixtures and keep the same in good repair. They were to appoint a teacher whose qualifications and moral character had been determined by the county commissioners. The studies to be pursued or taught in these schools were reading, writing, arithmetic, English grammar, geography, history (especially of the state of Virginia and of the United States) and the elements of physical science, and such other and higher branches as the commissioners might direct.

It was made obligatory upon the trustees, or one of them, "to visit the school at least once in every month and examine the scholars, and address the pupils if they see fit, and exhort them to prosecute their studies diligently, and to conduct themselves virtuously and properly." It was further their duty to visit the families of the poor and prevail on them to send their children to school. All free white children over six years and under sixteen years of age were entitled to attend the schools. The quota received from the literary fund was to be divided among the several districts of the county. All expenses of purchasing land, building houses, fixtures, teachers' wages, and all incidentals were to be defrayed by the inhabitants of the county, by a uniform rate of increased taxation, and the levy laid by the commissioners was to be collected by the sheriff and by him disbursed upon orders of the board.

It was a long step toward popular education, indeed it was a free school system divested of every pauper feature, for the counties that would adopt it, but here was a difficulty. First, a vote could not be taken upon the subject until petitions signed by one-third of the voters in the county had been presented to the county court, and when the question was submitted it required a two-thirds vote to carry it. Here seemed to be an advantage gained by the anti-free school element in the framing of the law, for while every other question was decided by the "majority rule," it required a two-thirds vote on the adoption of a primary public school system. Notwithstanding, a number of counties both east and west adopted the system and put it into effective operation. We shall shortly see how it worked in the Great Kanawha valley.

Having thus briefly reviewed the history of education in the Old Dominion, we proceed to notice its development and progress here in our own valley. The first settlers were as hardy a race as ever braved the perils of the wilderness, and though inured to frontier life and exposed to savage warfare, they were far removed from that ignorance which is supposed to enshroud those engaged in the conquest of the wilderness. Not one of those first to find homes, so far as the writer knows, had had the advantages of a collegiate or academic training, but many of them possessed the rudiments of an English education. Of this there is ample evidence. They were men who had crossed the mountains to find a home for their posterity; they were not willing to have that posterity grow up in ignorance; hence we find that they were patrons of the earliest pioneer schools, rude though they were.

The "Old Field Schools," which developed under the law of 1796, were the first introduced into the Kanawha valley and several of them were in operation at the beginning of the present century.

They were all alike, and a description of one answers for the others. Let us take a glance backward and view one of them. Down on the broad river bottoms or back among the hills and valleys, are a dozen cabins, the homes of pioneers. Around each are a few acres of cleared land on which stand the deadened forests, the bare limbs and trunks, whitened by wind and weather, which when viewed in the distance resemble the masts and rigging of ships in a harbor. The proprietor is a farmer and hunter, who, when not employed in the former occupation spends his time with his rifle in the woods. About the cabin moves the busy housewife and half a dozen robust boys or buxom girls, and two or three tow-headed urchins, who because of their costumes, are of doubtful sex. Be it remembered that these old pioneers obeyed the Scriptural injunction and multiplied and replenished the earth. Such are the scenes about the dozen homes.

Down by the spring or brook where half a dozen paths bisect, is the old "clearing," which tradition says, was made by a man who was killed by the Indians or lost in the woods and never after heard of. There on the margin of that "improvement," with the primitive forest in the rear and the plat of wild grass and tangled weeds in front, these frontiersmen have met and reared the school-house. It is 16x18 feet, built of round logs from eight to ten inches in diameter; the roof of clapboards is held in place by heavy weight poles; the floor is made from puncheons split from the body of a large tree and hewed so as to have somewhat the quality of smoothness; a huge fire-place, eight or ten feet, spans over half of one end of the building, and is surmounted by a "cat and clay" chimney; logs ten inches in

diameter, split in halves, pins or legs inserted in the oval sides answer for seats; along the side of the wall pins have been inserted on which rests a broad slab, used as a writing desk; just above it, a log has been chopped out, and in its place is a rough frame-work resembling sash, over which is pasted greased paper to serve the place of glass; in the doorway swings on wooden hinges, a clapboard door. At night the structure presents the gloomiest aspect, and if Shakespeare at that time had been a popular author on the frontier, the school-house would have been supposed to be the hiding place of Hamlet's ghost.

It is autumn. A stranger appears upon the scene, and the report goes from cabin to cabin that there is a "school-master" in the neighborhood. Look at him. He is clad in the garb of the border. Whence he came none know. He brings no credentials or diploma from a college faculty, for none is required; it is only necessary that he be able to teach the three R's—reading, 'riting and 'rithmetic. To teach these he binds himself in his "article," which he carries from house to house, soliciting subscribers to the school which he is to "keep," for so much a "quarter" and "board 'round," that is with the scholars. Then he goes to the overseers of the poor, who agree in compliance with the law of '96, to pay the tuition for the indigent children of the neighborhood. Then the day is announced for school to begin, and it is understood that the teacher will board the first week at John Smith's, but none can divine where he will stay the next.

Monday morning comes. The teacher goes early, and with the aid of one of Smith's big boys, puts on a back-log, and soon a fire is roaring on the hearth. Then the boys and girls for half a dozen miles around begin to come in. Bill Jones can't come this week, for his father did not get his shoes made, owing to the fact that the leather stayed green too long in the tan trough. Bettie Davis is not there either for her mother did not get her linsey-wolsey frock made in time. The teacher meantime has been making preparations for the "quarter," by cutting a bundle ot withes in the forest near by. All is in readiness, and a stentorian voice from the door cries out, "Come in to books." In they go with dinner in a chip basket made from the tough splits of the oak or hickory of the hills. Under the arm are copies of the "English reader," and Webster's "elementary speller," bought from beyond the mountains, and now was to be the one that provokes the wrath of him who presides over this temple of learning. The term closed, the teacher made his collections, and went, perhaps, none knew where.

Such were the pioneer schools of the Kanawha valley nearly a century ago. To the teachers and pupils of our modern schools, the picture may appear to be overdrawn, but the writer learned the alphabet in just such a school-house as is here de-

scribed, and that from a teacher who pronounced the word "development," devel-op-ment.

Who taught the first school in the valley, we do not know, but there were many teachers here in the first half of the present century, and numerous are their names which tradition preserves. Among these "Old Fields" teachers were Hank Van Matre, 1803; John Hereford and Samuel Smith, 1808; Jacob Ward and Joseph Springer, 1815; John Rust, 1817; William Drennan and John M. Jordan, 1818; P. Spear, John Mason, James S. Riley, Joseph Blackeny, Robert Malcolm, James Eddy, John Slack, Fannie Thayer, William Gilbert, Thomas Brandon, Harriet Hark, John Armstrong, Eli Chamberlain, Lucy Edwards, Samuel T. Wyatt, Elijah Kimberling, Jacob Gibbs, James Minturn and Alexander Hase Porter, all of whom were known — some well known — in our valley more than fifty years ago. It is to be regretted that we know so little of the men and women who carried letters over the Alleghenies, for they were pioneers in a double sense — in the wilderness and in the field of intellectual development. The attainments of many extended beyond the three R's, and a few were the possessors of a knowledge of the classics.

John M. Jordan who taught several terms at Point Pleasant, previous to 1820, had been a medical student and had attended lectures at Philadelphia, but for some cause abandoned the profession.

Hank Van Matre had received a liberal education in Pennsylvania, his native state, but having participated in the whisky insurrection in that state, he, after its suppression, found a home in the Kanawha valley. Upon the breaking out of the second war with Great Britain, he enlisted in the Mason County Riflemen, and served in the Army of the Northwest.

Elijah Kimberling taught several terms in the valley, then engaged in business. In 1852 he was elected high sheriff of Mason county. It was in his administration, November, 1853, that John McMahon, the only man ever executed in the county, was hung at Point Pleasant. Afterward Mr. Kimberling was long clerk of the county court. He died several years since.

James Minturn came from New York, where he was born and reared, and where he had received a collegiate education. He was for several years a prominent surveyor of the valley; was surveyor of Mason county, and as such began and completed the only actual survey made of it. He died several years since. A number of his descendants now reside in the valley.

Alexander Hase Porter was born in Washington City, in 1803. He was the son of Henry Porter, and nephew of James Porter, who was long the private secretary of John Q. Adams. Early in life he was sent to Cambridge university, England, from

which he was graduated in 1827. Returning to the United States, he was appointed, through the influence of his cousin, John Porter, surveyor-general of the western territories, to the chair of mathematics and language in Oxford college, Ohio. In this position he continued until 1841, when the institution became private property. Thus out of employment, he, in 1842, paid a visit to his uncle, James Porter, residing in Mason county, and from that date to 1846, he was tutor to large classes of young men at different points in the valley. He was proficient in the languages, mathematics and the classics. The influence which he wielded has not yet ceased to exist, for there yet lives a number of professional and business men, now old and gray, who were students of his, and who assert, that as a teacher, he has had no superior, and few if any equals in the valley since that time. He returned to Ohio and made his last visit here in 1857.

The first attempt to establish a school of a high grade in the valley was made at Charleston, by Col. David Ruffner, in 1816. Through his efforts the building known as Mercer academy—named in honor of Charles Fenton Mercer, of Virginia—was erected on the lot on which the First Presbyterian church of that city now stands. A joint stock company was organized, and by an act of the assembly, passed February 18, 1818, was incorporated under the name of "The President and Trustees of Mercer Academy." The act recited: "That a number of the inhabitants of the county of Kanawha, had by voluntary contributions, procured a suitable lot of ground in the town of Charleston, and had erected thereon a suitable edifice for the laudable purpose of educating the youth of the county."

It appears that the building had been erected on lands belonging to David Ruffner, for on the 1st day of March, 1829, he executed a deed for the same to the president and trustees, in which he set forth that "he was desirous to promote religion and learning by offering and increasing the opportunity for public worship, and of fulfilling a promise and subscription theretofore made by him."

In compliance with the conditions of the deed, the officers, by subscriptions and voluntary contributions, continued the school almost without interruption until the beginning of the civil war in 1861. The last instructor, prior to that date, was Colonel D. L. Ruffner, who, with a number of students, entered the Confederate service. During the war the building was almost continuously occupied by the Federal soldiers. In 1864, it was almost totally destroyed by fire, but the government authorities filled the rents in the walls with plank, put a roof on it, and continued to use it until July, 1865. Then deserted, it was for a time the abode of bats; later, it was occupied as a church by the colored people. Then Rev. J. C. Blaney, in 1867, opened a school in it which he

continued until it was taken possession of by the heirs of David Ruffner, who rented it to Mr. Rusk, for a cabinet shop. Then litigation began which ended in the court of appeals, and the property finally passed into the possession of the board of education of Charleston independent district as now constituted. The present high school building of Charleston, and which is an ornament to the city, bears the name of "Mercer" in commemoration of the old academy.

The second and last attempt to found a school of similar character was that of the Buffalo Academy, at Buffalo, in Putnam county. The building—a brick structure of two stories and four rooms—was built in 1849 by a joint stock company composed of Erwin McCoy, J. E. Pitrat, Benjamin K. Craig, L. L. Bronough, George E. Allen and others. The first principal was George Rossetter, A. M., afterward of Marietta college, Ohio. It continued to be a flourishing institution until the beginning of the civil war, when it was occupied alternately as a barracks by the Federal and Confederate troops, and during such occupancy all the apparatus and furniture was destroyed. Some time before the war J. E. Pitrat & Brother had advanced the sum of $900 to defray the expenses of necessary improvements. At the close of the war they were unable to collect the amount, and they brought suit against the trustees of the building, and had it sold under a decree of the court. Their claim then amounted to $1,200. For it they bid in the property and forthwith deeded it to the board of education of Buffalo district upon the single condition that it should be used as a public school building.

These two schools exerted a powerful influence on the educational interests of the valley. They afforded to the young of both sexes an opportunity to secure an academic education almost at home, and very many availed themselves of the advantages. This impetus aroused them to greater effort, and from the academies numbers went to find an *Alma Mater* in the University of Virginia, Washington college, now the hallowed Washington and Lee, the Ohio university at Athens, or in other institutions.

The development of the salt industry and the introduction of steam navigation on the Kanawha, brought the people of the valley into communication with the outside world, and they were no more the homogeneous mass of other days. A better class of teachers were brought to the valley. The old Lewisburg academy sent its alumni down among the people. There was manifest improvement in the "Subscription Schools," in which, in the wealthier neighborhoods along the river, it was not uncommon to find classes studying Latin and the higher mathematics. Thus from the Hawk's Nest to the Ohio, the people were doing

all that was possible under existing laws to educate the youth of the generation in which they lived.

We have said that upon the enactment of the law of 1846, providing for a "District Free School System" in any county, which under the provisions of that law, might put it in operation, many counties hastened to adopt it, and none made greater haste than the county of Kanawha. Her people secured the petition signed by one-third of her legal voters, and when her court submitted the question, it was carried by the necessary two-thirds vote. Thus the system went into operation in 1847, but one year after the passage of the law. Then there was opposition and litigation, but after a time, all obstacles were removed, and thirteen years before the beginning of the Civil war, Kanawha had a system of free schools, not only in name but in effect.

The people of Mason county, or a portion of them, made an earnest effort to adopt the system, but there was much opposition. Years came and went, and it was 1858 before they could get the sufficient number of petitioners and the necessary majority. But in that year it was accomplished through the determined work of the earnest free school men, among whom were James H. Holloway, Dr. A. L. Knight, Barney J. Rollins, William R. Gunn, Hugh Daigh, Richard H. Neale, Andrew Roseberry and James Barnett. But the work was not yet done, for here, as in Kanawha, there was opposition, and opposition meant litigation. The school commissioners refused to purchase sites, build houses, employ teachers, in short, to put the system in operation. Then James Hutchinson, attorney for the people, caused a writ of mandamus to issue against them to compel them to carry out the provisions of the law, and the cause went into the courts where it was pending when the storm of civil war put an end to all proceedings, and the system under the law of 1846 never became operative in Mason county.

War, while it continues, hinders, if it does not entirely obstruct intellectual development. A people only improve in mental culture during periods of peace, for it is then that the arts, science and literature are cultivated, and the progress in that direction must therefore cease when the masses engaged in the sterner realities of war, and especially must it be so when their territory is overrun by the marching and counter-marching of contending armies. The Kanawha valley was no exception, for while the wars continued, the schools were abandoned, and it may be said, that the years through which it lasted, constitute but a blank in the history of education. It has been said that war turns the hands backward on the dial plate of nations, sometimes for a hundred years, but certainly this was not true in the valley of the Kanawha, for her people have made more intellect-

ual progress in the twenty-five years that followed that struggle than in seventy-five years that preceded it.

When the storm of civil war had passed away, a new commonwealth had arisen on the western slopes of the Alleghenies. Many hundred valley men—some wearing the blue and others the gray—came home from Appomatox, and united in an effort to retrieve the losses, public and private, sustained during that struggle. How well they did it is illustrated best by the system of schools which they put into effect.

The tenth article of the first constitution of the state, provided for the establishment of an efficient system of free schools, and December 10, 1863, the legislature, in compliance with the constitutional provision, enacted the first school law. It differed widely from the Virginia law of 1846, and it was made obligatory upon every county in the state, to put it in effective operation. Let us see what was done in the counties lying in the Great Kanawha valley, and this is best done by reference to the reports of their first school officers.

A. I. Cunningham, county superintendent for Kanawha, in his annual report for 1865, said: "The new system is not yet fully understood, and we have many school-houses to build, the churches and school-houses were more or less destroyed during the war."

The report of Superintendent D. C. Forbes for 1866, presents the first view we have of school affairs in Mason county. He said: "Our schools are beginning to prosper, and this year we can see something of what has been done. Graham, Waggener, and Lewis townships border on the Ohio river, and include the salt and coal region. In them are our best schools. * * * In all the other townships there will be schools whenever teachers can be found."

County Superintendent J. S. Cassaday, of Fayette county, said in his annual report for 1866, "Our county has been almost destroyed by the late war, from the effects of which it has not recovered; the consequence is, no schools. The school-houses were burned or hauled off, leaving the county without houses, and we have two years of heavy taxes on us at once, the people refused to lay a levy sufficient to run the schools without aid from the state, but by subscription houses are being built all over the county and before spring we shall be ready to go ahead with the schools, and if we can get some aid from the state, together with our own exertions, I hope to be able to make a good report next fall."

The superintendent, James H. Hoge, of Putnam county, in 1866, said: "The people are beginning to understand and consequently to take a deep interest in our school system. The only objection against it with us is the large number of officers."

E. T. Moore, superintendent of Kanawha in 1866, in his annual report, said: "The great difficulty has been securing means to provide houses. In no township has this been entirely overcome, though five or six of our boards of education levied to the extent authorized by the law in 1865, the most successful one collecting a little over $1,000, and the least so less than $100. A number of the houses were built under the old system (law of 1846) of this county. Forty-six free schools were in operation this year, for an average of nearly three months. Both our people and school officers have shown a disposition of earnestness in the cause of education by cheerfully making liberal levies for both continuing the schools and building school-houses in most of the townships."

Read these official statements and think for a moment of the earnest efforts of a war-impoverished people to put in operation our free school system; churches and school-houses burned in Kanawha; the people of Fayette with school-houses "destroyed or hauled off," and burdened with two years' heavy tax at once; yet her citizens building houses by private subscription when the taxes for that purpose could not be paid. Mason and Putnam counties delayed in the work for want of teachers, but these came from Pennsylvania, Ohio and Indiana, and the work went forward. The records of the entire Mississippi valley are challenged to produce a similar instance of a people under similar circumstance, making such a determined effort to found and maintain public schools. Official records are worth vastly more from a historical standpoint than mere theory, and we continue to refer to the former to show the progress of the development of the system from the embryo condition to an effective stage. We thus see how the work improved year after year.

Superintendent E. T. Moore, of Kanawha, in his report for 1867, said: "I am happy to be able to report so much accomplished during the past year. Three hundred and thirty-one months of public school have been taught in eighty-five districts in this county during the past year; an average of about four months to each district, and at an average cost to the same of $7.00 per scholar for those actually attending. There were twenty-one districts that had no school for want of suitable houses. Twenty-six houses (twelve frame and fourteen log) have been built during the year at a cost of $8,457.00, and fifty-two houses (twenty-two frame and thirty log) have been put under contract at a cost of $26,789. Up to December of this year from the introduction of the system in the county, $27,343.80, including state apportionment and township levies, had been collected." By the state superintendent's report for this year there were 1,140 schools in the state, eighty-five of which were in Kanawha county.

J. S. Cassaday, of Fayette, in his annual report for 1868, said: "We have, all told, twenty-three school-houses (six frame and seventeen log) and more in course of construction. * * * In visiting through the county, I find the people generally favoring the free school system, though it has some enemies, but my opinion is that when the machine is in running order, all opposition will disappear. The people have not recovered from the injuries which they received financially by the late war, and which makes taxation seem hard."

In 1868, D. T. Field closed his report of Kanawha by saying: "In this year two buildings were erected for colored schools; one at a cost of $700, by the colored people, aided by the Freedman's Bureau, and another at a cost of $1,200, of which amount the Charleston board paid $500, the colored people $200, and the Freedman's Bureau $500. True intelligence promises to triumph over the opposition which hitherto embarrassed the school system. Poverty will no longer present a barrier to the development of American talent, and the hereditary and unjust distinctions between the rich and poor will be abolished in the common education of all."

Jacob Bird, superintendent of schools for Mason, in his report for 1868, thus shows the conditions in that county: "Robinson district has seven houses, and Waggener six, built at a cost of from $800 to $2,700 each. Graham has erected a number of commodious houses; Clendenin has also built neat and comfortable houses; Arbuckle the same. Opposition and prejudice against the free school system doubtless exists in some localities, but not to the extent they did when our public schools first commenced in their midst. Our school officers and citizens generally admit that the system is a success. That deep seated prejudice which existed on account of locality and early education, is gradually giving away. The majority of the teachers are trying to improve, and are availing themselves of every opportunity for obtaining information which will qualify them for greater success in their profession."

Superintendent John C. Lininger, of Putnam county, in 1868, says: "Our great want now is the co-operation of the masses and competent and efficient teachers. But let us have the latter and the former will be concomitant. The system in its design is grand and benevolent, and in its practical operations has already wrought much good, and promises to lay broader the foundations for that general and prevailing intelligence upon which alone we can rely for the guidance of the ship of state."

In 1869 Superintendent Cassaday, of Fayette, said: "Perseverance and energy will develop the system, and prove it to be the plan for the elevation of the masses." In the same year, Superintendent Field, of Kanawha, gave utterance to the fol-

lowing: "I can safely say that the schools of Kanawha were much better in 1869 than in 1868, and if the officers will properly discharge their duties in the future, they will, in a few more years, compete favorably with the schools of other states." Superintendent Bird, of Mason, added his testimony in 1869, by asserting that: "The cause of popular education in our midst is exciting much attention and attracting many friends on account of its practical workings. No one will deny that much more has been done within the last four or five years toward the moral and intellectual development of the youth of this county than has been done in a century previous." Superintendent Lininger, of Putnam, in 1869, said in his report: "Opposition to free schools is fast disappearing in this county. We have good houses and good schools." Thus it is seen that our free school system was developed and put into effective operation in the counties lying in the Great Kanawha valley in the space of four years, and that too, by a people who have been impoverished by long years of war, and who had marched to battle on distant fields, had listened to the tramp of contending armies in their own beautiful valley.

We close this chapter with a comparison of school interests in the valley in 1868, with those of the present, 1888 — twenty years intervening.

In 1868, in Fayette, there were nine school-houses, worth $1,503, and nine teachers. In 1888, there were 131 school-houses, worth $35,065, and 131 teachers and 4,095 pupils attending school. The total value of school property was $41,931.

In 1868, in Kanawha, there were fifty-one school-houses, worth $4,276, and fifty-one teachers, and 1,596 pupils attending school. In 1888, there were 246 rooms, worth $58,324, and 246 teachers with 10,350 pupils enrolled. The total valuation of school property was $72,483.

In 1868, in Mason, there were eight school-houses, worth $963, and nineteen teachers with 1,249 pupils in attendance. In 1888, there were 173 rooms worth $56,286, and 173 teachers with 6,581 pupils enrolled. The total value of school property was $72,460 to which should be added $20,000, the cost of the new building erected at Pt. Pleasant the present year, 1890.

In Putnam, in 1868, there were fourteen school-houses, worth $1,870, and eighteen teachers. In 1888, there were ninety-nine rooms, worth $25,575, and ninety-nine teachers with 3,685 pupils in attendance. The total value of school property was $30,353.

The grand totals for the four Valley counties in 1888, were: 649 schools, 649 teachers, $180,028 value of school-houses, and $220,227 value of all school property.

Thus is shown the progress made in twenty years and such in brief is the educational history of the Great Kanawha valley.

CHAPTER XVIII.

BY VIRGIL A. LEWIS.

MILITARY HISTORY OF THE KANAWHA VALLEY — EARLY STRUGGLES — THE REVOLUTION — WARFARE WITH BOTH SAVAGES AND BRITISH — WAR OF 1812 — VIRGINIA'S READY RESPONSE WITH TROOPS — THE CIVIL WAR — BROTHER AGAINST BROTHER — OCCUPATION OF THE VALLEY BY OPPOSING FORCES — GOV. WISE'S FORAY — BATTLE OF SCARY CREEK — FEDERAL'S CONTROL OF THE VALLEY — BATTLE OF CARNIFEX' FERRY — ADVANCE OF LORING'S COMMAND — LIGHTBURN'S FAMOUS RETREAT — FEDERALS DRIVEN OUT — THEIR TRIUMPHANT RETURN — JENKINS' RAID TO POINT PLEASANT — A DASTARDLY MURDER — "JOHNNIES" CAPTURE A STEAMBOAT — WITCHER'S ATTACK ON WINFIELD — ESTIMATE OF KANAWHA TROOPS IN THE WAR — CASUALTIES ON BOTH SIDES.

WAR, pestilence and famine are, by the common consent of mankind, the three greatest calamities that can befall our species and war as the most direful, justly stands foremost and in front. There is scarcely a spot on the surface of the globe where men have gone, over which they have not struggled for the mastery and on which human blood has not been shed. Ever since the Aryan race left its cradle in Central Asia and began its march around the globe, it has warred with the passive races in its pathway and often with itself. Its conquest, settlement and occupation of the Great Kanawha Valley is no exception to its world-wide history.

How many of the first settlers of the valley served in the armies of the Revolution we do not know, but certain it is that some whose bones crumbled to dust on the banks of the Kanawha, were active participants in that struggle, and their enemies were two-fold, for they warred alike against the savage from the wilderness and the Briton from the sea.

Their struggle with the armed legions of barbarism at Point Pleasant, October 10, 1774, is elsewhere recounted in this work, and the heroic bravery displayed on that bloody but honored field, is but an index to that of later times, for no war of the past century has presented an opportunity, in which the descendants of the heroes of Point Pleasant have not shown themselves to be the sons of noble sires and sires of noble sons.

The battle at the mouth of the Great Kanawha did not bring peace to the dwellers on the frontier. The savages, though

driven north of the Ohio, would not give up the struggle, and for twenty years they equipped war parties and sent them against the frontier of Virginia. The records of the valley present the best view to be had of these times, and of them we avail ourselves. The following extracts exhibit the military condition here in 1789—the year in which the Nation began its constitutional existence.

Early in the year 1789, the Indians were thought to be preparing for an incursion into southwest Virginia, and to stay it, George Clendenin, colonel commandant of Kanawha county, collected the available military force at the mouth of Elk and proceeded to Pt. Pleasant. Later in the year, he transmitted by private carrier, his report to the Virginia War department, in the archives of which it is still preserved. From it we have the roll of the men who accompanied him to Pt. Pleasant. They were: William Clendenin, captain; George Shaw, lieutenant; Francis Watkins, ensign; Shaderick Harriman, first sergeant; Reuben Slaugher, second sergeant, and twenty-six privates, viz.: John Lollypurt, William Carroll, William Turrell, Samuel Dunbar, Thomas Shirkey, William Hyllard, John Burns, Nicholas Null, John Cavinder, Isaac Snediker, Archer Price, Henry Morris, William Miller, Benjamin Morris, Charles Young, John Booker, Levi Morris, William George, James Edgar, Joseph Burwell, Alexander Clendenin, Michael Newhouse, William Boggs, John Moore, Robert Aron and William Morris. Such were the men who did guard duty at Pt. Pleasant more than a century ago.

August 10, 1789, the same officer forwarded to Richmond, the following bill against the state:

"State of Virginia.....Dr.

"To rations furnished rangers by George Clendenin for twenty-six privates, two sergeants, one ensign, one lieutenant and one captain, from the first of March till the first of July, amounting to 3,782 rations at seven pence half penny, per ration, and purchased of William Morris, Leonard Morris and others, being a ration per day for above number of men and amounting to £118, 3s, 9d."

This is the manner in which the "Standing army" of the valley was maintained a hundred years since.

April 15, 1790, Thomas Lewis, at the mouth of the Great Kanawha, wrote Col. George Clendenin, at "Charles Town," now Charleston, and said: It is unnecessary to mention anything respecting the situation other than that they (the people) are collected in bodies and await the moment when the savages make a formidable attack to depopulate the settlements on the Kanawha. Col. Clendenin forwarded the letter to the Virginian government by private carrier.

January 1—New Year's Day—1791—Col. Clendenin ad-

dressed a letter to Gov. Randolph, relative to the western defenses, in which he said: "I beg leave to request the honorable board to consider the peculiar situation of the county of Kanawha (then including the entire valley), and the disposition the Indians have lately exercised against it and that you and the board will indulge the county with four scouts in case the general government may not make such arrangements as their exposed situation may require. This number, I am certain, is not sufficient, but they would be of great service to alarm the inhabitants of the approach of the enemy, so as to enable them to collect together to secure themselves from savage cruelty. I feel myself disposed to make this last request from the most tender motives of affection for my own family and the lives of my friends and neighbors equally exposed."

On the 12th day of December, 1791, Daniel Boone, the founder of Kentucky, but then residing in the valley and holding the position of lieutenant-colonel of Kanawha county, wrote Gov. Henry Lee, regarding the military establishment of the county. His letter is characteristic of the man who wrote it. Here is an extract:

"For Kanaway County, 68 Privits,—Lenard Cuper, Captain at Pint plesent—17 men; John Morris, juner, Insine at the Bote-yards 17 men. Two spyes or scutes Will be nesesry at the pint to sarch the Banks of the River at the Crossing places. More would be Wanting if the(y) could be aloude. Those Spyes must be Compoused of the inhabitence who Well Know the Woods and waters from the pint to bellville 60 mildes—No inhabitence: also from the pint to Elke—60 Mildes—No inhabitence from Elke to the Bote yards,—20 mildes all inhabited."

These extracts portray vividly the existing conditions in the valley a century ago, when savage men roamed over all the country from the Alleghenies to the Pacific. Against these the frontier soldiery warred for many years. It was an effort to plant the standard of civilization in the land where barbarism had so long held undisputed sway. Civilization triumphed, and the first soldiers of the Kanawha valley did their part in the struggle. At length peace reigned. The savage war-whoop was no longer heard in the valley of the Kanawha. He no longer shot his canoe over the placid surface of the river, and the pioneer left his block-house and stockade and went forth, not with the rifle, but with the axe, to conquer the wilderness from which he had driven the enemies of civilization.

The central figure in the military affairs at that time was Col. George Clendenin. As colonel of Kanawha county, he was commander-in-chief of the Valley department. The exact place of his birth is unknown, but it was probably in Scotland, about the

year 1746. If so, he accompanied his father, Charles Clendenin, to Virginia, when but four years of age. He was a prominent frontiersman, long engaged in Indian wars, and was with the army of Gen. Lewis at the battle of Point Pleasant. In 1786 he purchased from Major Thomas Bullitt, the lands upon which Charleston, the capital of West Virginia, now stands, and in 1788, accompanied by his brothers, a sister, and an aged father, he removed to these lands, and reared the first structure at the mouth of the Elk. It was a two story, double log house, and was bullet and arrow proof. It stood for nearly a hundred years, and was known in pioneer times as Clendenin's fort. The same year of this removal, he together with Col. John Stewart, represented Greenbrier county in the Virginia convention which ratified the Federal constitution. He was a Federalist, and as such, voted for the constitution, despite the opposition, at the head of which was Patrick Henry. In 1789, when Kanawha county was formed, he furnished the books of record for the new county, for which the court allowed him nineteen hundred and twenty pounds of tobacco. He continued his residence at Charleston until 1796, when he removed to Marietta, Ohio, where he died in 1797.

The war of the Revolution terminated disastrously for Great Britain, and she called her shattered regiments home. But not satisfied, she sought another quarrel with the young republic beyond the seas. This she did by plundering our commerce, searching our ships and taking from them seamen, under the plea that they were British subjects. As ever, when the second war came, Virginia was ready with her treasure and the services of her people. She called for volunteers, and nowhere within her confines did that call meet a readier response than in the Great Kanawha valley. Shortly after the declaration of war by congress, the authorities of Mason county were instructed by Gov. James Monroe to enlist and equip a company of 110 men to be known as the Mason County Riflemen, and destined for service in the army of the northwest.

Anthony Vansickle, who had previously held a captain's commission in the state militia, proceeded at once to organize the company. He established his headquarters at Point Pleasant, and the ranks were soon filled with sturdy pioneers who were anxious to enroll their names and shoulder arms in defense of "Free Trade and Sailors' Rights." Nicholas Yeager was commissioned lieutenant, and James Ball, ensign; Dr. Jesse Bennett enlisted as surgeon; Benjamin Lewis as drummer, and Abraham Roush as fifer. The following is a partial roster of the company as complete as it can now be made: Anthony Vansickle, Nicholas Yeager, James Ball, Jesse Bennett, Benjamin Lewis, Abraham Roush, George Riffle, Joseph Rader, John Eckard, George Clendenin, Thomas Lewis, Sr., Jacob Rickard, Leonard Cooper,

John Johnson, Cornelius Miller, John Yeager, Isaac Taylor, William Roach, Charles Taylor, Isaac Johnson, Abraham Brinker, Henry Nease, Resin Van Matre, Henry Vansickle, Samuel Somerville, Lewis Roush, George Eckard, Emanuel Nease, Arthur Edwards, James Stevenson, Jacob Aleshire, John McIntire, Jacob Peck, William Cooper, Michael Rickard, Robert Johnson, Sheldon Gibbs, Samuel McCulloch, James McLure, John Van Matre, Samuel Bumgardner, David Bumgardner, James Hall, Robert Bryan, John Craig, William See, Nathaniel Kimberling, William Tucker, John Jackson, Paul Chamberlain, Robert Pruit and Jacob Rottenbery.

William Sterrett furnished a team and George Sebrill enlisted as teamster. The company was assigned to the Second Virginia regiment, commanded by Col. Dudley Evans, and the regiment to the brigade of Gen. Leftridge, a distinguished soldier of the Revolution. The command proceeded directly to the Maumee rapids, where it formed a junction with the army under command of Gen. W. H. Harrison, and at once began work on Fort Meigs. The regiment was sent out on a forced march of three days to re-enforce Gen. Winchester, who was then sorely pressed at the River Raisin, but did not arrive until after his disastrous defeat at that place, January 12, 1813. The company was mustered out of service at Fort Meigs, and began its homeward march only a few days before the defeat of the British under Gen. Proctor at that place, May 5, 1814, and all arrived safe except John Jackson and Thomas Lewis, who died from injuries received while working on the fortifications at Fort Meigs. In the summer of 1813 another body of troops, about twenty in number, was collected in Mason county, and under the command of Capt. William Parsons, crossed the Alleghenies and served at Norfolk, at which place they were mustered out of service in 1814. The last requisition for troops from the county was in the autumn of the last named year. A cavalry company was organized at Point Pleasant, and Capt. Peter Steenbergen was commissioned captain. The company took up its line of march across the mountains to the Atlantic coast, but was never to reach its destination. The treaty of peace had been signed at Ghent, December 24, 1814, and the joyful news had reached our shores. While Capt. Steenbergen's company rested on the summit of Big Sewell mountain, now in Fayette county, it was met by runners bearing orders for the soldiers to return to their homes.

Kanawha county men as well as those of Mason county nobly performed their part in that struggle which England in her pride forced upon us. She furnished her quota, and while Mason sent her sons to the far northwest, Kanawha sent hers over the mountains to the far seaboard. In 1813, a company numbering fifty-six

men were enlisted at Charleston and engaged for the war. The following is the roll as it entered service: Captain, John Wilson; lieutenant, Robert Wilson; ensign, William C. Wilson; orderly, sergeant, John Bagby; second sergeant, Dabney Jones; third sergeant, John Sisson; fourth sergeant, Hiram Cobbs; first corporal, Chrisholm; second corporal, Henry Cartmill; musician, John Fisher; privates — John Smith, Malcolm McCown, Reger Paull, Samuel Priestly, Joseph Stitt, James Newport, Leonard Fisher, Elisha Smith, Moses Brown, Henry McLaughlin, Luke Shiverdecker, Simeon Milam, James McCown, Leonard Cooper, Joel Rucker, John Cooper, Alexander Cartwright, Thomas Parish, Joshua Fowler, John Ray, Gabriel Dawson, Thomas Milam, Andrew Slaughter, John Campbell, Thomas Cobbs, Moses Milam, Thomas Lowe, Solomon Casdorph, Thomas Hensley, James Hensley, John Guthrie, Archibald Price, Edmund Price, George Weldy, William Fowler, James Fowler, John Donnally, Asa Fowler, Thomas Casdorph, Isham Bailey, Langston Ward, Joseph Dawson, Alexander Taylor, John Medey, Jacob Casdorph and Thomas Mathews.

The company was assigned, Colonel John Ambler's Second Virginia regiment of the first brigade of Virginia volunteers. Crossing the mountains it hastened away to the seat of war then in Tide-Water, Va., where with other trans-Allegheny men, it did efficient service. Hundreds of West Virginians hastened thither to defend Virginia's soil from the foot of the armed invader, and when the struggle ended the bones of many men from the western slopes of the Alleghenies, even from the banks of the Ohio, lay buried in the sands of Norfolk and the shores of the Chesapeake.

Captain Wilson's company was mustered out of service at Richmond, in December, 1814. These soldiers returned to their homes and all have fallen by the hand of Death. They found a resting place when they had found a home.

When the war with Mexico came Virginia was again ready, and while there were no organizations within the Kanawha valley, soldiers from within its limits enlisted in companies formed elsewhere in the state, and saw service on the table lands of Mexico. Some enlisted in a company from Staunton, Augusta county; others in one from Christiansburg, and still others, the greater number, in a company which was enlisted in Cabell county. It rendezvoused at Guyandotte, and then proceeded to Newport Barracks, where it was mustered into service and attached to the Eleventh United States infantry, Col. Ramsey commanding. Proceeding by way of New Orleans it landed with Gen. Scott at Vera Cruz, and marched with the advancing columns to the City of Mexico.

Owing to its geographical position and the divided condition

of the people, the Kanawha valley was destined to become the theater of active military operations during the civil war. The present vast mining interests were not then begun; there was no railway connection with the outside world; the river was not then improved as at present, and the manufature of salt in the upper part of the valley, and agriculture on the fertile lands of the lower portion were the chief industries, and in them almost the entire population was engaged. That population by the census of 1860 was as follows:

Counties.	White.	Free colored.	Slave.	Total.
Mason	8,750	47	316	9,173
Putnam	5,708	13	580	6,301
Fayette	5,716	10	271	5,997
Kanawha	13,785	180	2,184	16,150
Total	33,959	250	3,351	37,621

When the storm of war came, these people, notwithstanding their homogeneous character, and common interests, were widely separated in opinion. When the call of arms came from the south and from the north, a singular scene was presented. It was that of hundreds of brave and determined men, hastening to the respective recruiting stations, and enlisting under the flag — emblem of the cause which they believed to be just. This scene was not only witnessed in the same beautiful valley, but in the same county, and often in the same town or village.

The oldest military organization of the valley at the time, was the Kanawha Sharp Shooters, of Charleston, and as a guide to the sentiment of the people and spirit of the times, we reproduce the following from the preamble of the constitution which they adopted January 16, 1861:

"The history of all nations and civilizations developes a truth which cannot be overlooked, and that truth is that every successive generation has ideas and prejudices differing in a greater or less degree from that preceding it, and that every series and generation, the time of series depending much on the habits of the people and their government, is liable to violent convulsions, sometimes ending in permanent disruption, in the body politic, sometimes in the mere national liberty, sometimes in despotism or a temporary retrograde; for we hold it to be true that human progress is eternal. We must also be struck with the fact that familiarity with arms and the cultivation of a taste for war and military exercises and parades, both improves the standard of a race, ennobles it and developes those higher char-

acteristics which become dwarfed and crippled when the whole mind is allowed to center itself on trade and the amassment of wealth, and it being manifest that two peoples connected by political bonds, but differing in their social organization, diverse in their habits of thought, and diverging in their prejudices and tastes, may eventually either come to a conflict of arms, or peaceably separate their political relations, that each may the better cultivate his tastes and social tendencies and pursuits, and in a way suited to itself and impel its own developements undisturbed by the other. Now, with a proper regard for these truths, and the better to be ready at all times to defend our own homes and the commonwealth to which we owe our primary allegiance from whatever shock that may come out of the progress of events, we resolve to perform our duty by forming ourselves into a military company under the title of the Sharp Shooters." This company as an organization, later entered the Confederate service. Similar expressions to the above were given by a convention at Point Pleasant, nine days earlier, by the men, many of whom entered the Federal ranks.

The rival armies saw in the production of salt and the crops of the fair fields two factors essential to the maintenance of the powerful levies then being brought into the field, and both hastened to possess the same. Accordingly, in June, 1861, ex-Gov. Henry A. Wise, entered the valley with a Confederate force officially estimated at 2,705 men, and established his headquarters at "Two Mile," below Charleston. A Federal force was speedily collected at Gallipolis, Ohio, for the purpose of operating against Wise. It consisted of the Twenty-first Ohio infantry, Col. Jesse S. Norton; the Eleventh Ohio, Col. De Villiers; the Second Kentucky, Col. Woodruff; the First Kentucky, Col. George W. Neff, and Capt. C. S. Cotter's Battery A, of the First Ohio light artillery. This force, under the command of Col. J. D. Cox, began its march up the Great Kanawha, and on the 17th of July reached the mouth of Scary creek, in Putnam county, at which place it was met by a body of Confederates, consisting of the Berden riflemen, Capt. A. R. Barbee; the Kanawha riflemen, Capt. George S. Patten; Capt. John S. Swann's rifle company; Maj. Sweeney, commanding a small body of infantry; Capt. Thomas Jackson's battery of light artillery; Capt. J. M. Corn and Col., afterward Gen., A. G. Jenkins, commanding cavalry.

The battle began and brisk firing continued. Lieut.-Col. T. J. Allen, of the Twenty-first Ohio, fell mortally wounded; Col. Norton received a severe wound. At a late hour Col. De Villiers, Col. Woodruff and Lieut.-Col. Neff rode upon the field, and, mistaking a body of Confederates for their own men, entered the line and were made prisoners. Night came on and

the Federals fell back to the mouth of the Pocatalico river, leaving twenty-one dead and thirty wounded. The Confederates, whose loss was much less, proceeded to Charleston. A few days later Wise abandoned the valley and Cox occupied Charleston.

Gen. Jacob D. Cox, the Federal commander, was descended from an old family, long settled near Montreal, Canada, at which place he was born in the year 1828. He graduated from Oberlin college, Ohio, studied law and engaged in practice at Warren, in the same state. Upon the breaking out of the Civil war, he entered the army with the rank of brigadier-general. He was governor of Ohio in 1866–7, and secretary of the interior during a portion of President Grant's second term. He has contributed much to the literature of the late war.

The Federals continued in possession of the valley until September, 1862, with, however, a transfer of some of the regiments of Cox's command to other fields while their places were filled by the Fourth and Ninth West Virginia regiments, the Thirty-fourth, Thirty-seventh and Forty-seventh Ohio infantry and the Second West Virginia cavalry. These troops occupied Charleston, Camp Piatt, opposite Brownstown, Kanawha, with their most eastern out-post at Fayetteville. From these points scouting parties overran the country south and east. One of these, a detachment of the Fourth West Virginia infantry, under command of Major John T. Hall, on the 6th day of August, 1861, fell in with a body of Confederate cavalry at Kennedy's Hill or Beech Creek, in Logan county. It was a surprise to the Federals, who were completely routed, with a loss of three killed and eight wounded, among the former being Major Hall. He and Lieut.-Col. James R. Hall, of the Thirteenth West Virginia infantry, killed in action at Cedar Creek, Virginia, October 19, 1864, were brothers, the only sons of Hon. John Hall, of Mason county, who was president of the convention that framed the first constitution for West Virginia.

Early in September, 1861, Gen. Floyd, at the head of a strong Confederate force, advanced into Western Virginia and took position near Carnifex' Ferry on Gauley river, and here, on the 10th of the month, after sharp skirmishing in the vicinity of Summerville, the county seat of Nicholas, he was attacked by Gen. W. S. Rosecrans with a Federal force consisting principally of the Tenth, Eleventh and Twelfth Ohio infantry and Snyder's and McMullen's batteries. The Tenth Ohio led the advance, and the Confederates received the assault with spirit and poured a deadly fire into the ranks of their assailants. Darkness put an end to the action and both armies rested upon the field. But before day-dawn the Confederates were gone and the most important battle in Virginia, west of the mountains, was ended. The Federal loss was 225 killed and wounded, among the latter

being Col. Lowe, a gallant and meritorious officer commanding the Twelfth Ohio.

After an occupation of more than a year the Federals were for a time forced to abandon the valley and what is known as Lightburn's retreat will ever be a prominent event in its history. In the spring of 1862 General Cox marched eastward from Charleston and occupied a position at Flat Top Mountain; thence, in August, he moved to join General Shields in the Shenandoah valley, leaving General J. A. J. Lightburn in command of the Kanawha valley district with headquarters at Gauley Bridge, in Fayette county. His most eastern outpost was Fayetteville, occupied by the Thirty-seventh Ohio infantry, in command of Colonel Sibert. The entire Federal force in the valley numbered about 3,500 men, and consisted of the Fourth West Virginia infantry, Lieut.-Colonel Russell commanding; Ninth West Virginia infantry, Colonel Skinner in command; Second West Virginia cavalry, Colonel (afterward General) Powell; Thirty-fourth Ohio, known as the Piatt Zouaves, Colonel Toland; Forty-seventh Ohio, Colonel Parry, and Dr. Lille's battery of light artillery.

About the first of September, General Loring advanced toward the valley at the head of the largest Confederate force ever sent into this region. On the morning of the 9th of that month an attack was made on the Federal position at Fayetteville and Colonel Sibert hastily retreated. His force was closely pursued and he was compelled to make a stand at Cotton Hill, but it was an abortive effort, and after a slight engagement he continued the retreat and joined General Lightburn at Gauley Bridge. From there the entire force fell back to Camp Piatt, when at noon on the 11th a stand was made but the Confederates came on in force and at daybreak on the morning of the 12th, the Federal advance reached Charleston, where, in the next twenty-four hours, the entire army of occupation was concentrated. Early on the morning of the 13th, the Confederates appeared in large numbers on Cox's hill and on the opposite side of the Kanawha. A council of war determined that the safety of the Federal army could only be found in a precipitate retreat toward the Ohio. Accordingly, the government stores which could not be removed were fired and the retreating columns, with a train of more than 1,100 wagons and stores valued at more than a $1,000,000, crossed Elk river under fire and burned the bridge behind them.

An artillery duel was kept up until noon when the firing ceased, the Federals having withdrawn on the march toward the Ohio. It was feared that the Confederate cavalry on the south side of the river would pass the stream, and cut off the retreat toward Point Pleasant, so when two miles below Charleston, the

columns turned to the north on the Charleston and Ravenswood Pike, and in three days the army with its train was safe on the banks of the Ohio. Transports conveyed the regiments from Ravenswood to Point Pleasant, while the train passed the river at Portland, and thence overland by way of Chester and Pomeroy, reached the same place. At Point Pleasant the army was augumented by the addition of Milroy's brigade, from Washinton City. Gen. Cox, with his brigade, hastened from the Shenandoah valley by way of Harper's Ferry, to Point Pleasant, whence with the army, now increased to 12,00 men, he began the march up the Kanawha, but before reaching Charleston, the Confederate army, the command of which in the meantine had been transferred to Gen. John Echols, abandoned the valley, and thus ended its last actual occupation by it.

Early in the year 1863, a report became current within the Confederate lines that a vast quantity of government stores were deposited at Pt. Pleasant, and that a large number of horses were corralled at the same place. Gen. Jenkins, then commanding a brigade of cavalry, stationed at Dublin Depot, on the Virginia and Tennessee railroad, conceived the idea of making a raid over the mountains and down the Kanawha for the purpose of capturing these stores. Accordingly, about the 20th of March, in the above year, a detachment numbering about 800 men, and consisting of portions of the Eighth and Sixteenth Virginia cavalry, commanded by General Jenkins in person, and Dr. Charles Timms, of Putnam county, as surgeon, began the long ride of 200 miles over mountains and in the most inclement season of theyear. On the 27th of March, the column reached Hurricane Bridge, in Putnam county, where was stationed a Federal force consisting of Companies A, Capt. Johnson; B, Capt. Milton Stewart; D, Capt. Simon Williams, of the Thirteenth West Virginia Infantry, and G of the Eleventh West Virginia. Early on the morning of the 28th, Maj. James Nowning, of the Confederate force, under a flag of truce, reached the headquarters of Capt. Stewart, the senior Federal officer, and demanded an unconditional surrender. With these terms Capt. Stewart refused to comply and Maj. Nowning departed with the statement that an attack would be made in thirty minutes. At the expiration of the time the firing began. It was returned with vigor and for five hours the rapid discharge of muskets — the only arms in possession of either side — rang out on the still morning air. Then the Confederates withdrew and continued the march toward their objective point — the mouth of the Kanawha. The Federals lost several killed and wounded, among the former being Ultmas Young and Jesse Hart, both of Mason county.

On the morning of the 29th, the day after the engagement at Hurricane Bridge, the Confederates reached Hall's Landing on

the Kanawha. Just as the steamer "Victress," Capt. Fred. Ford, of Gallipolis, Ohio, in command, and having on board United States Paymaster B. R. Cohen, in whose possession was a large amount of government funds, was descending the river. When nearly opposite the landing she was hailed from the bank by an individual, apparently alone, the command being concealed from view. The pilot recognized the signal and turned the boat toward the shore; when nearing the bank she was met by a storm of bullets. Capt. Ford at once realized the situation and ordered the steamer to be backed. She was hastily gotten into mid-stream but not until she was riddled with bullets. From her appearance it would have seemed that not one on board could have escaped alive, and yet strange to say not one was hurt. She continued on her voyage and upon arriving at Point Pleasant, her officers notified Capt. Carter commanding at that place, of the presence of the Conferates in the valley, but he heeded not the warning, and permitted himself to be completely surprised the next day.

From Hall's Landing the Confederates continued the march to Point Pleasant, where the advance arrived about 11 o'clock March 30th. At the time Capt. John D. Carter commanding Company E, of the Thirteenth West Virginia infantry, the only Federals in the town, was encamped between Main and Viand streets, two squares above the court house, and when the firing (the first intimation of the presence of the Confederates) began, refuge was speedily found in that building. Here they were closely besieged for four hours, during which time a desultory fire was kept up on both sides.

Citizens of the town fled to Gallipolis and spread news of the attack; from there re-enforcements arrived on the opposite side of the Ohio, bringing a battery of artillery. Preparations were at once made to bombard the town, it being believed on that side of the river that the Confederates, instead of the Federals, occupied the court house, but the false impression was corrected in time to save the town. The Confederates, disappointed in not finding the expected stores in quest of which they had ridden 200 miles, and despairing of being able to dislodge the Federals, withdrew, crossed the Kanawha, and that night encamped on the headwaters of the Ohio Eighteen, in the southern part of Mason county, and the next morning took up the line of march for Tazewell county, Va. The Federal loss was one killed and one wounded, viz.: D. Pritchett, of the Fourth West Virginia infantry, was shot and fell dead in the court house; Lieut. Hawkins, of Capt. Carter's company, was shot through the lungs, but afterward recovered. The Confederates had three killed and five wounded; among the former was Albert Neale, and among the latter, Edward Guthrie, both of Mason county.

While the engagement was in progress, one of the most execrable acts of the war occurred. This was the killing of the venerable Col. Andrew Waggener, then in the eighty-fourth year of his age, by a Confederate soldier. The colonel, having heard the firing, and not knowing the cause, was riding toward town on the Crooked Creek road, and carrying a heavy cane as was his custom, when he was met by a soldier who halted him and demanded his horse. He refused to give it up, the soldier then attempted to take hold of the reins and the colonel struck at him with the cane. The soldier then fired, and the aged veteran fell from his horse. Thus, he, who a half a century before, had passed unharmed through storms of shot and shell, at last fell and died on a battlefield, and in an action in which he was not engaged. Col. Waggener had served throughout the second war with Great Britain, and had won distinction at Craney's Island. His father was major in Washington's army during the Revolution, and he and a brother were at Braddock's defeat, where the latter was killed.

On the morning of the 1st of February, 1863, Capt. Charles Regnier, commanding the government steamer, "B. C. Levi," then lying at Gallipolis, received a dispatch commanding him to hold the boat in readiness to convey Gen. Scammon and staff to Charleston. The boat steamed up to Point Pleasant, there to await the arrival of that officer, who was descending the Ohio. By 3 o'clock P. M., of the 2nd, all were aboard, and the voyage up the Kanawha was begun. That night at 1 o'clock A. M., the steamer reached Red House Shoals, and it was found that she could not run the chute until daylight and her captain lashed her to the bank on the Red House side of the river, to await the coming of daylight. Gen. Scammon informed Capt. Regnier that the scouts had reported the absence of an enemy for many miles around, and he therefore deemed it unnecessary to place guards on duty. But while resting in their supposed security, a band of about twenty-eight Confederates, under command of Maj. Nowning, quietly boarded the boat, under cover of darkness, and made prisoners of the general and staff, and thirteen Federal soldiers, who were returning to Charleston to rejoin their regiments, and the entire boat's crew. Possession was also taken of a few boxes of hospital supplies, which was all the merchandise on board the boat. The steamer, at daylight, was run across the river to Winfield, where a few Confederate soldiers were taken on board, and then she was steered four miles down the river, to Vintroux Landing. Here she was lashed to the bank and all but Gen. Scammon and staff given five minutes to leave the decks. These five minutes were improved by the crew and at the expiration of the time the torch was applied and the steamer burned to the water's edge. Gen. Scammon and staff

were then mounted on bareback horses and mules — the general on one of the latter — and the cavalcade took up the line of march toward Richmond. The soldiers who were on board were paroled, and finally found their way to Charleston, and the boat's crew proceeded on foot from the scene of the burning to Buffalo, five miles below, where they awaited the arrival of a steamer from Gallipolis, to convey them to that place. Capt. Regnier reported the proceeding to the government authorities and was exonerated from all blame in the matter. Soon after his arrival at Gallipolis, he repaired to Mobile, Ala., and entered the naval service, in which he continued until the close of the war.

In the autumn of 1864, the Federal Gen. John H. Oley, then in command of the Kanawha valley department, sent Capt. John M. Reynolds with Company D of the Seventh West Virginia cavalry, to occupy Winfield for the purpose of protecting the transportation on the Kanawha. When this force reached its destination, it at once began the construction of a rifle pit around the encampment, which included the present site of the flouring mills at that place. Traces of the ditches then dug around the embankments may yet be seen. Late in October Col. John Witcher with detachments of several Confederate regiments occupied the region drained by Mud river, and while there learned of the presence of the Federal troops at Winfield. Col. Witcher at once resolved to attack them, and selecting a force of about 400 men, placed himself at their head, with Col. Thurman second in command. The ride through Teays valley by way of Hurricane Bridge brought them to Winfield about 9 o'clock in the evening, and an hour later an attack on the Federal position began. Col. Witcher with half his force proceeded up the river bank from the lower end of the town, while Col. Thurman at the head of the other column reached the Federal position by proceeding down a small stream known as Ferry branch, which enters into the Kanawha at the upper end of the town. His company was first to reach the position and first to bring on the engagement. He ordered a charge, leading it in person, and just as the head of the column reached the corner of Ferry and Front streets, it received the first fire and Col. Thurman fell mortally wounded. He was carried to the rear where he soon after expired. The firing now became general and continued for an hour, several being killed and wounded on both sides. Then the Confederates, having secured a number of horses, withdrew, and fell back to Mud River Bridge, leaving the Federals in possession of the town. This put an end to the active military operations in the immediate valley.

One of the most important military events in which valley men participated, was what is known as the Dublin raid, and the battle of Cloyd Mountain. The regiments engaged on both sides

contained many men from the valley counties. Early in the spring of 1864, Gen. George Crook assumed command of the valley department, and at once began the concentration of a strong force at Fayetteville. It was composed of the Twelfth, Thirty-fourth, Thirty-sixth and Ninety-first Ohio infantry, Mulligan's battery of the First Ohio artillery, the Third West Virginia cavalry and the Ninth, Tenth, Fourteenth and Fifteenth West Virginia infantry, and Battery B, First West Virginia light artillery. May 2nd, the line of march through the mountains to Dublin Depot, in Pulaski county, Va., began. The roads were in bad condition, and the army made but slow progress. On the 4th it encamped at Loup creek, in Fayette county, on the 5th at Mercer, in Mercer county, on the 6th at Princeton, in the same county, on the 7th near Rocky Gap, in Bland county, Va., and on the 8th at Shannon, in Giles county. On the morning of the 9th, on the slopes of Cloyd mountain, it encountered a Confederate force consisting of Eighth, Sixteenth and Seventeenth Virginia cavalry, and the Thirty-sixth, Forty-fifth and Sixtieth Virginia infantry, together with Bryan's battery and detached portions of other organizations, the whole under the command of Gens. Jenkins and John McCausland.

The sound of battle at once rang out upon the morning air, and died away in prolonged echoes among the Alleghenies. There was terrible slaughter. Four hundred Confederates and 600 Federals were either killed or wounded. But it was a victory for the Federal arms, and the confederates retreated, leaving Gen. Jenkins wounded upon the field. He was carried to the house of David Cloyd, where a Federal surgeon amputated his arm at the shoulder, but he was unable to withstand the shock, and died from its effect.

In the military history of the Kanawha valley, there is but little to be gleaned from official sources. By far, the greatest portion of the active operations were conducted by detached portions of the contending armies, and of such, there appears nothing relative thereto of an official character. For this reason, the report of Gen. Wise, relative to the battle of Scary Creek can not fail to be of interest. We give it complete, with the exception of one slight omission.

"CAMP AT TWO MILE, VA.,
"Thursday, July 18, 1861.

"Since mine of yesterday, I have the proud satisfaction to report to you a glorious repulse of the enemy, if not a decided victory. Col. Norton, of the Twentieth Ohio infantry, yesterday approached the mouth of Coal with about 1,200 men, expecting, as he says, to be supported by two regiments, making in all about 3,000. I had ordered Col. Patton to retire gradually from Scary creek, below Coal, to Coal mountain and the passes across Coal

river, concentrating his forces finally at Bunker Hill on Upton creek, on the left bank of the Kanawha. But when Norton approached, he returned to Scary creek, and met him and his 1,200 there with about 800 men and two iron sixes. Norton had one heavy piece of artillery, and the battle across the creek ravine commenced about 4 P. M. It was soon shown the enemy had better guns, both ordnance and small arms, but our men stood steadily and firmly fighting for about half an hour, when a panic seized three-fourths of them; portions of each company fled. At this moment Col. Patton dashed on horseback to rally his men, when his horse, for a short distance, became unruly and caused them to mistake his movement; but he rallied a portion of them, returned instantly to action and in fifteen minutes received a bullet in his left shoulder, which took him off the field. Jenkins, Bailey, Swan and Sweeney stood their ground, as also Col. F. Anderson, with two companies posted so far on the left that they, up to this time, had not come into action. The most of the men who had fled, again rallied, and were fighting bravely when the enemy's superior piece of artillery disabled one of our sixes, killing Lieut. Welch and mortally wounding a private. * * * Capt. Jenkins bravely took the command for the moment, until Col. Anderson came up from the left and rallied a forlorn hope, in which he and Bailey, Swan and Sweeney, bore the whole brunt of the enemy for some time, until they were re-enforced by Capt. Corns from the post on Coal mountain and by the rerally of those who had fled. This won the day, drove back the whole force of the enemy, captured Cols. Norton, Woodruff (Second Kentucky infantry), De Villiers (Eleventh Ohio infantry), Lieut.-Col. Neff, Capts. Austin and Ward, and some ten or twenty privates, and killing about thirty. Our loss was one killed and two wounded—but one mortally.

"HENRY A. WISE,
"General, Commanding."

Various statements have appeared relative to the number of men under General Wise during his occupancy of the valley, and in all or nearly all the numbers is doubtless greatly exaggerated. His own statement must be taken, and from his report made July 8th, 1861—nine days before the engagement at Scary, we have the following:

Troops.	Number.
General and staff	12
First and Second Kanawha regiments	1,483
Kanawha Battalion	459
Independent companies (7)	535
Mounted Rangers (three companies)	216
Total	2,705

Thus it is seen that while his force has been estimated at from 5,000 to 7,000, it was less than 3,000.

We are unable to give the exact number of men from the four valley counties, who entered the respective armies, but a careful estimate places it at 1,700. The greater number from the lower portion of the valley entered the Federal army, while from the upper, the majority went to fill the ranks of the Confederate regiments, so that taken as a whole, the enlistments were pretty equally divided. How well these men discharged their duty as soldiers, the decimated ranks, at the close of the war, show. That valley men died or felt the piercing sting of gaping wounds on many fields is evidenced by records before us. We have not space to mention in detail the many organizations, but the following lists of casualties of two companies may be taken for all, for they alike shared the perils and hardships of war.

Company A, Thirty-sixth Virginia Confederate infantry, was enlisted at Buffalo, Putnam county. It entered service in May, 1861, and disbanded at Christiansburg, Va., April 12, 1865, three days after the surrender at Appomattox. Among its casualties were: Capt. William E. Fife, severely wounded at Kernstown; B. B. Sterret and Columbus McCoy, wounded at first battle of Winchester; W. H. Peck, lost an arm in action, at Peidmont; R. E. Bryan, hand shattered in action at Fayetteville; Casey D. Eskew and Robert Washington, taken prisoners and both died in confinement at Fort Delaware; Charles Bronough, John D. Wyatt and Adison Newman died in camp in the early part of the war; William Henson and T. H. Harvey, wounded in action at Fort Donalson; B. L. Hill, died of disease on New River; William Meeks was killed by a citizen, in Buffalo, while on a visit home; William Morgan and W. G. George, were killed in the battle of Fayettesville; I. V. Newman and S. E. Staten, wounded in action at Cloyd's Mountain; John Farrow, killed in battle at Leetown, Va. In addition a number were captured and served long terms of imprisonment.

Company C, Fourth West Virginia Federal infantry, enlisted in 1861, and were discharged at the close of the war. Among its casualties were: Jacob VanMatre, wounded in action at Vicksburg; John Curtis, wounded at Vicksburg; Jacob C. Lewberry, killed in action at Beech Creek, Va.; Patrick Conley, died at Young's Point, La.; James C. Neal, killed in action at Vicksburg; Michael Faughner, killed in action at Vicksburg; Nicholas Porter, died of wounds received at Vicksburg; John McAllister, killed in action at Vicksburg; Swinefield Hill, died at Walnut Hills, Miss.; Joseph Quinn, killed in action at Vicksburg; Thomas McManns, drowned in Ohio river, near Burlington; Amos Workman, died of disease at Camp Sherman, Miss.; James Workman, died in hospital at St. Louis; Henry

Conway, wounded at Vicksburg; Joseph Ryan, wounded at Missionary Ridge, Tenn.

So read the long death rolls and records of battle-scarred veterans of the Kanawha valley. Some wore the blue, some wore the grey, but the dead and the living died and suffered alike for what they believed to be right. They were soldiers in the full meaning of the term, and were descended from a pioneer ancestry of whom it was said: "They are farmers to-day, statesmen to-morrow, and soldiers always," and the performances of the Valley men in the late war lend honor to their ancestral heritage, and maintain the reputation of the soldiery of the Great Kanawha valley. With the return of peace these men came home, laid by the military trappings, donned the citizen's garb, and united in an effort to secure the intellectual and industrial development of their beautiful valley. How well they have succeeded in the former let the chapter on the educational history of the Kanawha valley answer, and for an answer to the latter behold the busy hum of industry in which is employed a population, increased from 37,621, in 1860, to 99,858, in 1890.

CHAPTER XIX.

BY CHARLES E. HOGG.

BENCH AND BAR — EARLY STRUGGLES OF THE PROFESSION — FIRST COURTS IN THE KANAWHA VALLEY — METHODS OF ADMINISTRATION — OLD TIME COUNTY COURTS — PIONEER PRACTITIONERS — THE WAR PERIOD — EFFECTS OF THE FAMOUS LAWYER'S TEST OATH — HARDSHIPS OF THE SAME — SKETCHES OF EMINENT JUDGES — BRIGHT MINDS OF THE KANAWHA BAR — BRILLIANT ADVOCATES AND SHREWD SPECIAL PLEADERS — ANECDOTES OF THE PROFESSION — MR. FISHER'S WIT AND REPARTEE — REVIEW OF NOTED LAW CASES — INCREASE OF LITIGATION AND CHANGES IN MODES OF PRACTICE.

IN THE territory properly embracing the valley of the Great Kanawha river, have lived and died some eminent judges and lawyers, of whom very little is known or remembered, unless it be by their immediate descendants or close personal friends, and the very memory of some of these able jurists is giving way to dark oblivion and in a few years all trace of their useful lives will have disappeared, and their noble characters as examples to their fellow men lost, should effort to render an account of their labors, doings and utterances in life, be much longer deferred. The professional and judicial careers of these men afford abundant material for volumes of instructive and interesting matter, not only to the lawyer, but to other readers as well. But in view of the scope of the work for which this contribution is designed, want of sufficient space prevents our going as fully into the consideration of the subject matter as the deep concern we feel in this behalf, constrains us to do.

It is not our purpose in this sketch to go into biographic detail, as this more properly belongs to another part of this work, the object of this branch of the history being intended to present to the reader a concise account of the judicial and professional labors of the members of the bench and bar, together with some of their chief personal characteristics and peculiarities as individuals and lawyers, leaving all other things relating to their lives to be treated of by the author of that portion of the work devoted to biography only.

A little more than a century has elapsed since the first courts were organized in the Kanawha valley, the earliest ones being established in Charleston in the year 1789. Prior to this liti-

gants living on the shores of the "river of the woods," as the Indian name of Kanawha signifies, were required to traverse an almost trackless wilderness, to reach the seat of justice, the nearest being situated in Greenbrier county, about 160 miles from the western border of the valley of the great Kanawha, and in Christiansburg, in Montgomery county, distant from the Ohio river about 200 miles.

The territorial jurisdiction of these first courts of our fertile and busy valley can scarcely be appreciated by our lawyers and litigants of to-day, who enjoy the means of rapid transit by rail and commodious steamer in compact judicial circuits; and the bare statement of the scope of country over which the pure and uncorrupted streams of even-handed justice flowed from these early courts as their fountain, carries with it not only surprise but is almost staggering to the credulity of our modern practitioners at the bar, of whom so many take delight in the pursuit of a life of "inglorious ease."

The people residing in the territory embraced in the counties of Kanawha, Putnam, Mason, Cabell, Wayne, Lincoln, parts of Logan, Boone, Fayette, Jackson, Roane, Gilmer and Calhoun, resorted thither to attend court, not only in matters of litigation involved in actions at law and suits in equity, but in police and fiscal business also. The citizens scattered along the extreme southwestern boundary of our state desiring even the location and establishment of a public road, could not promote their desires without making a trip to the county seat on the northern banks of the Kanawha where the rude court house, constructed of rough boards and roofed with the same material was located.

From this place the sheriff sallied forth to collect the taxes, and from this point eminated all judicial process, and to execute it in the remote parts of the courts' jurisdiction frequently required days of hard riding and sometimes diligent search.

The grand and petit jurors serving in the pioneer courts of the valley, frequently traveled nearly 100 miles in going to the county seat and as many miles in returning, nearly always making the journey on horseback, requiring nearly a week to make the trip exclusive of the days of jury service. These hardships and inconveniences, incident to the wide-extended territory of the courts' jurisdiction, continued until the other counties in the valley of the Great Kanawha were formed; the first being Mason in the year 1804; the next, Fayette, in 1831, and the last, Putnam, in the year 1848.

The court of original general jurisdiction was called the circuit superior court of law and chancery, and corresponded to our circuit court of to-day in the extent of its powers, the only difference being in name. The judge who sat in the former was clothed with authority to hear and determine causes in law and

equity, just as our present circuit judges do. The county courts, composed of the justices of the peace in the county, had jurisdiction of all police and fiscal affairs, just as our county courts now have, and in addition thereto they had concurrent original jurisdiction with the circuit superior courts of law and chancery in all misdemeanors, as well as in all other cases at law and in equity, excepting felonies.

These county courts had the power to probate wills, grant letters of administration upon the estates of decedents, appoint and qualify fiduciaries and settle their accounts as our county court now does.

Under our system of judicature, as at first organized, no one could be held to answer a charge of felony in the circuit court, until he was first examined in the county court, and if upon examination the court was of opinion that there was probable cause for holding the accused to answer an indictment for the offense charged, he was sent on to the circuit court to await the action of its grand jury; but if of a contrary opinion the prisoner was released, and such discharge operated an entire acquittal, and the action of the county court could be pleaded in bar of any further proceedings against him for the same offense. This feature of our then judicial system was a useless and extravagant burden upon the administration of criminal law, as the finding of the county court frequently encountered the opposition of an impartial grand jury, and they often refused to indict the accused.

But we must not omit to notice our justices of the peace. These, then as now, were necessary evils in our community. Their advice was as much coveted then as now, on "matters great and small." They dispensed justice at the very doors of their neighbors, then as now. They were the creatures of the governor's good will and pleasure, and by and through him, held their commission. The justices, sitting in solemn array, held our county courts, one of their body acting as president through whom the court's opinions were usually delivered. In the vacation of their county courts the justices had jurisdiction of certain petty cases within a limited amount as well also, as of certain minor offenses, involving light punishment.

The practice long obtained with us of appointing the justice oldest in magisterial service to the office of sheriff of the county, ostensibly as a reward for his labors and sacrifices made while acting in a judicial capacity, but if the writer may venture an opinion, he would say that this was a mere resort of the appointing power, to avoid that delicacy which one always feels in discriminating among numerous aspirants for official favor. No doubt, this was the true reason, appreciated at the time, but not made patent.

This system of judicature, which we have just noticed, was not peculiar to the Kanawha valley. It was the system of the whole state of Virginia. Far be it from us to carp at this judicial structure reared by the chief builders of this great republic, and within whose broad apartments was administered the common law of England tempered by that liberal spirit which conceived and established our free institutions.

The supreme court of appeals never held a session in our valley until after the organization of the new state of West Virginia, and it, for the first time, met at the city of Charleston, in the county of Kanawha, in the year 1871, with the following judges present: Honorables Edwin Maxwell, Ralph L. Berkshire and Charles P. T. Moore. Since this there has always been a session of this court held every year at Charleston. Here it holds its largest sittings, and disposes of the largest number of cases. This is in part owing to the fact that the state law library is kept at Charleston, in our valley, which is now quite large, and the number of its volumes is being annually increased. Our attorneys are well situated at this day as to facilities for practice, because of their near proximity to the supreme court and the state library, a convenience unknown to our older lawyers.

When West Virginia, the child of the storm, adopted her constitution she retained the circuit superior court of law and chancery under the more simple name of the circuit court, and substituted in lieu of the county court, the board of supervisors, not vesting it, however, with judicial functions so far as pertained to the trial of causes, this power being conferred solely upon the circuit court. Afterward the old county court was restored by the constitution of 1872, as it had existed under the laws of Virginia, and it thus remained until the amendment of our present constitution in the year 1883, when its powers were modified by a transfer of its jurisdiction to try causes to the circuit court, and a substitution of these commissioners in lieu of the justices of the peace. And so our courts as now organized are not very different from what they were when our ancestors first established them in the beautiful valley to which this history relates.

The members of the Kanawha valley bar have always ranked among the ablest of our state, not only because of a depth of legal learning by which they have so long been characterized, but also for their brilliant powers of oratory as advocates. They have always been bold and diligent searchers after truth in the in the profession of the law, and many are the principals laid down by the courts in cases taken to the general and supreme appellate tribunals from our valley. The early practitioners at our bar encountered many difficulties and were confronted with great embarrassment because of the paucity of text-books and reports of adjudicated cases to serve as guides in the conduct of suits be-

fore courts and juries. In most instances they had to rely upon English text-books and reports. For several years after the organization of our first courts in the valley it was unusual to cite anything in support of legal propositions in the forum except English authorities.

In illustration of the truth of this we here make mention of the case of the Commonwealth vs. John Dandridge, decided as late as 1824, and reported in two Virginia cases, and in the decision of which Judge Lewis Summers of our valley participated as one of the judges who sat in the cause. The opinion runs through thirty-three pages of the printed report, and abounds with learning and research, and contains a citation of forty-seven authorities, of which all are English but four. Judge Summers, in his opinion in the case of the Commonwealth vs. Andrew Campbell, decided in 1822, reported in two Virginia cases, cited but one American decision, all the rest being English.

The active practitioner then did not think of going the rounds of the circuit unaccompanied by that luminous treatise that is put into the hands of all beginners in the study of law—Blackstone's Commentaries. In fact, without this author, he felt that in the court room he was lost. He was entirely without the great works of Parson, Story, Greenleaf, Washburn, Bouvier, Lomax, Tucker and a host of other able writers to whose labors and thought embodied in the form of systematic treatises we now have daily access.

In the great disputes over equity causes the master spirits he consulted were Maddox and Daniels, and when personal dominion as to real estate was in issue, and every nerve was strained to preserve the home of his client, his first and last appeal was to Cruise's Digest of Real Property. He laid the foundation of his knowledge of the profession in Coke's Littleton, whose author was revered because of his devotion to the common law, and who is said to have remarked that if he were asked the common law on any given question, he would be ashamed to look into a book before answering it, but if the question related to the statute law, he would be ashamed to answer without first examining the statute itself.

Our early lawyers here were called upon to practice the common law almost in its purity, as transplanted from the shores of the mother country, and to become able and useful in its practical administration, they sought for its principles at the fountain heads of legal lore.

Indeed, a lawyer's library in the valley then was not complete without Fitzherbert's Natura Brevium, an ancient and useful treatise upon the forms of writs at the common law.

Both general and special demurrers were then in use, the latter being used only as to the form of pleading, and though the

attorney should state substantially a good cause of action, if it were defective in form, he was sure to be met with a special demurrer, and either submit to the delays of an amendment, or a dismission of his suit. The form book was always on his shelf.

The practitioner of to-day has but little use for the form books if he has an adequate conception of his case, as nothing but matters of substance will be regarded by the courts in the frame of a declaration or statement of the plaintiff's cause of action. Then the lawyer was very particular as to how he concluded a special plea, which must always be in writing, for if he concluded wrong, his plea was fatal, regardless of any good defense which it might contain. Now no conclusion is necessary at all, and should he conclude wrong, the conclusion would be treated as surplusage, and the plea still be good. How easy are the burdens of the lawyers in the valley to-day, compared with those who stood in the halls of justice in its early history, and battled for human rights and human liberty!

Our pioneers here in the broad field of law were hard workers. They illustrated the truth of the saying of an eminent jurist when once asked what one should do to become a profound lawyer, and whose answer was that he should work like a slave and lead the life of a hermit. It may here be observed that the early attorneys in the valley were thoughtful and diligent students of English history, as the surest means of acquainting themselves with the philosophy of the law they were called upon to administer so extensively. They traced the law to its sources among the people who gave it birth. They were almost as familiar with the name and times of Alfred, as displayed in the historic truth, as they were with the name and achievements of Washington. But they did not stop here. They searched for the hidden reason of the common law in its own peculiar history, and the eye did not dim nor the interest languish, as these students pored over its pages under the faint light of a midnight taper. Of how many of our lawyers can this be said to-day?

But our old attorneys, those who were active in the early history of our courts in the valley, were not only diligent, they were systematic students. And so far as the writer has been able to observe they pursued their studies even late in life, and after the infirmity of age retired them from active practice they did not lose their interest in the perusal of law books and those of a kindred nature, so well had their habits of thought been directed during the years of a more vigorous life.

The first time, so far as the record discloses, in which our valley made its appearance at the bar of the general court, was in the year 1820, the cause having been adjourned from the superior court of Kanawha county, the decision of which is found in volume two of the Virginia Cases.

This court was organized in 1777, and consisted of five judges, and its jurisdiction was then general over all persons, and in causes, matters or things at common law, whether brought before them by original process or by appeal; but in 1788 district courts were organized and judges assigned to them, and of these judges three could hold a general court. In 1809 the district courts were abolished and the circuit or superior courts of law in each county were substituted in their stead. The circuit judges now held the general court, and in 1820, when it decided the first case from our valley it was composed of fifteen judges.

The first case ever carried to the supreme court of appeals from the Kanawha valley was that of Bream vs. Cooper's heirs, from Mason county, reported in volume five of Munford's Reports. This was in the year 1815 and twenty-six years after the organization of the first courts as established in our section. It may not be inappropriate to here remark that the justly celebrated William Wit appeared in the appellate court in this cause for the appellees, and the decision of the court below was also affirmed. To the practitioner of our valley to-day this will appear remarkable in contrast with the number of appeals taken from the circuit courts in our time. There are more cases reviewed now from our section in one year by the court of last resort than were passed on from the valley by the supreme court in all its history preceding the late war.

We are at a loss how to account for this unless upon these grounds: The care with which the attorneys engaged on either side prepared their cases, and the pains taken by them to avoid the errors incident to all trials, and the long distance of the court of appeals from the place of original jurisdiction; the many new and curious questions to which our rapid growth and marvelous progress and development have given rise, and the magnitude of business with which our circuit courts of to-day are burdened.

Our courts and lawyers in the valley in *ante bellum* days had comparatively little practical acquaintance with the law relating to corporations. Indeed, this observation may well be applied to the whole state of Virginia. When these organizations made their appearance in our valley the attorney found himself in an almost entirely new field which he felt called upon to explore, and at every step found himself confronted with legal problems which had not yet been solved by our courts. Hence, in nearly all these cases, he appealed to the court of *dernier* resort for its judgment. No degree of learning or ability, however high, could relieve from error both in *nisi prius* judge and lawyer, in a practice so new and untried as this. A Marshall or a Wirt would have become timid and doubtful. This may be well illustrated by the actual experience of this latter eminent jurist.

For many years he practiced law in the city of Richmond, and achieved a justly enviable reputation in his profession for profundity of knowledge and power of oratory. He afterward located in Norfolk so as to gain a better remuneration which the commerce of that city then offered to the talented lawyer. Now he found himself in a different character of legal occupation than that which he had left in Richmond—the labor and difficulties incident to commercial litigation; and he himself bears testimony to the fact that this change required of him almost the learning anew of his profession. When these reasons are carefully weighed we have no great occasion for surprise at an increased, and ever increasing, representation at the bar of the supreme court.

But the signal acquiescence of lawyers and suitors in our valley, in the judgments and opinions of our old-time judges, is a flattering assurance of their integrity and ability and is a part of our judicial history upon which we and our posterity may well be congratulated.

While this new class of litigation has thus found its way into our valley, another kind has almost disappeared which was a fruitful cause of disquietude to our citizens, and a source of lucrative practice to the attorneys. I refer to suits brought to settle land titles. These are now matters of rare occurrence. The laws enacted since the war have placed the muniments of these titles almost entirely beyond the pale of judicial controversy, and our people now deal in transactions of this character with little doubt or suspicion touching the validity of their purchases. Indeed, this is true of nearly all portions of our state. In former days we had in our valley several lawyers who were accounted fair specialists in the trial of causes involving the title to real estate, and varied and intricate were the questions arising in such contests. A "land-lawyer," as such, of the valley, is now a thing of the past. His occupation is gone.

During the late Civil war our valley was sorely distracted by the presence, much of the time, at different points, of hostile armies and bands of troops, by reason of which our citizens alternated between suspense and alarm, and this was a great hindrance to the calm and satisfactory administration of civil justice. Indeed, the military took possession of our court-houses more than once.

However, the few lawyers who remained at home in the practice reaped a rich harvest because of the enormity of the fees then demanded and cheerfully paid. Those of our citizens who had gone south because of their opinions were treated as non-residents and their property became the subject of attachment, and suits of this character were frequently instituted against

them by resident attorneys, and their property was thus, in a great measure, sacrificed.

When the war ceased many of our ablest lawyers were unable to re-enter upon the practice of their profession because of their inability to subscribe to what is known as the "test oath." This required the affiant to state that he had not voluntarily borne arms against the United States, or adhered to its enemies, giving them aid or comfort, or sympathized with the rebellion. Many of our attorneys, upon their return home, found themselves not only crushed in spirit and almost impoverished in means, but really stripped of an occupation upon which they relied to repair their shattered fortunes, brought about by the bitterness of a merciless civil war, and into which they were thrown by reason of circumstances over which they had no control.

The law referred to, was enacted by the legislature of our state in the year 1863, and applied to any person elected or appointed to any office of trust, civil or military, within the state, and the inferior courts held that the language of the statute embraced attorneys at law.

This construction obtained until Hons. Charles J. Faulkner of the county of Berkeley, and William A. Quarrier, of the county Kanawha, put the matter to supreme test. Mr. Quarrier applied to the supreme court of appeals in the month of January of the year 1866, upon being refused admission to the bar by the circuit court of his own county, to have the court's action reviewed upon his motion to qualify, and after full argument, the action of the court below was reversed, and Mr. Quarrier's motion sustained. Judge James H. Brown, of our valley, was then on our supreme court bench, and he it was, as president of the court, who rendered the decision. Mr. Quarrier had been identified with the cause of secession from its inception, but surrendered under Gen. Lee, with the army of Northern Virginia and took the oath of amnesty and pardon provided in the proclamation of President Johnson.

Until the decision in "ex-parte Quarrier" was rendered, it was contended by the supporters of this law that an attorney at law was an "officer," and as such, was embraced in its meaning and intendment, and the attorney general of the state so argued. But this position by a cause of reason and argument, at once convincing and unanswerable, was shown to be untenable.

The lawyers of our state, but none more so than those of our valley, debarred from the pursuit of their profession, because of their alleged disabilities, hailed these decisions, one of which was in behalf of a lawyer of their immediate section, as a harbinger of better things and despair gave way to hope, the sombre

veil of misfortune seemed lifted and they thought the dawn of brighter days, had actually appeared. But their joy was short lived. Their hopes were soon to be shattered and they were destined to be hidden beneath the pall of a deeper gloom than that from which they had so recently emerged.

On the 14th day of February, 1866 (a desecration of St. Valentine's day) our legislature passed what is known as the "Attorney's Test Oath." This provided that no one should be permitted to practice law who could not make oath that he had not voluntarily borne arms against the United States government or against the state of West Virginia, and that he had not given aid or comfort to persons engaged in armed hostility thereto by countenancing, counseling or encouraging them in the same; that he had not exercised or attempted to exercise the functions of any office whatever under any authority in hostility to the United States or the state of West Virginia.

This comprehensive statute now stood between nearly one-half of the lawyers of the Kanawha valley, at least the older and more experienced ones, and the pursuit of their calling.

Hon. Samuel A. Miller, then a resident lawyer of our valley, along with other attorneys of the state, applied to the supreme court, in session at Wheeling in the year 1867, to be permitted to qualify in the courts notwithstanding this statute, contesting in their application the constitutionality of this law.

But after an elaborate and most rigid argument the court delivered an opinion upholding the validity of this enactment of the legislature. So all our lawyers in the valley, as well as elsewhere in the state, who had been identified in any manner whatsoever with the cause of secession, were unable to do anything in the courts until the adoption of our new constitution in 1872. The hardships resultant upon these statutes led to the incorporation in our "Bill of Rights" of section 11, article 3, of our new constitution.

The Kanawha valley first appeared in the supreme court of appeals of the new state of West Virginia at the July term, 1865, in the case of Wyatt vs. Morris et al., reported in the second volume of the West Virginia reports. This was a motion to dismiss an appeal as improvidently awarded and the court overruled the motion without assigning a single reason for its judgment. This can no longer be done in our practice by virtue of a provision in our new constitution requiring the court to give the reason in writing for every opinion it delivers. Since the formation of the new state our section has been represented at nearly every term of our supreme court and varied and numerous are the doctrines that have been settled for our people in these appeal causes taken from this valley to the appellate court.

All of the four counties in our portion of the state have been

thus represented time and time and again; but of all of the important appeals thus carried to the court of last resort, we deem none comparable to that of Radford vs. Caswill, from the county of Fayette, reported in the thirteenth volume of the West Virginia reports. The opinion in this case was delivered by Judge Green, runs through 109 pages of the printed report and contains 267 citations of authorities and was concurred in by all the judges present when the decision was pronounced. It is now the leading case in our state upon the contract rights and obligations of a married woman. The second and third sections of our act of the legislature relating to married women, except the proviso contained in the last clause of section three, was taken from the New York code, and as we adopted their statute, we are presumed to have adopted the construction which the courts of that state placed upon it.

As we remember and understand the decisions of this state upon this statute, they hold that to charge the separate estate of a married woman with a debt it must have been not only contracted with reference to her separate property, but must have been for the benefit of such estate. Prior to this decision of Judge Green's our statute was so understood by the members of the bar and was so construed by our circuit judges. Under the law laid down by our supreme court in this case, "the debts of a married woman, for which her separate estate is liable, are such as arise out of any transaction, out of which a debt would have arisen if she were a *feme sole*" and it is immaterial whether her separate estate be benefited by such debt or not.

So, hitherto, the right to subject the *corpus* of a married woman's real estate to the satisfaction of her debts was not seriously called in question so far as the author has been able to ascertain. But this leading case, carried, as we have seen, from our valley, lays down the doctrine that the estate in fee of a married woman cannot be sold for debt except by mortgage or deed of trust executed after an examination taken privily and apart from her husband. And for a debt not thus secured, except it be for the purchase money for which a lien is reserved on the face of the deed, nothing can be subjected to its payment except her separate personality and the rents, issues and profits of her real estate during her coverture. This decision operated a radical change in her contract relations touching her separate estate.

The reasoning of the court in this case tends to show that the debt of a married woman, not secured by a specific charge upon her separate estate, cannot be enforced after the disability of her coverture terminates. The reasoning of the court as found in the cause of its opinion, tends also to establish the strange doctrine under our statute, that before a married

woman can make a valid will of her separate real estate it must be with the concurrence of her husband and after an examination of her privily, and apart from him, in the same manner prescribed in our statute for the sale or conveyance of her land.

While these last doctrines discovered in the court's opinion, are not expressly decided by this case to be the law of this state, yet it is sufficient to caution one in dealing with a married woman upon credit to take no obligation from her not secured by a specific lien upon her separate estate, unless she have sufficient personal property to discharge the debt, until our supreme court decides the doctrine to be otherwise; and also in preparing a will of a *feme covert* that it should only be executed in conjunction with her husband, under an observance of all the formalities attending the execution of a deed for the conveyance of her separate real estate.

So, when this case is considered in all its phases and bearings, there has been none decided of more importance to our people and to the profession at large than Radford vs. Caswill, arising in the litigation of the valley of the Great Kanawha.

Of the judges who sat regularly upon the supreme bench four reside in our valley. They are Honorables James H. Brown, Okey Johnson, Charles P. T. Moore and John W. English, the two former of whom are now in the active practice of their profession, and the latter resides on his farm in Mason county and is engaged extensively in agricultural pursuits, and Judge English is now on the supreme bench, having ten years yet to serve.

Judge Johnson studied law in Harvard university, taking the full course in the curriculum of that school, graduating from that great institution of learning in the month of July in the year 1858. Few lawyers practicing in our state have had such eminent instructors in their preparations for the bar as Judge Johnson. At the time he attended the law school of Harvard Theopolus Parsons, the author of Parsons on Contracts, Emory Washburn, the author of Washburn on the Law of Real Property, and Hon. Joel Parker, ex-chief justice of New Hampshire, were the professors there. Judge Johnson came to the bar well equipped for the discharge of the onerous duties of his profession. He was admitted to practice at the Suffolk bar (Boston) the same year in which he graduated, and in December of that year he was admitted to the Parkersburg bar, in Virginia, now West Virginia. He was actively engaged in the pursuit of his profession in Wood and adjoining counties until his promotion to the supreme bench, to which he was elected in the fall of 1876, by a majority of 17,000 votes over his competitor, the Hon. W. H. H. Flick, late U. S. district attorney for the district of West Virginia, and entered upon the term of his office January

the 1st, 1877, and served for the full period of twelve years. Of this time he served seven and one-half years as president of the court, having been elected twice by his associates to this important position, an honor that has never occurred with any other judge since the organization of our supreme court in this state. The judges who served with him at different times during his official term were: Green, Haymond, Moore, Patton, Snyder and Woods.

The opinions delivered by Judge Johnson in our supreme court, will number about 300, and are contained in our reports from volume ten to the thirty-first, inclusive, in all twenty-two volumes. The first opinion delivered by him is that in Lockhart and Ireland vs. Beckley, reported in volume ten of our reports, and relates to fraudulent conveyances, and is cited oftener than any other decision made by him, and its doctrines have been incorporated into our later text-books treating upon the subject to which this opinion relates. He lays down the rule in this case for determining fraud in these words: "Fraud is to be "legally inferred from the facts and circumstances of the case, "when these facts and circumstances are such as to lead a rea-"sonable man to the conclusion that the conveyance was made "with the intent to defraud creditors."

The rule for detecting the cunning devices of fraud as thus laid down was new, and is a safe principle to follow in practice. Judge Johnson also laid down another just doctrine touching the question of fraud, and this is, that when a conveyance is made to a woman who is married at the time, and such conveyance is assailed as fraudulent as to creditors of her husband, the burden rests upon her to show that it was purchased with means other than those of her husband. The principles governing cases of fraud have been construed more rigidly by the West Virginia court against the fraudulent grantor, than in most of the other states, and Judge Johnson had much to do in bringing about this action of the court. He decided many cases involving constitutional questions, and in every instance wherein his opinion has been reviewed, his judgmunt has been sustained. His opinion holding the provisions in our state constitution, protecting the property of returned Confederates from seizure under the "War Trespass" judgments, not in contravention of the constitution of the United States, was upheld by the supreme court of the United States, in the case of Ireland vs. Williams, reported in volume 131, of the U. S. reports. His decision in which he held that the legislature could not exempt any species of property from taxation unless it came within the exemption clause of that instrument, was also affirmed by the supreme court of the United States.

His decision, maintaining the court's power to punish for contempt any one assaulting a court through the columns of a news-

paper, has been cited and approved and favorably commented on by the supreme courts of the states of Ohio and Colorado, and is generally conceded to announce a sound doctrine of the law. Judge Johnson has rendered numerous decisions upon the following interesting and important subjects: eminent domain, wills, nuisances, municipal corporations, *stare decisis*, mandamus, criminal law, including some valuable opinions touching the doctrine of "self-defense." We should like to direct specific attention to some of the nice and intricate questions settled by Judge Johnson while on the supreme bench, but lack of space forbids.

As to text-books he thinks Cooley on Constitutional Limitations the greatest book ever written, and that Dillon on Municipal Corporations is a great work. Of our various state reports he prefers those of Massachusetts, Wisconsin, Michigan and the United States supreme court. He also holds the American Decisions in high estimate because of the very valuable notes of Judge Freeman, which they contain. He looks upon the national reporter system, conducted under the auspices of the West Publishing Co., as the most gigantic scheme ever devised for the benefit and convenience of the profession of law.

Judge Johnson, upon his retirement from the bench, at once entered upon a good practice and his business is daily increasing. He is retained in some of the most important cases now pending in our supreme court. His familiarity with reported cases is as great, if not greater, than that of any other lawyer in the state. In his knowledge of West Virginia cases he is quite at home.

The first lawyer elected to a superior judgeship from the valley of the Great Kanawha was Hon. James H. Brown, of Charleston. Judge Brown was born on his grandfather's farm, now the site of the city of Huntington, in the year 1818, and graduated from Augusta college, Kentucky, in the year 1840. Some of his classmates afterward became able jurists.

On his return home from school, Judge Brown devoted the fall and winter to the reading of history and general literature; particularly, Hume's, Smollett's, Bassett's and Weller's histories of England; Russell's Modern Europe; Gibbon's Rome; the history of Greece, of the American Revolution and of the United States; Marshall's Life of Washington; Cooper's Naval History; Plutarch's Lives; The Lives of the Signers of the Declaration of Independence, of Andrew Jackson and of Daniel Boone; Ecclesiastical history and the Bible. He had previously read Rollin's Ancient History and the most prominent of the Greek, Latin English, French and Italian poets. Thus his literary acquirements were such as to well fit him to enter upon the study of a profession and especially that of the law. He studied law in the office of John Laidley and was licensed to practice in the fall of 1842. He was a close student, had a good instructor and was

well read in his profession and was commended for his attainments by the learned judges, Fry, Thompson and Smith who examined and licensed him to practice.

Judge Brown argued his first case in court before Hon. Lewis Summers, of whom a sketch appears further on in this work. In the fall of 1848 he moved from Cabell county to the county of Kanawha, and located in Charleston, where he continued to pursue his vocation, extending his practice to the surrounding counties of Putnam, Mason, Jackson, Roane, Clay, Nicholas, Fayette, Raleigh, Greenbrier, Wyoming, Logan, Wayne, Boone, Cabell and Lincoln, the supreme courts of appeals of Virginia and West Virginia, the United States districts courts and the supreme court of the United States and in special cases, in the courts of Lawrence and Gallia counties in the state of Ohio.

In the year 1861, he was elected to succeed Judge David McComas on the circuit court bench, all the counties in the valley except Fayette being a part of the circuit. He met the emergency and held court in all the counties of his circuit, notwithstanding the pendency of the civil war and imminent peril to himself and the actual capture of the officers of courts of records at different times in every county of the circuit. The records were carried to Richmond and kept as evidence to be used against him if captured during the war by the Confederates.

At the election held under the first constitution of West Virginia, and the ordinance submitting it to the vote of the people, he was elected to the bench of the supreme court of appeals with Hons. William A. Harrison, of Harrison county, and Ralph L. Berkshire, of Mononghalia county as his associate judges. And after the death of Judge Harrison and the election of Hon. Edwin Maxwell, Judge Brown was chosen the president of the court.

The first opinion of our new supreme court of West Virginia, was delivered by Judge Brown, at the January term, 1864, in the case of Gorman vs. Steed, reported in volume one, of the West Virginia reports. This decision has since been cited, and approved by our supreme court, and among other matters which it decides, is that "the court of appeals has jurisdiction in cases of unlawful entry, and detainer where possession only is the cause of controversy; possession being such an element of title and boundary to land, as to come within the provision of the constitution, granting jurisdiction to the court."

West Virginia, then the youngest state in the Union, was first called upon through the supreme court to determine the question whether a state has a constitutional right to secede from the Union. It was settled in the negative, in the case of Hood et al vs. Maxwell, reported in volume one of the West Virginia reports, and the opinion settling this *questio vexata* was delivered by

Judge Brown of the Kanawha valley in January, 1866 — less than one year after the surrender of Gen. Lee. The logic of this decision is that the seceding states were never out of the Union, and is in accord with the attitude of Pres. Johnson toward them when called upon to discharge the grave duties and responsibilities of the presidency of the United States after the restoration of peace between the states.

Judge Brown's opinions appear in the first four volumes of our reports and extend through a period of six years, from January, 1864, to January, 1870, and he delivered more opinions than any other judge during his term of office. On the bench he was courteous, affable and kind, attentive to the argument of counsel, and firm and resolute to uphold the authority and dignity of the court. He is a staunch member of the Presbyterian church, illustrating the words of Sir William Blackstone, that the lawyer to become a Talbot, a Hyde, or a Hale, should be an upright and fervent Christian, and exploding, too, the common error that there cannot be a simultaneous practice of law and the precepts of our holy religion by one and the same person.

Of the text books of the profession, Judge Brown preferred Chitty and Story's Pleading, Starkie and Greenleaf's Evidence, Tucker and Kent's Commentaries and Robinson's Practice, and of the reports he preferred those of West Virginia, Virginia, Kentucky, Massachusetts, New York and Pennsylvania.

The second person elected to our supreme court from the valley of the Great Kanawha was Hon. C. P. T. Moore, of Mason county, being chosen to this office in the fall of 1872, and entering upon his official duties January the 1st, 1873. He was the regular nominee of the democratic party by acclamation, and so popular was he with the masses that the republicans declined to name any person to compete with him in the election, but nominated him also by acclamation — something entirely without a parallel in the whole history of our judiciary in the state. He was educated at Jefferson college in Pennsylvania, and Union college in New York, graduating from the latter institution in the year 1853. He studied law at the university of Virginia and graduated there in 1856, and in the same year he located at Point Pleasant, Virginia (now West Virginia) in the practice of his profession, and in the fall of that year he tried his first case before the late Hon. George W. Summers. It was the defense of a man charged with arson, and it was generally believed that he was guilty and would be convicted, and though the state was ably represented, young Moore conducted his client's cause with such consummate skill and ability, and his argument to the jury so clear and powerful and pathetic, that the prisoner was acquitted. His conduct of this, his first cause, was long a theme of conversation among those who witnessed the

trial, and he at once stepped into a fine practice. He has, on more than one occasion, remarked to the writer that he has never surpassed his maiden speech delivered in the defense of his first client. He seems to have acted in the belief that this first appearance on the criminal side of the court was the tide in his professional career, and happily he took it at the flood.

He afterward, at different times, formed partnerships with Nicholas Fitzhugh, James H. Couch and William H. Tomlinson, Esqs., his last partner having previously read law with him and with whom he remained until his promotion to the supreme bench. Judge Moore drew the long term of office, being for the full term of twelve years, and he remained a part of the court until his resignation, which was accepted in the year 1881. He delivered 107 opinions, and they are found in volumes five to eighteen inclusive of our reports. He was one of the most conscientious judges that ever graced the bench of our supreme court. Like Chief Justice Hale, one of the most illustrious of English jurists, he never entered upon the consideration of an important case without first invoking the aid of the Supreme Judge of all mankind, to assist him in coming to the proper and righteous decision. He preferred equity to law practice, for the reason, as assigned by himself, that in law cases he was frequently called upon to prosecute his client's interests against what conscience dictated. He regards Tucker's Commentaries, Davis's Criminal Law and Robinson's (Old) Practice as the great landmarks of Virginia law. He was very careful and painstaking in the preparation of his opinions, examining closely the text-books and reports, frequenty sitting up the whole night in prosecuting the work of his investigations. He believed in arguing causes to juries, and thinks the successful lawyer must never omit this important feature in the trial of his client's cases. In his practice he always demanded the attention of courts and juries, and in illustration of this the following anecdote is related of him: During an argument before a jury in some cause he made an abrupt pause, with his face turned toward the judge (one of the jurors dozing at the time), when the judge inquired the cause of his sudden stoppage, and in response Moore said, in a loud emphatic tone of voice: "There are eleven good and true men on this jury and a thing," pointing to the man who had now broken his doze, "and I would like to have twelve men to try my client's case." It is useless to observe that the stupid man indulged in no more light slumbers during the time he had sat upon the trial of that case. We must not omit to state that Judge Moore was elected to the supreme bench in 1870 under the old constitution, and took office in January, 1871, and hence was one of the supreme court when re-elected in 1872 under the new constitution.

The fourth and last attorney promoted to the supreme court

is Hon. John W. English, of Mason county, who was elected in the fall of 1888 and entered upon the duties of his office on the 1st day of January, 1889. He obtained a fine classical education before entering upon the study of the law, which gives signal advantages to the one thus equipped, over him who is less fortunate in this respect. Though collegiate training should be the aim of every young man who aspires to true success in the practice of law. He studied his profession with the late Hon. Henry J. Fisher, who was a member of the bar of our valley for sixty years, and one of the greatest, if not the greatest (*me judice*) lawyer in his day west of the Allegheny mountains. So Judge English's opportunities for fitting himself for the bar were as good as could be desired and he made good use of them. He was licensed to practice his profession in the year 185–, and entered at once upon the active practice of the law in the town of Pt. Pleasant, extending the labors of his profession to the adjoining counties of Jackson and Putnam and to the supreme court of appeals, his first appearance in this court being in the year 1873 in the case of Cross vs. Hopkins et al., reported in volume six of the West Virginia reports, and after that time he commanded no inconsiderable business in our supreme court. He held no office whatever until his election to the one he now fills. He was at all times wholly devoted to his profession, ever acting upon the adage that "the law is a jealous mistress."

He was, during his entire career at the bar, a cautious and laborious lawyer, loth to give hurried, off-hand opinions, did not do so in cases of any magnitude or importance. He was always a close and diligent student, and never neglected a case entrusted to his care. His preference was for the equity side of the court, and in this branch of the law he is quite in his element, though he had an extensive business on the law side as well. Of the text writers he prefers Blackstone's Commentaries, Kent's Commentaries, Pomeroy's Equity Jurisprudence, Robinson's (Old) Practice and Wharton's Criminal Law, and of the reports, West Virginia, Virginia, United States supreme court, Massachusetts and New York. His first opinion on the supreme bench was delivered in February, 1889, in the case of Coffman vs. Hedrick, found in volume thirty-two of the West Virginia reports. The decision in this case relates to the important subject of wills, and it is given in a sound and well considered opinion. Judge English has prepared a large number of opinions during his two years of service on the bench, many of which relate to important questions, to which we would like to direct the reader's attention, but the space allotted to us forbids.

We are informed that Judge English should be accredited with an earlier appearance in the supreme court than that shown in volume six of our reports, as he was of counsel for the

defendant in the case of Yamger vs. The State, reported in volume two of the reports and prepared a brief in the cause, but the reporter failed to note his connection with this important criminal case.

The history of our district and circuit courts, as we have seen, begins in the year 1789, and our information touching the life and character of our judges and lawyers prior to the year 1819, is very meager and unsatisfactory, so that we can give no full sketch of them — such as we gladly would do — were the proper data at our command.

In Mr. Atkinson's history of Kanawha county, the author quoting from the recollections of Joel Ruffner, an old citizen of our valley, we find this statement: "The first judge who presided in this circuit, whom I can remember, was Judge Coalter. At that time the counties were large. His circuit extended from Botetourt county to what is now Big Sandy river. The inhabitants of this country were generally unlettered, rough mountaineers, and came from a great distance to attend court as witnesses, jurors and suitors. Court days were important occasions, and were only excelled by general musters and camp meetings."

It may be well here to note that from the foundation of the commonwealth of Virginia, down to the year 1831, the administration of law and equity was wholly separate, except in the county and corporation courts. These two jurisdictions were committed to different judges. In 1802 three chancery districts were created, and Staunton was the seat of one of these for a territory extending west as far as the Ohio river, embracing, of course, the Kanawha valley, and the first chancellor under this re-organization of the court was John Brown, who served until 1814, and he was succeeded by Allan Taylor, by whom the office was held until the adoption of the new constitution, in 1831, when both jurisdictions were united in the judge of the circuit court. Upon the organization of Mason county it was made a part of the Kanawha district, and upon the abolition of the district courts it was placed in the Kanawha circuit, where it has since remained, without any change so far, as the writer is advised. Upon the organization of Fayette county its courts were made a part of the Harrison county circuit, and so remained until the year 1866, when it was made a part of the Kanawha circuit, and this arrangement continued until January 1, 1873, when Fayette was again joined to another circuit.

Hon. Lewis Summers became the judge of the Kanawha circuit, in 1819, and continued to hold this office until his death which occurred in the year 1843. Lewis Summers began the battle of life early, at least so far as matters of politics were concerned, taking part in the great contest in the year 1800, that

resulted in the promotion of Thomas Jefferson to the presidency of the United States. He moved to Gallipolis, in the state of Ohio, in 1808, and entered upon the practice of the law, for which he had previously thoroughly prepared himself. We must here remark, to show the high esteem in which he was held by the people of his new home, that soon after locating there he was sent to the state senate of Ohio, and served there for several terms with marked distinction. In 1814 he moved to Charleston, Kanawha county, and took up his permanent residence there. After representing the people of this county for two successive terms in the general assembly of Virginia, he was chosen one of the judges of the general court and judge of the Kanawha judicial circuit. This occurred in the year 1819, and he continued in this office until 1843, as above stated. He was an able and deliberate judge, examining all cases submitted to him for decision with minute care and attention. He did not rely upon the loose statements of counsel in the cause, to learn what the record itself contained, but he read the whole file himself so as to know and to weigh for himself the matters it embraced. He was a man of unusual common sense; and for untiring industry and adaptation to judicial labors and requirements, our valley has had few men who have sat upon the circuit bench that have been his superior.

The judges who preceded Lewis Summers in the valley were John Coalter, who held the office until 1811 when he was promoted to the bench of the supreme court of appeals, and he was succeeded by Hon. James Allen, who was the immediate predecessor of Judge Summers.

Our circuit court bench was occupied from the middle of the year 1843 until the early part of 1852, by Hon. David McComas, than whom a more brilliant or able jurist never wore the ermine in our valley. All who remember him as a judge speak in the very highest commendation of his superb qualities as a lawyer and a judge.

He was a great student of the constitution and attached to the school of Jefferson and Madison, adhering to a strict construction of that instrument. In 1832, as we are informed, he delivered a speech in the legislature of Virginia replete with eloquence and logic on the rights of the states under the Federal constitution, and took the stand of a state's right to secede from the Union, and upholding the views of Calhoun and his followers in the course pursued by them that year in the state of South Carolina. He who presided in the courts of the Kanawha circuit from the latter part of 1852 to the year 1859 inclusive, was the Hon. George W. Summers, of whom Mr. Atkinson, in his History of Kanawha, has this to say: "In my humble opinion

George William Summers was the most gifted man that Virginia ever produced." He was educated in the Ohio university at Athens, graduating there in the year 1826, studied law with his brother, Hon. Lewis Summers, and was admitted to the bar in 1827. Besides holding many offices of trust and importance, including two terms in congress, Mr. Summers was actively engaged in the practice of the law before his call to the bench. It must be conceded on all sides that he was the most powerful and eloquent advocate that has ever been seen in our valley, if not in the states of the two Virginias. He was, at least the Lord Brougham of the Kanawha valley. Like the latter, he was a great advocate; like him, he was equally great and influential as a statesman, and like this eminent Englishman, his information was varied and abundant. He was a man of beautiful imagery which he admirably used in his forensic oratory, and which lent a delightful charm to his eloquence. The habits of the bench were uncongenial to him, and after six years of hard service as a judge he resigned his office, the term of which did not expire for two years thereafter. Upon his retirement from the judicial office he resumed his law practice, in which he continued until a short time prior to his death, which occurred in the fall of 1868, over forty-one years after his admission to the bar. He was the first prosecuting attorney of Putnam county. He was an exemplary Christian, and never allowed professional labors to interfere with his sincere and pious devotions to his Savior and his God.

During the years 1859 and 1860, David McComas again presided in our courts, and in 1861, Hon. Evermont Ward, and in 1862 and 1863, Hon. James H. Brown.

Judge Ward was the last of the three judges who signed the law license of the author of this sketch and his examination was restricted to constitutional questions, and it is said that he was much devoted to the study of this branch of our profession. His advice to the writer was to locate in a city, and concentrate all of his energies upon the law and success would surely wait upon him. He advised against the division of time between law and anything else, and compared such a dissipation of time and energy to the fall of rain, remarking that so long as the tiny drops fell over a broad surface their power was not felt, but when collected into one body, their force became mighty and called attention to these gathered drops in the swollen streams and the high waters in the river over-leaping its banks. His suggestion reminded us of what Charles Sumner says of Sir William Follet. This distinguished American writes: "He seems to have a genius for law. When it comes to stating a law point and its argument, he is at home and goes on without let or hindrance or any apparent exertion. His business is immense; and he re-

ceives many briefs which he hardly reads before he rises in court. His income is probably fifteen thousand pounds. * * * * * He has little or no information outside of his profession."

From 1863 to 1866, inclusive, Hon. Daniel Polsley, of Mason county, held our courts, except those in Fayette, and no doubt, would have continued in this office but for his election to congress. He entered upon his legal studies under the direction of the late Hon. Philip Doddridge, whose niece he afterward married, and finished his law course at the Winchester law school, carried on under the auspices of Judge Tucker, the author of Tucker's Commentaries, and long a president of the Virginia court of appeals. He first practiced his profession at Wellsburg, in Brooke county, Va. (now W. Va.). He devoted himself to journalism, from the year 1833 to 1845, and quitting this work, he moved to Mason county, and engaged in agricultural pursuits until 1861, when the state of public affairs called him into law again and also into politics.

Daniel Polsley was a good lawyer and an upright and impartial judge. He was uniformly fair to all the attorneys who practiced before him, and it is said that no one ever asked for a bill of exceptions to any of his rulings, that he did not get it—complete and satisfactory—one of the great virtues of a *nisi prius* judge. Upon his retirement from congressional life, he devoted himself to the practice of law until he became so feeble from loss of health, that he could no longer perform the labor of his profession.

Judge Polsley studied the law as a science, administered it as such, and so practiced it. This perhaps, was due, in a great measure, to the fact that his first and early study of it was directed by eminent jurists, who had studied and practiced it in the same way themselves.

The judge who presided in our circuit courts in the four counties of Fayette, Kanawha, Putnam and Mason, from the spring of 1867 to January, 1873, was Hon. James W. Hoge, who had been in his profession about seventeen years when he came to the bench. He was appointed by the governor of the state to fill the vacancy in the office of judge occasioned by the resignation of Hon. Daniel Polsley, who in 1866, was elected to congress. Judge Hoge resided at Winfield, in Putnam county, at the time of his appointment, where he had practiced law, as well also as in the counties of Mason and Kanawha, from about the year 1852, the year in which he moved from the eastern part of Virginia, and took up his residence in the Kanawha valley, where he ever after made his home until the time of his death, which occurred at his residence in his adopted town, in the month of August, 1882.

At the next election, which occurred in 1868, Judge Hoge was

elected to the judgeship for the full term of six years, but owing to the adoption of our new constitution in 1872, by which the circuits were re-organized and re-arranged, the judge's official term expired one year sooner than it otherwise would have done, and he retired from the judgeship on December 31, 1872, and was succeeded in January, 1873, by Hon. Joseph Smith having been defeated by this gentleman at the fall election held in that year.

Judge Hoge was an able lawyer, possessing an analytical and discriminating mind, a forcible and eloquent advocate; and as a judge he was upright, careful, impartial and courteous to all in any wise connected with his courts or interested in their business. He was a man of great kindness and forbearance in his professional life, both before his accession to the bench, as well also as after his retirement therefrom. He was thoroughly grounded in a knowledge of the principles of the law, and familiar with the decisions of the courts. He was a man of great power before a jury, and happy was the litigant who secured his services in a case to be determined by this mode of trial. He was collected and dignified in his conduct of suits, and not easily embarrassed in the trial of causes. He was recognized by the legal profession as one of the best *nisi prius* judges in the state. He was sustained oftener in the supreme court of appeals according to the number of cases carried to that tribunal from his decisions than any other judge in the state. He was highly loved and greatly trusted by his acquaintances and friends, and looked upon the confidence reposed in him by others as ever too sacred to abuse. He was, on more than one occasion, elected to the office of prosecuting attorney of his adopted county of Putnam, an office whose duties he discharged with untiring fidelity and marked ability.

When the great state of Virginia called a convention of her representative men in the ever-memorable year of 1861, to determine the momentous question whether she would remain in the Union or secede therefrom, Judge Hoge was chosen by the people of Putnam to speak and act for them in that historic body, and true to his conviction, he voted that his native state should join her many other sisters in the formation of a new confederacy. This course of his certainly reflected the sentiments and opinions of his bold and determined constituency.

Upon the adoption of our new constitution in the year 1872, the county of Fayette was stricken from the Kanawha valley circuit and joined to another, and in lieu of this territory the counties of Jackson and Roane were added to the circuit and, as we have seen, Hon. Joseph Smith became the judge in the greater portion of the valley from January 1, 1873, until the 31st day of December, 1881. Judge Smith was educated at the Ohio university and came to the bar some time between 1840 and 1850,

and while in active practice, was a very successful lawyer, being signally so before juries. His manner, as an advocate, was plain and free from bombast, conversational, rather than rhetorical; but plausible and captivating. He was a very successful criminal lawyer. He was not a close student of the law, never manifesting that taste for his profession that is a *sine qua non* to an accurate and profound knowledge of the law; and but for the lack of this fondness and the *lucubrationes viginti annorum* spoken of by Sir William Blackstone, Judge Smith would have been a most eminent jurist, as he was a man of great native strength of mind, and chose rather to depend upon his broad common sense, than upon laborious, pains-taking research. He was very indifferent to matters of form, looking to substance alone, carrying his disregard of things merely formal into the very orthography of his pleadings. He took no pride in the niceties and fine distinctions of the law. He abhorred prolixity either in argument or drafts of pleading. In his criticisms once upon a bill filed for a divorce, he remarked, with some degree of earnestness, that it contained far too many redundant allegations that could have been dispensed with, and, upon the same occasion, observed that such a bill could well be drawn upon a single page of fools-cap. He did not believe in reading many law books. The three text writers to which he attached most importance and held in highest estimate, are Tucker's Commentaries, Robinson's (Old) Practice and Davis' Criminal Law. He often remarked that the close student of these treatises must become a good lawyer. Of course this observation applied to those desiring to practice law in the courts of Virginia or West Virginia.

As a judge Joseph Smith was upright and impartial. He often said, in speaking of appeals taken from his decisions, that if he was wrong he would rather be reversed than to be affirmed. He was uniformly kind and courteous to the members of the bar and the officers of his court. At the close of his official term he engaged in the hotel business in Ripley, Jackson county, W. Va., where he resided, and in which he continued until his death, which occurred in 1888. He appeared in court but a few times after his retirement from office, and then only in important cases. Too much cannot be said of Judge Smith, when he was in active practice, of his powers as an advocate. He was indeed, at times, an eloquent speaker. Judge Smith went south during the war where he practiced his profession, but returned to his home in Jackson county after the restoration of peace between the states.

The present judge of the counties of Kanawha, Putnam and Mason, is Hon. F. A. Guthrie, who is the successor of Judge Joseph Smith, having been elected in the fall of 1880, taking office

on the 1st day of January, 1881. In the general election of 1888 Judge Guthrie was re-elected by a large majority over his democratic opponent, Mr. Green, to serve for the term of eight years longer, commencing on January the 1st, 1889.

Judge Guthrie resides in Mason county, having become a resident thereof in 1867, moving thither from Wirt county in that year. The judge read law at the Michigan university, his principal instructor being the Hon. Thomas M. Cooley, the Jay professor of law in that great institution of learning. He made rapid progress while a student there — such progress that upon his return he was able to pass a satisfactory examination in the usual preparatory branches of the lawyer's studies so as to obtain a license to practice his chosen profession, and in 1867 he was admitted to the bar.

After entering upon the law practice, he continued his diligence as a student, his choice text-books being those treating on pleading, practice and evidence. In these branches of his profession he became an adept, and he has made good use of his knowledge in this behalf in the active discharge of his official duties. He also read extensively in the other text-books, such as those relating to contracts, the domestic relations, agency, the law of husband and wife, parent and child, guardian and ward, corporations, land tenures and titles, and criminal law. He is not now, nor has he ever been, a case hunter. He has at all times, chosen rather to rely upon the great principles and maxims of the law, than upon the work of searching for adjudicated cases, to determine his opinion in the various causes coming before him for decision. Of course it is needless to say that he keeps abreast of the current decisions of his own state courts and many others too; but he does not study these as he does the great sages and masters of the profession with whom he is perfectly at home and in whose companionship he delights to dwell. But he is not an indiscriminate reader of law treatises; there are many, he thinks, which ought never to have been written, so far as the benefits to the law profession are to be considered.

Those branches of the law in which the present circuit judge of our valley took a special and pure delight, when at the bar, were pleading, practice and evidence; but especially the two former. These he regards as the great touch-stone of the lawyer's qualifications for his entry upon professional life. He makes frequent exemplifications of his opinions in this direction, in his numerous examinations of applicants for law license. He has oft times remarked that a good pleader must needs be a good lawyer. He is the avowed enemy of all redundancy, and has, on more than one occasion, admonished the bar against it in plead-

ing. Nor does he countenance this in legal argument, always urging the attorneys to confine themselves to the sharp points of difference between them in the presentation of their cases.

As a judge, F. A. Guthrie is conscientious, able, prompt and decisive; affable in his intercourse with lawyer and suitor; rarely impetuous, and only so, when forbearance ceases to be longer a virtue. He is candid both on and off the bench, and admires it in those whom he is glad to name as his friends. He delights in fairness in the practice of the law, and exacts it from those who transact business in his courts, and no one can expect to retain his esteem who disregards this virtuous characteristic. Nothing provokes him more than to witness the evidence of its want. The judge's favorite text-books are Chitty on Pleading, Greenleaf on Evidence, Chitty's General Practice and Blackstone's Commentaries. These he has read and re-read until they have become a part of his very being. Then come Parsons on Contracts and Cooley's Constitutional Limitations. He has frequently said that society itself, the great nursery of civilization, is founded on contract, and all the relations which arise from it have alike their foundations in the wide domain of the law of contracts. One cannot know, says he, too much of this branch of our profession. The profound lawyer must be thoroughly conversant with it. The mind of Judge Guthrie is purely analytical, and his reasoning strikingly of the inductive method. One authority means but one case to him. The great question with him always is, "What is the current of authority and the logical deductions upon this point?" The answer to this is his determination. Judge Guthrie is a great lover of nature and art. He takes great pleasure in the study of geology and botany, and has pursued these studies as matters of diversion for several years. Judge Guthrie is an agreeable companion and a pleasing figure in the social circle.

Judges Fry and Duncan were eminent judges and lawyers in our valley who reflected great honor upon our profession by their learning and ability as well as by their sterling integrity; and of the former of whom a distinguished lawyer once said: "I never knew but one judge in all my practice who would give an absolutely fair bill of exceptions, and that was Judge Fry."

The bar of the Kanawha valley has been adorned with some of the brightest ornaments of the legal profession, both in its earlier and later history, who were either denied, or never coveted, the honors that lie beyond the pathway of professional life and its burdens, and who were content with the honors that lay in the true promotion of a client's fortunes. It is not always that our ablest men are crowned with the halo of fame. Many great men live and die in comparative obscurity, their reputations being circumscribed by the immediate sphere in which they

move. This is true of many of the lawyers of the Kanawha valley, and of none more so than the late Hon. Henry J. Fisher, who came to the bar about the year 1822, and in the next year he moved to Mason county, where he began the practice of his profession, and where he ever after lived until the time of his death, which occurred on the 31st day of January, 1883. He came to the bar a very poor man, but by his great success there, and his frugality, he died comparatively wealthy. He was an inveterate student and a man of most prodigious memory. He studied, not only the English text-books, including the black letter law, and also the English reports, but the American treatises and reports too. He not only read these repositories of the law, but he made a critical study of them. His preference was always for the reports, for the reason, as stated by himself, that they are the very fountains of legal lore. He thought that every student and practitioner of our profession should keep a common-place book, and note in it every important principle of the law, together with the authorities in the support of it. This has been the habit of many of our eminent lawyers and jurists, such as Story, Kent, Greenleaf, Parsons and others. He was fond of history and literature, and kept a good assortment of books on these subjects in his library, which, at the time of his death, was the largest in our valley, if not in the whole state. He was strongly of the opinion that a lawyer ought to be a good linguist, and in speaking of this always cited the eminent judges and attorneys of Europe as illustrative of the benefits afforded by language study.

His license was suspended on one occasion for the period of twelve months for insisting in a criminal case against the court's instructions, that in such cases the jury are the judges of both the law and the facts. This case was carried by Mr. Fisher to the supreme court of appeals and decided in favor of the appellant, and hence Mr. Fisher was restored to his privileges as an attorney. This cause is reported in volume six of Leigh's Reports. The circuit judge who made the order of suspension, makes this statement in such order, which is decidedly complimentary to Mr. Fisher: "As he possesses more than an ordinary share of legal learning, and is the efficient prosecutor of the pleas of the commonwealth in the county courts of two of the counties of this circuit, the court cannot arrive at the conclusion that the singular proposition and arguments here set down were either the result of ignorance of the law or mistaken conceptions in relation thereto." This very doctrine contended for by Mr. Fisher has since been announced by our supreme court as law.

With all of Mr. Fisher's learning and ability his will was assailed by his heir as void on the ground of its offending against the law of perpetuity and the United States circuit court set it

aside because of this defect which it contained. In his arguments before courts and juries he made frequent use of his extensive knowledge by apt quotations both from prose and poetic writings and many of these were touching and singularly beautiful.

Upon his return home from the south, at the close of the war, when passion and prejudice were at their extreme height, and he could not practice law, bring a suit, act as a juror or witness, vote or hold an office, he repeated these lines from Campbell's "Exile of Erin":

> Sad is my fate, said the heart-broken stranger,
> The wild deer and wolf to a covert can flee.
> But I have no refuge from famine and danger,
> A home and a country remain not to me.

He was very felicitous at repartee, and there were very few, if any, who ever scored a point on him in the use of this happy faculty. A contemporary at the bar was once arguing a case before a jury in a manner indicating great ease on the part of the advocate, at the same time passing some copper cents, first from one hand and then to the other, which attracted Mr. Fisher's attention, and looking up at the speaker, Mr. Fisher asked, "What is that you have in your hands, Colonel ———?" Colonel ——— pausing in his discussion, and fixing with his eyes in earnest gaze upon Mr. Fisher, replied, "brass, Mr. Fisher, of which you have your share." To which Mr. Fisher quickly replied, "I thought it was cents (sense), and if it was, I know you need a little more than you have got." On another occasion, he had a suit in which the defendant was a negro, and the plaintiff (Mr. Fisher) and the defendant were both examined as witnesses in each other's behalf. The evidence was contradictory and counsel for the defendant insisted that the testimony of his client was entitled to as much credit as that of Mr. Fisher, assigning as a reason therefor, that the same God that made Mr. Fisher had also made William W——— (his client). In reply to this part of the counsel's argument, after hurriedly reviewing the history of the African race, Mr. Fisher said: "Major ——— says that his client's testimony is entitled to as much weight before this jury as mine, because the same God made us both. And let me remind Major ——— that the same God that made him (Major ———), also made the jackass." Mr. Fisher was a firm believer in a future state of existence, and died in the full hope of realizing his belief in the immortality of the soul.

A distinguished contemporary of Mr. Fisher was Hon. Benjamin H. Smith, who came to the bar in the same year in which Mr. Fisher was admitted, 1822. Mr. Smith was educated at the Ohio university and graduated there in 1819, and studied law at Lancaster, Ohio, under the late Hon. Thomas Ewing, Sr., who

advised him to locate in the Kanawha valley, and accordingly he located in Charleston in March, 1822.

At the spring term of the court, 1823, young Smith had sixty suits for citizens of Ohio and Kentucky, arising out of the salt interests in the Kanawha valley and his conduct of these causes gave such satisfaction that he found himself in the enjoyment of a good practice which he held as long as he remained at the bar.

In the earlier history of our section disputes over land titles were a fruitful source of litigation and to this branch of the law Colonel Smith turned his attention with assiduous application and soon placed himself in the van of his profession in this behalf. In speaking of him in this connection Mr. Atkinson says: "It is, I believe, conceded on all sides that he has, in this obtruse branch of jurisprudence, always maintained his position as the first lawyer of the state, when the Virginias were one. From 1831 to 1874 he was actively employed in every land case of importance in the circuit court, and in many out of it; most of them being of great complexity, and involving lands of great value. One of these cases occupied twenty-six days in the trial, and another thirty-one days. In all of the vast number of land cases in which the colonel has been engaged as an attorney, about nine-tenths of them have been decided in favor of his clients. This, of itself, would establish his reputation as a land lawyer." He was United States district attorney for the western district of Virginia during the presidential term of Taylor and Fillmore. He was again appointed to this office in 1862 by President Lincoln and held it for five years, when he resigned and was succeeded by General Nathan Goff. Touching his character as a lawyer, Mr. Atkinson makes this observation: "His choice of occupation was his profession. He followed it because he loved the study and practice of the law. He has always been a hard student, preparing his cases, so far as argument and understanding their points were concerned, with great care. * * * * Colonel Smith affected none of the graces of oratory. His strength has been in his sound common sense and his intimate acquaintance with the law."

Among the able lawyers of the valley, whose genius for the law shed luster upon the profession, was Hon. William A. Quarrier, of Kanawha county, who came to the bar a few years prior to the war. His studies and practice were abruptly checked by the outbreak of the late war, and he could not resume his pratice upon the close of the war until 1873, by reason of his participation in the movements of the southern Confederacy. With his re-entry upon the practice of his profession, he pursued it with marked success until his bright and promising career as a lawyer was unexpectedly ended by his sudden death, which occurred in Charleston, in 1888. "Death came all too

soon," and cut him down almost in the very bloom of his stalwarth manhood. His practice in the state and federal courts was extensive and lucrative. His great success had enabled him to repair those heavy losses which a long and cruel war entailed upon him, and had he been spared a little while longer, the fruits of his professional exertions would have brought him a sure competency for his little family. Mr. Quarrier was a lawyer void of all redundancy in conversation, argument or pleading, but always pointed and clear. He was a pure logician and displayed his powers as such in arguments and briefs before courts and jurors.

There were two young men at the Kanawha bar, who, had they lived, would have become eminent lawyers, and possessed talent sufficient to have ranked themselves among the profound jurists of our country. They were William H. Hogeman and James H. Nash, of Charleston. In many respects they were much alike. They were each hard students and fond of the law, and each had a *genius* for the law. Each had the gifted faculty of stating a law point with striking and admirable precision and clearness, and both were successful in practice. Each of them died at an early age.

Mr. Hogeman was for many years the efficient attorney for the C. & O. R. R. company on that part of the line running through the state of West Virginia.

Col. Isaac Smith, the son of Hon. Benjamin H. Smith, was a safe counselor and a good lawyer in our valley who was cut down in the flower of his professional life, and who, had he lived, would have made his mark at our bar. Above and beyond his professional attainments, he was a man of sterling integrity and an exemplary Christian. He was for many years the law partner of Edward B. Knight, Esq.

The late Judge Matthew Dunbar was another able lawyer who lived and died in the Kanawha valley, and a more honest man in all his dealings with mankind never moved in our midst than Mr. Dunbar. He was for a long time prosecuting attorney of Kanawha county, and it is said he acted as circuit judge at one time in the history of our valley. He studied law under James Wilson, Esq., who was an early prosecuting attorney of Kanawha county, and who was a Scotchman by birth and was a contemporary of Benjamin H. Smith and Henry J. Fisher, and rode the circuit with them on horseback, and many are the anecdotes related of him illustrating his fondness for humor. He was a good lawyer and a successful practitioner.

C. E. Doddridge and Joseph L. Fry were members of our bar in the Kanawha valley, the former of whom was a son of the justly celebrated Philip Doddridge, and who practiced law for

many years at the Charleston bar, and in the earlier history of the valley engaged actively in the pursuit of his profession.

Judge Fry was a lawyer of fine ability and heartily devoted to his profession, and took high rank as a jurist among the lawyers of our valley. Maj. Andrew Parks was another able and successful lawyer in former days, among us, and was considered a well-informed and safe land-lawyer.

Among the promising and well informed young lawyers of our valley was Daniel W. Polsley, a son of the late Judge Polsley, and who was for some time associated in partnership with his father in the practice of the law. He was a most excellent special pleader, and his opinion on matters of this character were often sought by his brother attorneys, and they were always held in the highest estimate. Indeed he was, in all respects, a fine draftsman and a good lawyer. It is the generally accepted opinion by our profession that an extensive knowledge of the law, and a clear perception of its principles are essential to the skillful special pleader. He was much devoted to the law, and found his purest delight in its study and investigation of its principles.

Henry J. Fisher, Jr., the son of the late Hon. Henry J. Fisher, gave great promise of becoming a learned lawyer, and, no doubt, would have achieved distinction in the law, but for his early death, which occurred in June, 1887. The late Judge James W. Hoge, of Winfield, regarded him as a man possessing a high order of talent, and thought that if he lived he would out-rank his father in our profession. He was a young man possessed of a fine literary training, and was well equipped for the work and labors of the lawyer.

The living members of the bar to-day are strong, able men, and many of them are classed among the most thorough and successful of our entire state. Among these are: Messrs. Knight, Brown, McCorkle, Dyer, Payne, Green, Couch (G. E.), Chilton (W. E. and J. E.), Broun, Jackson, Johnson, Nash, Switzer, Cargill, Gunn, Simpson, Spencer, Menage, Gibbons, Howard, Tomlinson, Wiley, Beller, Couch (J. H., Jr.,), St. Clair, Wilson and others, whose names do not occur to us at this time.

We should be pleased to devote time and space to the consideration of the professional lives of these active and honorable members of our profession, but the limits to which we are confined by this contribution forbid, and our people will read their history in their daily walks of life and as reflected by their active labors in the court room and the reports of our supreme court of appeals.

HISTORY

OF THE

GREAT KANAWHA VALLEY

WITH FAMILY HISTORY AND BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES. A STATEMENT OF ITS NATURAL RESOURCES, INDUSTRIAL GROWTH AND COMMERCIAL ADVANTAGES.

VOL. II.

ILLUSTRATED.

MADISON, WIS.:
BRANT, FULLER & CO.,
1891.

Democrat Printing Co., Madison, Wis.
Bindery of W. B. Conkey, Chicago, Ill.

Reprinted by –

HIGGINSON BOOK COMPANY
148 Washington Street, Post Office Box 778
Salem, Massachusetts 01970

Phone: 978/745-7170 *Fax*: 978/745-8025

A complete catalog of thousands of genealogy and local history reprints is available from Higginson Books.
Please contact us to order or for more information,
or visit our web site at **www.higginsonbooks.com**.

This facsimile reprint has been photo-reproduced on acid-free paper. Hardcover bindings are Class A archival quality.

CONTENTS.

VOLUME I.

CHAPTER I. PAGE

Pre-historic Occupation of the Kanawha Valley — Mound Builders — Who Were They? — Whence Came They? — Historical Sketch of the Cherokees — Interesting Explorations of Ancient Earth and Stone Works..... 23

CHAPTER II.

First White Settlement in the New River Kanawha Valley, and the First That Crossed the Alleghenies Westward..... 40

CHAPTER III.

Ingles-Draper Settlement — First Indian Blood Spilled — Cupid's Work in the Wilderness — First White Wedding West of the Alleghenies — Bloody Encounter and Murder of Whites — Carried Into Captivity — Babe Born on the Route — Story of Mrs. Ingles' Hardships — First Salt Made by Her in the Kanawha Valley..... 52

CHAPTER IV.

Names of Rivers in the Ohio Valley — Indian Titles — Their Beauty and Descriptive Character — Weary Journey of Two Escaped Women — Up the Ohio and Kanawha on Foot — Notable Historic Spots and Events — The Burning Spring — First Natural Gas in the Valley — Features of the Country..... 61

CHAPTER V.

Canyon of New River — Awful Chasm Passed by the Lonely Fugitives — Frightful Perils — "Drawing Straws" — Which Shall Die? — Life and Death Struggle — Weary Journey Renewed — Scaling Anvil Cliff — Yielding to Despair — Relief at Last and Home — Fate of the Old Dutch Woman — Battles, Sieges and Surprises..... 75

CHAPTER VI.

Early Explorers — First Surveys in West Virginia and Kentucky — Early Routes of Travel — Weary Roads Through the Wilderness — Story of William Ingles — His Life Among the Indians — His Ransom and Reluctant Return — Mother's Joy — His Subsequent Restless Career — Bloody Raid on Burke's Garden — Pursuit and Vengeance — The Captives of Abt's Valley..... 85

CHAPTER VII.

Rebecca Davidson — Hunting in "Ye Olden Time" — How the Sport Was Arranged — Excitement and Dangers — "Buck Ague" — The Ingles Family Clock — Ticking for Several Generations — Moralizing on "Ye Grandfather's Time-piece" — A Century's Changes — Contrast Between Now and Then — Picture on Plantation Life..... 96

CHAPTER VIII. PAGE.

Daniel Boone — Career of the Illustrious Pioneer — His Life in the Kanawha Valley — Battle of Point Pleasant — Its Far Reaching Importance — Events Leading Thereto — Forces Engaged — The Indian Side — Outrages That Infuriated Them — Graphic Description of the Conflict..... 108

CHAPTER IX.

Lord Dunmore — His Conduct While Governor of Virginia Colony — His Treachery to the Frontiersmen — His Subsequent Rascally Conduct — Point Pleasant as a Military School — Notable Characters of the Place — Gen. Andrew Lewis — Logan, the Mingo Chief — Cornstalk, the Famous Indian Commander..... 128

CHAPTER X.

Murder of Cornstalk — "Red Hawk" — His Effort to Shoot Washington at Braddock's Defeat — Bloody Raids by Indians to Avenge Their Leader — Attack on Pt. Pleasant — Its Repulse — Raid up the Kanawha and Attack on Donnally's — Spirited Battle — Hannah Dennis — Her Career Among the Indians.. . 142

CHAPTER XI.

Chronological Record of Events Along the Border — Dates of Battles, Sieges and Settlements..... 154

CHAPTER XII.

The Kanawha River and Kanawha Valley 169

CHAPTER XIII.

Charleston, West Virginia..... 172

CHAPTER XIV.

Orange County..... 196

CHAPTER XV.

The Great Kanawha River — History of Its Navigation and Improvements — Aboriginal Methods — Silent Glide of the Birch-bark Canoe — Advent of the Pioneers — Flat-boats and Batteaux — First Steamboat — Revolution Accomplished Thereby — Plans to Improve the Channel — Elaborate System of Locks and Dams — Character and Cost of the Work — Statistics of Coal Shipments.... 198

CHAPTER XV. PAGE.

Salt Manufacture in the Kanawha Valley — Development of the Industry by Slow Degrees — Crude Beginnings — Petroleum Oil — Discovery and Effects — "Old Greasy" — Natural Gas — First Appearance and Wonderful Results — A Harvard Professor's Experience with a Match at the Well — Disastrous Consequences to the Inquisitive Scientist — Not so Pretty but Much Wiser — Interesting Statistics 211

CHAPTER XVI.

Church History of the Kanawha Valley — First Law Passed in the New World Commands Religious Attendance — "Blue Laws" by the Fanatics of Old Virginia — How It Was Beyond the Mountains — Pioneer Preachers — Self-sacrifice and Zeal — First Baptist Minister on the Kanawha — Primitive Meetin' Houses — Widely Scattered Congregations — The Baptist Church and Its Heroes — The Presbyterians — Historic Split in That Denomination — Methodist Episcopal — Early Missionary Work — Protestant Episcopal — United Brethren — The Catholic Church, Its Work in the Valley — The Lutherans..... 227

CHAPTER XVII.

Educational History — Gov. Berkeley's Famous Dictum Against Schools — Progress of Two Centuries — Virginia's Backwardness in Embracing the Free School System — The "Pauper Schools" — Various Old Time Statutes — But Little Progress — The "Old Field Schools" — What They Were — Pen Portrait of Building and Surroundings — The Pioneer Teacher — Readin', Ritin' and 'Rithmetic — "Boarding Around" — Names of "School-Masters" of ye Olden Time — Gradual Improvements — Modern Progress — Schools Under the New Constitution — First Official Reports — Present Status..... 245

CHAPTER XVIII.

Military History of the Kanawha Valley — Early Struggles — The Revolution — Warfare With Both Savages and British — War of 1812 — Virginia's Ready Response With Troops — The Civil War — Brother Against Brother — Occupation of the Valley by Opposing Forces — Gov. Wise' Foray — Battle of Scary Creek — Federals' Control of the Valley — Battle of Carnifex Ferry — Advance of Loring's Command — Lightburn's Famous Retreat — Federals Driven Out — Their Triumphant Return — Jenkins' Raid to Pt. Pleasant — A Dastardly Murder — "Johnnies" Capture a Steamboat — Witcher's Attack on Winfield — Estimate of Kanawha Troops in the War — Casualties on Both Sides..... 230

CHAPTER XIX.

Bench and Bar — Early Struggles of the Profession — First Courts in the Kanawha Valley — Methods of Administration — Old Time County Courts — Pioneer Practitioners — The War Period — Effects of the Famous Lawyer's Test Oath — Hardships of the Same — Sketches of Eminent Judges — Bright Minds of the Kanawha Bar — Brilliant Advocates and Shrewd Special Pleaders — Anecdotes of the Profession — Mr. Fisher's Wit and Repartee — Review of Noted Law Cases — Increase of Litigation and Changes in Modes of Practice..... 278

VOLUME II.

CHAPTER XX.

Medical History of the Kanawha Valley from 1790 to 1890 — Early Diagnosis of Fevers — Old-time Doctors and Their Methods — Diseases Peculiar to the First Settlers — Medical Writers Abroad — Influence on the American Practitioner — List of Complaints in the Valley Scientifically Defined — Measles, Mumps, "Kidney Troubles," and Other Evils Flesh is Heir to — Cholera and Its Ravages — Improvement in Medical Treatment — How They Used to Bleed 'em — Calomel and Jalap — Supremacy of the Lancet — The "Root and Yarb" Doctor — He "Sneezed" Her — Peripatetic Physicians and the Inevitable Saddle-bags — Description of a Long Night Ride — Fording Mill Creek by Moonlight — Pen Portraits of Old-timers — The Harveys, Putneys and Others.. 253

CHAPTER XXI.

Point Pleasant the Oldest English Town on the Ohio — Claims of Wheeling — Of Marietta . 272

CHAPTER XXII.

Formation of Mason County — Topography — Naming of the County — The County Seat — Burial of the Leaden Plates by the French — Principal Towns in Mason County — Hon. John Hall — Natural Resources — Newspapers..... 279

CHAPTER XXIII.

Area of Putnam County — Its Formation — The County Seat and Principal Towns — Its First County Court — Topography — Natural Resources — Early Settlers — Incidents of Early History — Newspapers..... 285

CHAPTER XXIV.

Formation of Fayette County — The County Seat — The Principal Towns — Mineral and Agricultural Resources — Topography — Historic Incidents — John R. Peyton — Marshall's Pillar — Climate — Newspapers..... 290

CHAPTER XXV.

The Formation of Kanawha County — The First Settler — The Site of Charleston — The First County Court — Climate — Mining Interests — Fruit — Newspapers..... 294

CHAPTER XXVI.

Banking Institutions..... 303

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

	Page.
Adkins, John M.	17
Alford, J. D.	140
Armstrong, E. H.	18
Armstrong, J. H.	18
Arnold, E. S.	150
Arrington, Gideon H.	18
Arrington, James T.	19
Barber, T. L., M. D.	150
Baker, William H.	19
Barbee, Andrew R., M. D.	20
Barcus, E. J.	21
Barnett, William	21
Beale, Chas. T.	22
Beale, James M. H.	23
Bechtle, John W	24
Beury, J. L	229
Bibby, James	151
Bickel, R. S.	24
Blagg, Benjamin H	25
Blain, Z. T. J	26
Blazer, Philip	27
Boggs, Hugh L.	152
Bowers, T. S. P	152
Brannon, Mathew	28
Brannon, John S	28
Brazie, W. A	230
Bridge, E. W	230
Broun, Major Thomas L	153
Brown, Gideon	29
Bryan, John	29
Bryan, J. W	30
Bumgarner, Seth	30
Burdett, Hon. Samuel C	154
Burlew, Noves S	155
Burnside, Joseph	31
Buttrick, E. L.	157
Calvert, Cornelius	158
Carpenter, Thomas C.	140
Capito, Charles	159
Caperton, Dr. George H	231
Carder, William B	159
Carr, R. S.	159
Carver, John	160
Carver, Aaron	232
Champ, George W	232
Chapman, Charles S.	32
Cheney, M. A.	233
Clendenin, James E. B.	33
Clifton, Charles	34
Cobb, Augustus	35
Cullen, Israel	39
Combs, William R	161
Cooper, William	35
Cotton, John T., M. D	162
Couch, Daniel, M. D	36
Couch, John R.	37
Couch, Peter S.	37
Crary, Archibald, M. D.	38
Cummings, Dr. William R.	162
Curry, William P	163
Daniel, Nehemiah	233
Davis, Rev. R. W.	40
Davis, George	164
Davis, John William	233
Dent, Daniel G	234
Denley, A. B., M. D.	141
Duffy, P. F	165
Eastham, Albert Gallatin	42
Eastham, Hon. P. C.	42
Easley, E. H	165
Edwards, Edward	41
Edwards, John	41
Eggenshwiler, C.	43
English, John W	44
Ewing, W. P., M. D.	166
Fife, Charles T	142
Fife, Col. William E.	142
Fisher, Charles P.	166
Floyd, Hon. John B.	167
Fontaine, Peter	167
Forrest, Hosea H.	45
Fowler, George E. W	45
Frankenberger, Philip	168
Frankenberger, Moses	168
Franklin, Benjamin	46
Fravel, Edward H., M. D.	143
Friedman & Co., J.	47
Fry, Henry	48
Fry, Hon. Joseph L.	169
Frye, Patrick	170
Garrison, F. L.	170
Gebhart, C. C.	170
George, James	49
George Joseph E.	49
Gerlach, John	50
Gillespie, Jehu W.	51
Gilliam, Dr. Edward L	51
Gilmore, Baptiste	52
Ginther, Jonh	53
Goshorn, John H.	171
Goshorn, Hon J. W.	171
Goshorn, W. F	173
Goshorn, George	174
Gould, Andrew	54
Graham, Hugh	54
Green, Samuel S.	175
Guthrie, Hon. F. A.	55
Gwinn, Henry	56
Hale, Dr. John P.	176
Hall, Thomas L.	57
Hall, Benjamin A.	57
Hamilton, H. L.	181
Hamilton, Alexander W.	234
Hanes, Ephraim	57
Hanna, James W.	58
Hanna, Samuel J.	59
Hannau, Erastus D.	60
Hannan, E. H.	60
Harrison, G. W.	61
Hart, George	62
Henley, Charles W.	181
Henry, R. S., M. D.	182
Hereford, C. D.	183
Hereford, James T.	62
Hill, Edmund	63
Hobson, A. M.	235
Hogg, Charles E.	63
Hogg, W. H	65
Hogsett, Charles W.	66
Holloway, Timothy H.	66
Holmes, W. D.	66
Hoover, Charley S.	236
Hoy, F. D.	67
Hughs, Christopher	68
Hunter, Jefferson	69
Hutchinson, John L.	69
Isaac, W. D.	183
Jelenko, Gustave	184
Johnson, Okey	185
Johnson, Dr. Nicholas	236
Johnson, William R.	237
Keister, William J	70
Keller, Lester, M. D.	237
Kent, Charles H.	238
Kennedy, J. W.	186
Kerr, James B., M. D.	71
Kleszling, Adam	71
Kimberling, Nathaniel	72
Kimberling, Lewis	72
Kimberling, Joseph N.	73
King, Winston B.	73
Kirk, W. S.	74
Klase, William N., M. D.	186
Knight, Aquila Leighton	75
Kubach, O. C.	239
Laidley, M. M.	78
Laidley, Alex T.	187
Laidley, J. J.	188
Lair, Frank E.	239
Layden, Dominick	191
Lee, Richard H.	189
Lewis, Virgil Anson	78
Lewis, Charles C	189
Lewis, Charles Irvin	240
Llewellyn, David Edward	241
Long, Isaac	80
Long, James W.	81
Long, William A.	81
Lovell, James J.	190
Mahood, D. F.	243
Matthews, J. W	144
MacCorkle, William A.	192
McCallister, John C.	82
McCausland, Gen. John	82
McCoy, David	145
McCulloch, Charles E.	85
McCulloch, Mrs. Mary C.	86
MacDonald, Symington	242
McDaniel, Capt. A. G.	87
McDermitt, John	88
McVey, George W.	242
McWhorter, Hon. Henry Clay	192
Meeks, Dr. James R.	88
Michaelson, O. H.	193
Middelburg, Arnold	195
Miller, D. D., M. D.	195
Miller, C. C.	90
Miller, James H.	91
Miller, William A.	91
Mitchell, Robert E.	92
Moore, Charles Page Thomas	92
Moore, George M.	94
Moore, Shepard W	94
Moredock, George W.	95
Morgan, William A.	96
Morrow, Henry C.	96
Mossman, E. J.	97
Musgrave, Elijah Green	97
Mohler, James K.	196
Montgomery, Hon. John C.	243
Montgomery, James W.	244
Morgan, John	197
Neale, William P. L.	98
Neale, W. P., M. D.	99
Newman, Isaac V.	100
Newton, Douglass E.	100
Nicholson, Thomas	101
Norton, H. J.	101
Noyes, P. H.	197
Nuttall, John	244
Nye, J. W.	145
Oakes, William Ira	198
Oney, Robert T.	199
Oxley, Benjamin H.	199
Patrick, Alfred S., M. D.	200
Payne, James Monroe	200
Pearson, Berrimon B.	102
Poffenbarger, Clinton	103
Poffenbarger, William H.	104
Porter, Thomas	201
Purdy, Mrs. Annie	104
Quarrier, Hon. William A.	201
Rea, Robert	106
Redmond, Benjamin J.	105
Reece, Dr. W. S	107
Reece, George W.	107
Reynolds, George B.	203
Rhods, John P.	108
Riffle, Jasper	108
Riffle, Lewis E.	109
Robins, J. E., M. D	245
Robinson, James J.	245
Rollins, J. E.	204
Rosebery, E. F.	110
Roseberry, W. O.	110
Roush, Daniel	113
Roush, Noah	112
Roush, Jacob	111
Roy, J. C.	204
Ruffner, Joseph	205

	Page.
Rupert, L. B., M. D.	246
Russell, John N., M. D.	114
Sarver, Rufus French	247
Sayre, Charles	115
Schaffer, Leo	247
Schuler, John B.	115
Scott, Hezekiah	207
Scott, W. D	208
Scott, Addison M., C. E.	206
Sentz, Capt. James H.	205
Shaver, A. C	208
Shaver, J. R.	209
Sharp, Major William	209
Shrewsbury, Albert D.	210
Shrewsbury, C	116
Simms, Howard T	146
Simpson, Livia Nye	117
Skees, R. R.	210
Slack, John	211
Slyger, Thomas J	212
Smith, Burwell S.	118
Smith, Isaac V	118
Smith, J. P. R. B.	119
Smith, Samuel	119
Smith, Major J. S. F.	212
Smith, Ballard R., M. D.	248
Snyder, Major Thomas Fife	213
Staunton, J. M., M. D.	214
Steenbergen, J. W.	120
Sterling, R. W.	121
Sterne, John V	122
Sterrett, Mrs. F. H.	123
Stewart, Adam	123
Stewart, George	124
Stewart, James	146
Stump, John L.	215
Straughan, M. H.	215
Stricklen, Ernestine A.	124
Sturgeon, William	125
Sullivan, Daniel M.	126
Sullivan, Alfred T.	126
Summers, William S.	216
Taylor, James H.	127
Terry, William H.	128
Timms, Hon. L. J.	147
Tippett, George W.	129
Thayer, Joh E.	217
Thayer, William T.	218
Thayer, Otis A.	218
Thomas, Dr. F. S.	219
Thomas, J. M.	220
Thomas, D. P.	128
Thomas, J. C	128
Thompson, William	248
Thornhill, John L.	221
Truslow, John A	221
Turner, Henry Clay	130
Tyree, Richard	249
Vanden, George W., M. D.	250
Veazey, Oscar A	223
Vickers, J. W	224
Walker, Van Buren	148
Wallace, Love C	131
Wallis, William H.	132
Walls, Hansford L., M D	148
Ward, Charles	224
Watterson, Adam I	133
Waugh, John T.	133
Whaley, F M.	134
White, George	149
Wolfe, Adam H.	139
Wood, Joseph A., M. D.	227
Wooldredge, Atherton M.	228
Woodman, Frank	228
Wilkinson, Daniel	135
Williams, H. H.	136
Williamson, Henry C	146
Winkelblack, R L.	138
Wyant, William	251
Wysor, John C	251
Young, David	139

PORTRAITS.

R. W. Sterling and wife, facing 121	R. S. Bickel facing 24	C. P. T. Moore facing 42
R. S. Carr facing 159	A. R. Barbee facing 20	F. S. Thomas facing 219
Chas. Ward facing 224		

HISTORY OF THE GREAT KANAWHA VALLEY.

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

MASON COUNTY.

John M. Adkins, dealer in hardware, stoves, tinware manufacturer of tinware and undertaker, of Point Pleasant, was born there October 10, 1855, his parents being Spencer and Caroline (Glover) Adkins. The parents were born in Kanawha county near Charleston, the father's birth dating from 1828. He was the son of Spencer Adkins, an Englishman who emigrated to the United States at an early day and became one of the first settlers of Kanawha county and progenitor of four children. He met with a tragic death, being murdered in Kanawha county, while on his way home from Charleston, the object of the murderer being to obtain possession of his money. This occurrence took place when our subject's father was quite a small boy. The latter, up to the age of twenty, lived in Kanawha county, and in 1848, came to Mason where he resided until his death in 1890. He was a mechanical engineer and followed that trade throughout his life being principally engaged in operating stationary engines. He served four years during the civil war as a member of the 13th West Virginia regiment and made a good soldier. Our subject's maternal grandfather was Jesse Glover, born in Monroe county and an early settler of Mason. The marriage of Spencer and Caroline Adkins resulted in the birth of eight children. Our subject is the oldest of these children but one. He was reared and educated at Point Pleasant and in 1882 began life for himself at the tinner's trade. In 1884 he engaged in the business which is his present occupation and in which he has met with a fair measure of success. The marriage of Mr. Adkins took place December 21, 1879, his bride being Miss Maggie Blakemore, a native of Mason county. The result of the union has been the birth of one child, John M. by name. Mr. Adkins is a self-made man, a worthy citizen and enjoys the general esteem of the community in which he lives. Fraternally he is connected with the Masonic order and is a member of Minturn lodge at Point Pleasant.

Armstrong Brothers have, since 1885, been one of the enterprising firms of Point Pleasant. Besides being dealers in coal, they are engaged in river navigation generally, owning large docks at Point Pleasant, several barges, three steamboats, and other property. The firm is enterprising and progressive, and its main members are E. H. and J. H. Armstrong. The father of these brothers is John A. Armstrong, who was born in Ohio county, W. Va., in 1830, his parents being William and Margaret (Donaldson) Armstrong. The father was born in the north of Ireland, in 1801, and with his parents and their family emigrated to the United States in 1815. They landed at Baltimore, Md., from which city, in a later day, William Armstrong, a brother and sister, came to Wheeling, W. Va. Afterward, William was married in Jefferson county, Ohio, to Margaret Donaldson, born in 1804. She was a daughter of Thomas Donaldson, who was also an emigrant from the north of Ireland to Ohio. His brother James was a gallant soldier in the war of 1812, distinguishing himself for bravery at Lundy's Lane and other battles. William and Margaret Armstrong had a family of three sons and four daughters. The father settled in Wheeling, and for a short time followed merchandising, but later located on a farm up the Ohio river. For a number of years he devoted most of his attention to boating on the Ohio. He made several trips with flat-boats down the Ohio and Mississippi rivers, and on two occasions his son John A. went with him to New Orleans. William Armstrong died in 1847, and his widow survived him over twenty years, dying in her native county in Ohio in in 1869. John A. Armstrong was about seventeen years of age when his father died, and having learned boating under his father, he took up and followed that pursuit for several years thereafter. During some years of the fifties he was engaged in flat-boating coal down the Ohio. Later he embarked in the lumber business, operating a lumbering and planing mill in Wheeling up to 1885, in connection with partners. At the date mentioned, he sold out his entire business in Wheeling, and came with his family to Point Pleasant, where he now resides, and where his sons are located in business. In 1854, at Wheeling, he married Miss Nancy Patton, a native of Ohio, and unto them were born five sons and two daughters. Mr. Armstrong can justly be called a self made man. He has led an active business life and is now in the enjoyment of prosperity, surrounded by an interesting family and hosts of friends and well wishers. He is a Master Mason of Ohio lodge, No. 1, at Wheeling.

Gideon H. Arrington is a son of Josiah Arrington, of whom a sketch is printed in another part of this volume. He was born in Mason county, W. Va., May 20, 1854, and remained with his parents until he was thirty-two years of age. He then started on

a trip to Texas, Arkansas, Indian Territory, Kansas, Missouri, Illinois, Indiana, Ohio and Louisiana, returning home in 1886. While stopping in Kansas, Mr. Arrington bought a farm of 200 acres, but sold it soon after. When he returned home from his travels he spent about two years speculating in stock in which pursuit he met with decided success. His marriage took place September 13, 1888, and the lady chosen for his wife was Mamie T. Henry. She is a daughter of G. R. Henry, who was a deputy sheriff of Clendenin district eight years. The result of this union was the birth of one child, Okey E. Arrington. After his marriage, Mr. Arrington taught a term of school and subsequently purchased a farm on the Ohio bottom land. Since then he has closely followed the business of farming, occasionally taking charge of schools during the winter seasons. Mr. Arrington is a well informed man, and keeps well abreast of the times by reading and observation. He was educated at the Gallia county, Ohio, academy and at Vancicle's commercial college in Springfield, Ohio, at which place he was graduated in 1876.

James T. Arrington is a son of Josiah Arrington, a sketch of whom is printed in another part of this book. He was born August 6th, 1855, on the old homestead farm in Mason county, where his father now resides. James lived with his father until the time of his marriage which took place November 29th, 1884, his wife being the daughter of Thomas Henry of Mason county, born April 1st, 1861. Mr. Arrington was educated at Gallia academy and at the commercial college in Springfield, Ohio, graduating at the latter place in 1878. After leaving school he made a trip to Missouri and spent about six months looking around in that state. After his marriage, he worked on the farm for his father for one year and then purchased seventy-six acres of land in the Ohio valley on which he is very pleasantly situated and doing well. He attends closely to business, leads a straightforward life and enjoys the good will of all who know him.

William H. Baker is a son of Charles and Sarah (Stewart) Baker, of whom mention is made in another portion of this work. The birth of Mr. Baker took place in 1845, in Mason county, W. Va., where he resided until 1869, and then went to Kentucky in which state he remained for six years. At the end of that time he returned to the county of Mason, which has since been the place of his residence. August 23, 1869, he was united in matrimony and the result of his marriage was the birth of the following named children: Charles H., Ella L. and Minnie T. Although principally engaged in farming. Mr. Baker does not confine himself entirely to that pursuit. He has done a great deal of mercantile business and at present is selling from a store kept on his farm. He is the postmaster at Seaflat and attends

to the business in such a manner as to give satisfaction to all the patrons. For about five years, Mr. Baker was a commercial traveler, and made a popular salesman on the road. For a period of eight years he was engaged in threshing. His farm is located in Union district, Mason county, and he is regarded as a useful and progressive citizen.

Andrew R. Barbee, M. D., a prominent physician of Pt. Pleasant, W. Va., was a son of a gentleman bearing the same name as himself of French and Welsh descent, and of Nancy (Brinton) Barbee, who was of Irish-German descent. Our subject was born in Rappahanock county, Va., December 9, 1827. He was educated at Petersburg, Va., studying medicine under Dr. J. J. Thompson, of Louray, in the same state. He attended lectures at the famous university of Pennsylvania in 1848–49, and at the Richmond Medical college in 1849–50, after which he returned to the first mentioned institution where he was graduated as an M. D. in April, 1851. He first located at Flint Hill, Va., afterward removed to Madison county, in the same state, and subsequently went to planting and farming at Poca Bottom, where he remained until the breaking out of the civil war. After that event, he went to Buffalo, in West Virginia, and in 1868 removed to Pt. Pleasant, where he has since continued. Though opposed to the doctrine of secession, when his state left the Union, he joined the army of the confederate states as captain of a company of riflemen, and took part in the fighting in the Kanawha valley. In 1862 he was promoted to a colonelcy, and in 1863 was so severely wounded in a fight with the command of Gen. Averill near White Sulphur Springs, that he retired from active service in January, 1864. He was afterward assigned to the medical department, with the rank of colonel on the staff of Gen. Breckinridge, his position being a mixture of the military and medical. He served with Breckinridge in the valley during 1864, and when the general was called to another department, our subject was left as colonel commanding and chief medical officer. At a later date, he was given medical charge of the reserve forces of southwestern Virginia, and was in all the battles of that department. He retained this position until the time of Lee's surrender. He is the Capt. Barbee referred to in the sketch of the battle of Scary Creek, in another portion of this volume. Dr. Barbee is a member of the medical associations of Mason county, the state, the Ohio valley and of Gallia county, and has also been a member of the State Board of Health since its organization, he being the originator and introducer of the bill creating that board. In May, 1852, at Pt. Pleasant, he was married to Margaret A. G., daughter of Dr. J. J. Thompson, his early preceptor in medicine. Their children are: John R. (deceased), M. Blanche, Kate L., William (deceased), Ann R., and Hugh A. In 1881, our subject

Sincerely yours
Andrew R. Baribell, M.D.

was elected to the West Virginia senate where he served one term of four years. He has served on the school board, and since 1885 has been president of the United States Board of Pension Examiners. In 1884 he made a creditable race as candidate for congress from the fourth district on the republican ticket, and it is generally conceded that he was entitled to the seat. The doctor is a member of Minturn lodge, No. 19, A. F. & A. M. In connection with the Hon. J. J. Woods, then the speaker of the West Virginia house of delegates in the session of 1881, he was instrumental in securing the passage of the law which regulates the practice of medicine and surgery in West Virginia.

E. J. Barcus was born at Point Pleasant, W. Va., December 19, 1865, and is a son of G. W. and Margaret S. (Misner) Barcus. The father was born in Gallia county, Ohio, December 4, 1840, his parents being Elijah and Christine (Miller) Barcus. Both the father and the mother were natives of Virginia and of English descent. They were the progenitors of the following named offspring: George W., Charles P., John M., Julia, Mary and Amelia. The grandparents of our subject were early settlers of Ohio, and there their son, George W. Barcus, was born, reared and married, Margaret Misner becoming his wife. She was born at Maysville, Ky., about 1832, and died in Gallipolis, Ohio, March 30, 1882. The father died in Kansas, August 6, 1888, having devoted his life to the occupation of farming. Soon after his marriage he took up his residence in Point Pleasant, where he followed various occupations up to about 1877. The subject of this sketch was the only child of his parents. He was reared and received his education in Point Pleasant. He was thrown on his own resources at the death of his mother, and followed various kinds of business for a livelihood. For two years last past he has been a dealer in staple and fancy groceries in Point Pleasant, in which business he has met with a fair share of success. Mr. Barcus is a member of the Minturn lodge, No. 19, A. F. & A. M., also of the I. O. O. F., No. 33, at Point Pleasant, and he is a member of the Methodist Episcopal church. He is a bright, progressive and enterprising man, entirely self-made, and he has a bright future before him.

William Barnett, the subject of this sketch, was born in 1829, in Mason county, where he has since resided. His father was Robert Barnett, who was a native of Greenbrier county, W. Va., born in 1801, and came to Mason county when a boy about eleven years of age. He was a son of William Barnett, who came to Mason county in 1812. William Barnett married a Miss McGuire and their children were Elizabeth, Robert, Polly, John, Rebecca, William, Nancy, James and Annie. William Barnett was a farmer and at his death resided on a farm on Three Mile Kanawha. His son, Robert Barnett, married Elizabeth Ray-

burn, and to them were born the following children: Mary, Evaline, Henry, William, Robert, Allen, Enos, Emily, Elliott, Eliza J., Sarah Ann, Ellen, George W., Mariah and Preston. Robert Barnett owned 1,400 acres of land previous to his death, which occurred in 1882. His son, William Barnett, the immediate subject of this sketch, was married in 1848 to Miss Harrison and they have been the parents of the following children: William H., Rosanna M., Elyina J., Nancy A., Elizabeth S., Permelia F., Evalina A., Francis L., Beverly S., Addie O., John E. and Emma S. In 1862, in answer to his country's call, Mr. Barnett enlisted in the Thirteenth Virginia infantry and served until his discharge, 1865, in Wheeling, W. Va. He took part with his regiment in the following important battles: Lynchburg, Kernstown, second Winchester, Fisher's Hill and Cedar Creek. Mr. Barnett after the war resumed the occupation of farming, which has always been his business. He has met with success in his calling and now owns 600 acres of land, half of which is in Jackson and the other half in Mason county, W. Va.

Charles T. Beale, the subject of our sketch, was born in Shenandoah county, Va., in 1808, and came to Mason county, W. Va., when a boy only five years of age, where he has ever since continued to reside. His parents were James and Mary (Steenbergen) Beale, the former born in 1786 in Shenandoah county. They were married in 1806 and the fruit of their union was the following list of children: Charles T., Betsey Ann, Mary, William and Catherine. James Beale became a resident of Mason county, in 1813. He was the son of Col. Tavener Beale, of revolutionary fame, who joined Gen. Muhlenburg at the town of Woodstock in the valley of Virginia. Readers of revolutionary history will remember the story of Gen. Muhlenburg who, dressed in uniform but covered with the ministerial gown, preached his sermon, then coming down from the pulpit threw off his gown and made a rousing exhortation, full of patriotic defiance of England, closing with: "There is a time for all things, and now is the time to fight." After finishing his fiery discourse, he went to the church door and in the street and called for volunteers and in a short time enlisted a company of 300 men. It was at this juncture that Tavener Beale joined the command of the warrior-preacher and he remained with him until the close of the war. Col. Beale and Gen. Muhlenburg became quite intimate and spent many of their summers together at one of the Virginia springs, now Orkney, camping out in tents with their families. After the war Col. Beale resumed the occupation of farming on what is known as the Mount Airy estate, near Mt. Jackson, Va., where he lived for some time. He afterward went to Botetourt county, Va., where he died at the age of eighty-six. He was married to a Miss Hite and their children were: John, Thomas, Charles, James, Eliza-

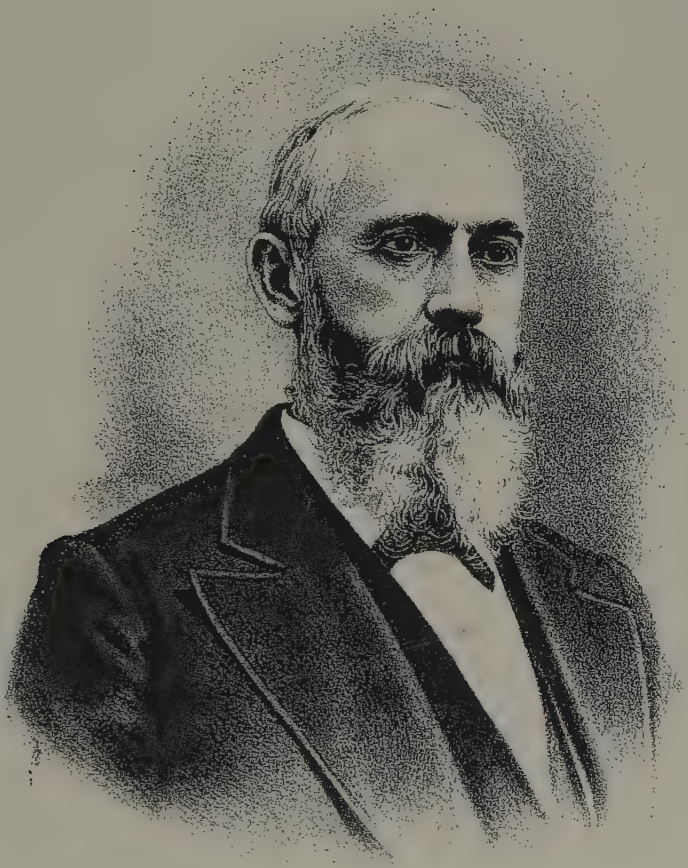
beth, Mary and Catherine. J. M. H. Beale enlisted in the war of 1812, but peace being declared, he did not enter the service. He was ever afterward called Col. Beale. After coming to Mason county, W. Va., he bought 1000 acres of land upon which the old homestead now stands. While living at Pt. Pleasant he went on a visit in 1866 to his daughter Mary (Beale) Thompson in Putnam county, and while there was taken sick and died. His remains were taken back to the old homestead and placed in the family cemetery. During his day Col. J. M. H. Beale was quite a distinguished man. He represented the fourteenth district of Virginia in congress for four years. Afterward removing to Shenandoah county, Va., he represented that district for four years. This was during the administration of president Andrew Jackson. The subject of our sketch, Charles T. Beale, has always been recognized in his neighborhood as a progressive farmer and a leader in everything relating to agriculture. He and his uncle, Mr. Steenbergen, were the first to introduce the Short-horn cattle into Mason county. Chiefly as the result of their enterprise the county is now recognized as one of the most important of the cattle-breeding counties in the state. Mr. Beale has added to the old homestead until he now owns 4,500 acres of land in one body. In 1838 he was married to Rebecca Harneas and the union was blessed with the birth of the following named children: Frances H., Mary, James M. H., Eliza V., Rebecca W. and Eleanor M., all of whom live in Mason county except Eleanor, who resides in Lexington, Ky.

James M. H. Beale was born May 24th, 1842, in Mason county, W. Va., on the old homestead where his father, whose biography appears elsewhere in this volume, now resides. He remained with his father until the age of twenty-nine, when he was married to Julia D. Lewis. This event took place on May 3, 1871, immediately after which they moved upon a farm near the paternal homestead, where they have ever since resided. The union was productive of the following named children: Mary V., Charles T., William L., Julia L, John T., Josephine D., and Rebecca. All of the above mentioned children are living at home with their parents. Mr. Beale received his education from private tutors at his father's home and at Pt. Pleasant, after which he went to Marshall academy and subsequently completed his course at the Virginia military institute, which he attended for two years. The wife of Mr. Beale is a daughter of John D. Lewis and her mother was a daughter of Jacob Darneale, a salt maker of Kanawha county, W. Va. He resided there a number of years and then went to Ray county, Mo., where he spent the rest of his days. Mrs. Beale was educated at Hollin's institute, Roanoke county, Va., and also attended a private school in Baltimore, kept by Miss Rivers. Mr. Beale has always followed the

occupation of farming in which he has met with success and he is recognized as among the progressive farmers of his county. He owns 700 acres of land, of which 250 is Ohio bottom and 450 upland. Fraternally he is a member of the order of Master Masons, and his standing in the community is among the best.

John W. Bechtle was born in 1852 in Mason county, W. Va., and he has made his home there ever since. His father was Van R. Bechtle and he was a son of George Bechtle, both natives of Shenandoah county, Va. The last mentioned came to Mason county, W. Va., about 1813 and located on what was then known as Mercer's Bottom. He purchased 300 acres of land and followed the business of farming and wagon maker until his death, which occurred in 1856. For about thirty years he was a member of the Methodist church and he was connected with the militia at Pt. Pleasant. His son, Van R. Bechtle, was a a boy ten years old when his father located in Mason county. He remained there the rest of his life. his death occurring when he was sixty-one years of age. At the time of his marriage his father made him a present of 150 acres of land. His marriage took place in 1840 and his children were as follows: Sarah, Mary, Carlyle, J. W., and Squire. The mother of these children is a native of Clark county, Ohio, is now sixty-four years of age, and lives with her son who is the subject of this sketch. John Bechtle's marriage occurred in 1873, his bride being Rebecca J. Doss and the family register shows the following named children: Joseph W., Eliza, George E., John A., Charles V., Arizona and Grover C. Mrs. Bechtle was born October 8, 1853, and she is a daughter of John Doss of Mason county. Mr. Bechtle is a very enterprising farmer and during an industrious life has accumulated a comfortable piece of property and a pleasant home, which is surrounded by all that one could reasonably require. He is a member in good standing of the Methodist Episcopal church and has the good will of all who know him.

R. S. Bickel, a merchant tailor of Pt. Pleasant, was born in Gallia, Ohio, January 9, 1824, and is the son of Anthony and Dinah (Chapel) Bickel. The father was born in Botetourt county, Va., April 30, 1790, and died in Gallia county, March 12, 1860. His parents were natives of Germany, born on the Rhine near the city of Wurms, and emigrated to Virginia, where they spent the rest of their days. Their children numbered five, namely, James, Frederick, Anthony, Michael, and Mary. Anthony Bickel was reared and married in his native state, Dinah Chapel becoming his wife. She was born in North Carolina May 19, 1796, of English lineage. Anthony and Dinah Bickel were parents of the following named children: Aaron, Abraham (deceased), Mary, Malinda, Robert S., Charles B., Nancy, Salmon (deceased), and George. In 1818 the parents removed from Virginia to Ohio,



Yours Truly
R. S. Bickel

and settled on a farm in Green township, Gallia county, where they lived and died respected members of the Methodist Episcopal church in Gallia county. The father devoted his life to farming. Our subject received a limited school education, which he broadened by individual study of books, etc., and after remaining under the parental roof until he was seventeen years of age, he began life for himself. At Gallipolis, Ohio, he learned the tailor's trade, which has been his vocation throughout life. He began business at Barboursville, Cabel county, Va. (now West Virginia) December, 1844, and here while in business his marriage was consummated. August 17, 1845, he was married to Miss Lucinda A. Toler, a native of Logan county, Va. (now West Virginia), of English descent. Their children who lived to maturity were as follows: Dinah E., deceased; Mary F., Anthony E., deceased; William H. and Ida E. The mother of these children departed this life in 1876. In 1878 Mr. Bickel took for his second wife Miss Emma E. Chancellor, a native of Parkersburg, W. Va. She is yet living. In July of 1846 he located at Pt. Pleasant, W. Va., where he has since continued to actively follow his trade of tailoring. He began life with very limited capital but has been quite successful and is now well situated in the world. He is interested in the insurance business, being agent for three companies, the Phoenix, of Hartford, Conn., Fire and Marine, of Wheeling and the Parkersburg Fire Co. He and his family are zealous members of the Methodist Episcopal church, south, at Pt. Pleasant, of which he has been steward for over thirty years. For twenty-five years he has been lay member of the annual conference of the church and was twice chosen as a delegate to the general conference of his church. The first general conference was held at Louisville, Ky., 1874, the second at Atlanta, Ga., in 1882. In 1858 Mr. Bickel became a Master Mason, and has filled all the offices of the Blue Lodge, and in 1871 was district deputy of the grand lodge of West Virginia. He is now a member of the Minturn lodge No. 19, A. F. and A. M., of Pt. Pleasant. He is also member of Pt. Pleasant chapter No. 5, R. A. M., and holds offices in the chapter. As a citizen his standing is first rate and he enjoys the esteem of a large circle of friends.

Benjamin H. Blagg, the subject of this sketch, was born February 4, 1860, the place of his birth being Lewis county, W. Va. His father was Benjamin H. Blagg, born in 1813, in Pendleton county, Va., and son of Abram and Jane (Jones) Blagg, both natives of eastern Virginia. They were the parents of the following children: John, James, Henry, William and Benjamin. Benjamin H. Blagg, the father of our subject, was married October 3, 1838, in Highland county, Va., to Sarah Spicer, and these were their children: Abraham, Francis A., John D., Jane C.,

Hannah C., Mary C., Sarah C., Esther C., Benjamin H. and Charles H. The father of this large family went from Pendleton to Highland county, in 1858, and from there to Upshur county, W. Va. In 1860 he went to Lewis county, where he remained for eighteen years, and then returned Upshur county, where he died January 14, 1883. His wife now resides with her son, Benjamin H., in Union district, Mason county. Mr. Blagg, during his life, was a member of the board of education in Lewis county. He belonged to the Good Templars, also to the Grange, and he and wife were members of the Methodist Episcopal church. Though he followed farming principally, Mr. Blagg was a hatter by trade, and was working at this business in Walkersville, W. Va., at the time that Imboden's confederate cavalry made their raid. His shop, tools and stock being destroyed, he gave up the hatter's business for good. He was also a teacher, which business he kept up for thirty years in connection with farming. His son, Benjamin H. Blagg, became a resident of Mason county in 1883, locating on a farm in Union district, where he now resides. August 23, 1883, he was married in Upshur county, to Luemma Crawford, a daughter of Joseph and Lydia (Eagle) Crawford. Their children are: Alva H. (deceased), Donald O. and Susan F. Mr. Blagg's business has been farming in season and teaching during the winter, which latter occupation he has been engaged in eleven years. In 1888 he was elected justice of the peace in Union district. He and wife are both church members. Their children represent the seventh generation of the family that have lived in Virginia and West Virginia, respectively.

Z. T. J. Blain was born October 13, 1827, in Morgan county, Ohio, being the son of William H. Blain. The latter was a native of West Virginia, being born at Wheeling in 1803. His father died before his birth and he lived with his mother until bound out to work when a small boy. Afterward he went to live with a man by the name of William Alexander, at Letart Falls. He followed boating for some time, and in 1841 settled in Clendenin district, where he lived the rest of his days, his death occurring in 1867, in which year his wife also died. The children born to them were as follows: Z. T. J. Blain, Rebecca, Isaiah, Eldridge, Mary and Matilda (twins), Martha, William and Francis. William Blain was engaged in farming all of his life and was a member of the Methodist church for eight years before his death. The subject of our sketch came to Mason county when thirteen years of age. He remained at home until he was twenty-six years old, when he was married to Amanda Daigh, a daughter of Hugh Daigh. The result of the marriage which took place September 7, 1854, was the following children: Luella, Mary, William, Cynthia, Charles, Hugh, Nancy, John, Nora and

Sterling. All of these live in Mason county, W. Va., except Luella, who resides in Bates county, Mo. He purchased 379 acres of land adjoining the old homestead place, and afterward bought the homestead, being now in possession of 460 acres. Amanda died June 12, 1876, and Mr. Blain took for his second wife Mary J. Mulford, a daughter of Abraham Mulford, whom he married September 19, 1877, and lived with her until October 3, 1887. Mr. Blain was for a third time married to Lynthia Ormiston, February 27, 1889, a daughter of John and Dencie Ormiston, with whom he is now living. Mr. Blain is a member of the Baptist church, to which he has belonged for twenty-eight years.

Philip Blazer was born in 1832, October 17, in Gallia county, Ohio. His father was Peter Blazer, who was born in Washington county, Penn., in 1790, and in 1800 came to Gallia county with his parents and settled on a farm. He was the son of Jacob Blazer, of German descent. Peter Blazer remained with his father for twenty-four years, and in 1814 married Frances B. Atkinson. In 1828 he located on a farm in Gallia county, where he spent the remainder of his days. His children were as follows: Joseph, Jacob, Richard (deceased), Philip, Maria, Elizabeth J., Julia A., Sallie P., Permelia and Temperance (deceased). All the children reside in Gallia county, Ohio, except Permelia, who is at Omaha, Neb. Peter Blazer was a soldier in the war of 1812, and a farmer by occupation. His wife was a native of Shenandoah valley, Va., and died in 1875, at the age of eighty-four. Philip Blazer, the subject of our sketch, remained with his father until his death, which occurred in 1854. At the age of twenty-two he commenced boating on the Ohio river, which he followed for two years, and then farmed for several years. During the gold excitement in 1859, he went to California, where he remained until 1861, and then came back to Gallia county. In September, 1862, he enlisted in the Seventh Ohio cavalry as a private, but was successively promoted to be sergeant, then second lieutenant and finally first lieutenant. He remained in the army until the close of the war, and in 1856 was married to Caroline C. Safford, a granddaughter of Col. Robert Safford, who cut the first tree where Gallipolis now stands. He was a famous character in pioneer days, and figured conspicuously in the stirring events of those trying times. Col. Safford acted as guide for the French when they came down the Ohio river and settled what is now known as Gallipolis, Ohio, which event occurred in 1790. He was a colonel in the war of 1812, and represented Gallia county in the state legislature. A son of this Col. Safford, by the same name, was the father of Mrs. Caroline Blazer above mentioned. He was born July 4, 1800, was a farmer by occupation, and died in 1865, while his wife survived until 1877. The old pioneer, Col. Robert Safford, lived to the ripe old age of ninety-eight, and sur-

vived uutil the year 1863. He was a famous Indian scout in his younger days, and roved the wilderness hunting and fighting with the illustrious Daniel Boone. It is said that there is a wolf trap still to be seen at Columbus, Ohio, that was once used by Daniel Boone and Col. Safford when this country was an unbroken wilderness. Mr. Philip Blazer still has a cane that was made by Col. Safford on the day that his son Robert was born. It is needless to say that it is cherished in the family as a precious relic. The children of Mr. and Mrs. Philip Blazer were as follows: M. F., Harry B., William R., Nannie B. and Eugene R. M. F. is now engaged in the lumber business in Fayette county, W. Va.; Harry B. is a telegraph operator at Glenwood, Mason county, and his brotner Eugene is studying the same business under him. William R. is a farmer in Cherokee county, Mo., and Nannie B. is the wife of John Hereford, and reside in the Hannan district. The father and mother reside on the farm in Hannan district, where they settled in 1874.

Mathew Brannon was born in 1825 in Ireland, and when a boy came to the state of New York from the old country. His father was Thomas Brannon, also a native of the Emerald Isle, where he lived all his life until his death, which took place in 1860. He married Ellen Honnigan and their family consisted of the following children: Thomas, Bridget, Margaret, Ellen and Mathew. The old gentleman was a farmer by occupation, and a devout member of the Catholic church. The subject of our sketch, after arriving in New York, worked at mining in the states of Pennsylvania, Ohio, Virginia, Illinois and Missouri. Finally, after various wanderings, he settled in Mason county, W. Va., in 1859, and there he has made his home ever since. He was located in Mason City until 1870, and then moved to a farm in Cologne district. Mr. Brannon's marriage took place in 1861, July 8th, his bride being Bridget Farry, and the following is a list of their children: Ellen, Mary, Maggie Thomas, Nora and Michael (twins), Martha, Sarah and Blanche. Mr. Brannon and wife are members of the Catholic church, and have a wide circle of friends.

John S. Brannon dates his birth from February 1, 1845, his place of nativity being Gilmore county, W. Va. His father was Samuel Brannon, born May 27, 1823, in the county above mentioned. He was a son of John and Sarah (Flenner) Brannon, both natives of old Virginia. The children of John Brannon and wife were George and Samuel. The last mentioned came to Jackson county, W. Va., in 1845, where he has since resided. In 1844 he was married, in Gilmore county, to Catherine Hardway, and these are their children: John S., Mary, Sarah, Elizabeth, Nancy, Hannah, Louisa, Nettie and Dora. His son, John S. Brannon, who is the subject of our sketch, came to Ma-

son county in 1882, where he remained for two years, then went to Putnam county, and lived there three years and returned to Mason county in 1887. His marriage took place December 16, 1866, in Mason county, to Jane C. Foglesong. The names of their children are: William A., Mary C., Maggie L., Nancy E., George R., Otho D., Herbert V. and Oran C. Mr. Brannon has followed the profession of teaching for twenty-three years. Meantime he has been engaged in farming and has also merchandised for two years. In 1864 he enlisted in the Ninth West Virginia infantry, and was discharged in 1865. He made a good soldier, served faithfully and loyally and took part in the following battles: Cloyd Mount, Lynchburg, Carter's Farm, first Winchester, Martinsburg, Berryville, second Winchester, Fisher's Hill and Cedar Creek. Mr. Brannon and wife are members of the United Brethren church, and are highly respected people in the community where they reside.

Gideon Brown was born in Hannan district, Mason county, April 24, 1864. He lived with his father until he was twenty-two years of age, when he was married to Ella Wallace. This event took place August 13, 1885, and after marriage they moved upon a farm near the old homestead, which has been their home since that time. Mr. Brown is a young man of industrious habits, and is prospering in his business. During his day he has been considerable of a traveler, having been through the states of Kansas, Missouri, Illinois and Indiana. The union of Mr. and Mrs. Brown has been blessed with the birth of one child who was born December 13, 1886, and whom they christened Edward. They are very happy in their home relations, and have many friends.

John Bryan was born in Mason county, W. Va., in 1837, and has lived there all his life, with the exception of a short residence in Cabell county. His parents were John and Catherine (Shope) Bryan. The father was born in Giles county, Va., in 1790, became a resident of Cabell when a young man, and remained there until his death, in 1842. His children were Jacob, William, Gabriel, Richard, John, Lawrence, Nimrod, Margaret, Mary and Martha. John Bryan, Sr., was drafted into the war of 1812, but owing to ill health escaped military service. William Bryan was born in Cabell county, and settled in Mason county, in 1847. He died in 1858. He married Sarah Cremenes, and their children were: Evaline, John, Henry, William, Wesley, Daniel W., Catherine, Betty and Sarah. Nimrod Bryan still lives in Cabell county, at the age of sixty-seven. He married Nancy Spurlock in 1847, and their children were: Matilda, Catherine, Julia, Samantha, Mary (deceased), Gabriel, Jefferson and Robert L. (deceased). Nimrod Bryan has 2,000 acres of land in Cabell county, about one-third of which is under cultivation. John

Bryan, the principal subject of our sketch, was married in 1860, to Elizabeth Pincheon, and they have had a family of the following named children: Charles, Mary, Jennie, Thomas, Rosa, Fanny, Sarah, Emma, James and Clarence. John Bryan has been a justice of the peace for eight years, and is now a notary public. He is a surveyor by profession, but farming has been the chief occupation of his life. In 1858, his father left him 100 acres of land to which he has added 700 acres.

J. W. Bryan was born in Gallia county, Ohio, December 24, 1837, his parents being Byrd and Dianna (Cole) Bryan. The father was born in old Virginia and died in Ohio. The mother was a native of Rhode Island, and departed this life at Pt. Pleasant, W. Va. Both she and her husband were of English descent and they were married in Washington county, Ohio. They were the parents of three sons and two daughters. The father, who settled in Gallia county, Ohio, was a farmer by occupation. J. W. Bryan, the immediate subject of this sketch, was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools and the Gallia academy at Gallipolis, Ohio. When he was seventeen years of age his father died and he took charge of the home farm, operating the same until 1867, in which year he came to Pt. Pleasant, where he has since remained. As soon as he came there he embarked in the grocery business, which he continued until 1886, when, with a partner, he engaged in the harness and insurance business which is still his occupation. His nephew, Nathaniel L. Bryan, is associated with him in business, and they have the only harness shop and store in Pt. Pleasant. They represent the following insurance companies: Royal, of Liverpool; Queen, of Liverpool; Weston, of Toronto, Canada; Pennsylvania Fire, of Erie, Penn.; Standard, of Wheeling; Mutual Life, of New York, and Standard Accident, of Detroit. January 28, 1874, Mr. Bryan was married at Point Pleasant, to Miss Elizabeth G. Jones, and the union has proved a very happy one. Mr. Bryan began life with limited capital, but by industry has worked his way up to a substantial business success. He now enjoys a firm position in the business and social life of Pt. Pleasant, of which he is one of the most successful business men.

Seth Bumgarner is a son of Samuel Bumgarner, who was born in Shenandoah county, Va., in the year 1794. The latter became a resident of Mason county at about six years of age and resided there until his death in November, 1850. He was a son of David Bumgarner, one of the pioneer settlers of Mason county. His marriage with Rebecca Oliver occurred about the year 1815, and to them were born Lewis T., Nancy, Reason, John, Charles, Sarah, David, Seth, Margaret, William and Calvin. While yet in his youth, Samuel Bumgarner enlisted in the war of 1812 and in the ranks assisted in the building of Fort

Meigs. Throughout his life he followed the occupation of a farmer. Seth Bumgarner was born October 11, 1832, in Mason county, W. Va., in sight of the home where he now lives. His early years were passed under the parental roof and he was engaged in agriculture. At the age of eighteen years he commenced to learn the trade of a carpenter, and from that time to the present that has been his principal calling. His marriage with Mary A. Capehart was solemnized in 1856 in Mason county. She was a daughter of Henry and Mary (Hogg) Capehart. To Mr. and Mrs. Bumgarner have been born the following children: John T., Charles S., George T., Martha E., Olivia, William, Tobias A. and Seth. Mr. Bumgarner has been honored by his neighbors with the election to the offices of justice of the peace and supervisor of Graham district.

Joseph Burnside was born in Boone county, Va., April 9, 1840, being a son of Joseph and Lucinda (Fields) Burnside. The father was born in Roanoke county, Va., in 1798, and died in Middleport, Ohio, in 1872. The mother was born in Bedford county, Va., in 1814, and died in Middleport in 1882. Their marriage resulted in the birth of the twins, Joseph and Lucinda, and Andrew J. (deceased). The father first wedded Sallie Harless, and their children were: Nancy, Benjamin, James, Mary, Rhoda and Dorcas. The mother was first wedded to Mr. Slack, and her children were: John, Jane and Sarah. Our subject's paternal grandfather was Joseph Burnside, who was a Virginian of Irish descent, served in the revolutionary war, and is said to have been in the battle of Pt. Pleasant in 1774. In 1848, our subject's parents removed from Boone county to Kanawha county. In 1854 removed to Mason county, and in 1855 settled in Middleport, Ohio, where they continued to live until their respective deaths. They were lifelong and zealous members of the Baptist church, and although unlicensed, he did much preaching. Their son, Joseph, who is the immediate subject of this sketch, was but fifteen years of age when his parents settled in Middleport, Ohio. He received a limited education, which has since been added to by observation and experience. He worked with his father and experts at carpentering until 1861, when he first began his career as a boatman. During the next fifteen years he was employed mainly with the Ohio River and the Kanawha and Ohio River Salt companies, being mostly stationed at Middleport, Ohio, where he acted as overseer, salesman and collector of proceeds for his employers. For about four years of the time he was on the road as their salesman, and at the same time acted as inspector of their salt in the yards. During the civil war he had a brief career as an enlisted private in the One Hundred and Fortieth Ohio state militia, served his time out and received an honorable discharge. In 1875 Mr. Burnside was selected to take tow-boats

up the Kanawha river, where tow-boating had previously proved difficult. In performance of this duty he took charge of the steamer "Albion," which worked in that trade. He has also run the following boats for Mr. S. F. Dana: "Oil Valley," "D. T. Lane," "Liberty No. 4," "George F. Dana," and is now on the steamer 'John Dana." For the last twelve years he has been an employe of S. F. Dana, of Cincinnati. In 1863 Mr. Burnside was united in wedlock with Elizabeth J. Martin, who was born in Pomeroy, Ohio, February 28, 1843. Following is a list of the children: Edwin A., Katie M., Harry F., Estella B., Nellie J., Rush H. and Dana N. Since the spring of 1890, Mr. Burnside and his family have resided in Mason county, near Henderson postoffice, in the Kanawha valley, where he purchased a farm and built a nice residence. He is a Master Mason, a member of Middleport (Ohio) lodge, I. O. O. F., and a member of the G. A. R. His residence is three-quarters of a mile up the Kanawha river, south side.

Charles S. Chapman, a young and progressive citizen of Hartford City, W. Va., was born at the place of his residence, July 27, 1859, and is the son of Erasmus Chapman. The latter is one of the oldest native born citizens in the Kanawha valley, being born in Cabell county, W. Va., May 6, 1806. He was a son of Joseph E. and Lucy (Morris) Chapman, the parents being natives of Culpepper county, Va. Their marriage was consummated in Putnam county, where their respective parents settled in a very early day. The marriage resulted in the birth of the following named children: Minta (deceased), Erasmus, William (deceased), John (deceased), Henry, Joshua (deceased), Joseph, Nancy (deceased), and Letitia (deceased). The father, Joseph E. Chapman, was a son of John and Jane (Donaho) Chapman, natives of the "Old Dominion," and the parents of Lucy (Morris) Chapman were natives of the same state. After the marriage of Joseph and Lucy Chapman, they settled in Cabell county, but in 1816, they bought land in what now is Putnam county, and here the husband followed for many years the occupation of farming. He lived a long and useful life, and died at his son Erasmus' home, in Hartford City, where he lies buried. He was over ninety years of age when he was called to join the "silent majority" in the great beyond. Erasmus Chapman grew to manhood in Kanawha valley, and received but a limited education. In early life he began work in the salt manufactory, and has spent a long and useful life in that industry. He removed from Putnam county to West Columbia, January 3, 1851, and in 1857 established his home in Hartford City, where he now resides. In 1833 he married Charlotte Dudding, and their union was blessed with the birth of the following children: Margaret L., John F., Joseph W., James H., Joshua M., Franklin, Le-

titia, Ursila, Virginia and Nancy E. About 1850, the mother's death occurred, and Mr. Chapman married Martha A. Dodson, after living in Hartford a few years, and their marriage resulted in the birth of the following children: Charles S., Lycurgus F., Maynard, Dimina D., Talbott A., George C. and Joel A. The father has been a faithful member of the Baptist church, and in politics has been a life-long democrat. Charles S. Chapman, the immediate subject of this sketch, was reared in his native state, and given a good common school education. Since his youth he has been identified with the salt industry, working at this occupation up to October, 1888. In that year he became a salesman in the general merchandise store of the Liverpool Coal and Salt company, at Hartford City. In 1889 he was united in marriage with Miss Belle M. Hutchinson, of Mason. Mr. Chapman is a leading representative citizen, a democrat in politics, and is a Mason of the Blue lodge of Clifton, and also belongs to the Pt. Pleasant chapter. For two years he acted as member of the board of education, at Hartford City, and served as secretary and president of the same. He was recorder of the city for one term and also acted as mayor for the same length of time, filling both offices to the entire satisfaction of all concerned. He and his wife are highly respected and have the esteem of all who know them. He made the race for legislature on the democratic ticket, reducing the republican majority in his native county (Mason), from 400 to 26 votes.

James E. B. Clendenin was born in Mason county, W. Va., September 25, 1825, the son of Charles and Sophia (Neal) Clendenin, The father was a son of William Clendenin, a native of Ireland, who was born in 1753, and who married Margaret Hanly. William Clendenin was in the battle of Pt. Pleasant, being at that time, a resident of Lewisburg. He afterward went to Charleston and took command of a company of men who had assembled there to defend the settlement against the Indians. The marriage of William Clendenin and Margaret Hanly took place about 1783, their children being as follows: Elizabeth, Sophia, Charles, John, Andrew and Annie. Charles Clendenin was born in Greenbrier county, W. Va., and came at an early date to Mason county, with his father, William Clendenin, who built the first cabin in what is now Clendenin district. His brother, George, who lived at Charleston at an early day, has the honor of having the city named by him. This George Clendenin, served with his brother, William, in the famous battle of Pt. Pleasant. Charles Clendenin was married to Sophia Neal about 1806, in Mason county, and their children were as follows: William, who was born October 4, 1808, and lost his life February 25, 1846, by drowning at the mouth of the Kanawha river, while a passenger on a steamboat; John, Cynthia A., Sallie, Emily, Charles A., who

now resides at Santiago, Cal.; Margaret, James Edward Beale and Rachel L. James E. B. Clendenin, the subject of this sketch, made his home with his father until 1862, and on October 30, of that year, was married to Agnes A. Sterrett, a daughter of Washington Sterrett. The marriage resulted in the birth of the following named children: Sophia Elizabeth and Charles Washington, both of whom live at home with their parents. Before his marriage, Mr. Clendenin acted as deputy sheriff for two years, and was afterward elected to that office for two years. After his marriage, he purchased the old homestead place of 360 acres, to which he has since added 240 acres, the most of which land is in a state of good cultivation. His father, Charles Clendenin, was for a number of years during his life, a magistrate, which made him a member of the county court. He was also sheriff of the county for a number of years, held the position of major of militia, and was brigade inspector for several years. He was a member of the legislature for several terms, as was also his father, both of whom represented Mason county. Mr. James Clendenin, the subject of our sketch, held the office of county commissioner for two years, and was elected judge of the county court, but the law did away with that tribunal before he had an opportunity to take possession of the office. For several years, he was lieutenant colonel of the militia of Mason county. He is a leading and influential citizen, and recognized as one of the progressive and enterprizing farmers of Mason county.

Charles Clifton, the son of Meredith F. and Elizabeth (Brown) Clifton, was born at White Sulphur Springs, September 28, 1849. Both parents were Virginians by birth, and after living in Virginia a short time after their marriage, they removed to Henry county, Ind., in 1850. There the subject of this sketch was reared and given a common school education in the Middletown schools. He remained with his parents until sixteen years of age, and then began the struggle of life for himself, commencing as a clerk in a general merchandise store at Newcastle. Subsequently he traveled through portions of Indiana, as collector for the Weed Sewing Machine company. He attended Miami commercial college, at Dayton, Ohio, at his own expense, and was graduated therefrom at the age of twenty-three. For some time he filled the position of book-keeper in a leading Dayton hotel, afterward kept books in Indiana, and later he became assistant book-keeper for the G. Y. Roots company, at Cincinnati. In 1880, he came to Mason county, W. Va., where he managed the salt furnace, owned by G. Y. Roots and others. In 1882, he took charge of what is now the salt furnace of the Liverpool Salt and Coal company, and now superintends that industry, being the secretary of the corporation. Mr. Clifton is a practical business man and a trusted employe. His success is attributable en-

tirely to his own energy, hard work and determination to succeed. At Hagerstown, Ind., in 1878, he was united in marriage with Eoline Thompson, and four children have been born to them. Mr. Clifton is a member of the Masonic order of the I. O. O. F., the Encampment and the K. of P.

Augustus Cobb was born in 1823, in Rockingham county, N. C. His parents were Mathew and Mary (North) Cobb. The first mentioned was a native of England, born in 1791, and was one of four brothers who emigrated from the old country to Virginia in 1816. John went to Maryland, Noah to Georgia, one settled in Virginia, and Mathew tried his fortunes in North Carolina, in which state he lived and died. Mathew Cobb and Mary North were married in 1809 and their children were Pleasant, Leroy M., Elizabeth, Robert L., Augustus and Martha. The subject of our sketch remained with his father until the age of sixteen, and then spent two years in traveling in Tennessee, Alabama, Mississippi and Missouri. After his wanderings, he finally landed in Mason county, W. Va., in 1845, and located at Hanley's Landing, where he followed tailoring for five years. Subsequently he settled on a farm where he now resides. He was married June, 1847, to Rhoda Frances Elmore, daughter of William Elmore. Their children's names are as follows: Lavinia, Nancy, Ellen, Louis F., Emirilus, John W., Richard B., Mary T., William E., George R. and Lizzie M. In 1872, Mr. Cobb was elected as one of the supervisors of the county, which office he filled satisfactorily. Mr. Cobb has been a very extensive fruit dealer and enjoys considerable local fame in that interesting department of agriculture. The famous Rome Beauty apple originated in Lawrence county, Ohio, and Mr. Cobb took the premium on his exhibit of those apples at the fair held in that county.

William Cooper was born August 18, 1831, in Mason county, on the farm where he now resides. His father was Leonard Cooper, who was the first male child born at Pt. Pleasant, the event taking place December 25, 1791. Leonard was a son of Maj. L. Cooper, who was an officer in a Maryland regiment during the famous battle of Pt. Pleasant, and was one of the earliest settlers at the last mentioned place. He built a blockhouse near the mouth of Eight Mile creek on a farm now owned by G. W. Pullen, and there his death occurred. Leonard Cooper remained in Mason county until 1811, when he went to Missouri, but he only remained there for one year when he returned to the scenes of his birth. He purchased a farm in Arbuckle district and remained on the same until his death, which occurred October 18, 1853. After the battle of Pt. Pleasant, the grandfather of our subject visited what is now Mason county, and while there met with some stirring adventures. On one occasion

when at the mouth of Coal river he and a Mr. Teays and a third man, whose name is unknown, were encamped. In the morning Cooper and Teays started out to hunt their horses leaving the third man to watch the camp. During the search for their animals they were attacked by a band of Indians who shot Mr. Teays dead in his tracks, and it is believed that the third party, who was left to watch the camp, also fell a victim to the murderous savages. Maj. Cooper by leaving his horse and fleeing on foot to the mountains managed to escape the fate which had overtaken his less fortunate companions. Leonard Cooper, who followed farming for an occupation, married Betsy McDermot who was born near Belfast, Ireland, in 1791, and was brought to this country when about two years of age. Their marriage took place in 1821, and their children were as follows: Cloriann, Harriet, Hannah, William, Sarah M. and Nancy Virginia. William Cooper, the subject of our sketch was married in 1872, to Virginia Knuckles, and they have had the following named children: Sarah, Claiborne, Leonard K., Elizabeth, Mary, Fanny and Isaac. Mr. Cooper has always been a farmer, and the place that he lives on is the same that was purchased by his father in 1820. Fraternally he belongs to the old and respected order of Master Masons. He is an upright man, a clever neighbor and a good citizen in all that the term implies.

Daniel Couch, M. D., a prominent pioneer physician of the Kanawha valley, was born in Hanover county, Va., December 23, 1813, and died in Mason county, W. Va., at an advanced age. He was a son of Daniel and Sarah (Richardson) Couch, the father being born in Williamsburg, Va., April 19, 1787, and died in Mason county, December 5, 1824. His wife, Sarah Richardson, was born in Hanover county, Va., June 21, 1782, and died in Mason county, November 16, 1852. The marriage of Daniel Couch and Sarah Richardson took place January 20, 1807, and they removed to Mason county, W. Va., October, 1821. Daniel Couch died a few years after arriving in the Kanawha valley, leaving his wife with a large family of young and helpless children on a farm that was heavily timbered and without improvements except a few acres of partially cleared land and a log cabin. Her son, Daniel, who is the immediate subject of this sketch, and the other children, labored as best they could on the farm and occasionally attended school for a few months in the winter when the sparsely settled neighborhood could employ a teacher. About the year 1826, young Daniel Couch went back to Hanover county, where for some time he was a member of the family of his uncle, William Richardson. Here he had an opportunity of attending a school taught by a private tutor employed in the family of his uncle. Returning to Mason county, he worked on the farm for some time, then engaged as a clerk in a

store at Gallipolis, and later, in the store of his brother-in-law, Samuel McCulloch, at Pt. Pleasant. Subsequently he studied medicine with the late Samuel G. Shaw, of Pt. Pleasant, and attended medical lectures at Lexington, Ky. After finishing his studies, he settled at Pt. Pleasant, where, for many years, he practiced his profession in partnership with his former preceptor, Dr. S. G. Shaw. Dr. Couch married Catherine Hereford, daughter of Robert Hereford, formerly a citizen of Mason county, now deceased. Several children were born to this marriage, who, subsequent to the death of their father, removed to the west where their relatives finally lost trace of them. In addition to the subject of this sketch, the following is a list of the children born to Daniel Couch, Sr., and Sarah Richardson, his wife: Samuel, born August 9, 1808, and died in Mason county, April 24, 1884; Martha Ann, wife of Samuel McCulloch, born October 23, 1810, and died December 13, 1890; Sarah R., born July 1, 1812, died September 29, 1813; Margaret A., born December 13, 1815, and died in Mason county; John R., born December 24, 1817, and died October 1, 1834; William F., born September 10, 1819, died February 20, 1834; James H., born in Hanover county, Va., August 3, 1821, and now a resident of Mason county; Deborah B., born August 1, 1823, and died at Lewisburg, Va., August 16, 1839.

John R. Couch is a son of James H. and Helen J. Couch, of whom mention is elsewhere made. He was born October 1, 1849, at Pt. Pleasant. He remained at home until the age of seventeen, engaged in the mercantile business at Pt. Pleasant for two years, and then went to California, where he staid about two years. While in that state his principal business was dealing ir stock. Returning from California, Mr. Couch remained at home on his father's farm for about four years. He then held the position of deputy sheriff for a year, after which he engaged with the Hartford City Salt Co., but only remained with them a few months. Next he located on a farm in Arbuckle district, where he now resides. Mr. Couch was married September 29, 1880, to Kate Day, a daughter of Benjamin and Martha (Waugh) Day. Their union resulted in the birth of the following named children: John M. C., Howard B., Harry E. and Trix. Mr. Couch was once elected justice of the peace, but only held the office for a year, when he resigned. Besides his home farm of 237 acres in Arbuckle district, he also owns 130 acres on Five Mile creek. He has been recently prosperous in business and is a popular citizen.

Peter S. Couch was born May 30, 1842, in Mason county, W. Va., on the same farm where he now resides. He is the son of Samuel and Sarah Ann (Steenbergen) Couch, the father a native of Goochland county, Va., born in 1808. His grandfather was Daniel Couch, who came to Mason county in 1820, and settled

on a farm in what is now known as Arbuckle district. He spent the rest of his days there, his death occurring December 5, 1824. His wife, whose maiden name was Sarah Richardson, lived until November 16, 1852. Their children were named, Samuel, Martha Ann, Sarah R., Daniel, Margaret A., John R., William F., James H. and Deborah B. Samuel Couch lived and died on a part of the farm which his father purchased in Mason county. His death took place April 24, 1884. He was married May 5, 1840, to Sarah Ann Steenbergen, a daughter of Peter H. Steenbergen, and their children were Peter S., Daniel G. and Sarah F. Samuel Couch was a farmer by occupation. He and his wife were members of the Presbyterian church. Peter S. Couch, the subject of our sketch, was married May 5, 1868, to Mary C. Eastham, a daughter of A. G. and Mary F. Eastham, of Mason county. Mr. Couch has been a farmer all his life, with a fair share of success in business.

Archibald Crary, M. D., a practicing physician of Hartford City, W. Va., dates his birth from September 29, 1846, the place of his nativity being Pomeroy, Ohio. His paternal great grandfather was Col. Archibald Crary, of Scottish Highland lineage. During the American Revolution he was an officer in the Rhode Island continental line. He was the progenitor of a numerous offspring, among whom were Archibald, who died without issue, and Frederick. The latter is thought to have been born in Rhode Island, March, 1771. December 19, 1792, at Wakefield, R. I., he wedded Lydia Updike, born April 27, 1773. Their children were: Lodawick N., Lydia A., William A., Frederick G. and James L. The father of these children died at Fairfield, Conn., February 6, 1831. He was a merchant by occupation. His wife belonged to the Updike family, who were quite prominent in the early settlement of Rhode Island. She died in Pomeroy, Ohio, in 1866. Col. Archibald Crary, progenitor of the famin this country, was an original member in the Rhode Island state society of the Cincinnati. James L., youngest son of Frederick Crary, was born April 1, 1806, and married Eunice Waterman, who was born in Athens county in 1823. Their children that reached maturity were: Lodawick U., Archibald and Mary. Prior to his marriage the father became a citizen of Ohio and in 1841 he settled at Pomeroy. James L. Crary was educated for a lawyer, but followed the occupation of a merchant. He died at Middleport, Ohio, April, 1869, and his widow survives him at the age of sixty-seven years, residing with her son, who is the subject of this sketch. Dr. Archibald Crary was given a liberal education at Kenyon college, Gambia, Ohio. It was at first intended to educate him for the ministry of the Episcopal church, but a series of unexpected events caused a change in this purpose and the young man's thoughts were turned to another pro-

fession. Owing to financial disasters that overtook his father, on account of fire which destroyed his stock, young Crary found it necessary to learn the tinner's trade and for some time was in the hardware business with a brother. The venture, however, proved unprofitable, and he was compelled to resort to his trade for means to support himself, family and mother. About this time he began to study medicine in a way which was kept up at odd hours for four years. After many disappointments, trials and adversities, he was at length able to complete a course of lectures at the college of physicians and surgeons, at Baltimore. In 1883 he graduated with honor at the Starling medical college, at Columbus, Ohio. In March of the same year, he located at Hartford City, W. Va., and began what by general consent has resulted in a successful and active practice. He is a member of the Meigs County Medical association and also that of the Ohio Valley. He is a Master Mason, member of Middleport, Ohio, lodge. October 10, 1875, he married Mary S. Whetstone, at Clifton, W. Va. She was born in Meigs county September 11, 1845. Their children are: Herman L. and Jessie L. The doctor and his wife are members of the Episcopal church and have a large circle of friends.

Israel Cullen, who is now a resident of Cooper district, Mason county, is a son of Israel Cullen, who was born in Brooke county, W. Va., in 1796. Israel, Sr., became a resident of Mason county in 1852, and here he spent the remainder of his life, which terminated August 9, 1862. His marriage with Mary Saddler occurred in Brooke county about the year 1815, and resulted in the birth of the following children: Mary, Ann Eliza, Elizabeth, Perry, Ruth A., Esther, Israel, Margaret and Rachel. Mr. Cullen, Sr., was for some time a member of the Pennsylvania legislature from Allegheny county. He was also a minister of the gospel for a number of years. The earlier part of his life was spent upon the river in the capacity of a pilot, but he later pursued the trade of a shoemaker, serving an apprenticeship at Steubenville, Ohio. His wife still survives him at the age of ninety-seven. Israel Cullen, Jr., was born July 27, 1830, at Pittsburg, Penn., and he removed thence in 1852 with his parents and located in Mason county, where his home has ever since been. In 1858 he married Delilah Minturn, a daughter of James C. Minturn. She was born July 23, 1832, in Mason county. The fruit of this union is the following children: James M. and V. C. (twins), Perry D., Samuel P., John W., Rinaldo, Israel and Mary A. Mr. Cullen is one of the esteemed citizens of Cooper district, where he has been president of the board of education, school trustee and road surveyor. Like his father, his early days were spent as a boatman, but his later years have been

passed in that more independent occupation, farming. He owns a farm of 150 acres, upon which he resides in Cooper district.

Rev. R. W. Davis is a Baptist minister, and also a resident farmer of Arbuckle district. His paternal grandfather was David Davis, of South Wales, where a son was born to him named Thomas, who also had a son named Henry, and the last mentioned was united in marriage with Anna Williams, a native of the same country, of South Wales. Their children were Richard W., Jane, Mary, Margaret, Daniel, Maria and Charles. The above named children were the offspring of the father's second marriage. He also had five children by his first wife, viz.: David, Thomas, Ann, Elizabeth and John. In 1842, the father and family emigrated to the United States, and settled in Gallia county, Ohio, where the head of the family lived and followed farming until 1875, when his death occurred. Rev. Richard W. Davis, his son, and the immediate subject of this sketch, was born in South Wales, February 5, 1832, and was nine years of age when brought to the United States by his parents. He grew to manhood in Gallia county, Ohio, where he received a fair common school education. At the Fairmount seminary at Cincinnati, he was educated for the ministry, and at the age of twenty years, began preaching the gospel according to the Baptist faith. He has resided in Mason county, W. Va., since the fall of 1859. February 20, 1860, he was united in wedlock with Miss Ernestina W. Henry, the marriage being consummated in Gallia county. She was born in Allegheny City, Penn., October 2, 1842, her parents being Christian and Wilhelmina (Schæfer) Henry. Mr. and Mrs. Davis have the following named children: Annie, Virgina, Edwin J., William J., Olive E., Una and Lena. Mr. Davis is one of the oldest Baptist ministers of the Kanawha valley, and for eleven years was moderator of Teays' Valley association. He has been industrious in his calling, conscientious in the discharge of his duties, and has done much good in the territory, which has been the scene of his labors.

Edward Edwards was born in South Wales, February 5, 1817, being a son of John and Mary (Davis) Edwards, both of whom were of Welsh birth and descent. Our subject is the oldest of their twelve children, five of whom came to the United States. Two of the family lived in Mason county, viz., our subject and his brother, William, who now resides in Ohio. Edward Edwards is one of the oldest citizens of Mason. He grew to manhood in his native county, where he received a fair education. He learned the business of mining, in which he was employed during his youth. In May, 1842, he landed in the United States and located at the great Western Iron works, sixty miles from Pittsburgh, where he remained six months. Removing to Pittsburg, he found employment in the coal mines for one year, and for the

next ten years was engaged as overseer in opening seven coal banks. In 1853 he secured a position in the coal mines at Middleport, Ohio, and in the fall of the same year located at Mason, W. Va., where he has since remained. He mined coal for about four months, and then took charge as superintendent of the mines, which position he held until 1862. In March of that year he went up the Kanawha and took charge of Dr. John P. Hale's coal mines, where he remained for six years, and then returned to Mason. In 1875 he resumed charge of the coal mines at Mason, which he has ever since continued to manage. For about fifteen years he has been the successful manager of the Hope Salt furnace, at Mason. In fact, ever since coming to Mason county, he has been identified with her salt and coal interests. October 18, 1838, he was married in his native country to Mary Williams, daughter of David and Ann Williams, and a native of Wales. She came with her husband to this country, and proved to him a faithful companion until her death, which occurred in 1889, at their home in Mason. Their marriage was blessed with the following offspring: Catherine, Margaret, Mary Ann, Eliza and John. Mr. Edwards chose for his second wife Mary Davis, daughter of William and Sarah (Thomas) Davis, natives of Wales. Mr. Edwards is in every respect a self-made man and enjoys high esteem in the community where he is spending the evening of life.

John Edwards, an enterprising and progressive citizen of Mason, W. Va., was born in Meigs county, Ohio, at Sheffield, September 6, 1854. He is the son of Edward Edwards, a well-known citizen of Mason, of whom a sketch appears elsewhere in this volume. He was reared principally in Mason, but some of his life was spent in the Kanawha valley. He attended the public schools at both places, receiving a liberal education which has been broadened by an active business career and close observation of those things which pertain to the general welfare of life. Since the early age of fourteen years he has been associated with the manufacture of salt and the mining of coal. He has been connected with the Hope Salt & Coal company since 1872, and is a man of energetic and practical business qualities. In 1887 he married Miss Helen G. Farley, the accomplished daughter of John Farley, of Kanawha county, W. Va., where Mrs. Edwards was born. This marriage has been blessed by the birth of two interesting children. Mr. Edwards is a Master Mason of Clifton lodge, No. 23, the I. O. O. F., of Almedia lodge, No. 57, Mason, and is also a member of the K. of P., Oriental lodge, No. 49, of Point Pleasant, Lafayette consistory. He has been councilman for two terms of one year each in Mason, and was chosen mayor of the same for one term. He is a staunch

supporter of the republican party, and he and Mrs. Edwards enjoy the esteem and confidence of a host of friends.

Albert Gallatin Eastham was born in Fauquier county, Va., December 1, 1807, being the son of George and Mary (Saunders) Eastham. The father was a Virginian of English lineage, born 1758, and at the age of nineteen, under Gen. Field, participated in the bloody battle at Point Pleasant. He was also a soldier in the Revolutionary war. His wife was Susan Woodside, and they had nine children. Their mother having died, their father subsequently married Mrs. Mary Brown, widow of James Brown. This marriage resulted in the birth of three children, viz.: Lucinda, Albert G. and Saunders. In 1817, George Eastham and family settled in what is now known as Arbuckle district, locating on the Kanawha river near Five Milk creek, at a place locally known as Fair View. The father of the family was called to his long home in 1818. His son, Albert G. Eastham, was but ten years of age when his father settled in Mason county. He there grew to manhood and spent a long and active life in the occupation of farming. November 14, 1844, he married Mary F. Hannan, daughter of Henry and Kate (McMullen) Hannan. Her father was born in the old fort at Point Pleasant, and the daughter in Gallia county, Ohio, August 20, 1825. The marriage resulted in the following offspring: Mary C., George S., Henry H., William B. (deceased), Joseph F., Mittie, Elizabeth, Rhoda and Albert G. After the marriage the father and mother continued to live at Fair View, where the former died February 23, 1890. At the time of his death and for many years previous thereto, he was the only living offspring of any of the many brave and gallant soldiers who fought in the bloody battle of Point Pleasant. He was a valuable citizen, a beloved father, and faithful friend. For ten years under the old constitution, and four under the new, he served as magistrate in Arbuckle district. In 1876–77, he represented his county in the state legislature and was a recognized leader among his fellow citizens. In his death there passed away a citizen whom Mason county was proud to honor and claim as her own. His aged widow and several of the children now own and occupy the old homestead, and the family maintain a high social station in life.

Hon. P. C. Eastham is a native of Rappahannock county, Va., where he was born April 16, 1835. He was the eldest son of Col. Lawson Eastham, who was a native of old Virginia, and served in both branches of the legislature of that state. The subject of this sketch was reared in the county of his nativity, where he received a liberal academical education. Until he was twenty-five years of age he remained under the parental roof. In the year 1860 he was united in marriage with Miss Mary A., the only daughter of David Long, deceased, of Mason county,

W. Va. They had three children, two of whom are living, viz.: Alice L. and George D. In the same year of his marriage Mr. Eastham located in Mason county, where he has ever since been engaged in the occupation of farming. At the outbreak of the civil war Mr. Eastham, feeling that his allegiance was due his native state, espoused the cause of the southern confederacy. At the close of the war he returned to his home in Mason county where he resumed his agricultural pursuits. In 1872 he was elected to the West Virginia senate and served for four years as a member of that body. In 1876 the name of Mr. Eastham was presented by his friends to the democratic state convention for the nomination as candidate for governor. He was not successful, but the support he received indicated a strong following and gained for him prominence as a citizen and politician. In 1880 Mr. Eastham was elected as delegate at large from his state to the National democratic convention which met in Cincinnati and nominated Gen. Hancock for the presidency. In 1886 he again became a candidate for election to the state senate, but was defeated by a small majority, the senatorial district then being republican by several hundred. As a citizen, Mr. Eastham is regarded as progressive and representative, and throughout his career has manifested such characteristics as have won for him the high esteem and confidence of his fellow citizens.

C. Eggenshwiler was born in Basel, Switzerland, September 20, 1825, and is a son of Anthony and Margaret Eggenshwiler. Both parents were natives of Switzerland, where they were reared and married. Their children were Milla, Margaret, Marquis, John, Anthony, and the subject of our sketch. The father and mother died in Switzerland, and our subject is the only one of the children who emigrated to the United States. He received but a limited education in his native land. At the age of eight years he was taken into the home of a gentleman, who employed him as an errand boy, and with him he continued until he was twenty-six years of age. He then went to Geneva, to learn the French language, but for want of money was compelled to abandon the undertaking. In 1853 he embarked on a ship at Havre, France, and came to the United States with the intention of accumulating a fortune and then returning to his native land. He has met with many ups and downs and varied experiences in this great country, but did not carry out his plan of returning to Switzerland. After his arrival in America, he proceeded to Cincinnati, where he remained from September, 1853, to January, 1855. On the recommendation of Dr. Morgan, of Cincinnati, he secured employment as hostler with Mr. William Healey, at Hartford City, with whom he began service about January 28, 1855. In 1860 he was given a position as salesman in the company store of what is now the Hartford City Salt

company. That position he has ever since held, and is regarded as a trusted and worthy employe of the company. In 1858, at Hartford City, he was united in marriage with Miss Elizabeth Aumiller, a native of Mason county. Their children are as follows: Anna, Amy, Sarah, Millie, Mary, Lizzie, Charles, Samuel and John. Mr. Eggenshwiler and wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal church. He is also a Master Mason of Clifton lodge, member of Liberty lodge, I. O. O. F., and belongs to the encampment.

John W. English, who is now a member of the West Virginia supreme court, was born in Jackson county, in 1832. His father, Job English, was a native of the "Old Dominion" and of English origin. He was married in Jackson county, W. Va., to Miss Mary Warth, and their union resulted in the birth of five children that reached maturity. The mother was a daughter of John Warth, at whose home in Jackson county, W. Va., that county was organized and the first court held. He was the oldest magistrate and according to what was then the law of Virginia, he became the first sheriff of Jackson county. Job English and his wife, some time during the late thirties, settled in Kanawha county, W. Va. He was a salt maker by trade and was a member of the firm of Warth & English, manufacturers of salt in the Kanawha valley. For a number of years he represented and was employed by the Kanawha Salt company who made large shipments of their product in fleets down the Ohio and Mississippi rivers. Mr. English was a widely experienced and trusted business man as is shown by the fact that he was given charge of such an important business as the shipments above mentioned. He and his wife, after locating in Kanawha county spent the remainder of their days there. Here also the subject of this biography, Hon. John Warth English, spent his days from childhood to manhood. He received his early experience at Malden, and at the age of sixteen years was placed in the Illinois university at Jacksonville, where he completed a five years' course in the classics. In 1853 he began the study of law under private preceptors who were engaged in the practice of that profession. In 1855 he was admitted to the Virginia bar and after receiving his license as an attorney, he located at Pt. Pleasant. There he formed a partnership with Henry J. Fisher and continued the active practice of his profession up to the beginning of the civil war, at which time a dissolution of the partnership took place. After that he continued to practice law alone until January, 1889, doing business in the courts of Mason and surrounding counties. In the fall election of 1888 he was chosen, as the democratic candidate, member of the supreme court for a term of twelve years. He received a majority much larger than that of any other candidate in the field, which indicated his ex-

tensive popularity and high standing. He took his seat upon the supreme bench in January, 1889, and is now occupying that exalted position. In 1862 he was married in Mason county to Miss Fanny C. Lewis, a native of that county. The union has resulted in the birth of five children, who survive. The family occupy a high social standing and number their friends by the score.

Hosea H. Forrest is a son of Willian Forrest, who was a native of Fauquier county, Va., born in 1786, and became a resident of Mason county in 1833. In 1810 he married Alice Williams, their children being: John W., Silas, Hosea, Mahala and Martin. When he came to Mason county, the father of these children located on a farm of 1,100 acres on Five Mile creek, where he spent the remainder of his days. He died in 1862 and his wife departed this life in 1843. In his early days he was a millwright by trade, but during his later years confined himself closely to the business of farming. He served as a loyal Federal soldier in the war of 1812. His son, Hosea Forrest, was born in 1816 and brought by his parents to Mason county, when sixteen years old. He lived with his father until his thirty-third year, and in 1849 married Clarissa Duncan. Their children were William, Franklin and Orena. Mrs. Forrest died January 2, 1852, and he took for his second wife Martha Ann Wallace. To the second marriage was born one child, Elizabeth. His second wife dying, Mr. Forrest was married for the third time to Martha Ann Morrow, and their children's names are as follows: John W., Orilla, Ann Eliza, Mary E., Emily C., Virginia T. and James E. His last wife died in 1875 and Mr. Forrest is now living with his children near the old homestead. After his first marriage, our subject settled down for life in Mason county, where he had lived since early boyhood. He says he has killed a great many deer in the early days without having to go far from home to do it. His experiences at first were rough and his trials many, but by hard work and saving he managed to overcome them all. He has met with reasonable success and owns a good sized farm, over half of which is under cultivation.

George E. W. Fowler was the son of Thomas R. and Ann (Johnson) Fowler. The father was born March 17, 1775, in Staffordshire, England, being a son of Richard and Ann Fowler, both of the same place, where they lived and died. They had but two children, one named William who lived and died in England, and the other Thomas R. Fowler. The latter grew to manhood, and on September 22, 1800, was married in his native country to Ann Johnson. Their children were as follows: Elizabeth, Mary, Ann, Harriet, Thomas, William, Richard, Charles, George E. W., John J. and Maria V. The first eight mentioned are dead, and only the last three were born in the United States.

The parents emigrated to this country in 1818, landing in Philadelphia May 29th, where they lived until the following August, then went to Washington City. December 21, 1825, he started for Mason county, W. Va., and landed at Graham's Station January 11, 1826. In the spring of 1828 he moved upon a farm owned by John G. Lewis on the Ohio river, six miles north of Point Pleasant. April 5, 1833, he moved on a farm in what is now Arbuckle district, being a part of the lands granted to Washington and Graham by the state of Virginia. This farm is now owned and occupied by the two youngest sons, who are the only ones living. Their father was an ingenious man, being a master of three different trades, that of plasterer, stone mason and brick layer. He lived in Mason county nearly thirty years and was a reserved, retired and much respected citizen. He died May 29, 1855, is buried in the family graveyard, and by his side lies the faithful companion of his toils and troubles. His wife was born in England, April 5, 1780, and died at her home in Mason county, August, 1850. These parents both belonged to the Episcopal church of England, and they led Christian lives. The old homestead is occupied by G. E. W. and John J. Fowler, who rank among the leading citizens of the county. George E. W. Fowler was born in the District of Columbia August 26, 1820, and lived with his father until the latter's death, always following the occupation of farming. For five years he served as first lieutenant and the same length of time was captain in the One Hundred and Sixth Virginia militia. He was also justice of the peace and member of the board of education. John J. Fowler was born in 1825, and was married in 1869 to Christine E. Harmon, a native of Wyoming county, W. Va. Their children were: Thaddeus C. and Maria V. John J. Fowler held the office of second lieutenant in the One Hundred and Sixth Virginia militia for a nnmber of years, and was school trustee in his district for a long period. The two brothers stand well in the community, have many friends,, and are regarded as leading citizens of the county.

Benjamin Franklin, a jeweler and merchant of Pt. Pleasant, was born in Parkersburg, Va., now W. Va., in 1837, being a son of John J. and Rebecca (Van Leer) Franklin. The father was born in Mason county in 1813, and was a son of Edmond Franklin, a Pennsylvanian of English descent. Edmond Franklin was a settler of Mason county in a very early day, locating in Pt. Pleasant in or about 1810, some years thereafter he moved to Parkersburg, where he died. John J. Franklin, the father of our subject, was in early life a millwright, and in 1847, became a permanent citizen of Pt. Pleasant. He took up merchandising for an occupation, and followed that until a few years before his death, which occurred in 1855. He was one of the pioneer merchants of Pt. Pleasant, where his death occurred, and during his

day, he was a man that was much esteemed. His marriage took place at Parkersburg, W. Va., in 1836, to Miss Rebecca Van Leer, who was born in Wood county, W. Va., in 1815, and died in Pt. Pleasant in 1869. Their children were: Benjamin, Charles E. (deceased), and Fannie L., beside five who died before reaching maturity. John J. Franklin and wife were members of the Methodist Episcopal church, south, and enjoyed universal esteem, where they were known. Benjamin Franklin, the immediate subject of this sketch, was ten years of age when his parents located at Pt. Pleasant, which has ever since been his place of residence. He obtained a fair common school education, and in early life, learned the carpenter's trade, which he followed for some time, later, he was engaged as a photographer, and in 1867, became a jeweler and merchant. In this business he has since continued, and has achieved a very flattering measure of success. His marriage took place in the state of Missouri, December 16, 1863, to Miss Lucinda J. Carter, born in Putnam county, W. Va., and their children were: Lulie B., John C., Benjamin and Ernest. The entire family are members of the Methodist Episcopal church, south; fraternally, he belongs to Minturn lodge, A. F. & A. M., also Pt. Pleasant chapter No. 7, R. A. M., Huntington commandery, No. 9, K. T., and La Fayette consistory, A. A. S. R., No. 19. Mr. Franklin has filled important offices in Masonic bodies and has also occupied official positions in his church, being recording steward, class leader and Sabbath school superintendent. In every relation of life, he has so borne himself as to earn and deserve the title of "upright citizen," and he has filled every official trust to the entire satisfaction of those most interested.

J. Friedman & Co., the leading dry goods, notions, clothing, boot and shoe dealers of Point Pleasant, W. Va., located here in 1872, from which time until 1878, the firm was composed of J. Friedman and A. Hess. In 1878 Mr. Friedman purchased the interest of the junior partner and formed a partnership with his brother, who is now the senior member of the firm. J. Friedman was born in Hungary in 1847, and emigrated to the United States in 1867. For a time he resided in New York city, where he engaged in fruit and butcher business. Later he located in Cincinnati, where for a time he followed the butcher's trade. The business did not prove profitable and he found it necessary to seek a more gainful pursuit. With this commendable resolve he became a pack peddler, and for some time sold goods throughout various parts of the country. In 1872 he formed a partnership with A. Hess, as above mentioned, and began merchandising in Point Pleasant, which has been his business since then. M. Friedman, the junior member of the firm, was born in Hungary in 1858, and came to the United States in 1877, landing

at Baltimore. He made his way to St. Louis, and in the vicinity of that city also sold goods through the country as a peddler until 1878, when he became his brother's partner at Point Pleasant. In 1879, at Cincinnati, J. Friedman was married to Miss Nettie Loth, a native of Hungary. In 1887, in the same city, the other brother, M. Friedman, was married to Ninne Loth, another Hungarian girl. These brothers and their families are now among the leading citizens of Point Pleasant. As business men the brothers are full of energy, of untiring industry, and from very small beginnings have built up quite a prosperous trade. They have the largest and most complete line of goods of the kind in Point Pleasant, and occupy two well-stocked store rooms in the Stortz block on Main street.

Henry Fry was one of a family of children born unto Nicholas and Susan (Hersman) Fry. Nicholas Fry was a native of Pennsylvania, born May 6, 1779, at Red Stone Fort, about eight miles above Pittsburg, and was taken to Lexington, Ky., in 1781. He remained with his father until thirty-one years of age, and in 1811 married Susan Hersman, who was born 1790, September 13. After their marriage they went to Adams county, Ohio, located on a farm of 300 acres, remained there until 1839, and then removed to Gallia county, in the same state. They located on a farm in that county where they lived the rest of their lives, he dying in 1852, at the age of seventy-three, and his wife in 1832. The marriage resulted in the birth of the following children: Barbara Ann, born February 18, 1818; William, born October 26, 1820; Mary Jane, born May 19, 1825, and Henry, born August 19, 1827. Nicholas Fry was a farmer by occupation all his life. He and his wife were life-long members of the Methodist church and were upright Christian people in all their relations with the world. Henry Fry, the subject of our sketch, lived with his parents until the age of twenty-five, during which time he served an apprenticeship for two years at the blacksmith's trade. He married Mary Knopp, November 9, 1852, at Cheshire, Ohio, in Gallia county. He remained there until 1873, working at his trade, and then came to Pt. Pleasant, Mason county, W. Va., where he engaged in the lumber business, which he continued until 1883. He then took up the occupation of harboring boats, barges and other river craft which was his business at the time this sketch was prepared. The children of Henry Fry and wife were as follows: Susan C., born January 21, 1854; George, born December 26, 1856; Lewis F., born July 9, 1858; William M., born March 30, 1861; Rose U., born in 1863; Hattie C., born March 26, 1866; John, born March 28, 1870, and Gussie C., born March 12, 1871. Mrs. Frye died in 1887, at the age of fifty-four. Mr. Fry was married the second time, April 25, 1889, to Mary C. Gilmore. Mr. Fry traces his lineage back to the German fatherland.

James George was born October 7, 1846, his father being David George and his mother Elizabeth Hereford, a daughter of Maj. John Hereford. David George was a native of Gallia county, Ohio, born in 1814, and came to Mason county with his father when a boy four years of age. He was a son of James George, who was a native of North Carolina, of Scotch descent. James George settled in Mason county on 500 acres of land, his father having purchased the first land in this county off of the Mercer estate. He was also one of the first to settle in Hannan district. He married a Miss Ward, and their children were: Elizabeth, William, Jessie, Mary, David, Judah and Rachel. The children of David George and Elizabeth Hereford, who became his wife, were: Elizabeth, Sarah, Mary, Margaret, James, Kate, John. The father of these children died June 12, 1887, on the farm where he settled, and his wife preceded him to the grave in 1873. James George remained with his father until twenty-one years of age, and then took a trip to Missouri and Kansas in the year 1867. In the next year he returned and took up the occupation of farming. June 4, 1868, he married Emma C. Hereford, and their children are: Lelia, Bertha and Judson. Mrs. George is a daughter of James T. Hereford. In 1864 he bought a farm in connection with his father, which he settled on four years later. Mr. George now owns this farm himself, and has added to it 400 acres. He and his wife are members of the Baptist church. He served as deputy sheriff for six years, one term under H. G. Nease, and he is now serving a term under George Poffenbarger.

Joseph E. George, representative of a pioneer family of Mason county, W. Va., was born in Arbuckle district of that county, July 14, 1822. His paternal grandfather was Joseph George, born in Fauquier county, of Scotch descent. He married Lydia Shumate of the same county and lineage, the union resulting in the following children: William, Cumberland, Joseph, Whitson, Sallie and Ann. William George, the father of our subject, was born in March, 1789. He was a soldier of 1812 and immediately after the close of that war, in 1815, was united in marriage with Nancy Eastham, who was born in 1793. The marriage gave birth to the following children: Elizabeth, Andrew F. (deceased), Joseph E., Margaret E., Lewis (deceased), Lucy E., Nancy C., Lydia S. (deceased), Sallie B. (deceased), and Catherine S. The father, mother and the two eldest children removed into the Kanawha valley in 1820, and located in what is now Arbuckle district, just below Five Mile creek. There the parents lived until their deaths, that of the father occurring in 1871 and the mother in 1879. He was a minister of the gospel of the Missionary Baptist faith and was the first of that belief to settle in what is now Mason county. Through his ministry and individ-

ual efforts he was instrumental in founding the first Baptist church in which the first organized Baptist society in the county worshipped. This noteworthy event was consummated in 1821, the association being significantly named Teay's Valley, and still maintains an existence. Mr. George was their first pastor and preached for them during the course of many arduous and eventful years. He was also the founder and first pastor of the "Concord" Baptist church, and of another congregation in Arbuckle district, which still continues as a reminder of his many valuable deeds in the cause of religion. His oldest son, Andrew F. George, was a gallant confederate soldier during the war and lived in Mason county until 1884, when his death occurred. Joseph E. George, the only living son of the old pioneer minister and settler of Mason county, now owns and occupies the homestead of his parents and is one of the foremost farmers of the county. In 1868 he was married to Miss Sallie A. Henderson, who was born in Mason county, November 7, 1828. Mr. George and wife rank among the leading families of their community and are highly respected by a wide circle of acquaintances.

John Gerlach was born on July 23rd, 1828, in Hesse, Germany. His father was Kasper Gerlach, and his mother's maiden name was Elizabeth Kress, both natives of Germany, where they were married in 1819. Their family consisted of the following named children: Annie M., John, Catherine, Eva M. and Adam. Kasper Gerlach came to America in 1838, and settled on a farm in Beaver county, Penn. He lived there for eleven years, and in the spring of 1850, moved to Gallia county, Ohio, where he still resides on a farm of 240 acres. His wife died in August, 1875, much lamented by a large circle of friends. While in Germany, he and his wife were connected with the Reformed church. The subject of our sketch was only ten years of age when his parents came to America. He remained with his father until his marriage which occurred March 11, 1852, in Beaver county, Penn. The maiden name of his wife was Dortha Shramm, a native of Pennsylvania, and their marriage resulted in the birth of the following children: Eva M., Elizabeth, William, Edward, John K., George W., Frederick H., Albert C., Harvey A. and Charles V. In 1859, Mr. Gerlach came to Mason county and settled on a farm in Colonge district. He has added fifty-six acres to the original farm and now owns 225 acres of land with good buildings and improvements. In 1862, he enlisted in the Ninth West Virginia infantry, with which he served until his discharge in February, 1865. He took part with his regiment in the following named battles: Charlestown, Cloyd Mountain, Linchburg, Berryville, first and second Winchester, Fisher's Hill and Cedar Creek. After the war, Mr. Gerlach was engaged continuously in the business of farming. For a number of years he has held the posi-

tion of postmaster of Willow Tree, and has given satisfaction to all the patrons by his accommodating disposition. He and his wife are consistent members of the German Reformed church.

Jehu W. Gillespie is the son of Lewis and Elizabeth (Smith) Gillespie. The father was a native of Gallia county, Ohio, born October 28, 1807. In 1861 he went to Douglas county, Ill., where he remained for twenty-four years, and then removed to Kansas, where he now resides. His father was William Gillespie, and his grandfather was Robert Gillespie, a native of Ireland, and distant relation of Hon. James G. Blaine. Lewis Gillespie, the father of our subject, was married to Elizabeth Smith, who was born in Gallia county, Ohio, in 1812, November 14th, the daughter of John and E. (Prose) Smith. The children resulting from this marriage were: Joseph P., Jehu W., Polly, Henry, Annie, Lydia and Jennie. Lewis Gillespie was a farmer and stock-raiser by profession. Jehu W. Gillespie remained with his father until twenty-four years of age and then took possession of a part of the old homestead which he purchased about 1854. After living on this farm until 1863, he went to Champaign county, Ill., but in 1865 came to Gallipolis, Ohio. Two years later, Mr. Gillespie purchased a farm in Mason county, W. Va., to which he afterward added by the purchase of a larger tract. Since that time he has made his home in Mason county. His marriage took place in 1856, August 31, to Mary Ann Donnaly, a daughter of William and Sarah (Gram) Donnaly, both natives of Greenbrier county, W. Va. William Donnaly served as a soldier during the war of 1812. His children were as follows: John, Nancy, William E., Marinda, Sarah, Philip, Mary Ann and Reuben. The marriage of Jehu and Mary Ann Gillespie resulted in the following named children: Dora, Lydia, Effie, Lewis C., Reuben, Jehu A., Ollie and Henry. Mr. Gillespie learned the trade of stone cutter during his youth, and worked at that business during his earlier years. After he bought land, however, he devoted himself exclusively to farming. He has directed a good deal of his attention to the cultivation of small fruits such as strawberries, raspberries, etc., and as a dealer in this line has met with success. Mr. Gillespie's grandfather, William Gillespie, served as a soldier from the beginning to the close of the war of 1812. Two of his sons and a step-son, named respectively Silas and Joseph Gillespie, and Daniel Caine, also served in the same war.

Dr. Edward L. Gilliam was born in Muskingum county, Ohio, September 22, 1839. His parents were William and Mary E. (Bryan) Gilliam. William was a native of Williamsburg, Va., born October 11, 1801, where his early days were spent. He moved thence to Newark, Ohio, where he remained a number of years and returned to Virginia. After a few years in his native state, he again moved to Ohio, where the remainder of his days

were spent, his death occurring March 13, 1880. He was twice married, the first time September 15, 1828, to Frances S. Will, be whom he was the father of these children: William H. Algernon (deceased), Walter W. and Lucy S. Mrs. Gilliam died February 13, 1835. His second marriage was with Mary E. Bryan, May 1, 1838, at Newark, Ohio, and the result of this union was the following children: Edward L., Martha A. (deceased), David, Harriet T., John A., Mary C., Charles F., Letitia V. and Florence A. Mr. Gilliam was a member of the Royal Arch chapter in Masonry, and in the earlier part of his life belonged to the Baptist church, but afterward with his wife, united with the Methodist Episcopal church, in which he continued an honored member until his death. Dr. Edward L. Gilliam remained with his parents until twenty-two years of age, and worked for a time at the trade of his father, that of a shoemaker, receiving a common school education. In August, 1861, he volunteered in the United States army, as a member of the Second West Virginia calvary, Company I. He entered the service as a private and was promoted successively hospital steward and afterward assistant surgeon. He continued in the army until after the close of the war, receiving his discharge June 32, 1865. During the period of his earlier life Dr. Gilliam had read medicine, and he continued his reading until 1865, when he attended Miami Medical college for one term. On August 13th of that year, in Meigs county, Ohio, he was joined in wedlock to Anna M. Starkey, who has borne him children as follows: Geneva G., Margaret A. (deceased), Mary L., Charles W., Harry R. and Alda. Soon after his marriage Dr. Gilliam located at Tupper's Plains, Meigs county, Ohio, where he began the practice of his profession, and remained for two years. At the end of that period he became a resident of Mason county, where he has ever since continued to reside in the active practice of his profession. For the past twenty one-years he has been a resident of Letart. Socially, Dr. Gilliam is highly esteemed and is a member of Odd Fellows' lodge, at Letart, Ohio, No. 690. Both Doctor and wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal church. Mrs. Gilliam is a daughter of David R. and Martha (Coe) Starkey, natives respectively of Belmont and Knox counties, Ohio. Dr. Gilliam is a member of the board of United States pension examiners for Mason county.

Baptiste Gilmore, who is one of the oldest citizens of Pt. Pleasant, was born in Maine, April 30, 1823, and is the youngest of the following children, born unto the marriage of Baptiste and Sallie Gilmore: Samuel M., John C., Charles B., Lorena, Frank, James, Mary, Caroline and the subject of our sketch. All the children are dead except Charles B., Mary and Baptiste. The father was born in New Hampshire and died at an advanced

age in Pt. Pleasant, W. Va. He was a son of Robert Gilmore, a native of Ireland, whose family was one of thirty that emigrated in an early day from Londonderry to the United States, and settled in New Hampshire, naming the place of location after their Irish home. The mother of our subject was born in New Hampshire and descended from a Scotch family. She died at a ripe old age in Maine. Our subject's father was a blacksmith by trade but reared his family on a farm. Baptiste Gilmore was brought up on a farm and remained under the parental roof until he reached his majority. At the age of twenty-one, being in ill-health, he came to the Great Kanawha valley, first locating at Pt. Pleasant, in 1844, about 1854 moving to Charleston and three years later he visited the great west but returned in 1857 to Pt. Pleasant, where he has since remained. In 1860, at Pomeroy, Ohio, he married Lizzie Cohen, a native of Gallia county, Ohio. Their children were: Florence C., Carrie M. and Nellie B. Mr. and Mrs. Gilmore and two of their daughters are members of the Presbyterian church and the family enjoy high social standing. Mr. Gilmore began life by merchandising on a small scale at Pt. Pleasant, but by industry, good management and judgment he became prosperous and successful. He has held several positions of honor and trust. In 1864 he was elected to the state legislature on the republican ticket as a representative for Mason county and served one term. He has served as member of the city council and mayor of Pt. Pleasant. He is one of the representative and progressive citizens of the city and enjoys the respect of all his fellow citizens.

John Ginther was a native of Hesse-Darmstadt, Germany, where was born December 24, 1833, his parents being Wolf and Malinda (Meininger) Ginther. The children of Mr. and Mrs. Wolf Ginther were John, William, Catherine, Margaret, Mary, and Conrad, deceased. The mother died in Germany in 1848. The father was a farmer, and kept the only hotel in the town of Middle Grintau. He grew wealthy in business, but by misplaced confidence in Jewish trades he lost the bulk of his possessions, and his wife having died, he came to America with his children excepting John, who had been sent ahead. He settled in Cincinnati in 1852, and died at the home of his son John, in Pomeroy, Ohio, about the year 1857. His father was Frederick Ginther of a wealthy family in Germany. John Ginther came to America with other German emigrants. At first he joined his uncle, who then lived at Cincinnati, Ohio, and in 1855 went to Pomeroy, where he continued foundry work. In 1862 he established his home in Hartford City, W. Va., where he has followed the trade of blacksmith, keeping in repair the boilers and machinery of the salt works of that city. In 1856 he was married to Catherine Kauff, of Pittsburgh, Penn. Following are

their children: Caroline, George W., Lizzie, Anda B., John F., James A. and Michael E. Mr. and Mrs. Ginther are members of the German Reformed church, of Pomeroy. He is a member of the American Mechanics, also of the I. O. O. F. and belongs to the encampment. Mr. Ginther began the struggle of life without any capital except willing hands and a brave heart, and has devoted himself to the hard toil incident to the existence of an honest mechanic. By hard work, strict attention to business, good judgment and economy, he has met with success in his undertakings, and justly enjoys the respect of his community of which he is a leading citizen. He served as mayor of the town, and repeatedly as councilman, and on the board of education.

Andrew Gould was a son of Seth Gould and Sarah (Baas) Gould. The father was a native of Rhode Island, who came to Marietta with his parents at a very early day. He was the son of James Gould, one of the early settlers of the section above mentioned. Seth Gould came to Gallia county, near Gallipolis when there were but few inhabitants at that place and there he lived until the time of his death, which occurred in 1863. His wife was a native of North Carolina and of German descent. Their children were as follows: Andrew, Frederick, Rebecca, Elizabeth, Seth W., Stephen, and Nancy. Mrs. Sarah Gould departed this life in 1859. Andrew Gould, the subject of our sketch, was born September 19, 1822, in Gallia county, Ohio, where he was reared to manhood on his father's farm. November 5, 1880, he became a resident of Clendenin district, in Mason county, W. Va. His marriage took place in 1846 to Nancy Denny, a daughter of Jeremiah Denny, a native of North Carolina. The result of the marriage was the following children: George, Joseph, Daniel, Seth W., Jeremiah, Sarah, Eliza, Demerius, Maria, Rosa, Carrie, Ella, Nancy Jane and Frank. When Mr. Gould came to Mason county, he bought 220 acres of land, afterward sold off a portion, but still owns a well cultivated farm. He entered the late war as a volunteer soldier in 1864, and served until the close of hostilities. Mr. Gould stands well in the community and has a number of good friends in the states where he has resided.

Hugh Graham, the subject of our sketch, was born in 1828, in Westmoreland county, Penn., in sight of Fort Haw, on the waters of Pine run. His father, who bore the same name, resided in Butler county, Penn., at the time of his death, which took place in 1850. He was a soldier in the war of 1812 and his two youngest children received his land warrant. His wife was Sarah Anderson, and their children were named as follows: James, Thomas, Jane, Hugh, Mary C., Sarah, Matilda and William D. The elder Hugh Graham was a farmer by occupation and a member of the Presbyterian church. The marriage of

our subject took place in 1851, to Rebecca Martin, and the following is a list of their children: Hugh, Jr., Elizabeth J., William A., Sarah E., Susannah M., James A., John T., Joseph P. and Laird N. In 1862, Mr. Graham enlisted in the Ninth Virginia infantry, with which he served throughout the war. He made a loyal and dutiful soldier, and fought with his regiment in the following battles: Charlestown, Carter's Farm, Hall Town, Winchester, Martinsburg and Cedar Creek. By trade, Mr. Graham is a stone mason, and he worked in that line of business during his entire life, but at present he has retired from active labor. He resides on a farm of 100 acres in Cologne district, where he leads a retired life and dispenses hospitality to such friends as come to see him. He and his wife are members of the Baptist church and take an active interest in all matters relating thereto.

Hon. F. A. Guthrie was born in Tyler county, Va., April 12, 1840, his parents being Francis and Elizabeth (Hughes) Guthrie. The father was a native of New York, of Scotch lineage, and for a number of years was an itinerant minister of the Methodist Episcopal church. He was married in Nicholas county, Va., to Miss Elizabeth Hughes, daughter of Edward Hughes, a well known pioneer settler of Kanawha county. Both parents of our subject are now deceased. Francis A. Guthrie was given a liberal education in the common schools of his section, and early in life began teaching, which proved an admirable preparation for the more serious business of the legal profession. He commenced the study of law in 1863, at Parkersburg, Judge O. Johnson being his preceptor. Afterward he entered the law department of the Michigan university at Ann Arbor, where he attended for two terms. He was admitted to the bar at Pt. Pleasant in 1868, and entered at once into the active practice of the law. He formed a partnership with Capt. John M. Phelps, with whom he was associated until about 1873. In the fall of 1868 he was elected prosecuting attorney for Mason county, and served in that office a term of four years. In 1880 he was elected judge of the circuit court for the seventh judicial district of West Virginia. After serving a term of eight years he was re-elected in 1888 for another full term. In politics he is a conservative republican, but is quite popular with the voters of all parties, as he makes a fair and impartial judge. He is a member of the Masonic lodge at Pt. Pleasant and of the K. of P. at Charleston. April 30, 1866, he was united in marriage in Gallia county, Ohio, with Miss Clara Van Gilder, daughter of Amasa and Elizabeth (Campbell) Van Gilder. She was born August 18, 1847, in Cheshire, Ohio. The marriage of Hon. Francis A. Guthrie and his wife was blessed with the birth of a son, who was christened Lewis V. Guthrie. The latter is a physician by profession, and

was born at Pt. Pleasant, January 8, 1868. He received a good education in the schools of Pt. Pleasant, and completed a scientific course at Roanoke college, Virginia, at the age of seventeen. After leaving college he continued the study of medicine under Dr. Andrew R. Barbee, at Pt. Pleasant. He kept this up for about two years, and in March, 1889, was graduated from the College of Physicians and Surgeons in Baltimore. Immediately after his graduation, he entered upon the active practice of his profession in his native city with marked success in the prosecution thereof. While at Baltimore, he was honored by being made the assistant physician in the Woman's hospital, a position which he filled with credit to himself. Fraternally, he is a member of the American Mechanics, of Pt. Pleasant, and also belongs to the Greek letter fraternity, Kappa Sigma Kappa. In 1889, he was united in marriage with Miss Lynn English, daughter of Hon. J. W. English, of Pt. Pleasant, and the union has proved a very happy one. The Guthrie families occupy the highest social rank and are possessed of those qualities, both personal and professional, which bring many friends and material prosperity.

Henry Gwinn was born in 1830 in Cabell county, W. Va., his father being Andrew Gwinn. The latter's father was born in the Shenandoah valley, July 15, 1794, being of Irish descent. He came to Cabell county in 1810, where he followed the occupation of farming, dying in 1830. The father of our subject came to Cabell county with his father when about sixteen years of age. He went into the war of 1812 and served for about one year. After the war he remained with his father until 1825, when he married Rachel Harshbarger. Their children were: John, Washington, Henry, Ann, Andrew, Betty (deceased), Mary, America, Emily, Louisa, James, Jefferson and William (deceased). William Gwinn died while in the confederate army. James resides in Illinois and Andrew in Texas. The rest of the children live in Cabell county. Henry Gwinn came to Mason county in 1860 and located on a farm in Hannan district. He has added to his original farm until he now owns 500 acres, most of which is under good cultivation. His marriage took place March 16, 1854, to Ann Eliza Newman, a daughter of James and Mary A. J. (Wood) Newman. Mr. Newman was a blacksmith by trade and also a merchant. He was a member of the Methodist church and a citizen of influence. His death took place in 1851 and that of his wife in 1848. The marriage of Henry Gwinn and wife resulted in the following children: Othniel E., Walter W., Eugene, Van H. D. Bird, Mary R., Minnie A., Martina. Othniel and Walter are proprietors of the Aldine Roller Flour Mills at Huntington, W. Va. Van is a graduate of the Ann Arbor university, Mich. Eugene is a traveling salesman and merchant broker. Mary R. is married to

John Whitten, who is in the census department at Washington, D. C., formerly engaged in law business at Pt. Pleasant, W. Va. The other daughters are at home with their parents.

Benjamin A. Hall was born in Arbuckle district, Mason county, W. Va., February 18, 1850, being a son of Benjamin and Harriet (Saunders) Hall. He was married to Nancy C. Wallace, June 16, 1875, and their children are Charles O., Benjamin C., J. R. B. and Ashel K. Mrs. Hall is a daughter of Thomas Wallace of Mason county. Mr. Hall has pursued the occupation of a farmer during his whole life which has been industrious and fairly prosperous. He has belonged to the Baptist church for about twenty-four years, his wife being also a member of the same denomination, and they are upright Christian people who stand well in the community. Lewis Hall, grandfather of our subject, was a native of Fauquier county, Va., came to Mason county in 1834, where he located on a farm of 342 acres, and spent his life there until death. He was married to Elizabeth Day, of Fauquier county, and their children were: Eliza, William, Marium, Catharine and Benjamin. The last mentioned was born March 17, 1819, and came to Mason county when eighteen years of age. He remained with his parents until their deaths, that of the father taking place in 1849 and of the mother in 1859. Benjamin Hall was married in 1845 to Harriet Saunders, the daughter of Thomas Saunders. Following are the names of their children: William J., Thomas and Benjamin A. Mr. Hall and wife belong to the Baptist church, are upright citizens and are generally esteemed.

Thomas L. Hall was born in Arbuckle district, Mason county, W. Va., March 20, 1848, and has resided in the same county ever since. He is a son of Benjamin and Harriet (Saunders) Hall, of whom mention is elsewhere made in this volume. Mr. Hall lived with his father until he was married in 1871. He was united in marriage with Mary C. Cottrell, born December 8, 1856, and a daughter of Jonathan and Catharine (Gillfillen) Cottrell, both residents of Putnam county, Va. The following children have come to bless the union of Mr. Hall and his wife: Alma, born August 15, 1872; William B., born August 5, 1874; Jasper A., born October 9, 1878; Oley, born August 10, 1881, and Grover C., born May 9, 1884. Mr. Hall has followed the business of farming during his whole life and has met with a fair measure of success. He and his wife are members of the Baptist church, and they are clever people who are liked by all of their acquaintances.

Ephraim Hanes, junior member of the firm of Schuler & Hanes, was born in Wetzel county, W. Va., November 11, 1855, and is a son of Nathan and Elizabeth (Monteith) Hanes. The father was born in Wetzel county, W. Va., and was of German descent, and the mother was also a native of West Virginia

and of Irish-German lineage. The father has all his life followed the occupation of saw-milling and for a number of years has owned and operated a floating mill on the Ohio river. The subject of this sketch was principally reared under the parental roof in Wetzel county, W. Va. He received the ordinary common school educationand made his home with his parents until twenty-nine years of age. During this time he worked at the saw-milling business with his father. In 1884 he visited the west, where he did some business in his regular line, being engaged in saw-milling, etc., during 1885–87 at Little Rock, Ark. In 1887 he sold his interest and returned to his native state of West Virginia, where he entered into partnership with his father and built a new floating saw- and planing-mill, which they operated until 1889, when he sold his interest to his father and went to Point Pleasant, where he entered into partnership with Mr. Schuler in the business which is described in connection with the sketch of the senior partner elsewhere printed in this volume. The firm of Schuler & Hanes is an enterprising one and the past career of the partners gives promise that the business in their hands will be both successful and profitable.

James W. Hanna, many years ago an emigrant from Ireland, left his native country and came to the United States, settling in Pennsylvania, where his marriage was consummated. He became the progenitor of several children, among whom were the following: William, Robert, John and Matthew. The mother was a Miss Hillard of German descent. Mr. Hanna was a soldier in the war of 1812 and was by occupation a farmer, living and dying in Butler county, Penn. In the year 1828, or about that time, William and Matthew Hanna came from Pennsylvania to West Virginia and settled in Kanawha county, locating some eight or ten miles up Elk river, now in Kanawha county. Subsequently they removed to the region of John Bream's salt works, between Charleston and Malden, where William Hanna married Miss Julia Ray and became the head of a family. After farming for a number of years on Two Mile creek in Kanawha county, he removed his family to Polk county, Mo., where he thereafter lived and died. Matthew Hanna, the other brother, was a mechanical engineer and held that position at the John Bream salt works above mentioned, and was always interested in the manufacture of salt. Here on Elk river, in 1832, he was united in marriage with Miss Fanny Z. Thayer, daughter of Job Thayer, an early settler of Kanawha county, but a native of Massachusetts. He was of Puritan origin and married Miss Fannie Taylor, also of Puritan ancestry. The children, whose birth blessed this marriage, were as follows: Seth, James, Job, William, Otis, Fanny, Harriet, Caroline and Naomi. The par-

ents settled in Kanawha county at an early day, where the father followed farming. They lived and died in Kanawha county. Mrs. Fanny Hanna was born in Lewis county, Va., and her marriage with Matthew Hanna resulted in the birth of the following: Martha, James W., Robert C., Job T., Samuel D., John M., Fanny T. and Susan C. The parents lived in the Kanawha valley till 1856, when they removed to West Columbia, W. Va., thence in 1860 to Hartford City. In 1878 the death of the father occurred in this city, and in 1890 the mother died in Putnam county. James W. Hanna, the immediate subject of this sketch, was born in Kanawha county, W. Va., September 26, 1837, where he was reared and received a common school education. He remained with his parents until he was past the age of twenty-one years and then began the struggle of life for himself. In 1862 he enlisted in Company D, 13th West Virginia volunteer infantry and was promoted to the rank of 1st lieutenant, serving two years and eight months in that capacity. Among the important battles in which he took part were those of Hurricane Bridge, Curens Town, Lynchburg, Winchester, Berryville, Fisher's Hill and others of lesser importance. He was wounded at Fisher's Hill by a gun shot in the right arm, September 22, 1864, and January 24, 1865, by reason of his disability, he was discharged from the hospital at Gallipolis, Ohio. He then returned to the parental home at Hartford City and engaged in the manufacture of staves, heading barrels, etc., in which he has since been engaged while located at Hartford City. Recently he removed to Mason, where he is continuing the same business. On December 12, 1865, he wedded Miss Lucinda McKendree, daughter of Robert and Mary A. (Grubb) McKendree. She was born in Cabell county, W. Va., June 10, 1845. Mr. Hanna is a member of the Methodist Episcopal church, and fraternally belongs to the I. O. O. F., Liberty lodge, No. 21, Hartford City. He also belongs to G. A. R., Washington post, No. 15, of the same city. Mr. Hanna is a self-made man in every respect, and has been successful in his various undertakings. This success has been due to the energy, perseverance and integrity with which all his life has been characterized and these qualities have gained for him the esteem of all who know him.

Samuel J. Hanna, a citizen of Hartford City, and a cooper by trade, was born March 18, 1844, in what is now Putnam county, W. Va. He is a son of Matthew Hanna, and full particulars of his ancestry are given in connection with the sketch of James W. Hanna, of Waggener district, which will be found in another part of this volume. Samuel D. Hanna has been a resident of Mason county, since he was fourteen years old. Besides receiving the ordinary common school education, he learned the coopers' trade in his younger days, and this has been his calling

throughout life. August 15, 1862, he enlisted as a private in Company B, Thirteenth West Virginia infantry. He served until the close of the war when he was honorably discharged from the service, June 22, 1865. He was a non-commissioned officer and principal musician of his regiment, with which he took part in the following named battles: Hurricane Bridge, Fayetteville, Morgan Raid, Winchester, Kernstown, Fisher's Hill, Cedar Creek and others. In June, 1867, he married Alice F. Burgess, of Kanawha county, and their children are: James A., Charles R., Mary A., George W., Milla M. and Luella. In 1859 he became the cooper for the Hartford City Salt company, and has remained with them ever since except during the time when he was serving as a soldier in defense of the Union. He resided fourteen years in New Haven, where he superintended the cooper shop, and since then he has managed one at Hartford City. For eight years he was magistrate in Graham district, and in every respect is a self-made man, and substantial citizen. Mr. Hanna is a member of the G. A. R. of Hartford City, and of Liberty lodge, I. O. O. F. He and his wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal church.

Erastus D. Hannan was born in Hannan district, Mason county, June 13, 1836, and has been a resident of said county for fifty-two years. His father was Jesse Hannan, of whom a sketch is given in another part of this work. Our subject remained with his parents until his mother's death, after which the father made his home with him until he died, April 30, 1888. Jesse Hannan was a large land owner, and about ten years before his death divided the land among his children. Erastus was given the homestead of 362 acres on the Guyandotte river. The line between Mason and Cabell counties was for some time undetermined, but in 1888 it was so established that Erastus Hannan becomes a resident of Cabell. February 28, 1866, he was married to Frances Prince, and their children were: Elizabeth F., Mary A. and May P. His wife died May 12, 1872, and he was a second time married to Tabitha Williams, who bore him one child, which died in infancy. His second wife died February 6, 1876, and Mr. Hannan was again united in marriage to Vesta (Grover) Blake. This marriage took place October 21, 1877, and the children are: Arthur V., Jesse T., Emma, Sadie O. and Robert P. Mr. Hannan is a carpenter by trade, but his life has been devoted principally to farming. He and his wife are members of the Baptist church, and they live a retired and contented life.

E. H. Hannan, the subject of this sketch, was born November 1, 1827, in what is now known as Hannan district, Mason county. His parents were Jesse and Frances (Waugh) Hannan. The father was born in Mason county, October 3, 1800, being a son of Thomas and Elizabeth (Henry) Hannan, who came to

Mason county in a very early day. Thomas Hannan, after living in the fort at Point Pleasant for some time, went into what is now Hannan district, and built a cabin there in 1797, where he lived and died. He was a native of Roanoke county, Va., while his wife was born in Ohio. Jesse Hannan is supposed to have been the first white child born below the Kanawha on the south side of the Ohio river. He married Frances G. Waugh, a native of Bedford county, Va., in 1825. Their children were: Thomas W. (deceased), John R. (deceased), Robert W. (deceased), Eastham H., James B., Erastus D., George C. and Betty (deceased). George C. lives in Alexandria, Ind.; Eastham and Erastus D. are residents of Cabell county, and James E. lives in Glenwood, Hannan district. Our subject was married January 27, 1869, to Mary E. Wright, of Lynchburg, Va., and their children's names are as follows: Thomas W., Jesse S., Eastham H., Frances G., James W., Mary L., Lucy and Charles M., all of whom live at home with their father, the mother having died July 4, 1889. Eastham Hannan was a confederate soldier, having enlisted in the Eighth Virginia cavalry and served during the war. He was twice captured as a prisoner of war, and was held at Camp Chase, Ohio, for fifteen months. Since the war he has followed the occupation of farming. He is a member of the Baptist church and leads the quiet life of a well-to-do farmer.

G. W. Harrison dates his birth from March 2, 1821, the place of his nativity being Mason county, where he has always made his home. His father was Reuben Harrison, born 1797, in Rockingham county, Va., who became a resident of Mason at a very early day. He was a son of Joseph and Isabella (Jeffers) Harrison. Joseph Harrison came to Kanawha county where Charleston now stands, but then moved to Little Coal river, where he remained three years. He made a number of other changes of residence, but finally settled down at Mudlick Mill, where he remained until his death. His son, Reuben Harrison, was married in April, 1820, to Priscilla Knapp, and their children were: George W., Elizabeth, Lydia, Oletha, Martha, Elihu and Synthia. Mr. Harrison always lived in Mason county, was justice of the peace for seven years, and died there February 8, 1887, his wife having preceded him to the grave March 4, 1872. They were members of the Methodist church and spent their lives on a farm. Their son, George W. Harrison, who is the principal subject of this sketch, was united in marriage February 25, 1869, to Lucretia Jiveden, and their children's names are as follows: Burr, John R., and William A. George W. Harrison enlisted in the Seventh Virginia cavalry in 1864, and was discharged in 1865. He served with his regiment through the exciting scenes in the raid on Lynchburg, led by Gen. Hunter in the summer of 1864. After the return of that army, Mr. Harrison's regiment was

ordered into garrison duty where it remained until the close of the war. After the close of hostilities, Mr. Harrison devoted himself to farming, and has made that his principal business through life. He served as postmaster at Leon for seven years. and has held the office of constable for two years. He owns a home farm in Union district, is a member of the Methodist church, and in all respects is a clever neighbor and good citizen.

George Hart was born April 5, 1825, in Fayette county, Penn., and came with his parents to Mason county when seventeen years of age and here he has ever since resided. He was married in 1847 to Hannah, daughter of Samuel and Katie (Circle) Roush. Mr. Hart and wife have been blessed with the following children: Mary M., Rhoda E., Charlotte, Rebecca H., Henry, Jonas, George B. M., Lorena and James L. A. Mr. Hart and wife are members of the United Brethren church. Throughout his life he has followed the occupation of farming and has met with a fair degree of success, owing to those qualities which have rendered him such a good citizen of Mason county. He owns fifty-six acres of land in Cooper district, where he resides. His father was Christian Hart, also a native of Fayette county, Penn., who removed in 1844 to Mason county. There he spent the remainder of his days, his death occurring in 1847. The maiden name of his wife was Mary Baker and they were married about the year 1800. Their children were: Michael, John (deceased), Lavina, Elizabeth (deceased), Jacob (deceased), Mary A., Nancy, Jessie, Christian, George, Joseph, Daniel, Charlotte and Maria. Upon his arrival in Mason county Christian Hart dought 160 acres of land in Graham district, where he lived until his death. Both he and his wife were consistent members of the United Brethren church and led the life of industrious country people.

James T. Hereford was a son of William P. and Polly (Cox) Hereford. The father was a native of Fairfax county, Va., born in 1794, and came to Mason county, Va., with his father when a boy of seventeen. He was a son of John Hereford, who served through the revolutionary war and held the office of adjutant under La Fayette. He served as magistrate and sheriff of Mason county, for a number of years. William P. Hereford and Polly Cox were married about 1817. Their children were: John, Elizabeth, Maria, Martha, James T., Mary, William C., Sarah, Juliet, Virginia and Margaret. After his marriage Mr. Hereford spent about five years in Cabell county, and then returned to Mason county, where he lived some twenty-seven years. He then spent about five years in Cass county, Mo., returning to Mason county, in 1856, where he lived until his death, September 18, 1872. His wife died August 13, 1838. For a second wife William P. Hereford took Nancy Gunn, in 1840, with whom he

lived until his death. She departed this life in 1880. James T. Hereford, the subject of our sketch, was born August 24, 1823, in Cabell county, W. Va., and when three years of age was brought to Mason county, where he has resided ever since. He remained with his father until the age of twenty-one. His business for about seven years was boating, and he was also connected with the timber trade. He was married March 1, 1848, to Mary J. Holloway. Mrs. Holloway, mother of Mrs. Hereford, was a cousin of the grandfather of President Harrison. Mr. Hereford first began farming on what is known as the Couch farm as a renter. He then farmed the Marmaduke place for nine years, and in 1870 purchased land of his own on which he now resides. He started with nothing and is now an independent and prosperous farmer. His family consists of the following children: Emeline, Lavinia, Mary, Francis T., Junius W., Virginia E. (deceased), and John T. They all live in Mason county. The farm owned by Mr. Hereford lies in Hannan district on the Ohio river and is known as Sunset Landing.

Edmund Hill, the subject of this sketch, is a native of Mason county, W. Va., in Arbuckle district of which, he was born in 1818. His father was Jesse Hill, who came from North Carolina to Mason county, and located on a farm where he lived until his death at the age of eighty years. He was married to Margaret Newel, and their family consisted of the following children: Sarah, Jonathan, James, Jarett, Edmund, Jesse, George W. and Rankin M. The father was engaged in farming all his life, and at his death owned about 100 acres of land. The subject of our sketch was married in 1841 to Maria Knapp, and their children are as follows: Mary M., Martha J., William R., Jonathan M., Jesse L., Boyd, Francis H., George H., Sarah E., Andrew N. and Ira E. Mr. Hill has been engaged in farming all his life, and at present owns 252 acres of land in Cologne district. He held the office of county commissioner for seven years, which indicates his popularity and standing among his fellow citizens. He has been a member of the Methodist church for twenty years, and is in every respect an upright and straightforward citizen. He resides in the town of Leon, and takes an active interest in all matters concerning the public welfare.

Charles E. Hogg.—The ancestry of Charles E. Hogg, on both sides of the house, came from Virginia, his great-great-grandfather being Capt. Peter Hogg, who served the colony of Virginia in the Indian wars, under Gov. Dinwiddie. His great-grandfather, Peter Hogg, located in the Ohio valley below the point where West Columbia now stands, in the year 1800, and in that year his grandfather, Thomas G. Hogg, was born, and in the year 1828, about three miles below there his father was born, and on the same farm the subject of this sketch was also born,

on the 21st of December, 1852. The mother of Charles E. Hogg was Miss Susan Knight, the daughter of George R. Knight, and she is said to have been a woman of great personal beauty, and at all times a person of singular excellence of character. She has been a consistent member of the church ever since her early life, and always a great student of the Bible, and has been careful in the rearing and training of her children. Charles E. Hogg received a common school education, with the exception of one year's attendance upon Canton college, Ohio, under the leadership of Rev. Dr. Tombs, where he studied Greek, Latin, German and higher mathematics, which became the foundation for a more thorough knowledge of these branches in after life without the aid of a teacher. He has read history and literature quite extensively, and although he is a diligent student of the law, he takes time to still pursue his readings in matters purely literary. He taught school in his native county from the time he was fifteen years old until he was eighteen, when he entered upon the work of a book-keeper at the Valley City Salt works, where he remained until August, 1873, when he spent a year at school as already stated. In October, 1874, he began the study of law, under the late Hon. Henry J. Fisher, obtaining his license to practice in eight months thereafter, and was admitted to practice his profession on May 28th, 1875. His first appearance in a supreme court of appeals was in the case of Meeks vs. Winden, reported in volume ten of our reports, and which was decided in his favor, and since this he has had a good practice, not only in the circuit courts of Mason, Jackson and Roane counties, but also in the supreme court of appeals. In 1875, he was elected county superintendent of free schools, and was re-elected in 1877, holding this office for four year. While acting in this capacity, he took an unusual interest in promoting the welfare of our schools and retired from office with the confidence and esteem of all our people. In 1884, he was a presidential elector on the Cleveland ticket and was the chairman of the electoral college. During that campaign he took an active part in the canvass, speaking in nearly all parts of his congressional district. In 1886, he was elected to congress from the Fourth congressional district by the largest majority ever before received by any person representing his district. He was defeated for a re-nomination by the fractional part of a vote, and after his term in congress he resumed his practice at the bar, in which he is now actively engaged and is an able and skillful lawyer. In June, 1881, he delivered a lecture before the societies of the West Virginia university, on "Life's Possibilities," which was heartily received by the students and faculty of that great institution of learning. He has delivered many other lectures and addresses before schools and colleges and educational gatherings

which have reflected much credit upon his literary acquirements. His last effort in this direction was an address before the Christian Endeavor society of Pomeroy, Ohio, delivered in 1890, on the "Christian God in History and Literature," which is pronounced by all who heard it to be a production of singular excellence and merit. Mr. Hogg was married in June, 1881, to Miss Nannie B. Hawkins, of Mason county, and he now resides in Point Pleasant in great felicity with his wife and three children, two sons and a daughter. Mr. Hogg delights in the society of his friends, and scarcely a day passes by that some of them do not call on him either to pay their respects or make him a visit. There is no one more hospitable than he and he has a warm welcome for every one. He is a man of pleasing and congenial habits, and is the last man to wound the feelings of another. He treats all classes and people with great respect.

W. H. Hogg, was born in Mason county, W. Va., July 30, 1838, his father's name being Thomas G. Mr. Hogg was reared in the county of his nativity, received a common school education and when about twenty years of age began life for himself. He was reared to a farming life and has always followed that pursuit. September 14, 1865, he wedded Elizabeth McGuffin, daughter of Robert McGuffin, and born in Jackson county, September 14, 1847. Their children were: Robert M., Ora, Byron and Gory. Mr. Hogg began farming on the old homestead which he still owns. He has been successful and is regarded as one of the representative farmers of Mason county. He has never bothered with the pursuit of office, preferring to stick closely to his business and make an independent living. Fraternally, he is a member of the Clifton lodge, No. 23, F. & A. M.; of Pt. Pleasant chapter, R. A. M., and has advanced to its ninth degree; has taken thirty-two degrees in Scottish Rite Masonry, Lafayette consistory, West Virginia. Though not a member of any church, he is a friend of all moral, religious and educational associations. His wife is a member of the Presbyterian church and takes much interest in its affairs. They have an interesting family whom they have taken great pains to educate well and start right in the world. Robert M., his oldest son, graduated at the Bellevue medical college, of New York city, at the age of twenty-one years, and is now a leading physician in the Elk Horn region of West Virginia. He is the regularly employed physician for four coal and coke companies and has a very bright future before him. Mr. Hogg's other three children are still at home. The daughter is well educated and finely accomplished in music. Byron and Gory, the younger boys, are cadets at the West Virginia state university, the youngest boy having received the state appointment and the older being there at his father's expense.

The entire family is remarkable for the popular address, social and entertaining manners of its members.

Charles W. Hogsett is a son of Samuel C. and Narcissa (Dobbins) Hogsett, sketches of whom appear in connection with that of their son Edward, and he was born June 10, 1856. He remained with his parents until the age of seventeen, when he entered the mercantile business in which he has ever since been engaged with a fair measure of success. Together with his business of merchandising, he also carries on his farm and has been more lucky than most people in being able to conduct successfully two different kinds of business at the same time. Both as a merchant and farmer, Mr. Hogsett has been popular and prosperous. On July 19, 1877, he was married to Flora E. McKay, and they have two children, viz.: Samuel W. and Charles H. The wife of Mr. Hogsett is the daughter of William McKay, of Jackson county, W. Va. He was a highly respected citizen and a successful farmer who departed this life in 1882. The two children of Mr. Charles W. Hogsett were born as follows: Samuel W., on August 22, 1878, and Charles H. on Angust 6, 1883.

Timothy H. Holloway was born October 5, 1835, and was the son of Joseph and Mary (Henton) Holloway. His father was a native of Allegheny county, Va., and was born 1794, being a son of John Holloway, who was of Dutch and Irish descent. The maiden name of John Holloway's wife was Elizabeth Haynes, who was of Scotch-Irish descent. Joseph Holloway came to Mason county in 1815, and located in Clendenin district, on a farm now owned by Charles T. Beale. He was married to Mary S. Henton August 17, 1813, in Allegheny county, Va. Their children's names were as follows: Elizabeth A., Julia G., James H., John W., Joseph G., Peter G., Mary Jane, Charles M., Francis M., Timothy H. and Sarah C. The father was a substantial man in his day, and served loyally as a federal soldier during the war of 1812. Timothy H. Holloway, the subject of our sketch, has lived all his life in Mercer Bottom, where he was born. His marriage took place December 27, 1860, to Maria Louisa Brown, a daughter of Gideon Brown, now deceased. The fruit of the marriage was the following named children: Robert H., William D., Anna M., Prentiss, Victoria C. and Hattie M. Mr. Holloway's father died in Mason county, May 14, 1849, and his mother departed this life February 13, 1866, while on a visit to her son who was then living in Gallia county, Ohio. Mr. Timothy Holloway has followed the occupation of farming all of his life.

W. D. Holmes was born in Jackson county, W. Va., July 19, 1849, and is a son of Wilkes L. and Mary (Bell) Holmes. The father was born in New York and the mother at Racine, Ohio, the former of English and the latter of Scotch and mixed origin.

They were married at Racine and the following were their children: Latisa Antoinette (deceased), Walter D. and Florence Luella (deceased.) The parents settled at Ripley Landing, where the father followed the business of steamboating until his death, at which time he was captain of a steamboat. His death took place October 12, 1858, in New Orleans, at the age of thirty-eight. He was a brother of Mary J. Holmes, the famous authoress. His widow was subsequently married to Harry Rowley, at Ravenswood, where she now resides. Our subject was reared at Ravenswood, W. Va. and Racine, Ohio, receiving most of his education at the last mentioned place. He began life for himself at an early period, having lost his father when he was only nine years of age. This threw him upon his own resources, and compelled him to struggle for himself when he was little fitted for the stern duties of life. But he fought manfully through all difficulties, and from a poor youth, without money or influential friends, and with a very limited education, he struggled bravely up to a position of influence and comfort. By natural inclination, he took up and followed his father's occupation. Seeking employment on the river, he first commenced to work as cabin boy, on the boats navigating the Ohio, from which position he soon found his way to something better. Later in life, he learned the tinner's trade, but ill health soon compelled him to abandon it, and he returned to the river, which has since been his means of livelihood. He confined his operations to boats on the Ohio and its tributaries, especially the Kanawha. In 1879, he bought the wharf boat at Pt. Pleasant, of which he has since been the proprietor. From 1875–79, he worked a good deal at his trade of tinner in the Kanawha valley, but since the date last above mentioned, he has resided at Pt. Pleasant. At that place in 1873, he was married to Miss Mollie Adkins, and the following are their children: Verna, Caroline, Wallace I., Frank H., Edna B. and Walter S.

F. D. Hoy was born at Pomeroy, Ohio, September, 1854, his parents being Charles William and Caroline (Taylor) Hoy. The father was born in Gallipolis, Ohio, in 1806, being a son of John Hoy, a native of old Virginia, who was the father of the following children: John, Henry, Charles, Eliza and Fanny. John Hoy was a farmer by occupation, and in the latter part of his life removed to Covington, Ky., where he died sometime in the sixties. Charles William Hoy was a printer by trade, and the business of editing and publishing newspapers was the occupation of his life. He published and edited the first paper of Mason county, from which place he went to Pomeroy, Ohio, where he published a paper called the "*People's Fountain.*" While engaged in this enterprise, when on a business trip to Cincinnati, in 1856, his death occurred. He was married in Pom-

eroy to Caroline Taylor, and the marriage resulted in the birth of Frank D. and William. The mother died at Wheeling, W. Va., while on a visit. Frank D. Hoy was born at Pomeroy, September, 1854, and was two years old when his father died. After the father's death the widowed mother and her two children resided at Wheeling, Va., until 1860, with the mother's parents. Then their home was established at Point Pleasant with Col. Joseph Sly, a native of Virginia. He visited the Kanawha valley as early as 1804, and settled in Mason county in 1830, removing to Point Pleasant about 1832. In his early days he followed boating on the Ohio and Kanawha rivers, and for a number of years was a ferry man at Point Pleasant. He was a pioneer citizen of Point Pleasant, of which he served several times as mayor. He left no offspring, and his former residence is now owned and occupied by F. D. Hoy. The latter was reared and educated at Point Pleasant, receiving a fair training in the common schools of the city. In early life he learned and followed the printer's trade for about eight years. His mother took for her second husband, William French, a man of English origin, by whom she became the mother of two children: Mary M. and Joseph A. The father was a well-known man in the history of Point Pleasant, where he served several years as assistant postmaster. Mr. Hoy for a number of years clerked in stores and in the postoffice. July 25, 1885, he was appointed postmaster, which position he held until January, 1890. In February of that year he formed a partnership with Mr. Smith in the grocery business at Point Pleasant. Mr. Hoy is a member of Minturn lodge, No. 19, A. F. & A. M., at Point Pleasant; also chapter 7, R. A. M.; the Huntington commandery, No. 29, K. T.; the I. O. O. F., No. 33, at Point Pleasant, and also of the K. of P., and other orders. November 13, 1879, he was married to Helen D. Sterrett, in Mason county, W. Va., and the union has been blessed with the birth of the following children: Mary, Carrie, Charlie, Willie and Robert. Mr. Hoy and wife are members of the Episcopal church.

Christopher Hughs is a son of John and Elizabeth (Oto) Hughs, and was born in Lancaster county, Penn. His father was a native of York county, Penn., where he was reared and lived until the age of forty. He then went to Jefferson county, Ohio, and thence to Brooke county, W. Va., where he died at the age of seventy-four. His wife also departed this life during the same year. He was married to Elizabeth Oto, a native of Lancaster county, Penn., and their children were: Christopher, Jesse, John, Thomas, George, Polly, Nancy, Margaret, Jemima, Jane and Betsy. Christopher Hughs came to Brooke county, when a young man, and went to Mason county in 1839, locating on a farm as a renter where he remained for twelve years. In 1851,

he purchased the farm on which he now resides. In 1839, he was married to Rebecca Clemms, and they had the following children: John W., Jesse, Leander, Frank, Abner, Thomas, George, William, James, Margaret, Catherine, Jemima, Emmie and Mary T. Mr. Hughs is a moral and upright man, and a member of the Methodist church. He started life without any thing, except a brave heart and willing hands, but by hard work and saving, he has accumulated a good home and farm of 200 acres.

Jefferson Hunter was born March 18, 1844, in Hannan district, Mason county. His parents were Stephen and Margaret (Colter) Hunter, who were early settlers of Mason county. Their marriage resulted in the birth of the following children: John A., Andrew and Sarah (twins), Eliza Jane, Elizabeth, Naomi, Annie, Jefferson and Madison (twins), and Margaret. Jefferson Hunter, was married to Mahala Carroll, March 11, 1868 and these are their children: Charles T., Mary M., Agatha C. and Annie G. Mr. Hunter served as a soldier in the confederate army three years, being a member of the Eighth Virginia cavalry, under Capt. Gwinn. He has been a farmer all his life in which business he has met with fair success and now owns 210 acres of land in Hannan district. He is a clever neighbor and a good citizen.

Mr. John L. Hutchinson, one of the representative citizens of Mason county, W. Va., was born in Monroe county, of the same state, December 26, 1821. He is a son of Isaac and Margaret Hutchinson, the father being a native of Monroe county, and of Scotch-Irish descent. The ancestors of the Hutchinsons were early settlers in that section of the state. The grandfather of our subject was a prominent character in the history of Monroe county, and was connected with getting up the original bill in the Virginia legislature to organize the county. His family consisted of the following children: Zachariah, Anderson, Isaac, John, Elizabeth, Margaret, Mary, Nancy and Rebecca. Isaac Hutchinson lived and died in his native county of Monroe. He was a farmer by occupation, and was for many years the county and circuit court clerk of Monroe county. He was the father of eight children, of whom only two reached maturity and are now living, viz.: George W. and John L. The grandfather of our subject was for seven years a revolutionary soldier under Gen. Washington, and held the position of colonel in the Virginia militia. The mother of our subject was born in Augusta county, Va., and was the daughter of George Hutchinson. Her brothers became the progenitors of a distinguished family who figured in the states of Kentucky, Ohio, Indiana, Tennessee and Virginia. John L. Hutchinson, the subject of our sketch, was reared in the county of Monroe. He was united in marriage, May 29, 1855,

with Mary E. Henderson, daughter of John G. and Ann Eliza (Stevens) Henderson. Her father was born February 5, 1795, and was a son of Samuel and Sallie (Donally) Henderson, being the first white child born in what is now Charleston, W. Va. His father was a son of John Henderson, a lieutenant in the famous battle of Pt. Pleasant. The mother was a daughter of Gen. Andrew Donally. John G. Henderson, father of Mrs. Hutchinson, was the progenitor of the following named children: Samuel B., Sallie A. (now Mrs. George), Mary E., Charles A. D. (deceased). Her grandfather was one of the earliest settlers of Mason county, and located on the south bank of Kanawha river at its mouth where he lived and died. John G. Henderson ever after made his home on this place, and the old homestead is the present residence of our subject and his wife. Mrs. Hutchinson was born on this farm, May 12, 1832. The marriage of our subject has resulted in the birth of the following named children: Charles Andrew, Robert Bruce, Isaac Sterling, Maggie, Mary and John H. Soon after their marriage, Mr. and Mrs. Hutchinson settled in Monroe county, W. Va., where he was engaged principally as a merchant up to 1870, when he located in Mason county, where he has since followed farming. Mr. Hutchinson has for many years been a good citizen of Mason county, and he is highly respected wherever known.

William J. Keister, was born February 26, 1841, in Highland county, Va., and came to Mason county at the age of nineteen years. His parents were Jacob P. and Mary (Lockridge) Keister. The first mentioned was born in Pendleton county, Va., in 1814. He became a resident of Mason county in 1859, settling as a renter on a farm in Hannan district. He was married in 1854, to Mary Lockridge and their children are: Mary, George, William, Jacob (deceased), John, Andrew (deceased), Elizabeth and Samuel. The father of these children has been a stock dealer and farmer most of his life. He has acted as justice of the peace for three years, and is a member of the Methodist Episcopal church. William Keister, the subject of our sketch, was married June 3, 1864, to Lavinia Cobb, daughter of Augustus Cobb, a native of North Carolina. The names of their children are as follows: Stephen, Lillie, Oretha, Elizabeth, Rosa, Birdie, Leona and Pearl. Stephen is in Nevada, Mo., engaged in the drug business. Lillie is married to Mr. Samuel McNeal, and the other children are at home. After his marriage Mr. Keister moved to Cabell county, W. Va., and farmed for two years where the city of Huntington now stands. He then went to Gallia county, Ohio, and engaged in merchandising for two years, after which he settled in Mason county, on a farm of 120 acres. To this he has since added, about 500 acres, which is principally all in grass, and well improved in the way of buildings, his barn

being 52x102, one of the largest in the county. Mr. Keister is a breeder of fancy Shropshire and Oxford down sheep. He introduced this breed into the lower end of the county, and was probably the first to introduce them in any part of Mason county. He took sweepstakes premium at the fair held in Mason county on his sheep. Mr. Keister handles a great many graded cattle. In hogs he makes a specialty of the Magee and Poland-China breeds. He has served as a member of the board of education, and has been a school trustee in his district ever since his residence in the county. He started life without anything, but by good judgment, enterprise and industry, has become an independent and prosperous farmer. During his time he has cleared over 600 acres.

Adam Kieszling was born on May 12, 1820, in Germany. His parents were Henry and Margaret (Haffman) Kieszling and they had a family of the following named children: Margaret, Adam, Lissa, Parry, Rachel, Steffen and Margaret R. The father was a farmer by occupation until his death, which occurred about 1880, at the advanced age of eighty-six years. The subject of our sketch came to America in 1848 and went to Pittsburgh, where he remained for twelve years. In 1860, he moved to Mason county, W. Va., and located in Cologne district on a good sized farm where he has since resided. He was married in Germany on May 4, 1848, to Margaret Sidel, and the following is a list of their children: John, Samuel, Crest, Minnie, Henry, Annie, Emma, George Adam and Maggie Laura. Before leaving Germany for this country, Mr. Kieszling served as a soldier for six years in the German army. He received his discharge on April 15, 1848, a short time before his emigration. He has been successful as a farmer, and besides the land which he still owns, he has assisted his children with considerable property. He and his wife are members of the Presbyterian church.

James B. Kerr, M. D., one of the well known physicians of Mason county, was born October 3, 1833, in Jefferson county, Ohio. His father was Robert Kerr, who was born in 1807, and became a resident of Mason county in 1875. He was married in 1831, to Elizabeth Elliot, like himself, a native of Jefferson county, Ohio, and born there August 26, 1812. Their children were: James B., Jane, Sarah (deceased), Rebecca (deceased), Alexandria (deceased), William, Mary (deceased) and Mary (deceased). Robert Kerr was a salt maker in Jefferson county, but also farmed for a number of years. He died in 1878 at the age of seventy-one years, but his wife is still living and resides with her son James at the age of seveny-eight. In early life, Dr. Kerr, the subject of our sketch, was a farmer and carpenter. In 1859 he came to Gallia county, Ohio, where he entered into

the mercantile business, in which he continued until 1868. About that time he came to Mason conunty, and settled on the farm where he now resides. Since his arrival in that section, he has engaged in selling goods and practicing medicine. For the last twenty years, he has been a physician in active practice, and says during that time he has lived mostly in the saddle. Dr. Kerr was educated in the common schools, but studied and practiced medicine with Dr. Fletcher, of Chambersburg, Ohio. In 1869, he took a medical course at Miami college in Cincinnati, and attended another course of lectures in 1880, at the same college. Dr. Kerr was married in 1859, to Imilda Gamble, in Hancock county, Va., and the result of their union has been the following named children: Jane, William H., Laura, James L. (deceased), and Millie. He has been a Master Mason during the period of adult life. Dr. Kerr is not only a good physician, but he is a good business man, and a citizen of popularity and influence.

Nathaniel Kimberling was born September 6, 1812, in Mason county, where he has always resided. His father was Joseph Kimberling, a native of Bath county, Va., who came to Mason county about 1812, and settled on a farm where he spent the remainder of his days, his death occurring April 22, 1848. He married Fanny M. Johnson, daughter of Benjamin Johnson, of eastern Virginia, who was an early settler of Mason county. Joseph Kimberling and wife were the parents of William, Malinda and Nathanial Kimberling. When the elder Kimberling came to Mason county there were many Indians, and but few white people there, so that the latter were obliged to live close together for protection. Mr. Kimberling was a farmer all of his life, and at his death, owned about 600 acres of land. He was drafted for the war of 1812, but escaped active service by the proclamation of peace. His son, Nathaniel Kimberling, was married June 14, 1838, in Mason county, W. Va., to Miriam Craig, and their children were as follows: Malinda, William, Sarah F., Eliza, Hannah A., Rachel, Harriet, Nancy, Lewis, Joanna, Christina and Joseph N. In 1830, Nathaniel Kimberling settled on the farm where he now resides. In 1889, he divided his 600 acres of land among his children. He was a hard working man, possessed good business judgment and was very successful during his long and useful life. He never aspired to public office, preferring to attend closely to his farming duties, and is recognized as a substantial and very worthy citizen in every respect.

Lewis Kimberling is a son of Nathaniel and Miriam (Craig) Kimberling, sketches of whom are elsewhere printed. He was born February, 1855, in Mason county, W. Va., where he lived until twenty-two years of age. In 1877 he went to Indiana, where he remained about six months, and then went to Grundy county, Mo. There, in 1878, September 26, he was married to Mary M.

Gamble. She was a daughter of Amos and Mary A. (Craig) Gamble, the father a native of Indiana and the mother of West Virginia. To Mr. Kimberling and wife were born the following children: Odus F., Ora A., Mildretta F., Eva P. and Elbert C. After Mr. Kimberling was married, he went to Nebraska, where he remained for ten years and then returned to Mason county, which has been the place of his residence ever since. While in Custer county, Neb., he bought 320 acres of land, which he still owns, besides the tract in Union district. All his life Mr. Kimberling has been a farmer and teacher of vocal music. Although still a young man, Mr. Kimberling has seen much of this great country. He has traveled through Missouri, most parts of Nebraska, along Dismal river and many other places of interest. During his western sojourn, he visited the Pawnee reservation and several other Indian reservations, and traveled up the Platte river for 300 miles. When he first went to Nebraska his nearest neighbors were Indians, it being about four miles to the residence of white people. He and his newly married bride first went to housekeeping on an island in Platte river, which they found a somewhat lonesome place of abode. He and his wife are both members of the Baptist church and the family is popular and well liked by all who know them.

Joseph N. Kimberling is the son of Nathaniel and Miriam (Craig) Kimberling of whom a sketch is found in another part of this work. His birth took place in 1863, and Union district in Mason county is the place of his nativity. Joseph remained with father until he reached his majority, at which time he began to think of starting life on his own responsibility. In order to acquire information and experience he concluded to travel a little, and took a trip to the state of Nebraska where he remained for one year and returned home. While in Nebraska he bought 160 acres of land which he still owns. September 6, 1885, he was united in wedlock to Miss Rachel Miller, in Mason county, W. Va., and their union has been blessed with the following offspring: Fanny M. and Joseph N. Mr. Kimberling and wife are both members of the Baptist church. He is a farmer by occupation and has a place of his own in Union district. Altogether, Mr. Kimberling is an upright and popular citizen.

Winston B. King was born in 1824, being a son of William and Tamar (Wallace) King. His father was a native of North Carolina who emigrated to Mason county in 1815, and located on the Kanawha near Red House, where he lived about two years. Their marriage resulted in the birth of the following named children: Maria, Louisa, Sarah, Winston B., William and Preston. Mrs. King was a daughter of Luke and Hannah Wallace. Her father was a wagoner during the revolutionary war, and one of the first settlers at Fort Charleston. He lived in stirring times

and often had trouble with the savages which then infested the border. John Oleacres, a cousin of Luke Wallace, had his whole family murdered by the Indians during that bloody period. His brother-in-law, Paton Oleacres, erected the first water mill on the Kanawha in a very early day. William King, in 1819, located on a farm of 100 acres in Mason county, where he lived and died. He served as a soldier during the war of 1812. His son, Winston B. King, who is the subject our sketch, was married in 1845, at the age of twenty-one years, his wife being Elizabeth Wallace, and their children are as follows: Mary, William, Elizabeth, David, George, Rhoda, Fanny, John, James and Alice. Mr. King was a second time married to Mary Bowen, he and wife being members of the Baptist church. Farming has been his occupation all his life, and he has met with the success that industry and economy always bring. That he has been an excellent citizen is proved by the fact that he was never sued, and never brought suit against anyone else, nor has he even been a witness in any case. He has always been a temperate man, never knowing what it is to be intoxicated. Mr. King started life practically without anything, and never had a dollar given to him during his career, but has succeeded by his own unaided efforts in accumulating 235 acres of land. Although sixty-six years of age, he works all the time as hard as when in the days of his prime. John King, a near relative of our subject, went to Texas in 1882, where he arrived without a cent and in debt, but to-day is worth $13,000. He accumulated the bulk of it by dealing in sheep, for which that great state is famous.

W. S. Kirk, the subject of this sketch, was born in 1855 in Jackson county, W. Va., near Ravenswood, being a son of Thomas and Abbie (Colwell) Kirk. Following will be found a sketch of his ancestry: James Colwell, a native of Brooke county, W. Va., was a son of Stephen S. Colwell, the latter being a native of Pennsylvania and of Scotch-Irish descent, who followed the occupation of farming. He came to Mason county in 1849, and located in Clendenin district on a farm, where he lived until his death, which occurred at the age of eighty-two. He was married in 1812 to Catharine Brown, and their children were as follows: James, Abigail, Eliza, John V., Sallie and Amanda. He was a member of the Presbyterian church, of which he was an elder for many years. James Colwell was born in 1814, and came to Mason county in 1849. Previous to that time he had been a flat-boatman, and worked in a store in the summer. After coming to Mason county he was engaged exclusively in farming. He was never married, and died December 3, 1886. Sallie and Eliza Colwell now reside on the old homestead farm in Mason county. W. S. Kirk, the subject of our sketch, was brought to Mason county in 1856 by his aunt, Sallie Colwell. He

was educated at Marshall acadamy, in Huntington, and after leaving school went into the business of farming, which he has followed ever since. His father was Thomas Kirk, a native the city of Cork, Ireland. He came to Brooke county in 1810, and was married in 1850 to Abigail Colwell. They had two children, James and William. Thomas Kirk was married a second time to Eunice Perdy, and to their union were born the following children: Brady B., Isabella and John. Mr. Kirk followed the business of merchandising and farming, and died in Ravenwood in 1883. The subject of our sketch was married January 10, 1890, to Maggie J. Millas, with whom he is living happily on the old Colwell homestead.

Aquila Leighton Knight, the subject of this sketch, first saw the light on Christmas morning, 1823, on the land of the heirs of Thomas Hogg, in the first hewed log house built in that part of Kanawha county. It stood at the head of Six Mile Island, six miles above Point Pleasant, now in Mason county, and was used as a dwelling from 1795 to 1885. He was a child of poverty, and while the saying "rocked in a sugar-trough" is worn threadbare by writers of fiction, yet it is true that the infant Aquila Leighton enjoyed the luxury of just such a cradle, improvised from a cut of a sassafras tree, and made by Henry Rice, a friend and neighbor of the family, in which it was kept as a memento of early struggles for twenty years. His quick perception and extraordinary memory developed precociously. He was but two years of age when the steamer on which General Lafayette was a passenger, landed at Six Mile Island to take his father on board, and yet he informed the writer a few years since that he remembered the occurrence. For the benefit and encouragement of the young we wish to show the grand possibilities which are within their reach if they but put forth the proper effort. "What man has done, man can do," is a trite saying, but a true one. Here is the record of this rustic boy in the "old field schools of ante bellum days": Went to school to a Mr. Burchard three weeks, learned to spell in two syllables; six weeks to Thomas G. Hogg, still in Webster's speller; six weeks to Calvin Somerville, began to read; at the age of eleven, eight weeks to same; made progress in reading, spelling and penmanship; six weeks to Jacob Gibbs, and reached compound numbers in Smiley's arithmetic; went eight weeks to John Bell and completed the arithmetic last named and made progress in geography and in Smith's English grammar. At fourteen he took up Murray's English grammar, geography, English composition and Conley's higher arithmetic, under the tutorage of James Minturn, who told his father at the end of ten weeks that it was useless to longer send the boy to the country schools. One characteristic instance of his boyhood days is worthy of record. At the age of fourteen

he had access to some old work on astronomy, which, like everything else that came in his way, he studied with untiring zeal, and from the following incident it may be inferred that he made some progress. Being informed that Mr. James Craig, who lived on the Kanawha, a few miles below Buffalo, had constructed a siderium or planetarium, he resolved to see it. So after corn-planting he was permitted to visit Mr. Craig, an entire stranger, twenty-five miles distant. In the company of a youth of his own age he started through the woods and that night stayed at the residence of Valentine McDermots, on Thirteen Mile creek. Next morning he proceeded up the Kanawha to Mr. Craig's, bare-foot, with pants rolled up to the knees, and alone. When near what he supposed to be Mr. Craig's residence, he met a gentleman and a colored boy, the latter driving a yoke of oxen. Of them he made inquiry and the gentleman pointed to a house and said: "There is where Mr. Craig lives but he is not at home." "I am very sorry," said the boy. "Why?" said the gentleman, "did you have particular business with him?" "No, sir," replied the boy, "not business of interest to him, but I wanted to see his siderium that I am told he has constructed." "Ah! indeed," said the gentleman, at the same time closely scrutinizing the uncouth appearance of the boy. "I have no doubt he would be pleased to show it to you but from what I know of it, it will not interest you." "I don't know," replied the boy, "but I have come twenty-five miles to see it and to learn if my ideas of astronomy are correct." "What!" said the gentleman, with animation, "have you been studying astronomy? Name the planets?" This the boy did readily, and the gentleman continuing, said: "Well, well, young man, if you do not meet with success, you certainly deserve it. Bob, drive the oxen to where the men are at work and I will take the young gentleman to the house." This was the late generous and kind-hearted Mr. James Craig, who not only exhibited the apparatus but fully explained the same and entertained the boy for two days. Such was the boy's thirst for knowledge that he devoured everything in the form of literature that came before him. The late Hon. John Hall, a few years ago, said to the writer, "Dr. Knight read every book in my library before he was fifteen years old." At sixteen he taught school in a German neighborhood, and in three months learned to read the language of these people. Thence onward until his twentieth year he worked on the farm in the summer and taught in the winter. Then his father employed a private tutor for him in the person of Prof. Alexander H. Porter, late of Oxford university, Ohio, and a graduate of Cambridge, England, with whom he studied two years, among his studies being Latin, French, algebra, geometry, surveying, civil engineering rhetoric, logic and political economy.

Here was four years' labor crowded into two years, yet his preceptor declared him to be as proficient as any collegiate with the degree of A. B. His preceptor declared him to be a natural mathematician and if this was true then he did not deserve that credit due to one who had acquired a knowledge of mathematical science by studious labor. But his most prominent natural talent was for drawing and painting, and this has perhaps afforded him more pleasure than all else in his wide range of education. Specimens of his handiwork in these arts may now be seen in the state capitol and in many West Virginian homes. In the summer of 1844 he hewed the logs and built for his father, a large double barn which still stands. The following year he taught school in the Roush settlement, near where the town of New Haven now stands, and the three following years was similarly employed in Pleasant Flats, after which he read medicine with Dr. Daniel Couch and, March 6, 1850, graduated from the Medical department of the Western Reserve college at Cleveland, Ohio, standing second in a class of seventy-six. Returning to his native county, he began the practice of his profession in Pleasant Flats, but in September, 1851, removed to the then new town of West Columbia, at which place he soon had the largest practice of any physician known to the writer. In July, 1861, he enlisted in the Confederate army. He participated in the battles of Scary Creek, Cross Lanes and Carnifex Ferry, being, soon after the latter, taken prisoner. He was indicted on a charge of treason and confined in the Wheeling jail for seven months, when he was released on parole which he honored until the close of the war. At this time he found himself reft of everything except his residence at West Columbia. Among his losses in addition to that of time, were outstanding claims aggregating $4,000, and slaves worth $6,000. It should have been stated that after graduation, he prosecuted the study of several sciences, among them, chemistry, botany and geology, in which he became proficient, although the writer has heard him remark that he had but a smattering knowledge of these branches; that his time was too fully occupied to give them sufficient attention, and he regrets his lack of attainments in natural history. But who has the time, that has the inclination, to study all branches of science. Dr. Hamilton, himself a prominent physician of the Kanawha valley, once said: "Dr. Knight will have much to answer for; nature has given him the full ten talents, while some of us have but one, and others but four or five at most. Why, he is artist, poet, mechanic, musician, scientist, linguist, and regarded by all who know him, as I do, as one of the most skillful physicians and surgeons between Pittsburgh and Cincinnati." Dr. Knight was married December 4, 1855, to Miss Susan Frances Willis, who was eleven years his

junior. To them were born eight children, viz.: Lillie Belle, wife of Fred. S. Bowen; Ida May, relict of Matt S. Gibbons, deceased; Eva Lee, wife of Dr. C. O. Probst, secretary of the Ohio State Board of Health; George Willis, born 1862, died 1874; William Oscar, born 1865, died 1868; Clarence Leighton, born 1867, died 1867; and Irma Louise and Ruby Ray, both as yet school girls. The Doctor was a justice of the peace under the old Virginia *regime* from 1852 to 1858; was several times president of the Meigs County Medical society; twice of the Mason County Medical society; twice of the Ohio Valley Medical society, and vice-president of the West Virginia State Medical society. He with Messrs. George Patrick, James H. Holloway, Andrew Rosebery and others were the first movers in favor of free-schools in Mason county and it was through their indefatigable efforts it was carried in 1858 by a two-thirds majority necessary under the statutory provisions of Virginia. He has contributed much to different medical periodicals, and is a fluent writer on many subjects. He is not flattered by praise nor discouraged by censure. Courteous, kind, positive, generous, frugal, temperate, industrious and studious, he works on toward the fulfillment of the mission assigned him. His life all through has been a struggle and one of conquest. Said he to the writer a few years since: "I have won many triumphs, but my grandest has been the conquest of myself."

M. M. Laidley, boot and shoe merchant of Pt. Pleasant, was born at Charleston, W. Va., August 25, 1858, and is a son of James M. Laidley, one of the oldest and best known citizens of Charleston, and by profession an attorney-at-law. Our subject was reared in Kanawha county, and obtained his education in the city schools at Charleston. He reached his majority in 1878, after which he embarked in the grocery business at Charleston. He continued in the mercantile business in the city mentioned until 1882, when he removed to Pt. Pleasant. At the last mentioned place he re-opened in the grocery trade, and continued it up to 1887, when he embarked in the boot and shoe business. At present he has the only exclusively boot and shoe store in Pt. Pleasant. On September 27, 1881, he was united in marriage with Miss Fannie M., daughter of Enos Smith, a citizen of Pt. Pleasant, where Mrs. Laidley was born. Their marriage has been blessed with the following named children: Bessie, Lulu and Ethel. Mr. and Mrs. Laidley are members of the Episcopal church and enjoy high social standing. He is a member of the Minturn lodge, A. F. & A. M., at Pt. Pleasant, and is also connected with the U. O. A. M., National Union and K. of P.

Virgil Anson Lewis, the subject of this sketch, was born July 6, 1848, on a farm in what is now Waggener district, Mason county, W. Va. His ancestors were of Scotch-Irish stock, and were

among the first settlers of the Shenandoah valley, and their later representatives were in the van of the daring pioneers who, crossing the Alleghenies, found homes within the present limits of West Virginia. His more immediate paternal ancestors, after a few years' residence in Greenbrier county, removed farther west, and in 1797, reared their cabin homes near Point Pleasant, then in Kanawha county, but now in Mason. When they came the surrounding region was almost an unbroken wilderness. It was but two years after Wayne's victory at Fallen Timbers. There were not to exceed a dozen settlements in Ohio. There was not a postoffice or store within a hundred miles. Here the parents of the subject, George W. Lewis and Lucy Edwards, were born, the former in 1819, and the latter in 1814. They were united in marriage August 20, 1846, and had issue five children, three sons and two daughters, the subject of this sketch being the eldest. By the death of his father he was left an orphan at the age of nine years, and thereafter, until his sixteenth year, he worked on a small farm and in winter attended the old field schools of ante-bellum days. But, upon the introduction of the public school system, he resolved to prepare himself for teaching and prosecuted his studies with that end in view. History was his favorite theme, and early in life he contributed historical articles to the press. These soon attracted wide attention and his productions were eagerly sought by publishers. May 16, 1880, he was elected a corresponding member of the Virginia Historical society. After a few years' teaching in his native county, he was in 1878, elected principal of Buffalo academy, in Putnam county, and a year later, was chosen to fill a similar position in the public schools of Winfield in the same county. While thus employed he engaged in the study of law in the office of the late James H. Hoge, but continued teaching until 1882, when he devoted himself to literature and traveled extensively through the southern states. At this time he conceived the idea of writing a history of his native state, and with that object in view went to Richmond, where he made extended research among the archives of Virginia, and then visited many country seats in quest of data for his proposed work. The result of this labor was the History of West Virginia, published by Hubbard Brothers, Philadelphia, 1889. How well he performed this work is shown by the fact that it has never received a single adverse word of criticism, and the legislature, at its session of 1891, by joint resolution, recommended it as a work of standard authority and authorized its use as a work of reference in the schools of the state. Mr. Lewis, though a licensed attorney, with permission to practice in the court of appeals and in the United States district and circuit courts, finds his literary and educational work more congenial, and therefore devotes most of his time to these pursuits. He

was an aspirant for the nomination for the office of state superintendent of schools in 1888, but, while receiving a large vote, the nomination went to Hon. B. S. Morgan. In 1890, Governor Fleming appointed him a delegate-at-large to represent West Virginia in the Inter-States Emigration and Industrial convention, which met at Asheville, N. C., in November, of that year. He is a member of the Pennsylvania Historical society, and was one of the charter members of the West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian society, of which organization he has been the efficient secretary from its formation to the present. He continues in active educational work and has served for a number of years as a member of the board of examiners of his native county. In addition, he performs a vast amount of literary labor, specimens of which may be seen in this work under the chapter headings of "Religious History of the Great Kanawha Valley," "Educational History of the Great Kanawha Valley," "Military History of the Great Kanawha Valley," etc. October 31, 1886, he wedded Miss Elizabeth Stone, of Mason county, and they have issue Anna Lucy, born January 10, 1888, and Hale V., born January 23, 1890. Mr. Lewis is in politics a democrat, and in all the issues of the day manifests a lively interest. He is the present mayor of the town of Mason City.

Isaac Long is descended from a pioneer family, his father being Adam Long, a native of Shenandoah county, Va., where he grew up to manhood and was married. His wife was Annie Rosenbarger, native of the same county, and after marriage the two emigrated to the Kanawha valley. They settled on the south side of the Kanawha river, on what is called Sixteen Mile Creek. Here Adam Long, with his wife and one child, took up his abode in the wilderness, and began the hard struggle of life which was the portion of all the early settlers on the border. The father fought long and bravely against the natural obstacles which confronted him, until finally both he and his faithful companion found graves in the neighborhood where they lived. Their children's names were: George, Isaac and Elizabeth. Isaac Long, who is the subject of this sketch, was born in what is now Arbuckle district, July 8, 1825, and grew to manhood on the old homestead. He received a fair education from the neighboring schools, walking back and forth a distance of from two to four miles to reach the school-house. Subsequently, he added to his education by a nine months' course in Page county, Va., after which he settled down and began at eighteen years of age what has been a very active life in farming. His share of his father's estate consisted of about 500 acres of land which was principally uncleared when he took it. But he has brought it out in good shape and placed it in an excellent state of cultivation. He began farming under many disadvantages, but by good manage-

ment and hard work, he pulled successfully through all his trials. He is a progressive farmer and has kept pace with all the modern improvements in machinery. Besides general farming, in which all the grains of his section are grown, he pays much attention to stock growing, being especially interested in cattle. At the age of twenty-one, Mr. Long was united in marriage with Miss Angeline Grice, a native of Mason county, and their children's names are: Isaac Newton and Mary M. In 1855, Mr. Long removed to Chariton county, Mo., where he lived and farmed until the fall of 1864, when he returned to Mason county, where he has since lived.

James W. Long was born February 15, 1833, being a son of George and Emily (Sterrett) Long. The father was a native of Shenandoah county, Va., born March 26, 1808, and was a son of Adam and Anna (Rosenberger) Long. Adam Long was born October 12, 1778, and came to Mason county in 1810, along with three brothers whose names were Philip, Jonas and Nathan. He settled on 625 acres of land in what is now Arbuckle district, being the same farm now owned by J. W. Long, his grandson. Adam Long's marriage to Anna Rosenberger was productive of the following named children: George, Elizabeth and Isaac. George Long was married October 1, 1829, to Emily K. Sterrett, and their children were: Evaline, William, James, Mary, Ann Eliza, Sarah, Robert, Susan, Virginia and George. He was a farmer all his life and lived on the farm his father owned until his death, which occurred April 1, 1880, his wife dying August 15, 1865. He and his wife were members of the Baptist church, in which he was a deacon for a number of years. James Long, the subject of our sketch, resides on the farm owned by his father. He was married November 26, 1863, to Catherine Hannan, a daughter of Henry Hannan. Their marriage was fruitful and resulted in the following named children: Rhoda E., Mary A., James H., Annette K., George W., Fanny E., Sarah H. and Evaline. Mr. Long has always followed the occupation of farming, and has met with the success that follows a life of industry and good judgment. He is an extensive land owner, being now the possessor of 1,435 acres of land in Arbuckle district, 625 being bottom and 810 upland. He is a clever neighbor and a popular citizen.

William A. Long is the son of George and Emily K. Long, a sketch of whom is given in another part of this volume. His birth took place December 19, 1831, in what is now Arbuckle district, Mason county, W. Va. May 5, 1858, he was united in wedlock to Savenia Ayres, a native of Illinois, and the following are the names of their children: Emily E., Evalina K. and Savenia Alice. Mr. Long was married a second time, December 22, 1875, to Sarah Z. Willhoit, a native of Kentucky, and the

children of this union were as follows: William Mason and George Robert, the latter deceased. Mr. Long inherited from his father 620 acres of land, most of which is bottom. On this farm he has resided ever since 1853, and has added thereto 600 acres. He has been a good manager and industrious, the result being that he has met with a good measure of success in his business affairs. He has not taken any active interest in politics, nor aspired to office, preferring to lead the independent life of a farmer. He is a useful citizen, and enjoys the esteem of his acquaintances.

John C. McCallister was born April 1, 1816, in Allegheny county, Va., being the son of William and Jane (Edgar) McCallister. The father was a native of Bath county, Va., and came to Mason county in 1834, where he located on a farm of 140 acres in Clendenin district. Here he lived until his death, which occurred in 1864, at the age of eighty-two. He was married to Jane Edgar, and their children are as follows: Martha A., Mary Jane, Thomas, Harrison, John, William, Andrew, Meniah, Samuel and Amanda. He enlisted in the war of 1812, but peace was declared before he had a chance to reach the scene of hostilities. By occupation he was a farmer all his life. John C. McCallister, the subject of our sketch, came to Mason county with his father in 1832. He remained at home until of age, when he commenced the business of farming, afterward working as a brick mason and carpenter. In addition to these pursuits, and other kinds of business, he clerked in a dry goods store for about fifteen years, but in 1862, settled down to farming, which he has followed steadily ever since. He was commissioned as captain and then as major of the militia of Mason county, in which capacity he acted for about three years. His marriage took place December, 1859, to Julia E. Lanham, and unto them have been born the following children: Walter, Beatrice, Lizzie, Robert, Annie and Shelby. Mr. McCallister resides on the old homestead farm of ninety acres, and now, at seventy-three years of age, is at peace with all the world, being able to look back with satisfaction on an active, industrious and well-spent life.

Gen. John McCausland.—The annals of the late civil war furnish few more picturesque personalities than the distinguished soldier whose career will be set forth in the following pages. It was his fortune to figure in some of the most tragic as well as romantic events of the great struggle, and when still a young man he had obtained a national reputation as a brilliant tactician and persistent fighter. He was born in St. Louis, Mo., September 13, 1837, his parents being John and Harriet (Kyle) McCausland. The father was a native of County Tyrone, Ireland, while the mother was born on Catawba creek, in Botetourt county, Va. Her father was William Kyle, a Virginian of Irish birth, who

married Sarah A. Stephens, by whom he had a large family of children. Mr. Kyle was a farmer by occupation, and paid particular attention to the breeding of fine horses. His residence was near Faircastle, Va., and there he spent the most of his days. The elder John McCausland left Ireland about the time he reached his majority, and took passage for the bright land of promise across the Atlantic. He landed at Baltimore, whence he made his way to Lynchburg, Va., where he found temporary employment with David Kyle. From there he went to Huntsville, Alabama, in which place he established a branch mercantile house, making a specialty of Irish linen. Branch houses were also started in Nashville and St. Louis, the latter city becoming Mr. McCausland's permanent place of abode. While living there Gov. Polk appointed him commissioner to arrange the basis for taxation for St. Louis, and subsequent experience proved that this work of Mr. McCausland was of vast importance to the great city by the Mississippi. John McCausland's marriage with Harriet Kyle was consummated while the latter was visiting friends in St. Louis. The union resulted in the birth of three children. The eldest born, a daughter named Laura, died in infancy; Robert K., one of the sons, became a physician, and the other son is the subject of this biography. The latter remained in St. Louis until 1849, when he went with his brother to Mason county, Va. He located at Point Pleasant, where he attended school for a year, and subsequently spent two years at the Buffalo academy. In 1853 young McCausland entered the military institute at Lexington, Va., where he was graduated with first honors in 1857. During the next year he was appointed assistant professor in the institute, which position he held until the breaking out of the civil war. Shortly after that momentous occurrence the young professor was given a commission by Gov. Letcher, with headquarters at Charleston, to raise troops for the Confederate army from the Kanawha valley counties. He remained there until the arrival of Gen. Henry A. Wise, who assumed command of the district and troops so far gathered together. These numbered about 6,000 men from whom young McCausland organized the Thirty-sixth Virginia regiment, of which he took command with a commission as colonel. The membership of this regiment, which afterward became famous under their gallant leader, was made up of the best material in the West Virginia counties. Most of them were young men at the time, many being under age or in the early twenties, and remarkable for their stalwart and handsome personalities. This brave band was frequently heard from afterward during the great agony and bloody sweat of the four years' desperate struggle. Col. McCausland and regiment took part in all the military operations under Gens. Wise and Floyd during their occupancy

of the Kanawha valley in 1861. In the latter part of that year the Thirty-sixth went with Gen. John B. Floyd to join the army of Sidney Johnston, at Bowling Green, Ky. Subsequently the gallant Thirty-sixth bore a conspicuous part in the hard fighting at Fort Donelson, and joined in the sortie of 5,000 men under Gen. Pillow. Col. McCausland refused to surrender his regiment when the defeat of the Confederates had been finally brought about by Gen. Grant's army. Many southern regiments were forced to stack arms before the victorious Federals, but the Thirty-sixth "lived to fight another day." By the exercise of much nerve and skill, Col. McCausland managed to withdraw his command which succeeded in reaching Nashville, Tenn. From there they proceeded by way of Chattanooga to southwest Virginia, finally locating at Wytheville, where a complete reorganization took place. Until the spring of 1864, the regiment served in the department of southwestern Virginia, taking part in various campaigns, marches, skirmishes and battles. In the spring of 1864 the Federal, Gen. Crook, organized a large army at and around Charleston, with which he marched against the Confederates in southwestern Virginia. He proceeded up the Kanawha valley, thence across the country to the New river and up that stream to Giles county. His objective point was the Virginia and Tennessee railroad, which was the artery of vital importance to the Confederates at that time. On the 9th of May, 1864, the army crossed over Cloyd's Mountain, which is situated in Pulaski county, Va. On a beautiful farm belonging to Maj. Cloyd, lying at the southern base of the mountain, the Confederate army was found drawn up in line of battle and ready to meet the advancing Federals. Gen Jenkins, an able and very popular officer from the Kanawha valley country, was in command of the little army that faced the superior force of Crook. There were but few preliminaries before two hostile forces came together. The ensuing battle was one of the hardest fought contests of the war, in proportion to the numbers engaged. It raged for several hours on the fertile plains of Pulaski, but finally resulted in a disastrous defeat and retreat of the Confederate forces. The loss was heavy on both sides, among the stricken being Gen. Jenkins, the gallant commander of the Confederates. That brave officer was severely wounded on the field and died a few days after the battle. Col. McCausland was second in command, and when he heard of the downfall of Gen. Jenkins, withdrew the troops to New River bridge, where he continued the fight the next day. After the battle of Cloyd's Mountain, so famous in Kanawha valley annals, Col. McCausland was promoted to the rank of brigadier general and assigned to the command of the cavalry brigade, lately commanded by Gen. Jenkins. This brigade, increased by the Twenty-first

Virginia cavalry regiment, was assigned to very difficult and dangerous duty. After the battle of Cloyd's Mountain, Gen. Cook fell back into the valley of the upper Kanawha, where he rested for a while and proceeded via Lewisburg, White Sulphur Springs, to join the army of Gen. David Hunter, then advancing up the valley of Virginia. McCausland was ordered to plant his brigade in front of Cook and do everything possible to retard that general's march and junction with Hunter. How well McCausland and his gallant little brigade performed this arduous service, is told in the pages of history. They first confronted Cook at Covington, in Allegheny county, Va., where sharp skirmishing commenced, and this was continued for days and weeks, on the long and weary march to Staunton, where the armies of Cook and Hunter finally came together. These forces now constituting a formidable army, proceeded on the march to Lynchburg, many miles distant beyond the Blue Ridge mountains. McCausland and his brigade continued to obstruct, fighting and retreating, burning bridges and every way delaying the advance of the Federals. They were the only organized troops in front of Hunter, until that officer reached Lynchburg. The delay caused by McCausland's brilliant tactics and skillful maneuvring gained valuable time, which proved of the utmost importance to the Confederates. General Lee was enabled to detach Early with a large force to go to the relief of Lynchburg, and they arrived there none too soon, as McCausland after weeks of hard fighting was making his last stand just outside the city limits. The reenforcements under Early soon turned the tide, and Gen. Hunter was speedily retreating across the mountains. The brigade of Gen. McCausland afterward served conspicuously during the campaigns that immediately succeeded in Maryland, on to the very gates of the National capital, and later against Gen. Sheridan, and his invincible cavalry in the valley of the Shenandoah. The brigade, especially distinguished itself at the battle of Monocacy Bridge, where it led the vanguard and made the first attack on Gen. Lew Wallace. Later, by order of Gen. Early, Gen. McCausland and his intrepid brigade marched to Chambersburg, Penn., which city was burned in retaliation for acts of incendiarism in Virginia. After the war, Gen. McCausland returned to Pt. Pleasant, but the feelings there were so bitter that he deemed it best to spend a while in foreign lands, until angry passion cooled down. After an absence of a year or two in Europe and Mexico, the general returned to his old home in 1866, where he has since remained, in the quiet pursuit of farming. In 1878, he married Miss Emmett Hannah, by whom he has four children: Samuel, John, Charlotte and Alexander.

Charles E. McCulloch, a son of John and Mary C. McCulloch, was born in Robinson district, Mason county, W. Va., Aug-

ust 13, 1849, and is the only living son of the above mentioned parents. He was reared upon a farm; first given a fair education at home, and afterward was placed in the Marietta (Ohio) college, where he spent one year; then attended Washington college at Lexington for one year, and fitted himself well for the duties of life. In 1884 he was united in wedlock with Miss Emma Chapman, daughter of Absalom Chapman, of Cabell county. Their union has been blessed with the birth of two children, viz.: John Howard and Charles Edward Chapman. Mr. McCulloch has devoted his life to farming, and resides on and cultivates the old homestead of his father in Arbuckle district. He is one of the representative farmers of the county; has been successful in business, and is recognized as a progressive and energetic citizen.

Mrs. Mary C. McCulloch was born in Mason county, W. Va., February, 1810, being a daughter of Andrew and Parthenia (Clendenin) Bryan. Her father was a native of Botetourt county, Va., a son of James Bryan, a Virginian, who settled on the north branch of the Kanawha river, where he lived until his death. Andrew Bryan and wife had four children: Mary C., James, Cynthia, and Elizabeth. Soon after their marriage they settled on a farm in Arbuckle district where they died and are buried. The mother, when married, was the widow of Jonathan Meigs, a brother of Gov. Meigs, of Ohio, and the result of her first marriage was two children, viz.: Return Jonathan and Theresa. The son became a lawyer, and at the time the civil war began, was residing at Nashville, Tenn., but on account of his loyalty to the Union cause, was warned to leave that state. He repaired to Staten Island, N. Y., and later, was appointed by President Lincoln clerk of the District of Columbia, where he now resides in possession of the same office. His only sister, Theresa, married a Presbyterian minister named Pope, and lived until his death in Tennessee. Miss Parthenia Clendenin, who was first the wife of Jonathan Meigs and then of Andrew Bryan, was the oldest of three daughters, the other two being Cynthia and Mary. Their father, George Clendenin, and his brothers, William and Alexander, were among the brave Virginia soldiers who fought the celebrated battle of Pt. Pleasant in 1774. George Clendenin, by giving forty acres of land as a site of the city, became the founder of West Virginia's capital, which was named in honor of his father, whose given name was Charles. George Clendenin was a signer of the Federal constitution, and was for several years a member of the Virginia legislature at Richmond, first representing Greenbrier county, and later, Kanawha county, after the latter was organized. He was hardly fifty years of age when his death occurred at Marietta, Ohio, while there visiting his oldest daughter, then Mrs. Jonathan Meigs. It was in 1839

that John McCulloch and Mary C. Bryan were united in marriage. Their five children were named as follows: Margaret, John, Mary, Charles E. and Sallie. John McCulloch, her husband, was born in Maryland in 1791, and died in Mason county, W. Va., in 1884. His father, of the same name, was of Irish lineage, first emigrated to Maryland, then went to Virginia, and later, settled in Mason county, where he died. His son, John, was for many years a prominent and representative farmer and citizen of Mason county. He died at an advanced age, after a long life which brought him the esteem of all who knew him, and doubtless received at the end, that most blessed of all rewards, the plaudit of "Well done thou good and faithful servant."

Capt. A. G. McDaniel, one of the oldest and most respected citizens of Mason county, was born in Washington City, D. C., August 13, 1809. He is one of the following named children, born to Ezekiel and Ann (Moore) McDaniel: Albert G., Mary Ann, James, Matilda, Catharine, Ezekiel, Emily, Guinn, Julia, John and Virginia. The father was born in Maryland, in 1785, and was a son of John McDaniel, a native of Ireland, who emigrated to the United States in an early day. The mother was born in Washington City, D. C., in 1788, and was a daughter of James Moore, a native of Glasgow, Scotland, who emigrated to this country and settled in Maryland. The marriage of Ezekiel and Ann McDaniel took place in Washington, where they lived until 1831, in which year they moved to what is now Mason county W. Va., settling on a tract of land just north of Mason City, on the site of the German furnace. The father died in 1836, but the mother continued to live there many years afterward, dying about 1874. Their eldest son is the immediate subject of this sketch. His father was for twenty-seven years a clerk in the navy department in Washington, continuing at one desk the entire time. Capt. McDaniel grew to manhood at the National capital, where he received a fair education. He was about twenty-two years old when his parents located in Mason county. At the age of twenty, he was married in Washington, to Miss Eliza Storm, of that city, and their children are as follows: Elizabeth, Ann, George, Mary, Albert, Leonard and Alice Rose. The mother of these children departed this life in 1870. Over forty years ago Capt. McDaniel began his career as a steamboat man on the great western rivers. He commenced as a watchman, as such taking two trips to New Orleans, after which he served as mate of a boat for about ten years. At the end of that time he bought an interest in a steamboat of which he became the captain, which position he held up to about 1882. He was very successful in his career as a steamboat captain, and few men have spent so much time on the rivers. In 1861 Capt. McDaniel went to Washington and offered his services to Presi-

dent Lincoln in connection with the war which had just broken out. He was ordered to St. Louis, where he was given a position in the naval service, and served in the war up to 1865. About 1882 he retired from the steamboat business and devoted his time to farming on his place in Mason county. Capt. McDaniel is one of the oldest Odd Fellows in the Ohio valley, having been a member of the order ever since he was twenty-one years old. In politics he is an old fashioned democrat of the Jeffersonian school. He has led a long and adventurous life, has met and overcome many obstacles, and is now spending the evening of his life with the good will and respect of all who know him. All that he is and all that he has are due to his own perseverance and indomitable will.

John McDermitt, an enterprising farmer of Cooper district, was born on July 7, 1833, in Mason county, W. Va., and has resided in this county ever since. He lived with his father until he was twenty years of age and then commenced farming for himself, following that occupation since entering on his business life. He was married in 1863, on September 3d, and in Mason county, to Miss Martha J. Lover, and unto them has been born one child, a daughter, Lucinda. Mr. McDermitt now resides on a farm of 107 acres in Cooper district, Mason county, in the enjoyment and prosperity which comes to those following the honorable calling of the agriculturist. John McDermitt, Sr., the father of the subject of this sketch, was a native of Mason county, born about 1794 in Arbuckle district, at the mouth of Nine Mile creek. He was a son of Daniel and Sarah (Fleming) McDermitt, the former of whom was a native of Ireland. He first located in Big Beaver, Penn., and then removed to Mason county, W. Va. He was one of the pioneer settlers on the Kanawha river. When John McDermitt was six months old his father became missing and was never afterward heard of. The children who were left to the care of their mother were James, Mary, Nancy, Betsey and John, and with the exception of Mary, were reared by other people. The wife of Daniel McDermitt died in Mason county, W. Va., at the age of ninety-five years. Her son, John McDermitt, was married about 1816 in the county of his nativity, and his children were as follows: Calvin, Alexandra, James, Daniel, Jeremiah, Samuel, Henry, Andrew, John, Adam, Rachel, Christopher C., Greenberry and Amos. He was a wheelwright and followed his trade most of his life. His death took place in 1883 and his wife followed him to the grave, her demise occurring in 1881.

Dr. James R. Meeks, the subject of this sketch, was the youngest of five children born to Charles Ray Meeks and Frances Henderson, his wife, born in Halifax county, Va., A. D. 1800, died January 11th, 1871, in Putnam county, W. Va. His father

was born in Albemarle county, Va., in 1797, died in March, 1833, in Halifax county, where Dr. James R. Meeks was born the 16th of March, 1832. Shortly after the death of her husband, the widow moved to Amherst county, taking with her the four fatherless children, then living where she and they lived with a brother of her deceased husband, Isham Meeks. Seven years later the two families moved to Rockbridge county, from whence in 1848, they again moved, this time to Putnam county, Va., now West Virginia. Here the doctor labored on the farm during the summer and attended the usual three months term of school during the winter. In 1852, Prof Perkin opened a select grammar school, which he attended for nine months. After which he taught school for four years, continuing with indefatigable zeal, his own self taught education. In 1856, upon a rigid examination, he was admitted to the study of medicine under the tutorship of Dr. A. L. Knight, of West Columbia, Va., now West Virginia. Two years after he matriculated in the Starling Medical college, of Columbus, Ohio, from which he graduated in March, 1860. Returned to Mason county, W. Va., and located in the town of Hartford City, where he commenced the practice of medicine, and was very successful, both as physician and financier, saving from his professional income, ten or twelve hundred annually. October 3d, 1860, he was united in marriage to Sarah Louise Knight, daughter of George Ray and Elizabeth Knight, and sister to his late preceptor in medicine. To them were born in the years 1861, '63, '64 and '69, Francis Kirk, Blanche, Hattie Lee and James Albert, in the order named. In 1865, the doctor having accumulated some capital, was induced to add the manufacture of salt to his other business with varying success and disaster, till 1880, when he found that twenty years of arduous labor had been lost, that he had nothing left but his instruments, library and the small patrimony of his wife, the latter he scrupulously kept out of his business transactions; his innate pride revolted at the idea of falling back upon the practice of medicine with a circumscribed style of living among the wealthy friends of his prosperity. So with iron wills he and his brave wife decided to remove to the southwest to renew their battle of life among strangers in a strange land. In 1881, they moved to Dallas, Texas, where he gradually obtained a good practice, where the three oldest children have married, and where he continues the practice of medicine. The Meeks family have been in Virginia for several generations. The doctor's paternal grandmother was an Italian by birth, being the daughter of a protestant Italian, who immigrated when she was thirteen years of age, and settled in Albemarle county, near Monticello, who preached and attended to horticulture for his excellency, Thomas Jefferson, for many years. His maternal

grandmother was the daughter of James Glass, a well-to-do planter and slave owner, as also was his grandfather Henderson. They were all well connected; they were related to the Brices and several other prominent families of Virginia.

C. C. Miller, one of the oldest citizens of Mason county, W. Va., was born there February 23, 1811, and is the son of John and Sophia (Clendenin) Miller. The father was born in Woodstock in 1781, and died in Mason county, in 1846. He was of German descent and came to Kanawha valley about 1800. At first he followed his trade at Charleston, which was that of a hatter. Afterward he removed to Gallipolis, Ohio, which was settled and named by the French. At the time Mr. Miller went there, he found only two other persons besides himself, who spoke the English language. He followed his trade there about eight years, and during that time was married to Sophia Clendenin. She was born in Greenbrier county, Va., about 1783, and died in Putnam county, in 1822. She was a daughter of William Clendenin, a Virginian by birth. Together with his brother, George Clendenin, a surveyor, who died at Marietta, Ohio, he settled at Charleston, Kanawha county, and there they built the Clendenin fort. This George Clendenin was really the founder of Charleston, and owned the land on which the city is now located. William Clendenin settled in Mason county opposite Gallipolis, Ohio, where he subsequently died and is buried in the Steenbergen family graveyard in Clendenin district, which was named in his honor. He was a very prominent character in the early history of the Kanawha valley, and was representative in the Virginia legislature, first from Kanawha and afterward from Mason county. John Miller and wife had the following children, who grew to maturity: Christopher, now a citizen of Missouri; William C., who died in Barboursville in 1888; Charles C., Henry H., who now resides in Cincinnati; Margaret, who married and died in Cabell county. The father removed from Gallipolis to Clendenin district and purchased a tract of land, where he built a brick residence and shop. Here he continued his trade and also farmed until 1819, and then removed to what is now Putnam county, locating in Teay's valley, on the Kentucky and Richmond road. There he bought 1,000 acres of land, and continued the business of farming, also keeping hotel for the accommodation of the traveling public. His wife died there in 1822. About 1832–33, he removed to the Arbuckle district, and settled on the Kanawha river, where the remainder of his days were spent. While living in Arbuckle district, he was married for the second time to Sarah Henderson, and their children were: Henderson, Elizabeth, Nancy, Mary and Emily. Charles C. Miller, from the early age of eight or nine years, commenced clerking in stores. This he kept up for a number of years, holding clerk-

ing positions in Cabell county, Charlestown and Gallipolis. In 1828, he began steamboating, which he continued until 1832. Subsequently, he merchandised some and in 1834, bought the sheriff's office of Mason county, of his uncle, Charles Clendenin, to which business he devoted himself for the next ten years. Afterward he merchandised for a while in Pt. Pleasant, and then became interested in agriculture. About 1843, he became director, and later for ten years, was president of the branch of the Merchants' & Mechanics' bank at Pt. Pleasant. When the Merchants' National bank was established, he was its president for a number of years, and is still one of the stockholders, but lives a retired life on his farm in Lewis district. In 1831, he married Miss Jemima Cantrell, daughter of John Cantrell, whose mother was a Clendenin. Mr. and Mrs. Miller have been the parents of the following named children: John C., Sophia, Anna and Betha. The mother died in 1854, and in 1856, Mr. Miller married Miss Virginia F. Middlecoff, by whom he became the father of two children. Blanche C. and Edith C. Mr. Miller is highly esteemed as one of the oldest citizens of the county, and also on account of his sterling personal qualities.

James H. Miller is a son of John and Sarah (Henderson) Miller, and was born in 1829 in what is now Mason county, where he has resided ever since. His marriage took place in 1851 to Harriet E. Craig, a daughter of James K. Craig, of Putnam county, and their children were as follows: Willie A., John D., Mary J., James H., Jr., and George K. (twins) and Sallie V. His second marriage was in 1864 to Annetta Lyons, a native of Kentucky, and the children by this union were Joseph L. and Stephen K. Mr. Miller inherited some land from his father and has since added considerably to the same and now has a tract of 457 acres, mostly bottom land. In 1876 he built a new house at the cost of $4,000, and his other improvements are in keeping with the same. Mr. Miller has carried on merchandising for about fifteen years, but his principal occupation has been that of farming. He has filled the position of justice of the peace for ten years and county commissioner for four years. Fraternally, he is a Master Mason, and a member of Minturn lodge, No. 19, at Pt. Pleasant. He and his wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal church, south, and the family stand well in the community.

William A. Miller was born November 28, 1821, in Rockbridge county, Va., and came to Mason county in 1866. His parents were Andrew and Ann (Armintrout) Miller, his father being born in Rockbridge county, Va., in 1780, where he lived and died. His first marriage was to Betsy Plot and the children were: Sallie, Betsy, Pollie, John and George. His second marriage was to Ann Armintrout and they had the following child-

ren: Margaret, William A., Andrew, Harriet, Samuel and James His third wife was Rebecca McCoy who bore him the following children: Thomas, Catherine, Phebe, Joseph, Benjamin and Robert. The progenitor of these children was a wagon-maker by trade, which business he followed throughout his life. His son, William A. Miller, who is the subject of this sketch, after living in Mason county for four years went to Putnam where he remained for seven years, and then returned to Mason, which has been his residence since then. His marriage to Margaret Oyler took place May 23, 1850, his bride being a native of Rockbridge county, Va. Following were the children: Hannah J., Mary F., Virginia, Martha L., William A., Margaret L., John H., Laura J., Alice J. and Alsona. During the civil war Mr. Miller was a soldier in the Confederate army for about six months. He has always followed the occupation of a farmer and resides on a farm in Hannan district. Mrs. Miller is a member of the Baptist church. They reside in an elegant new house which was built in 1888 at a cost of $2,000.

Robert E. Mitchell was born at West Columbia, Mason county, February 25, 1852, and is a son of Thomas and Barbara (Sommerville) Mitchell. The parents were born in Mason county, and their progenitors were early settlers of this section. The father is a prominent farmer of the county; is a son of James Mitchell, a native of north Ireland, who emigrated to the United States about 1800, and settled in what is now Graham district. He lived a long and useful life, until, in the course of nature, he was called away. Our subject's maternal grandfather was Samuel Sommerville, of a pioneer Virginia family in the settlement of the great Kanawha valley. His family was noted for longevity, and he himself lived to reach a very advanced age. Robert E. Mitchell, the subject of our sketch, was given a fair education in youth, but was reared to work on the farm. At the age of twenty-two years he entered the National Normal, at Lebanon, Ohio, where he completed a scientific course and was graduated in 1875. In 1876 he began teaching school, which he continued until about 1882, meeting with decided success in his educational career. In 1884 he was elected by the people as clerk of the circuit court at Point Pleasant, of which office he is the present efficient incumbent. In November, 1885, he was united in matrimony with Miss Emma E. Mallory, of Racine, Ohio. The result of this union has been the birth one child, Eva L. Mr. Mitchell may be properly described as a self-made man, and it can be stated with equal truth that he is an excellent citizen in all the duties appertaining to that title.

Charles Page Thomas Moore was born in Lewisburg, W. Va., then Virginia, on February 8, 1831. His paternal grandfather was Joseph Moore, who wedded Mary Ellen Morgan, sister of

Engd by F.G.Kimm.N.Y.

C. P. T. Moore

Gen. Daniel Morgan, of Virginia, and became the progenitor of the following offspring: Nancy, Morgan, Thomas, George and Morris. Thomas Moore was born in Shenandoah county, Va., and married Augusta Delphia Page, a native of Augusta county, Va., and unto them were born the following named children: Vincent, Mary E., and Charles Page Thomas. The father of the before mentioned children died in Lewisburg, W. Va., in 1832. The mother, after a second marriage, departed this life at Lewisburg, in 1844. Vincent, the oldest of the children, now resides in Kentucky. The sister and subject of this sketch were adopted by their uncle, George Moore, and his wife, who became the foster parents of these orphans. George Moore was a native of Shenandoah county, Va., and wedded Frances Harness, but the marriage resulted in the birth of no children. He was a tanner by trade in early years, but during the latter part of his life turned his attention to farming and settled in Mason county, W. Va., about 1836. He lived a long and active life, and died in 1880, aged eighty years, respected by all who knew him. His wife preceded him to the grave, dying in 1878, at the age of seventy-five years. With these foster parents, Mary E. grew to womanhood, was married, and now resides in Kentucky in her widowhood. Charles P. T. Moore was a youth of thirteen years when adopted into the home of his uncle. He received his early education in a local school and at the age of sixteen he was placed in Marshall academy, now college, of Huntington, W. Va. Subsequently at the home of Hon. John I. Van Meter, in Pike county, Ohio, he received a three years' course of instruction under private tutors, later attended Jefferson college, Penn., and in 1853 graduated at Union college of New York under Dr. Eliphalet Nott, a Presbyterian divine. In the fall of 1853 he entered the Virginia State university, where he began the study of law, completing the course in 1856. In that year he was admitted to the bar, located at Pt. Pleasant, W. Va., and began his career in the legal profession. In 1860 he was elected commonwealth's attorney for Mason county, which position he held until the outbreak of the civil war. After the close of the war, he continued the practice of his profession up to 1870, when, as a democrat, he was elected to the supreme bench of West Virginia, for a term of twelve years. In 1872 the change of the state constitution legislated him, with other state officials, out of office, but in the election of that year he was the democratic candidate for re-election, was endorsed by the other political parties and chosen without opposition. The new state constitution provided that the length of term which should fall to each of the newly elected judges should be decided by lot. The subject of our sketch voluntarily took the last draw, but as fortune would have it, it gave him the long term, which was twelve years. His service as

member of the supreme court lasted from January, 1870, to June, 1881, when, on account of ill health, he resigned and retired to private life. He located on his present farm, the former homestead of his uncle and foster father, which the latter by will bequeathed to him. In 1865, he was united in marriage with Urilla Kate Kline, in Columbus, Ohio, the result of the marriage being a family of four daughters, all of whom are still living. Fraternally, Judge Moore is a member of the Masonic Blue lodge of Pt. Pleasant, also of the Pt. Pleasant chapter of the Kanawha commandery, and has advanced beyond the thirty-second degree. In addition to this, he enjoys the distinction of being the only living founder of the Phi Kappa Psi fraternity.

George M. Moore was born July 12, 1839, in Mason county, W. Va., which has been the place of his residence ever since. His parents were Morgan and Mary (Allen) Moore, his father being a native of Shenandoah valley, born in 1797. He came to Mason county, and located on a farm in Mercer's bottom, where he lived until his death, which occurred in August, 1869. His children's names were as follows: John A., Clinton, Calvin, Calvin, George M., Charles (deceased), Joseph, Mary, Elizabeth, Lucretia, Fannie, Amanda and Lucinda. Mr. Moore was a saddler by trade, but his occupation for life was principally that of farming. For twenty years he held the office of justice of the peace. His son, George M. Moore, who is the subject of this shetch, remained with his father until he was thirty years of age. In 1872 he married Emily Brown, a daughter of Gideon and Maria (Watson) Brown, and their children are as follows: Mary, Ellen, Maggie, George G. and Morgan. In 1875 Mr. Moore located on the farm where he now resides. In 1870 and 1871, he was engaged in merchandising, but at present is manufacturing oil barrel staves, but his principal occupation is looking after matters connected with his farm. He is a breeder of fast horses, his breeds being the Highland Chiefs and Ben Allens. He graduated at the Pt. Pleasant academy in 1861, and is a man of intelligence who keeps well posted on all matters of current interest. For about four years he has been clerk of the board of education, and is esteemed as a citizen as well as respected neighbor.

Shepard W. Moore is a son of J. C. Moore, and was born in 1862, in Lincoln county, Mo. His father was a native of the same county and state, having come there in 1832 with his parents when still an infant. He was the son of William D. and Sarah (Hutton) Moore, natives of Tennessee, who now reside in Lincoln county, Mo. J. C. Moore was a teacher, but followed farming most of his time. The subject of our sketch lived at home with his parents until 1888, during which time he attended school at Lebanon, Ohio, for one year. Part of his time he has been

engaged in traveling for a library association in Chicago. Mr. Moore was married October 29, 1889, at Col. Beale's, in Clendenin district, his wife being Mary Morgan Moore, a daughter of Calvin and Mary Moore. After his marriage he returned to Missouri, where he spent the winter of 1889, and in the spring of the following year, returned to Mason county. He is a young man of popular address who is liked by all who know him.

George W. Moredock was born in Plainfield, Conn., July 28, 1816, his parents being Andrew and Sallie (Reynolds) Moredock. The father was son of George Moredock of Puritan origin. He enjoyed a revolutionary fame, and with some seven or eight companions left his home in Connecticut and crossing mountains and forests joined Gen. Washington at Boston. Afterward George Moredock and his friends fought in the battle of Bunker Hill and other battles of the revolutionary war. Andrew Moredock, father of our subject, was born March 11, 1784, and grew to manhood in his native state of Connecticut. He participated in the war of 1812, and was married to Sallie Reynolds, of Rhode Island; they were married in September, 1803, and these were their children: William, Daniel, Hiram E., Samuel R., Andrew, Charles M., George W., Annie R. and John. All the foregoing children are dead except Daniel and George W., the latter of whom is the immediate subject of this biography. George W. Moredock was reared in Connecticut, given a common school education, and afterward he attended the Plainfield academy. During his earlier days he learned all sorts of farm work, and also worked in a cotton manufactory in his native town. Until twenty-five years of age he worked in summer to earn money to defray expenses while attending school in winter. At the age of twenty-five his marriage with Eliza A. Healey was solemnized by Rev. Thomas Barber. Mrs. Moredock was born March 25, 1819, and still survives as the faithful companion of our subject. The date of the marriage was 1841, and the result was the birth of a daughter, born July 27, 1842, and now wife of Douglass E. Newton, and the mother of two children. From 1841 to 1853, Mr. Moredock was engaged in merchandising in Connecticut. At the date last mentioned he came to Hartford City, W. Va., where he has since resided. He was accompanied by his brother-in-law, W. A. Healey, who became manager of the second salt furnace erected in Mason county in 1854, the same being now under the management of Mr. Moredock. It was erected by the Mason County Mining and Manufacturing company, and is now owned by the Hartford City Salt company. Morgan G. Bulkeley, governor of Connecticut, is associated with Mr. Moredock in business. The subject of this sketch has been a prominent man both in the state of his nativity and that of his adoption. Until 1860 he was identified with the democratic party, but

since that time has affiliated with the republicans. He has, however, never participated actively in politics in the sense of seeking office, but has always been a staunch supporter of the Union and Federal constitution. He has kept aloof from political intrigues preferring to devote his time to important business matters, and the duties of independent citizenship. He started life with but little of this world's goods, but by energy, enterprise and natural business sagacity, has been remarkably successful in everything he undertook. For many years he has been an influential member of the order I. O. O. F., he is also a Master Mason and Knight Templar. The community in which he resides has no citizen more esteemed or more worthy of esteem than George W. Moredock.

William A. Morgan dates his birth from March 22, 1836, and the scene thereof, was Allegheny county, Penn. His parents were Samuel W. and Susanna (Armstrong) Morgan. Samuel W. was born in the county above mentioned, in 1809, came to Mason county in 1860, and settled on a 545 acre farm, near Letart where he lived until his death, which occurred March 21, 1876. He married Susanna Armstrong, and their children were: Nancy W., Elias J., William A., Mary A., Samuel, Margaret T., Jeremiah, Easter, John and Ann. The progenitor of this family was a blacksmith by trade but put in most of his time farming. William A. Morgan, the subject of our sketch, came to Mason county in 1860, and there he has made his home ever since. He found a wife in the person of Elizabeth Durst, to whom he was married June 5, 1862, and unto whom the following children were born: John H. and Rhoda A. While living in Pennsylvania, Mr. Morgan served as fifer of a band for a volunteer company, in which capacity he acted for twelve years. Like his father before him, he was a blacksmith by trade, but farming has been his principal business. He resides on a farm in Union district, situated on the waters of Kanawha, where he has a pleasant home and lives in peace with the world.

Henry C. Morrow is one of the following children born unto James and Olive (Hill) Morrow: Robert E., James J., Margaret, William C., John T., Gideon H. and Henry C. James Morrow was born in Mason county, W. Va., but the exact date of his birth is unknown. Henry C. Morrow, and all of his brothers, were soldiers during the late war and all returned home, except James, who died at Chapmansville, Va., in 1863. During the course of his service, John was captured and confined in Libby prison for five months. While sojourning in that dismal den, he was twice compelled to draw cuts for his life, but happened to be lucky and escaped both times. Henry C. Morrow, the subject of our sketch, was born in 1845, in Clendenin district, Mason county, W. Va. His marriage took place in 1872 to Rebecca Doss,

daughter of William and Elizabeth Doss, but they have no children. In 1863, he enlisted in the One Hundred and Seventy-third Ohio volunteers, and served with that regiment for one year during the civil war. By occupation, he has always been a farmer, has met with a fair measure of success in his business and stands well with his neighbors.

E. J. Mossman, M. D., was born in Gallia county, Ohio, February 10, 1854, being a son of Albert and Mary (Watts) Mossman. The parents were natives of Gallia county, Ohio, where they still reside. The father is a son of John Mossman, born in County Cork, Ireland, and emigrated to the United States in 1811. The subject of our sketch was reared on a farm in his native county. During his youth he was given the ordinary common school education, and completed a six years' course in the city schools of Gallipolis, Ohio, from the high school of which place he was graduated in June, 1876. At the age of sixteen years he taught a term in the public schools of Ohio, after which he followed that occupation for five years in the states of Ohio, Kentucky and West Virginia. He came to Mason county in the fall of 1876, where taught school in winter and studied medicine in summer. He began the study of medicine in 1875, at Gallipolis, under Dr. Reuben A. Vance, now of Cleveland, Ohio. In 1879 he engaged in the drug business at Buffalo, W. Va., and subsequently removed to Pt. Pleasant, where he continued the same. In 1882-83, he entered the Starling medical college, at Columbus, Ohio, and completed a course of two terms at that institution. Since July, 1883, he has been a practicing physician, at Pt. Pleasant. In June, 1884, he formed a partnership with Dr. Andrew Barbee, and is still connected with him in the practice of his profession. The firm also carry on a drug store at Pt. Pleasant. In April, 1879, Dr. Mossman was married at Pt. Pleasant, to Miss Mary E. McDaniel, daughter of Capt. William McDaniel, of Mason county, where Mrs. Mossman was born. Dr. Mossman is a member of the Ohio Medical society. Both socially and professionally, he enjoys high rank in the community.

Elijah Green Musgrave was born in Robinson district, Mason county, W. Va., May 22, 1834. His paternal grandparents were John and Ellen (Stewart) Musgrave, both natives of Virginia, of Dutch and Irish extraction. Their children were John, Asa, Elisha, Jane, Hiram, Comfort, Ellen, Martha, Elizabeth and Nancy. The parents and part of their children removed from Harvey county, Va., to Mason county, just after the war of 1812. Subsequently they moved to Ohio, and later to Warren county, Ind., where the parents lived until their deaths. Asa Musgrave, one of their sons, was born in 1804, in Hardy county, Va., and came with his parents to the west. After reaching his majority

he became a citizen of Mason county, and in 1829 was married to Mary Yeager, born in 1806. She was the daughter of Nicholas and Magdalene Yeager, who were born, reared and married in Fayette county, Penn., and settled in April, 1801, in Mason county, W. Va. Their marriage resulted in the birth of the following children: Elizabeth, Joseph, Catherine, Mary, Jacob, Barbara and Susan. The father was a soldier in the American revolution and a lieutenant in the war of 1812. Asa and Mary Musgrave had the following children: Mary E. and Elijah Green, Immediately after marriage they settled on a farm in Robinson district, where the father's death occurred May 13, 1879, and there, with her daughter, the mother now lives in her eighty-fifth year. Their only son is now a farmer and citizen of Robinson district. In 1857 he was wedded to Emma C. Roseberry, a daughter of Michael and Lucinda (Knopp) Roseberry. The marriage resulted in the birth of ten children. During the civil war Elijah G. Musgrave was captain of the One Hundredth and Sixth Virginia militia, but was in the service only during Morgan's raid in Ohio and Jenkins' raid in Virginia. He has led an active life, and is one of the respected citizens of his community.

William P. L. Neale was a native of Fauquier county, Va., and located in Clendenin district, Mason county. His father was William Neale, born in the county first above mentioned and of Irish descent. William P. L. Neale was only eight years of age when he was brought to Mason county by his mother, who had married William Prosser after the death of her first husband in 1808. William was married to Catherine B. Steenbergen in 1838, and located on what is now known as the Neale homestead at Ben Lomond. The result of his marriage was the following children: Virginia C., Ellen S., Albert C. (deceased), Edwin L., William P., Alice M. (deceased) and Robert J. Albert was killed in battle, while gallantly serving as a soldier in the southern army under Gen. Jenkins. He was shot after he surrendered, this unmilitary act occurring in March, 1863, when he was only nineteen years of age. Edwin L. Neale, the principal subject of this sketch, was married to Miss Beall Waggener on November 10, 1870. This marriage resulted in the following named children: Margaret L. and William P. L., both of whom live at home. Mr. Neale has spent all of his active life in farming, but during the last three years has also been engaged in merchandising, having formed a partnership with his brother, Robert J. at Ben Lomond. Edwin L. Neale is now about forty-four years of age, having been born February 24, 1846. He has led an industrious life, has been successful in business and now owns the old homestead of 460 acres besides 333 acres adjoining. His brother, Robert J., was born September 7, 1853, and has been engaged in farming and selling goods ever since he grew to

manhood. William P. L. Neale died at the age of sixty-eight. E. L. Neale and his brother Robert are both Master Masons of the thirty-second degree. In all the relations of friend, neighbor and citizen, they stand well in the community and enjoy the respect of their wide circle of acquaintances.

W. P. Neale, M. D., a practicing physician of Pt. Pleasant, W. Va., and member of the Ohio Medical association, was born in Mason county, March 30, 1849. His parents were William P. L. and Catherine (Steenbergen) Neale. The father was a native of Fauquier county, in the "Old Dominion," and son of William Neale, of the same state, and English descent. He was the progenitor of three children: Richard, William P. L. and Mary. William P. L., upon reaching his majority, left his native state and came to Mason county, where he settled on a farm. He married a daughter of Gen. P. H. Steenbergen, a pioneer of the county. This marriage gave issue to eight children, of whom the following reached maturity: Virginia C., Ella S., Charles Albert (deceased), Edward L., William P. and Robert J. The father was one of the well known and highly respected citizens of the county. Dr. W. P. Neale, the subject of this biography, was reared on a farm and received his education in the common schools. Later, he took a collegiate course in Bethany college, of Brooke county, W. Va., where he was graduated in 1868, at the age of nineteen years. He then began the study of medicine at Maulden, W. Va., which was kept up for two years thereafter, being alternated with school teaching. In 1869 he studied at Pt. Pleasant under Dr. Andrew R. Barbee, and in 1870 entered the university of Pennsylvania at Philadelphia, where he was graduated March 12, 1872, from the medical department. He returned to Pt. Pleasant, where he located in the practice of medicine and has since enjoyed a lucrative patronage. December 10, 1873, he led to the altar Miss Helen V. Waggener, a native of Mason county, and their marriage has been blessed with the birth of eight children, all living but one. During Gov. Jackson's administration, Dr. Neale served for two years as a director of the West Virginia State Hospital for the Insane at Weston. From 1882–85 he served as United States Pension Examining Surgeon, and for over one year was a member of the board of United States Pension Examiners. Dr. Neale is a past chancellor of the Pt. Pleasant Oriental K. of P. lodge, No. 49, and is Master of the Minturn lodge, No. 19, A. F. & A. M. of the same place. He also belongs to chapter 7, R. A. M., and is of the A. A. S. R., thirty-second degree of La Fayette consistory, No. 19. In addition to this, Dr. Neale is grand secretary of the State Grand Consistory, which position he is now holding for the third year. He is one of the representative and popular citizens of the community in which he lives.

Isaac V. Newman was born in Mason county, W. Va., in 1835. His parents were Isaac and Mary (Eastham) Newman, to whom were born the following children: Junius E., Virginia E., Mary C., William W., John G., Susan A., Sarah J., Isaac V. and Emma L. The father was a son of Walter and Catharine (Zimmerman) Newman, and was born in Pennsylvania, in 1798, his wife being a native of Fauquier county, Va., born in 1798. She was a daughter of George Eastham, who fought in the famous battle of Pt. Pleasant in 1774. Isaac Newman's father was also a soldier who fought in the same great struggle against Chief Cornstalk and his savage warriors. Isaac Newman was but twelve years old when his father came to what is Mason county, in 1800, settling in Pt. Pleasant. After his marriage Isaac located on what is now known as the Newman homestead in Robinson district, where his death occurred about 1836. He was a member of the Virginia legislature for six years. His widow long survived him, her death occurring in 1871. Isaac V. Newman, the immediate subject of this biography, received a liberal education at the Buffalo academy, after which he completed a course of law at Lexington. In 1858 he located at Pt. Pleasant, where he practiced law until May, 1861, at which time he enlisted in a Confederate company, organized at Charleston, by Dr. J. P. Hale. He served throughout the entire war and at the close of hostilities was a member of Company A, Thirty-sixth Virginia infantry. During his military service he participated in the following hard fought battles: Cross Lanes, Ft. Donelson, Cloyd's Farm, Fayetteville, Cross Roads, Fisher's Hill and others. At the second Winchester battle, he was taken prisoner and held for five months at Pt. Lookout, being exchanged February 12, 1865. At the bloody battle of Cloyd's Farm, fought May 9, 1864, he was severely wounded in the leg. His brother, John G. Newman, was a captain in Jenkin's Confederate cavalry, and participated in all the noted raids and engagements of that command. He was promoted to the rank of major for gallant and meritorious conduct, and served throughout the entire war. William W. Newman, another brother, was a promiment politician, and represented Virginia in the senate. Since the close of the war, I. V. Newman has lived a quiet and retired life, devoting his time and attention to farming in Robinson district.

Douglass E. Newton was born January 16, 1838, at Marietta, Ohio, being a son of Oren and Elizabeth (Fuller) Newton. His parents were born at Norwich, Conn., and are of Puritan origin. The father was born 1797, and died in Washington county, Ohio, in 1852. The mother was born in 1802 and still survives. Their marriage was consummated in Washington county, and was blessed by the birth of five sons and four daughters. The father was a farmer by occupation and a mason by trade. His son, who

is the subject of this sketch, was reared on a farm until the age of fourteen, at which time he lost his father by death. After that event, his mother established their home at Marietta where he received a common school and academical education. December 18, 1864, in Hartford City, W. Va., he was united in marriage with Jennie S. Moredock, daughter of G. W. Moredock, whose biography is elsewhere published in this volume. Mr. Newton after his marriage, continued to reside in Hartford City, and is a stockholder in the Hartford City Salt company. The marriage of Mr. and Mrs. Newton was blessed with the birth of two children. The first of these was a son christened George Moredock Newton, born July 10, 1865, and married to Edith Horton; resides at Hartford City, W. Va., and is manufacturing flour at Pomeroy, Ohio. The second was William Healey Newton, born May 25, 1867. He married Martha Atkins, resides at Hartford City, and is captain of the steamer "C. A. Hill." The Newtons are people of high social standing and are much esteemed in the community.

Thomas Nicholson was born in 1823, in County Down, Ireland, and emigrated to America in October, 1869. His father was of the same name as himself and a native of the same place, where he lived until his death, which occurred in March, 1867, when he was about sixty-five years of age. He married Mary McKnight in 1822, and their children were Thomas, James and Alexander. The elder Nicholson was a shoemaker by trade, but devoted himself mostly to farming. He and wife, as also all their children, were members of the Presbyterian church. Thomas Nicholson, who is the subject of this sketch, spent fifteen years in Australia before coming to this country. In that distant land beyond the seas he worked at mining for a while, and then engaged in farming. When he first came to America he located in Pittsburg, but only remained there a few months, and then came to Mason county, where he has made his home ever since. In 1869 he was married to Eliza Walker, in Pittsburg, Penn., but the union resulted in the birth of no children. At the present time Mr. Nicholson owns a farm in Union district, which he cultivates with a fair measure of success. He and wife both belong to the church of their fathers, and they constitute a respectable and esteemed couple.

H. J. Norton, a farmer and citizen of Mason county, was born in Kanawha county, W. Va., May 24, 1852, and is a son of Moses and Princess (Putney) Norton. Moses Norton was born in what is now Putnam county, W. Va., in 1816, his father being Moses Norton, who was born in Virginia on or near the south branch of the Potomac. He was of English origin and the progenitor of the following named offspring: James, John, Mary, Martha, Elijah, Elisha, Moses and Thomas, all now dead but

Moses. The mother of these children was Mary Whitecotton. The parents moved into the Kanawha valley about 1817 and first settled near Maulden, W. Va., where they died. After coming to the Kanawha valley the father bored for a salt well in Putnam county and erected a furnace, but the enterprise did not prove profitable. His son Moses was reared at Maulden and received a fair education for those times. He was married in 1848, to Princess Putnam, and their children were as follows: Henry J., Mary E. (deceased), and Mary F. After the birth of these children, their mother was called away in death. In 1863, Mr. Norton married Emily Reed, a native of Iowa, and this second union resulted in the birth of one child, Wilbur S., after whose birth the mother died. During his life, Mr. Norton has followed many occupations such as boating, salt making, the foundry business and merchandising, the last having been his principal pursuit throughout life. At present he has retired from business entirely and is spending the evening of his life in peace with the world and respected by all his neighbors. His son, H. J. Norton, who is the subject of this sketch, was reared in Kanawha county and was educated at Hampden and Sydney college in Virginia. For thirteen or fourteen years he clerked and kept books for various merchants, and in the spring of 1889, began farming in Robinson district, where he now resides. His marriage took place November 3, 1886, at Clifton, W. Va., his bride being Miss Olivia Redmond, daughter of B. J. Redmond, a well known citizen of Mason county, where the daughter was born, October 1, 1865, on the Maplewood farm. The marriage proved a very happy one and was blessed by the birth of a son, November 9, 1887. The child was christened Wilbur H., but his fond parents were disappointed in their expectations of raising him to manhood and were soon called on to mourn over the death of their little one, which sad event took place July 26, 1888. Mr. Norton is a member of the Masonic fraternity, is a progressive and popular citizen and enjoys universal esteem.

Berrimon B. Pearson was born in Prince William Co., Va., a son of William and Mary (Warren) Pearson. The father was a native of Prince William county, Va., born about 1790, a son of John Pearson, who was an Englishman. William Pearson's marriage to Mary Warren took place in 1810, and they remained in Prince William county until 1820, following the occupation of farming. He then removed to Shenandoah county, Va., where he lived until his death in 1866. His children were: Nancy, Berrimon B., William H., Francis, Lorinda, Thomas and Mary J. William Pearson and seven of his brothers, viz.: North, John, George, Ace, Craven, Cumberland and Whittington were all soldiers during the war of 1812. Berrimon B. Pearson, the subject of our sketch, became a resident of Mason county, W. Va., in

April, 1837. He was married in the same month and year to Sophia Raney, their children being as follows: Ellen F., Sarah C., James W., Elizabeth J., David B., Samuel and Rosabel Virginia. After coming to Mason county, Mr. Pearson rented and farmed land for a number of years. In 1844, he purchased and settled on a farm of 150 acres, to which he has since added 377 acres. Mr. Pearson has always followed the occupation of farming, in which he has met with a good measure of success. His wife died November 17, 1885.

Clinton Poffenbarger was a son of Henry and Lydia (Gillilan) Poffenbarger. His father was a native of Maryland and came to Jackson county, Ohio, at a very early day. Afterward he came to Kanawha county, where he worked in a salt furnace, and from there to Mason county, W. Va. He was married twice, the first union resulting in the following named children: Mary, Charles, Nancy and Herman. The second marriage took place in 1829 to Lydia Gillilan, of Irish descent, and the following named children were born: Virginia, Clinton, Franklin, William H., Rachel, John R. and Francis A. He was a third time married about 1854 to Mary A. Martin, and these were the children: Frank, Margaret, Henry and Ann. Mr. Poffenbarger, after coming to Mason county, engaged in farming, which he followed until his death in 1857. He was a member of the Methodist church, and he it was who succeeded in getting the Monticello circuit established in the bounds of the Guyandotte district of the West Virginia conference. He was always recognized as a leader in church affairs, and in an early day his house was headquarters for all the Christian people. For many years he was a class leader and steward. He served for a while during the war of 1812, and received a warrant for 160 acres of land. His sons, Clinton, Frank and William, sold this warrant to a cousin, and it is not known whether the land was ever taken up. Clinton Poffenbarger was born September 15, 1832, at Mercer's Bottom, in Mason county, on a farm then owned by W. H. Tompkins, of Kanawha county. He remained with his father until 1853, when he was married to Sarah Lewis, and the following is the list of their children: Timothy, Van, Henry, Lydia, George, Monroe, Lewis and Mary. Our subject, in 1872, settled in Arbuckle district, on the farm where he now resides. He has always followed the life of a farmer, and now owns 652 acres of land. He has been commissioner of the board of education for two years and president of the board eight years. For about twenty years he and his wife have been members of the Methodist Episcopal church. George Poffenbarger, a son of our subject, was justice of the peace in Arbuckle district for about two years. In 1888, he was elected sheriff of Mason county for the term of four years, and is at present occupying that position.

Henry Poffenbarger is a son of Clinton and Sarah Poffenbarger, a sketch of whom is printed in another part of this volume. He was born January 11, 1858, in Arbuckle district, Mason county, where he has since made his home. He remained with his parents until of age and was married August 11, 1878, to Ellen Morris, a daughter of Benjamin and Susan (Gardner) Morris. The marriage resulted in the birth of the following children: Emory H., Katie and Hoy. Mr. Poffenbarger has always followed farming as an occupation, and owns a farm in Arbuckle district near where he now resides. He was appointed deputy sheriff in 1885 by H. G. Nease, to serve in Arbuckle district for a term of four years, and later collected tax in Union district for a term of three years. In 1889 he was appointed by George Poffenbarger deputy sheriff for Arbuckle and Union districts for a term of four years.

William H. Poffenbarger is a son of Henry and Lydia (Gillilan) Poffenbarger, of whom a sketch is elsewhere given in this volume. He was born December 1, 1837, in Mason county, W. Va., where he has since resided. He remained with his father until 1857, in which year the latter died. His marriage took place September 18, 1861, to Mildred V. Mawpin, and unto them were born the following-named children: Sallie A., John W., Thomas H., Samuel J., Hattie G., Nettie M., Franklin (deceased), Francis L., Alfred and Harry (twins, deceased), and Robert A. Mr. Poffenbarger has kept at the business of farming during the whole of his life and has met with a good share of success. At present he owns 400 acres of land and resides on a farm in Arbuckle district. He has been justice of the peace for about twelve years and is regarded as a substantial citizen.

Mrs. Annie Purdy is the widow of Samuel T. Purdy, who was born June 8, 1822, at Moundsville, Marshall county, W. Va., and came to Mason county in 1876, settling on a farm in Union district, where his wife now resides. The father of Samuel was Lewis D. Purdy, born in New York, March 15, 1792, who came to Marshall county in a very early day and settled on a farm. He married Elizabeth Roush, January 21, 1821, and their children were: Samuel T., Eliza J., Amanda, Jonathan, George, Hamson, Elizabeth and Emily. Lewis D. Purdy was a farmer by occupation, and died in Marshall county in 1867, leaving an estate of about $21,000. His son, Samuel T., was married August 17, 1876, to Miss Annie Sayre, daughter of Absalom and Rachel (Flehart) Sayre. Her father was a native of Letart, Meigs county, Ohio, and her mother of Kanawha county, W. Va. Mr. and Mrs. Samuel Purdy have been blessed with the following named children: Lewis D., Cornelia M., Celia C. and Grover C. Mr. Purdy was a farmer by occupation, and met with success in his business operations. He was a member of the Presbyterian church while

his wife belongs to the Methodist Episcopal denomination. Mr. Purdy departed this life November 19, 1889, lamented by a large circle of friends and the community generally.

Benjamin J. Redmond.—Benjamin Redmond, the grandfather of our subject, Benjamin J. Redmond, was born in Loudon county, Va., and was of Irish extraction. He married Nancy James, and they became the parents of two children: Andrew J. and Mary. The father was a tanner by trade, and in an early day removed from Loudon county to Wood county, and afterward removed from Parkersburg to Charleston, and later moved to Point Pleasant, where he lived until his death, which occurred in 1858, at the age of seventy-two years. He spent the later days of his life in the pursuit of agriculture. Andrew J. Redmond was born in Wood county, W. Va., in 1817, and died in Buchanan county, Mo., in 1851. He was a tanner by trade and in later life farmed. He then removed to Missouri, where he died. He was united in marriage to Ala Amos, a native of Virginia, and she became the mother of three children. She died in 1842, and but two of her children now survive: Nancy, the wife of a Mr. Steners, now residing in Springfield, Mass., and Benjamin J. The latter, who is the subject of this sketch, was born in Mason county, W. Va., in 1840, and grew to manhood in Point Pleasant and vicinity. He was liberally educated, and later completed a law course of one year at Lexington, and practiced in Point Pleasant. Owing to the necessity of looking after certain farm land he suspended the practice of law, and embarked in the pusuit of agriculture, with which he has since been identified. In 1885, he removed to Clifton, at which place he has been identified in the coal, salt and bromine interests, lately giving all his attention to the manufacture of bromine and other chemicals. In 1862, he married Elizabeth Hall, daughter of John and Louisa (Hogg) Hall. The father was born in Ireland, in 1805, and was a son of John Hall, who was of Irish nativity, and was the progentitor of eight children, three daughters and five sons, who, with him, emigrated to the United States in 1807, and settled in Rockingham county, Va., subsequently locating in Mason county, near Point Pleasant. He again removed to Rockingham county, where he afterward died. He was a farmer by occupation. His oldest son, James, was a soldier in the war of 1812, and served under Gen. Harrison. He afterward became a prominent lawyer, and located at Harrisonburg, Va., where he died. John Hall grew to manhood in this county, and received a limited education, though he afterward obtained, by private study, a knowledge of those things which enabled him to be conversant on the leading topics of the day. At the age of eighteen, he was deputy sheriff of Mason county, and several years after held the office of sheriff. In 1843, he was elected as a whig to

the Virginia house of delegates, and served as a member of that body for two terms. In 1856, he was elected state senator, and served in that capacity one term. At the outbreak of the civil war he was a member of the first convention at Wheeling, for the organizasion of the new state, and in 1863 was president of the convention that adopted the constitution for the new state. During the civil war, and several years afterward, he was United States commissioner, and this ended his public career. His death occurred in Mason county in 1883, and by this event Mason county lost one of its representative men. His daughter, Mrs. Redmond, was born in Mason county, and her marriage with Mr. Redmond resulted in the birth of the following: Olivia Ala and John. Mr. Redmond was elected president of the county courts under the new constitution, and served for six years. During the civil war he was collector of taxes and also provost marshal. He is a Master Mason of Clifton lodge, and belongs to the LaFayette consistory.

Robert Rea, a citizen of Hartford City, W. Va., is a native of South Wales, where he was born May 24, 1846, his parents being Robert and Jane (Jenkins) Rea. They were both natives of South Wales, where they were they were married, and these are their children: Robert, Catherine, Morgan, David, Margaret Jane, Mary Ann, Elizabeth and George L. The father was a son of Robert and Agnes Rea, both born in Scotland. The subject of our sketch came to the United States in 1848, the other children being born in this country. For a year after arrival they lived in Pennsylvania, and then settled in Meigs county, Ohio, where the father followed the blacksmith trade until his death in 1871. His wife, who survived him, still resides in the county of Meigs. Robert Rea was merely a child when his parents came to America. He was reared principally in Meigs county, where he received a limited education in the ordinary rudiments of learning. At a very early age he was taught the blacksmith's trade in his father's shop and this has been his business nearly the whole of his life. Hartford City has been the place of his residence since October, 1870. July 21, 1870, Mr. Rea was married at Minersville, Ohio, to Martha Davis of Kanawha county, W. Va. Their children are: Sarah Jane, Robert, William Ernest, David Milton, Martha, Magnolia, Lewis and James Harrison. Mr. Rea is a member in good standing of Liberty lodge, I. O. O. F. He deserves much credit for the success he has achieved in life, as it is all due to his own hard work and industrious efforts. He has made a home for himself, has reared and educated his children and given his eldest daughter, Sarah J., a good education, which has qualified her to teach school, and she is now one of the popular teachers of Hartford City.

Dr. W. S. Reece is a native of Putnam county, W. Va., and was born July 25, 1854. He is a son of G. W. and Virginia (Jordan) Reece, of whom a sketch is printed elsewhere in this volume. Dr. Reece remained with his father until he was twenty years of age, when he went to Coalsmouth high school, St. Albans, Kanawha county, W. Va. He remained there for a year, after which he taught school in Cabell county for two years, and then attended Marshall college in Huntington for two years. After leaving college he resumed the business of teaching, which he continued for three years. He was married July 27, 1881, to Jane E. Kerr, daughter of Dr. J. B. and Imilda (Gambrie) Kerr. In 1884, after his marriage, he took a course of lectures at the medical college of Louisville, Ky. After two years' attendance he graduated there in March, 1886. The doctor then returned to Clendenin district, Mason county, and began the practice of his profession at Wyoma, which he has kept up until the present time, having met with decided success in the same. In 1890 Dr. Reece purchased a farm known as the old Grice homestead. He is a member of the I. O. O. F., at Gallipolis, Ohio, and also of the Baptist church. The doctor enjoys high social standing and is a man of influence.

George W. Reece was born January 22, 1816, in Cabell county, W. Va., but became a resident of Mason county, where he spent the most of his life. He was the son of Abia and Elizabeth (Harmon) Reece. The father was a native of Bedford county, Va., born 1784, and came to Kanawha county with his parents when five years of age. When he became a young man he moved to Cabell county, where he lived and died. Abia Reece was a son of Allen Reece, a native of Pennsylvania, who participated in the Revolutionary war, but subsequently came to Cabell county, where he died in 1837. Abia Reece and Elizabeth Harmon were married in 1809, and their children were as follows: Thomas H., Edmond C., James H., John M., George W., John C., Thomas A., Warren P. and Joseph A. The father was a farmer by occupation. He served in the war of 1812, was a member of the Baptist church and served as justice of the peace about twenty-five years. His death took place in Cabell county, in 1879, at the age of ninety-four years. His wife died in 1859. George W. Reece was married in January, 1841, to Virginia P. Jordan and their children were named as follows: Louisiana, Solon, Henry C., William S. and Maggie B. Mr. Reece settled on a farm in Hannan district in 1856, and has resided there since with the exception of about three years during the war. He has taught school some and acted as deputy sheriff in Cabell county for eighteen months, but his principal occupation during life has been farming. He has been prosperous in his business and at the age of seventy-four can look back on a useful and in-

dustrious life. Mr. Reece, his wife, and all his family are members of the Baptist church. He has held the position of justice of the peace for eight years and that of notary public for fourteen years, in every relation of life attending to his duties in such a way as to give satisfaction and gain esteem.

John P. Rhods, a citizen of Clifton, W. Va., was born in Jackson county, that state, September 16, 1858, and is a son of James P. and Mary (Stout) Rhods. The father was born in Rockbridge county, near the Natural Bridge of Virginia, and was a son of Samuel Rhods, of German descent. James P. Rhods, Sr., grew to manhood in Jackson county, where his parents settled, when he was a small boy. He married Miss Mary Stout, who was a native of the same county, and unto their marriage were born the following: Frances Esther, Burrel Lewis, Joseph Wilson, John Perry, Benjamin Franklin, Charles Lee, Thomas Virgil, James Richard, Sarah Margaret and Minnie Catherine. The father brough his family to Mason county, in 1873, and in 1885, the death of the loved mother and wife occurred. The father still survives at Mason, engaged in the occupation of farming. His son, John P. Rhods, the immediate subject of this sketch, was given a good common school education in Jackson county, and learned the blacksmith's trade at Ripley, W. Va. He then went to Clifton, where he has been located since February, 1876, and with the exception of a period of two years, has continuously carried on his trade. He was engaged for some time in coal mining, and the shipping of coal, and in 1889, began the manufacture of salt. He has also been carrying on a general merchandising business since May, 1889, and owns the most complete stocks in Clifton. In 1883, he was married to Miss Mary Elizabeth Compston, who is a native of Ohio, and to their union have been born two children: Leora Belle and Eva May. Mr. and Mrs. Rhods are highly respected in the community where they reside, and he is one of the substantial and progressive business men of Clifton.

Jasper Riffle was born January 1, 1849, in Mason county, and is one of the following named children of Joseph and Mary (Wood) Riffle: Junius, Jasper, Fanny, Lavena, Edmund (deceased), Irene (deceased), Viola (deceased) and Olivia. The father was born in Mason county, June 1, 1822, his parents being Catherine and George Riffle, and whose children were as follows: Conrad, Betsy, Mary, Jacob, George, Sarah, Susan, Catherine, Joseph and Augustus B. George Riffle, the father, was a native of Fayette county, Penn., born of Holland ancestry. His wife, Catherine Saulcer, was a native of the same county and of Dutch lineage. In 1801, George and Catherine Riffle removed from Pennsylvania and settled on Old Town Creek, in what is now Robinson district, Mason county. He was a soldier in the war

of 1812, and by occupation a farmer and distiller. His death occurred in 1858. Joseph Riffle, his son, was married at the age of twenty-five to Mary Ann Woods, daughter of John W. and Charlotte (Harris) Woods, both of Virginia birth. They were the parents of ten children and removed to Mason county in 1838, where they spent the remainder of their days. Mrs. Joseph Riffle was born September 19, 1824, in Augusta county, Va. Jasper Riffle was the oldest son but one of Joseph and Mary A. Riffle. He was reared in Mason county, where he received his early education, which was afterward finished in Meigs county, Ohio. He is a teacher by profession, although he is also engaged in agriculture. He began teaching in 1871 and has since continued that noble occupation with marked success, the educational advancement of his county being largely due to his energetic and progressive tendencies. For five years he served on the board of school examiners in Mason county, and in May, 1889, was elected the county superintendent of schools, which honorable position he holds at this time. Mr. Riffle has always taken much interest in every thing relating to the educational advancement of the community in which he resides, and acts as one of its representatives and most respected citizens.

Lewis E. Riffle is a son of William and Jane Riffle, who are mentioned in another part of this book. September 11, 1843, is the date of his birth which took place in Mason county, W. Va., the scene of his subsequent life. He remained with his father until he was twenty-six years of age, when he branched out for himself. August 4, 1868, he led to the altar Sarepta Jane Smith, daughter of James and Ann Smith. Their marriage has been a happy one and their home has been blessed with the following named children: John C. and William G. (twins), Cora M., Thomas B., Isaac M., Nellie J., Elizabeth, Emeline E., Alfred C., James G., Henry J. and David B. Mr. Riffle when first married lived on a farm in Cologne district, but after remaining there for about twelve years, he moved to Union district in Mason county, where he located on a small farm, containing the Entsminger flouring mills. He purchased a half interest in this mill in partnership with D. G. Decker. Since that time they have built a new mill, and now do most of the custom work for the surrounding country. Mr. Riffle and his brother-in-law, W. W. Smith, first purchased a two-thirds interest of the Entsminger mill, of Clark Tillis. Two years afterward, Smith & Tillis sold to D. G. Decker, and in this way Riffle & Decker became partners in the milling business. The same firm is also in partnership in the running of a portable saw-mill. Mr. Riffle served in the "Old Thirteenth" regiment during the war, having enlisted September 9, 1862. He participated with his regiment in many skirmishes and a number of important battles, of which the follow-

ing may be mentioned: First and second Winchester, Halltown, Berryville, Fisher's Hill and Cedar Creek. Though a carpenter and millwright by trade, Mr. Riffle's principal occupation has been that of farming. He is an energetic, industrious and useful citizen.

E. F. Rosebery was born April 2, 1832, in Mason county, W. Va. He is one of the following children born to Michael and Lucinda (Knopp) Rosebery: Sarah Ann, Elijah Marion, Edmond Franklin, Robert Cree, Margaret Jane, Emma Catherine, Jacob Lorren, Flora, John Peter and Hannah Adelia. The father was born in Fayette county, Penn., July 13, 1800, and was a son of John and Flora (Cree) Rosebery, both natives of the above mentioned county and state, who emigrated to Mason county about 1812. Their children were Mary, James, Margaret, Jane, Robert, Michael, Ann and Elijah. The parents settled at what is now Point Pleasant, where they kept hotel for several years and where they ended their days. Michael Roseberry, the father of the immediate subject of this sketch, was quite a small boy when he reached Mason county with his parents. Here he grew to manhood, and about 1828 was married to Lucinda Knopp, who was born in Montgomery county, Va., in 1810, and emigrated to Mason county with her parents when quite young. Michael Rosebery followed boat-building and boating and carpentering, milling and also farming. His death took place in 1871, and two years later the faithful companion of his life followed him to the last resting place. Edmond F. Rosebery, who is now a thrifty and industrious farmer and a well-to-do and progressive citizen in Robinson district, Mason county, grew to manhood in his native county. March 19, 1867, he was united in wedlock with Mrs. Mary E. Roush, who was formerly Miss Musgrave. Mrs. Roseberry was born in Mason county, May 26, 1831, and is a daughter of Asa and Mary (Yeager) Musgrave. Her first husband was Solomon Roush, by whom she had one daughter, Ida by name. Her marriage with Mr. Rosebery has been blessed by the birth of three children, viz.: Asa M., Effie F. and Mary E. Mr. Rosebery is regarded as one of the energetic and successful agriculturists of his county. He enjoys the full confidence of his fellow citizens, whom he served for several years on the board of education.

W. O. Roseberry.—William Owens, the maternal grandfather of the gentleman whose name heads this sketch, was of Scotch lineage, but his birthplace is not definitely known to the writer. He came to the Kanawha valley as early as 1781, and located at Point Pleasant, where he lived to an advanced age and then removed to Jackson, Ohio, where his death occurred at the age of eighty-five years. He was a very early settler of what is now Mason county, served as a revolutionary soldier, and in his

day was one of the most prominent and influential men in this section. He occupied several positions of honor and trust, having for many years held the office of magistrate, and also serving as sheriff of the county. He was the progenitor of a family consisting of four daughters and two sons, among the number being Sarah, who was the mother of W. O. Roseberry, the subject of this sketch. She was born in Mason county, and there she lived until her death, which occurred in 1880, at the age of eighty-five. John Roseberry, the paternal grandfather of our subject, was a native of Green county, Penn. He served as a revolutionary soldier, and went through all the hardships of the patriot army under Washington at Valley Forge. He was the father of four sons and four daughters. He came to Mason county before the beginning of this century, and there he lived and died. His son Robert was born in Green county, Penn., and and was but a youth when he came to Mason county. There he married Sarah Owens, of whom mention is made above. William Owens was one of the organizers of Mason county, and lived there when it was known as Augusta county, then Greenbrier, then Kanawha, and lastly Mason. The old house of William Owens in Point Pleasant is now owned by W. O. Roseberry. Robert and Sarah (Owens) Roseberry were parents of the following children: William, Nancy (deceased), John (deceased), Flora, Mary M., Andrew, Elijah J., two infants that died, and lastly Catherine (deceased). After their marriage, which took place in 1816, the parents settled in Point Pleasant where they spent the remainder of their days. His death took place in 1856, and she departed this life in 1880. During his life he followed the business of a mechanic and farmer; his wife was a member of the Methodist Episcopal church. W. O. Roseberry was born Point Pleasant, April 9, 1817, where he was reared and educated. He remained under the parental roof more or less until nearly fifty years of age, when his marriage took place with Miss Jane Crow, of Jackson, W. Va. Their marriage has been blessed with the birth of four children. Mr. Roseberry has been engaged in steamboating for about ten years, and for sixteen or seventeen years followed the business of milling and merchandising. Ten years of his life have been devoted to the occupation of farming. In early life he kept a wharf at Point Pleasant. From this cursory mention it will be seen that his life has been a busy and industrious one. Though not a member of any church, he is a friend of all moral causes and can be depended on to support every public enterprise that promises to improve the welfare of his community. His wife is a member of the Methodist Episcopal church, south, and the family enjoy an excellent social standing.

Jacob Roush was born in what is now Graham district, Mason

county, W. Va., March 5, 1826, and is a son of Samuel and Cathine (Zerkle) Roush. The father was born in Shenandoah county, Va., in 1792, being a son of George Roush, a Virginian of German descent. He was the progenitor of the following offspring: Jacob, John, Daniel, Samuel, Lewis, Michael, George, Jonas, Magdalene, Catherine, Christiana, Susanna and Mary. The mother having died, the father married a second wife, to whom one daughter, Hannah, was born. George Roush and family removed from Shenandoah county to what is now Mason and settled at Graham's Station, about 1804. He served during the Revolutionary war, and was by occupation a farmer and mechanic. His son Samuel grew to manhood and married Catherine Yerkle, born 1804, in Shenandoah county. Their children were as follows: Jacob, Noah, Henry F., Mary, Hannah, John, David, George W., Rebecca, Susan, Sarah and Elizabeth, all of whom lived to be grown and married. The parents reared their children on a farm and in the German Lutheran faith. The parents died in 1876 universally respected and sincerely lamented. Jacob Roush, the immediate subject of this sketch, was born and reared in Mason county. He worked on the farm with his father until he was of age, and then began the hard struggle of life for himself. The first wages he received were $10 per month for clearing timber from lands for cultivation. He also worked on the farm and flat-boated as a hired hand. Subsequently for about two years he merchandised on Broad Run and at Graham's Station. In 1853 he located at Mason where he has since resided. He began life there by teaming, which he continued for a number of years. Being elected constable, he did a good deal of business in that line and as town sergeant of Mason for a few years. Among the offices he has held have been those of councilman, mayor, deputy sheriff and assessor. In August, 1885, he was appointed postmaster of Mason, which place he held until June, 1890. December 31, 1859, he married Miss Frances Jane Berthissee, a native of Meigs county, Ohio, of Irish descent. Their children were as follows: Fanny, Samual, Julia (deceased), Blanche and Willie (deceased). It can be said with truth that Jacob Roush is a representative citizen of the best type. The prosperity which he enjoys has been the direct result of a frugal, industrious and moral life. Although engaged in business for many years, he was never sued or had an execution issued against him. This shows him to have been a law-abiding and square-dealing man in all his transactions with his neighbors or the community, and his good qualities have won him the confidence of all.

Noah Roush is a native of Mason county, W. Va., where he was born January 24, 1829. His parents were Samuel and Catherine (Zerkle) Roush, of whom mention is elsewhere made in this

work. He remained with his parents until he was about twenty-five years of age, and was then married on December 1, 1853, in Mason county to Miss Lydia, the daughter of Jacob and Mary A. (Durst) Grim. Their marriage was blessed with the following children: William R., Charles M., Roxy A., Henry C., Isaac N., Genora, Ida F. and Laban E. Mr. Roush has always followed the occupation of farming, and at present is the owner of 163 acres of land in Cooper district, Mason county, W. Va. The father of Mrs. Roush, Jacob Grim, was a native of Indiana, born in 1818, and came to Meigs county, Ohio, in a very early day. He removed to Mason county, where he died at the age of seventy-one. In Mason county, W. Va., he was married to Mary Durst, and these are the names of their children: Joseph, Daniel, Charles, Lydia, Sallie, Jacob, Dortha, Delila, Angeline and Samuel P. Mr. Grim and wife are members of the Baptist church. He was a farmer by occupation and followed this calling his entire life. Mary J. Kelly became his second wife, and their children were: Lewis, Malissa J., Matilda A., Barbara E., Mary F., Calvin and George.

Daniel Roush, a native of the Shenandoah valley, Va., was born about 1790, and came to Mason county about the year 1804, when he was a lad of fourteen years of age, his parents, George and Christina (Circle) Roush, were among the first settlers of Mason county, settling where Graham Station now stands. The wife dying, he was married to a Miss Wolf and one child was born unto them. By his first wife, George Roush was the father of the following children: John, Michael, Daniel, Lewis, Samuel, George, Jacob, Jonas, Magdaline, Christiana, Susan, Catherine and Mary. Mr. Roush located near Racine, Ohio, where his death occurred, but the date is unknown. Daniel Roush was married to Catharine Yeager, and unto them were born the following named: George, Mary A., Peter, Sarah, Samuel, Daniel and Joseph A. Daniel Roush was a soldier in the war of 1812, while his father fought in the Revolutionary war. Daniel Roush and his wife were members of the Lutheran church. Farming was his occupation and he followed this calling all of his business life. At the time of his death, he owned 400 acres of land. Samuel Roush, the third son of his parents and the subject of this sketch, was born in 1818, in Mason county, W. Va., where he has since resided. He made his home with his father until he was twenty-four years of age. On May 3rd, 1842, he was united in marriage with Miss Elizabeth Snyder, a native of Shenandoah valley. The fruit of their marriage was LaFayette, John W., Louisia, Rebecca, Joseph, Luther, Margaret and Edward. Mr. Roush, when he started out for himself, had nothing. He first bought 250 acres of land in Graham district, Mason county, and then bought and sold land for a number of years, at one time owning

1,100 acres. He has always followed the occupation of farming, and at present, owns 300 acres of land with good buildings. He has never aspired to public life, preferring to live the independent and prosperous life of the farmer. He has traveled extensively over this country, visiting the west and the large cities of the east. He and his wife are members of the Lutheran church. The grandfather of Mr. Roush had nine brothers, all of whom served in the Revolutionary war. John was the oldest, and settled at Pt. Pleasant in a very early day, holding the position of justice of the peace for a long time. Samuel Roush is one of the leading farmers of Mason county, and stands deservedly high in the community where he resides.

John N. Russell, M. D., a practicing physician of Mason City, W.Va., was born in Cabell county, on the site of the city of Huntington, August 7, 1843, his parents being John and Hannah (Maxon) Russell. The father was born in old Virginia, of English lineage, while the mother was a native of New York, and daughter of an early settler of Gallia county, Ohio. John and Hannah Russell had the following children: Romie E. and John N. By a previous marriage with a Miss Buffington, John Russell was the father of the following children: Frank T., Sarah E., William, Marion, Thomas A., Helen M. and Eliza. Dr. John Russell, the subject of this sketch, was reared in his native county and received a good common school education, after which he concluded an academical course at the Marshall college of Huntington. In 1867, he graduated at the university of Columbia, Mo., and in 1871 began studying his profession under O. P. Ingham, at Guyandotte, W. Va. In 1876, he finished a three years' course at the Ohio medical college of Cincinnati, where he was graduated. Subsequently he attended two courses of lectures at the Baltimore college of physicians and surgeons, where he was graduated in 1880. Dr. Russell commenced the practice of medicine in Tazewell county, Va., in 1877. He practiced in the counties of Tazewell and Russell, Va., and for three years resided in Texas. In March, 1885, he located in Mason, W. Va. During the civil war the doctor was a soldier on the confederate side, serving in the cavalry command of Gen. A. G. Jenkins. He enlisted about April 17, 1861, and stuck to the lost cause until June 19, 1865, thus covering the whole period of the "late unpleasantness." He participated in all the important engagements and battles that were fought by the command of the distinguished partisan leader under whom he served. Dr. Russell has been twice married, first in 1869 to Miss Eva Douglass, who bore him two children: Charles D. and Carey M. In 1886 he was united in marriage with Miss Clara Mathews, the fruit of this union being the birth of two children: Helen E. and Mabel L. The former died at the age of fifteen months, December 15 1888. Dr. Russell is a

member of the medical associations enumerated below: American, Ohio state, Meigs county, Ohio, and Mason county, W. Va. He belongs to the Masonic, Western Star lodge of Guyandotte, and is also an I. O. O. F. Both professionally and socially, the doctor enjoys high rank and wide popularity.

Charles Sayre was born November 8, 1831, in Mason county, where he has since resided. He lived with his parents until the death of his father, which occurred when Charles was sixteen years of age. He then lived with his mother, helping her support the family. His marriage with Malinda, daughter of James and Susan (Peck) McDermitt, occurred March 1, 1855, and unto their marriage have been born the following children: Elnora (deceased), Willie (deceased), Clara and Frank (deceased). Mr. Sayre has been a boatman and a farmer during his life, and now resides on the old homestead. His wife died January 13, 1887. William Sayre, the father of Charles, was a native of Mason county, W. Va., being born August 4, 1808, in what is now Cooper district, where he lived and died. He was a son of Daniel and Sinia (Hayman) Sayre, the former a native of Mason county, and the latter of Ohio. Daniel Sayre was a son of Daniel Sayre, who was one of the first settlers of Letart Bottom. Daniel Sayre was married to Sinia Hayman, and their marriage was blessed with the following children: Mary, Henry, Rebecca, Elizabeth, Charles W., Margaret, Rachel, Minerva and George W. He was a boatman and also followed the occupation of farming. At the time of his death he was the possessor of 100 acres of land in Mason county. William Sayre was married to Grace Engles, a daughter of John Engles, in 1830, at French Grant, near Portsmouth, Ohio, and to them were born Charles, Franklin (deceased), Rollie (deceased), Mary (deceased), Orilla (deceased), Philena (deceased), Augusta, Isaac and Cordelia (deceased). William Sayre followed the calling of his father before him, and at the time of his death owned fifty acres of land in Cooper district, Mason county, W. Va.

John B. Schuler was born in Bavaria, Germany, November 1, 1835, and is a son of John and Mary Ann (Deihl) Schuler. The parents were born, bred and married in Bavaria, and their children who reached maturity were as follows: John B., Joseph, Anthony, Elizabeth (deceased), and Mary Ann (deceased). In 1839, the family emigrated to the United States, landing June 6th, of that year at Pomeroy, Ohio, where the parents lived and died, the father in 1879 and the mother in 1880. The father was a farmer by occupation, and he and his wife were members of the Catholic church. The subject of this sketch was but four years of age when his parents came to America. He spent his youth up to fourteen years of age on a farm in Ohio. Since the age mentioned, Mr. Schuler has either worked at coal mining, saw-

milling or steamboating. He may be said to be almost entirely self educated as he only attended school about three months. His education is of that substantial kind which is gained by application, close observation and experience. Mr. Schuler can talk and read both the English and the German languages. His marriage took place in 1856, to Eva Smith, a native of Baden, Germany, born in 1837, who emigrated to America in 1853, with her sister and brothers. They have been the parents of seven children, five of whom are living, four sons and one daughter. Mr. Schuler is self made and has established a prosperous business entirely as the result of his own industry. At present he is the senior member of the firm of Schuler & Hanes, who entered business at Pt. Pleasant, in November, 1889. They erected a saw- and planing-mill and are supplied with machinery for doing all kinds of work connected with that branch of business. The saw capacity of their establishment is about 25,000 feet daily, and that of the planing department about 6,000 feet daily. The firm employs fifteen men and have machinery for making all kinds of work connected with steamboats.

C. Shrewsbury, the subject of this sketch, comes of good old pioneer stock. His father was John C. Shrewsbury, who was born in Bedford county, Va., March 4, 1800, being a son of Dabney Shrewsbury, a Virginian of English origin. It is quite probable that the family is descended lineally from Lord Shrewsbury, of England. John C. was born and reared in Bedford county, Va., and at the age of nineteen came alone to Kanawha, settling about ten miles from Charleston. Three of his uncles, named Joel, Samuel and John, preceded him and engaged in the manufacture of salt above Charleston. He engaged with them as wood-chopper for the furnaces, and later he learned to manufacture barrels which were used by the firm. Afterward he manufactured salt on his own capital in the same neighborhood. About 1837 he went to Missouri, but returned in 1840, and resumed salt making, which he kept up until 1846. In that year he settled on a 4,000-acre tract of land about six miles west of Charleston on Davis creek, where he resided until his death in 1878. He was married in Kanawha county about 1828, to Elizabeth Farley, of Virginia. Her ancestors were Virginians who settled in Kentucky in an early day. The marriage of this couple resulted in the birth of the following children: Dabney, Columbus, John, George, Hutson, Samuel and Elizabeth. The mother now resides in Kanawha county with her son, Samuel. Columbus Shrewsbury was born in Kanawha county, June 5, 1832, and was fairly well educated for those times. He remained with his parents until nineteen years of age, and then learned the carpenter's trade. He was engaged for about ten years in building salt furnaces, and in 1861 went into the busi-

ness of boring oil wells in the little Kanawha valley. The outbreak of the civil war interrupted his occupation, and in 1861 he joined Company A, Fourth West Virginia infantry, with which he served until 1863, when he was discharged on account of ill health while holding the position of second lieutenant. He served in the battles of Vicksburg, Charleston and other engagements. After his discharge he returned to Mason City and resumed the business of boring for oil in Pleasants county. In the fall of 1864 he located at Point Pleasant, where he resumed his trade and also engaged in the harness and saddlery business. In 1867 he was elected sheriff of Mason county, serving four years, and in 1871 took a mail contract on the Ohio and Kanawha rivers. In 1877 he was appointed deputy United States marshal, which position he held for four years and gave up on account of ill health. In 1881 he removed to the farm near Mason where he now lives. His marriage took place in 1859 with Miss Cynthia Jarrett, of Kanawha. Her father was Isaac Jarrett, well-known in the history of the state, and son of John Jarrett, one of the earliest salt makers of the Kanawha valley. The children of our subject and his wife were Fanny-E., John H., Hattie C., George H., Lucy H. and Herman J. Mrs. Shrewsbury died February 8, 1890, after a life of fidelity to her husband, and devoted to good works. Both she and her husband were members of the Baptist church. Fraternally Mr. Shrewsbury is a demitted Mason, is a member of the G. A. R., and one of the representative citizens of the county.

Livia Nye Simpson, publisher of *The State Gazette*, issued at Point Pleasant, W. Va., was born at Pomeroy, Ohio, March 1, 1862. Her father is G. P. Simpson, an attorney-at-law, practicing and residing at Point Pleasant. The father was born in Meigs county, Ohio, and is of Irish lineage. He has been a member of the legal profession since 1861. He wedded Phœbe A. Kennedy, a native of Meigs county, Ohio, and of French and Irish extraction. There are five children, of whom Miss Livia is the oldest, namely: Charles K., Mary M., John N. and George M. The parents have lived in Mason county, W. Va., since 1866, and in Point Pleasant since 1872. Miss Livia N. received a thorough English education in the city schools of Point Pleasant, completing a course under the instruction of Prof. W. J. Kenny. After the completion of her education she began teaching in the public schools of Mason county, and taught three years. She spent one year as deputy in the county clerk's office at Point Pleasant, and in the meantime became interested in newspaper work, and in 1888 became the publisher and editress of *The State Gazette*, and is the only lady newspaper publisher in West Virginia. She has made a marked success in the newspaper field, increasing the

popularity and circulation more than double, and now issues one of the leading weekly papers of the state.

Burwell S. Smith was born in 1829, October 4, in Mason county, W. Va., which has always been the place of his residence. His parents were Isaac E. and Rachel (McGuire) Smith. Isaac Smith was born in Mason county, December 4, 1806, being a son of Samuel and Jane (Edwards) Smith, the first mentioned a native of Rockbridge county, Va., and the mother, of New York. They settled in Mason county about 1796, where they remained until their deaths, that of Samuel Smith taking place in 1851 and of his wife in 1843. They were married about 1804 and the following are their children: Isaac E., Ann, Gideon H., James, Mary, Strother, Jane and Samuel. Samuel Smith served as a soldier during the war of 1812, and was one of the first justices of the peace elected in the county of Mason. His life business was that of a farmer and at his death he had about 400 acres of land which he divided among his children. Isaac E. Smith was married in 1827 to Rachel McGuire, and these were their children: Burwell S., Nathan, Ellen, Samuel, Mary, John T., Paulina C., James H. and Isaac V. His principal business was farming, but he was also a minister of the Methodist Episcopal church. Isaac Smith held the office of assessor of Mason county for four years, and when he died in May, 1865, he owned 300 acres of land. Burwell S. Smith, who is the subject of this sketch, was married October 28, 1849, to Elizabeth Knapp. This is the list of their children: William J., Margaret E., Thomas (deceased), Charles C., Eli D. (deceased), Hugh P. (deceased), Moses F., Maria J. (deceased), Almira, Rachel, Virginia D. (deceased), Burwell S., Hannah, Mary C. The great-grandfather of our subject was James Smith, who came from England and served as a soldier under Lord Cornwallis. He was wounded at the battle of Bunker Hill and also taken prisoner. After the war he did not return to England but settled in Virginia, and died in Rockbridge county, that state. Burwell Smith, the subject of our sketch, is a miller as well as a farmer, but farming has been the principal occupation of his life. He has acted as justice of the peace for twenty years, and was captain for nine years in the One Hundred and Sixth regiment, Twenty-second brigade, Fifth division of Virginia militia. He and his wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal church.

Isaac V. Smith is a son of Isaac and Rachel (McGuire) Smith. Mention of his worthy parents is made in another part of this volume. Isaac V. came into this world August 23, 1857, the place of his nativity being Mason county, W. Va., a section which has produced so many worthy and distinguished men and women. He has put in the great bulk of his existence, in the confines of his native county. April 21, 1879, Mr. Smith led to the

altar, Miss Marietta H. R. Stradling, and their happy nuptials eventuated in the birth of the following interesting children: George S., Clara E., Elizabeth R. and Nathan H. Up to the last two years, Mr. Smith occupied himself mostly in the active pursuits of agriculture, but finally changed to the mercantile business, in which he is now engaged. He and his wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal church, and one of the thrifty and popular couples of their neighborhood.

J. P. R. B. Smith was born in Point Pleasant, being a son of Nathan and Ann (Roseberry) Smith. The father was a native of Watertown, N. Y., a son of Jonas Smith, who came to Mason county about 1816–17, locating at Point Pleasant, where he spent the remainder of his life and found a grave. He was a surveyor by occupation and trained his son Nathan to the same business, the latter being surveyor of Mason county for a number of years. His wife, Ann Roseberry, was a native of Pennsylvania, and is of the same family as W. O. Roseberry. Our subject was the only son of six children that reached maturity. He was reared and educated in Point Pleasant and commenced his business life as a clerk, being for nine years engaged in mercantile pursuits at Point Pleasant and Gallipolis. He is usually called Col. Smith, the title arising from his connection with the state militia and his having served upon the staff of Govs. Pierpoint and Bowman as colonel of cavalry. He was appointed postmaster at Point Pleasant by President Lincoln. He served eight years as deputy sheriff, in 1878 was elected county clerk of Mason county, and was twice re-elected, and is at present serving a term that will expire in 1896. He held the position of internal revenue assessor under President Johnson. In all of his official positions he has so performed his duties as to gain general approbation and esteem. In 1865 Mr. Smith was united in matrimony to Maria L., daughter of Col. G. B. Thomas, of Point Pleasant. The result of this union has been the birth of two sons: Griffith T. and Homer. Fraternally our subject is connected with the Masonic order, being a Master and Royal Arch Mason.

Samuel Smith was a son of Isaac E. and Rachel (McGuire) Smith, of whom personal mention is elsewhere made. April 5, 1835, was the date of his birth, and the locality, Union district, Mason county. He was both born and bred on the farm owned by his father. June 22, 1855, he took unto himself a wife in the person of Elizabeth Parsons, and their union was made happy by the birth of the following named children: Leanzie M., May A., Melissa J., Dora B., Rachel, Fanny, Rebecca, Isaac E., Minerva, Catherine and Bertha. Mr. Smith was a soldier during the civil war, and a good one. He enlisted in Company B, Thirteenth West Virginia infantry, and entered the service during the summer of 1862. He served loyally and gallantly until the conclu-

sion of hostilities, not being discharged until June 23, 1865. During his military career he participated with his regiment in the following named battles: Lynchburg, two Winchesters, Harper's Ferry, Cedar Creek, Fisher's Hill and many minor engagements. After the war, Mr. Smith exchanged his sword for a plough share, and from the bloody business of lawful slaughter, turned to the peaceful pursuits of agriculture. He has kept steadily at work on the farm, and now owns a place in Union district, Mason county, where he has a comfortable home. For the last ten years he has acted as overseer of the poor in Union district and has performed his duties satisfactorily to all concerned. He was for four years member of the board of commissioners of the county, when they were known as the supervisors and when there were ten members instead of three as now. Mrs. Smith was a daughter of George and Fanny (Woodruff) Parsons, born December 22, 1837. She and her husband are both members of the Methodist Episcopal church.

J. W. Steenbergen was born in Mason county, W. Va., in 1831. His paternal grandfather, who was of Holland descent, was by name William Steenbergen, and in an early day settled in Shenandoah county, Va., where in 1788, was born Peter Higgins Steenbergen, his son, who became the father of the subject of this sketch. Peter H. Steenbergen grew to manhood in Shenandoah county, and received a liberal education at Liberty Hall academy, now Washington-Lee university of Lexington, Va. His marriage took place in 1807, in Botetourt county, Va., to Maria B. Jordan, daughter of Capt. John Jordan, who was a revolutionary soldier of Irish descent. The result of the union was the birth of the following children: Eliza, Mary (deceased), Caroline (deceased), Catherine, Sarah A. (deceased), Cornelia, Maria (deceased), Susan B., Rhoda, Ellen D. and John W. For three years after their marriage, the parents resided in Shenandoah county, and in 1810, removed to the great Kanawha valley, settling in Mason county, where they continued to live until their deaths which took place in 1841 and 1863, respectively. He was a pioneer settler of the county and located on the homestead in Clendenin district which is the present home of our subject. Locally, it goes by the name of Poplar Grove and lies on the bank of the Ohio, opposite Gallipolis, Ohio. Here this well known pioneer lived a long and active life devoted to farming and stock-raising. He was very progressive and practical in all that pertains to his business and during the course of his life he inaugurated many improvements. He was very successful in business and amassed considerable wealth during the course of his useful life, owning an extensive tract of land at the time of his death. One of the great benefits he conferred upon his county was brought about by the introduction of improved cattle. He and a nephew, Mr.

R. M. Sterling.

Annie Sterling

Beale, were the first to introduce the famous breed of Short-horn cattle into Mason county. He was universally known as Gen. Steenbergen, a title which he obtained on account of having been a general in the Virginia state militia in an early day. In 1813, he became captain of a volunteer cavalry company which he organized for the war of 1812, but peace was declared before they reached the scene of hostilities. During his life, Gen. Steenbergen held several positions of honor and trust, at one time representing Mason county in the Virginia legislature. For over forty years, he acted as justice of the peace and dispensed justice with an even hand to all who sought his jurisdiction. His only living male descendant is John W. Steenbergen who is the immediate subject of our sketch, and he is also the only living grandson of his paternal grandfather. The subject of our sketch was reared on his father's homestead, of which he became owner at the death of the latter in 1863. He was educated at the Virginia state military institute at Lexington, and has devoted his life to farming and stock-raising. In business matters, especially in every thing relating to the farmer, he has followed closely in the footsteps of his father and is universally recognized as a representative agriculturist. In 1872, he was joined in wedlock with Miss Sarah Van Meter, a native of Fayette county, Ky., where she was born in 1845. The following is a list of the children born unto them: William, Peter H., Frances, Isaac V., Charles L. and John H. The parents and family are members of the Presbyterian church and enjoy high school standing. Mr. Steenbergen is a member of Minturn lodge, No. 19, A. F. & A. M., at Pt. Pleasant. He is one of Mason county's representative and much esteemed citizens.

R. W. Sterling, the popular proprietor of the Stortz house at Point Pleasant, was born in Washington county, Md., January 11, 1841, and is a son of Abraham and Catharine (Stake) Sterling. The father was a native of Maryland and of Scotch and English lineage. The mother was a native of Maryland, and a daughter of George Stake, who was a German emigrant to the United States. Abraham and Catherine Sterling were the parents of two children: John S. and Richard W. By a former marriage, Abraham Sterling was the father of two children, both deceased. The mother was first wedded to William Hawkin, by whom she became the mother of five children of whom only William H. and James E. now survive. Abraham Sterling died in Williamsport, Maryland, in 1846, and his wife departed this life in 1872. Richard W. Sterling, the subject of this sketch, was reared in Williamsport, Md., in the village schools of which place he received a fair education. At the age of twelve years, he began clerking in a store, but a few years afterward was compelled by ill-health to relinquish the position. Subsequently, for about fourteen

years, he was employed as general store and book-keeper for railroad constructors in Pennsylvania, Maryland and Virginia. In 1880 he began merchandising in Weston, W. Va., where he continued until 1886. In the meantime he conducted a saddlery shop and store for three years. For four years he operated the Weston house, hotel and livery, and was once elected mayor of his town, where he also served as justice of the peace. April 15, 1886, he took charge of the Stortz house in Point Pleasant, and has since devoted his time to hotel keeping in which business he is recognized as a conspicuous success. In December, 1890, he opened a grocery store, confectionery and restaurant combined, which he is now operating. Mr. Sterling and family are of the Catholic church faith, and enjoy a high social standing. In 1881 he was united in marriage with Miss Annie Tully, a native of West Virginia, and of Irish parentage, and their union has been blessed with the birth of three children: Katie, Laurena and Mamie. Mr. Sterling is entitled to be called a practical and successful business man, as well as a progressive and representative citizen.

John V. Sterne was born March 28, 1840, in Pocahontas county, W. Va. His father, who was a native of Virginia, was George Sterne, who married Sarah Hoover. Following are the names of their children: William, Caroline, Nancy, John V. and Rachel. George Sterne was a shoemaker by trade, and while he followed farming some, made his trade the principal work of his life. He died in 1842, and his wife followed him to the grave in 1848. They were members of the Methodist church. His son, John V. Sterne, who is the subject of this sketch, when seventeen years old, went to Jackson county, W. Va., where he remained until 1883, when he came to Union district, Mason county, where he has since resided. His marriage took place in Jackson county, February 12, 1864, his bride being Malinda C. Harpold. These are the names of their children: Mary J., Nancy J., Lily O., Luellen, Rosa C., William O., George E., Tina P., Martha F. and Damson G. N. In 1888, Mr. Sterne was elected to represent Mason county in the state legislature. He was one of the "memorable 45" during the sessions of 1889–90, which witnessed so many stirring scenes. During the civil war, Mr. Sterne enlisted in 1862, as a member of Company K, Eleventh West Virginia infantry, and served until his discharge, June 28, 1865. From June, 1861, to January 14, 1862, he held the position of scout. While serving in this capacity, in August, 1861, he was wounded and rendered unfit for service for some time. He fought with his regiment in the following important battles: Cloyd Mountain, Lynchburg, first Winchester, Fisher's Hill and Cedar Creek. He went from the valley to Richmond, Va., where he was detached and placed in charge of the pontoon

bridges. He superintended the laying of the bridge across the Appomattox river which the Federal army crossed over at the time of Gen. Lee's surrender. After the war, Mr. Sterne sold goods at Barnettville, Jackson county, W. Va., for about three years, and then went to Fisher's Point, where he continued in the same business for two years. Afterward he bought the farm on which he now resides, and opened a store where he sold goods for several years. He is now engaged in farming. Mr. and Mrs. Sterne are member of the Methodist Episcopal church, and the family occupies a high social position in the community.

Mrs. F. H. Sterrett is the widow of George W. Sterrett, and daughter of Morgan Moore, who was born in Shenandoah county, Va., of German descent. His children were as follows: John Allen, Calvin M., Clinton, Joseph, Charles, George, Mary C., Elizabeth, Amanda, Lucy, Lavina and Frances H. Mrs. Sterrett was born in what is now Clendenin district, Mason county, January 24, 1836. Her husband, George W. Sterrett, was born September 24, 1831, and remained with his father until his marriage to our subject, which took place February 21, 1856. Their children were as follows: Mary E., Virginia M., James C., Sarah Frances, George W. and Charles W. Immediately after their marriage, Mr. and Mrs. Sterrett settled on the homestead place in Arbuckle district where her husband was engaged actively in farming, until August 19, 1882, when his death took place. He acted as treasurer of Arbuckle district under the old law, but beyond this never held any office. He had no aspirations for official place, preferring the independence of honest pursuits of agriculture. He began life under trials and privations, but by hard toil, perseverance and economy he prospered. He was a practical and successful farmer, and enjoyed the esteem of a large number of acquaintances and friends. His estimable widow who survives him, assisted by her children, still occupies and works the old homestead place, and they are regarded as one of the most respectable families of the county.

Adam Stewart was born October 4, 1832, in Jackson county, and came to Mason county in 1846, where he has since resided. His parents were William and Mary (Parsons) Stewart. The father was a native of Monongahela county, Penn., born in 1802, and came to Jackson county in a very early day. In 1846 he went to Mason county where he lived until his death, which occurred September 4, 1889. In 1828 he married Mary Parsons, and their children are as follows: George and Elisha (twins), Adam, Sarah, Charles, Ephraim, Elizabeth and Lewis. Adam Stewart, the subject of our sketch, was married in 1853 to Eleanor J. Smith, and their union resulted in the birth of the following named children: Mary J., Almeda (deceased), Matilda (deceased), Henry T., Rachel, Sarah, Susan and James H. In 1862 Mr. Stewart en-

listed in the Thirteenth Virginia regiment, Company B, and served until the close of the war in defense of the Union. During his military career he took part in the battles of the Lynchburg campaign and other important engagements in which his regiment participated. He was wounded at Winchester July 24, 1864, and did not return to his company until March 6, 1865. His discharge took place at Wheeling June 5, 1865. Mr. Stewart has always been a farmer by occupation, and after the war went back to his old pursuit. He has been industrious and saving, and now owns a comfortable home and a farm on which he lives. In addition to his farm work he owns a saw-mill to which he devotes all of his time not taken up by agricultural work. He and his wife are members of the Methodist church, and the family are highly esteemed in their neighborhood.

George Stewart is a son of William and Mary (Parsons) Stewart, whose personal histories are elsewhere sketched. He was born in Jackson county, February 6, 1830. July 4, 1855, his marriage with Margaret Hersman was celebrated. The children born to this union are as follows: Clarissa J., William, Georgianna, Christopher C., Andrew P., Oran L., Richard N. and Mary A. Mrs. Stewart, the mother of these children, died March 10, 1888. She was an excellent woman in every respect, and enjoyed the esteem of a wide circle of friends. George Stewart has always stuck to farming as a business and has enjoyed his full share of success. He enlisted as a soldier during the civil war, and commanded Company D, Thirteenth West Virginia infantry. He entered the service August 8, 1862, and was discharged June, 1865. The "Old Thirteenth" participated in some of the most important battles and campaigns during the civil war, and Capt. Stewart was found at the head of his company in the following bloody engagements: Lynchburg, the two Winchesters, Fisher's Hill and Cedar Creek. It was a part of the command of the famous Gen. Phil. Sheridan, whose campaigns in the valley and great battles with the army of Gen. Early will always be memorable in the history of the civil war. After the war, Mr. Stewart fell back into the quiet pursuits of farm life, with that readiness and adaptability to circumstances which is characteristic of the American citizen. He now resides on a farm in Union district, Mason Co., W. Va. Mr. Stewart and his wife were members of the United Brethren church. His wife, who was a most excellent Christian woman, was a church member for thirty-eight years, during the first four of which she belonged to the Methodist denomination and the remainder with the United Brethren.

Ernestine A. Stricklen was a daughter of A. R. Kerr, and Sallie N. (Cardozo) Kerr. Her father was a native of Powhatan county, and was born there in 1788. In 1837 he went to

Tazewell county, Va., where he bought a large tract of land and lived until his death in 1871. He was married in 1809, to Sallie N. Cardozo, and their children were as follows: William M., Abner R., Eliza J., Virginia A., Abraham C., Ernestine A., James H., Julia A., Mary F. and Sallie A. Mr. Kerr was a Master Mason and a soldier in the war of 1812. His daughter, Ernestine, who is the subject of this sketch, was married December 24, 1846, to Erastus G. Lusk. The latter was a native of Mercer county, Va., where he was born in 1820, and a son of Absalom and Margaret (Baily) Lusk. The children born to Mr. and Mrs. Erastus Lusk were as follows: James A., Elliot M., Marvin E., Sarah M., Leander W. and Mary E. Mr. Lusk was an extensive land owner, and in 1856 went to Kansas where he purchased a tract of 320 acres. He remained there until his death, which occurred in 1860, his family joining him in his new home in 1858. In October, 1860, Mrs. Lusk and her four children went to Indiana, where they remained until June, 1863, and then moved to Mercer county, W. Va. She resided there until 1865, when she returned to Charleston, W. Va., where she had left her two sons, James A. and Elliott M. After a residence of one year at this place, she went to Buffalo, Putnam county, and taught the first district school in that county. In the same year she went to Leon in Mason county, where she has ever since resided. In June, 1866, Mrs. Lusk was married a second time to James Stricklen. She taught a private school in Leon, which was the only school to be found within ten miles of that place. Her health failing, she abandoned the occupation of school teaching, and in 1884, took charge of the Leon hotel, situated on Main street of the town, where she is at present doing an excellent business. Mrs. Stricklen has led an active and industrious life, and is an estimable lady in every respect.

William Sturgeon was a native of Monroe county, Ohio, born in 1796. He came to Mason county in 1848 and settled on a 742 acre farm in Clendenin district, where he still resides at the age of ninety-four years. His first marriage took place in 1832 to Nancy E. Landers and these were their children: Samuel, James, Martha, John (deceased), Margaret, William, Reuben, Thomas, Robert and Amanda. His second wife was Sarah McDaniel, by whom he had the following children: George W., Peter, Napoleon and Daisy. He was a farmer all his life. William Sturgeon, Jr., was born in 1846, in Monroe county, Ohio, and became a resident of Mason county when a small boy, where he has resided ever since. In 1870 he married Rutha Ann Grove and the following are their children: Harvey, George, Clark, Julius, William, Mellie, Bell, Martin, Mary, Henry and Martha (deceased). In 1871 Mr. Sturgeon located on the farm where he now resides. He has always followed the occupation of farming

at which he has met with fair success and he is a well esteemed citizen.

Alfred T. Sullivan was born in Mason county, W. Va., in 1843. His father was William Sullivan, of whom a sketch is given elsewhere in this volume. The subject of our sketch remained at home with his parents until the age of twenty-seven, when his marriage took place to Nancy C. Greenlee, on March 3rd, 1870. The union resulted in the birth of the following children: Fanny, Fred, Frank, Florence, Robert C. and Mary. All of these children are still at home, except Fanny, who resides in Mason City. In August, 1862, Mr. Sullivan enlisted in Company B, Thirteenth West Virginia infantry, with which he served throughout the war. He enlisted as a private, but before the conclusion of his service, he was promoted to the grade of first lieutenant. He fought with his regiment in thirteen engagements, among the most important of which were the battles of Winchester, Fisher's Hill, Cedar Creek and those which occurred during Hunter's raid to Lynchburg. After the war, Mr. Sullivan make two trips to the west, during which he visited the states of Iowa and Missouri. In 1870, he took up the occupation of farming, in which he continued for four years, and then entered the mercantile business at Leon, which he has followed ever since. He and his wife are members of the Baptist church, in which he has been a deacon for eighteen years. Since November, 1889, he has been the postmaster at Leon, in which position he has made a popular and accommodating officer. In 1890, he was appointed census enumerator for the district of Cologne and held the position until the enumeration was completed, which work he did to the entire satisfaction of all the citizens interested.

Daniel M. Sullivan was born June 20, 1846, in Mason county, W. Va., where he has always resided. His father was William Sullivan, who was born in Augusta county, Va., in 1810, and moved to Mason county about 1820. He was a son of Dennis Sullivan, who was born in Ireland, but settled in Virginia in an early day. One day, but in what year is not exactly known, he started to go to what is now Mason county, W. Va. It was ascertained that he crossed the Ohio river at Pt. Pleasant, but that was the last ever heard of him. It was supposed that he fell into the hands of the Indians and was murdered. About four years after his disappearance, his oldest son, Dudley, came to Pt. Pleasant, where he taught school for one term. He had long brooded over the fate of his father and finally made up his mind to go in search of him, so one day he crossed the Ohio river to carry out his filial design, but was never afterward heard of. What became of the father and son will always remain among the unsolved mysteries of the wilderness. About four years after the occurrences above related, Mr. William Sullivan came to Mason

county, and settled in Cooper district, on what is now known as the Cooper farm. He was married about 1835, to Eliza Greenlee, a daughter of Morris and Nancy Greenlee, and their union resulted in the birth of the following children: Jemima, Mary, Gilfred D., James, Alfred T., Daniel M. and Nancy. His wife died in 1850, and he was again married to Rachel Thornton, unto whom were born the following children: Henry W., Luretta, Virginia and Sarah. After his marriage Mr. Sullivan and his brother, Jeremiah, purchased a farm, now known as the John Brown and William King farm, on which he lived until his death, April 28, 1889. He was a member of the Baptist church, lived a consistent Christian life, and was loved and respected by all who knew him. The subject of our sketch was married in 1868, to Eliza J. Scott, daughter of William Scott, and their marriage has resulted in the birth of the following children: Oran V., Claud A., Carrie S., Roy D. and Anna M. R. In December, 1863, Mr. Sullivan enlisted in the Thirteenth Virginia infantry, and was discharged in June, 1865. He was in thirteen hard fought battles during his service, among which may be mentioned those at Winchester, in 1864, Fisher's Hill, Cedar Creek, and all those which took place during Hunter's campaign against Lynchburg, Va. Mr. Sullivan had little opportunity to attend school in his boyhood, and received most of his education after marriage. He taught school for six years, graded a mile section on the K. & O. railway, and afterward went into the mercantile business, which occupation he has followed since with success. He has acted as mayor of Leon for one term, and is one of the respected and influential citizens of his county.

James H. Taylor is a son of James and Betsy (Allen) Taylor. His father was a native of Charlotte county, Va., who came to Mason county in 1838 and settled on a small farm near where his son James now resides. He was married to Betsy Allen, and their children were Creed, Asa, John, William, Lucy, Samuel, Josiah, Thomas and James H. Richard Taylor, a brother of James Taylor and uncle of our subject, served in the war of 1812. James Taylor was a farmer by occupation, and died on the farm where he settled in 1846 at the age of eighty, his wife surviving him until 1859. James H. Taylor came to Mason county with his father when a young man. He was married in 1840 to Mary Jane Williams, but there were no children as the result of this union. After his marriage Mr. Taylor settled on a farm about two miles from where he now resides, and lived there about four years, when he moved to his present place of residence. Mr. Taylor was married a second time in 1885, his bride being Elizabeth J. (Milton) Sowash, and their children were James H. and Ogiretta. By her first husband Mrs. Taylor had one child, named Kate. Mr. Taylor has for many years been a member

of the Missionary Baptist church. He also served in the state guards for about four years.

William H. Terry is the son of Madison and Sarah (Shoultz) Terry. The father was a native of North Carolina, but became a resident of Kanawha and subsequently moved to Mason county, W. Va. His marriage took place in 1837, and the result of the same was the following children: William H., James M., Edward, Lucy, Mary, Sarah E., John, Jesse and Eldridge. Madison Terry died in 1876, and his wife is now living with her son William H., at the age of seventy-three years. William H. Terry, the subject of our sketch, came to Mason county with his parents when he was a small boy. He lived at home until the age of twenty-three, when he was married to Emily Bush, their children being as follows: George R., John W., Wilson, Madison, Lizzie, Lydia, Sarah, Fannie, Luvenia, Lewis H. and Sullivan, all residing in Mason county. Mr. Terry has pursued the occupation of farming all of his life, and has resided since 1872, on the tract of land where he now lives. He has met with success in business and enjoys the esteem of his neighbors.

D. P. Thomas, one of the well-to-do citizens of Mason, W. Va., was born in South Wales, June 21, 1846, and is the son of David H. and Margaret (Phillips) Thomas. The parents were natives of South Wales, where they were reared and married. Unto their union ten children were born, five of whom first saw the light of day in the country of their father's adoption, and the other five being born in South Wales. Mr. and Mrs. David Thomas, with their family, emigrated to the United States in 1854, and settled in West Columbia, W. Va., thence moving to Mason, where they now reside. Our subject, D. P. Thomas, was but seven years of age when his parents came to this country, and was reared principally in Mason, receiving a common school education. He started his life's first work "down in the coal mines," and continued the business of mining until 1888, when he accepted a position as salesman for the Hope Salt & Coal company, at Mason, which vocation he still follows. In 1872, Mr. Thomas married Miss Eliza Edwards, daughter of Edward Edwards, a native of South Wales and of whom a sketch appears elsewhere in this volume. Fraternally he is a member of the I. O. O. F., and with his wife belongs to the Baptist church. In every respect, Mr. Thomas is a self-made man, and the city of Mason has shown her appreciation for this citizen, by the fact that he has been a councilman for three years. Mr. and Mrs. Thomas are surrounded by a wide circle of friends, and are highly respected by the community in which they live.

J. C. Thomas is the son of John Stephen and Martha E. (Stuck) Thomas. His father was born in Hoheneiche, Hessen, kingdom of Prussia, Germany, April 10, 1822. John Stephen

was a son of Christoff and Annamarta (Liese) Thomas. The name of Thomas is of Saxon origin while that of Liese is Teutonic. To the couple last mentioned were born the following offspring: John S., Elizabeth, Christine and Andras. The parents were of the German Reformed church which has also been the faith of all their descendants. John S. Thomas grew to manhood and was married in his native country, March 19, 1852, to Martha E. Stuck, born in Bischhausan, Hessen, kingdom of Prussia, September 20, 1835. Her parents were Stephen and Dortha (Schreiber) Stuck. The children born to Stephen and Dortha Stuck were as follows: Ernst, Andreas and Martha Elizabeth. The children of John Stephen Thomas and wife were: John C., Caroline E., Andreas S., Charles J., Herman A. and George E. All but the oldest were born in the United States. The parents emigrated to the United States in 1855, landing at the port of Baltimore. They first settled at Wheeling, later in Bellaire, then Middleport, Ohio, and in November, 1853, located in Mason county, W. Va. Since 1864 Hartford City has been the fixed home of the family. The father was a butcher by calling and followed that trade up to the time of his death, which occurred December 13, 1883. His wife still survives and resides at Hartford City. Their son, John C. Thomas, is a merchant with the Hartford City Salt Co. Andreas is a traveling salesman in Charleston, W. Va. Charles J. and Herman A. are butchers at Hartford City, while George E. is a clerk at Corning, Ohio. John C. Thomas was born in Germany, November 8, 1853, and received a common school education, in other respects being an entirely self-made man. He is an energetic, enterprising citizen and an experienced merchant, having been store manager of Hartford City Salt Co. since 1880. He is a member of Liberty lodge, No. 21, I. O. O. F.

George W. Tippett, of Point Pleasant, W. Va., was born January 30, 1836, in Baltimore, Md. His father was George Tippett, and was a native of England, where his first marriage was consummated. Soon after his coming to the United States with his family he lost his wife in death at Philadelphia, Penn. Subsequently he wedded for a second wife Sarah E. Ways, who was born at Fredericks City, Md., and unto whom by the marriage there were born three sons and one daughter that lived, reaching maturity. The father was a stone-mason, sculptor and plasterer by trade. For a number of years he was engaged in the railroad business as a contractor, constructing roads. His death occurred in 1852, at which time his family resided at Cumberland, Md. In 1863 his widow died at Cincinnati, Ohio. G. W. Tippett, the immediate subject of this biography, received a fair common school education in the "pay-schools" of Cumberland, Md., and in the St. Patrick's Catholic schools of the same city. In Janu-

ary, of 1847, at the age of eleven years, he entered the printing office of *The Alleganian*, at his home, and there served a four years' apprenticeship at the printer's trade. In 1855, May 11, he came to Point Pleasant, W. Va., where he has since continued to reside. On coming here he entered the office of the *Independent Republican*, and served as a compositor. February 27, 1862, he began the publication of *The Weekly Register*, and has continued its owner, manager and editor. In the newspaper field Mr. Tippett, has accomplished more than an ordinary success. In 1856, soon after coming to Point Pleasant, he was united in marriage with Sarah E., daughter of William and Ann Risk, formerly of Rockbridge county, Va. Unto the above union there have been born six sons and three daughters. Five of the sons are practical printers. In 1880, Mr. Tippett, was elected to the West Virginia house of delegates from Mason county. He served during the sessions of 1881–2; and was a member of the committee on elections and privileges, and was chairman of the committee of printing and contingent expenses, and executive offices and library; and was also a member of the congressional apportionment committee. Mr. Tippett is a progressive and representative citizen, and has held several minor local offices of honor and trust. He has manifested much interest in education, and is a member of the board of education of Point Pleasant. In politics Mr. Tippett is an earnest and zealous democrat and is influential in his party. He is prominently urged by friends over the state as the democratic nominee for next auditor of state, and with his wide experience and unquestionable ability, would make an efficient official.

Henry Clay Turner, the present postmaster of Mason, W. Va., was born in Kanawha county, October 8, 1839, his parents being John P. and Laura (Smith) Turner. The father was born in Pennsylvania, a son of Edmund Turner, a native of New York, of Holland descent, his ancestors being the Webber family, who were grandchildren of King William of Orange. They emigrated to America in 1649, and settled in New York, where they were granted a large tract of land over which litigation resulted in the settling of titles. This Webber family of three members were the progenitors of a numerous offspring, from one branch of which the Turners are descended on the maternal side. Edmund Turner, grandfather of the subject of this sketch, was born July 2, 1762, and June 3, 1792, wedded Elizabeth Ostrander. Their children were: Gideon, born November 16, 1793; John P., born January 9, 1795; David, born February 26, 1797; Lena, born February 16, 1799; Hannah, born August 25, 1801; Edmund, born September 24, 1804; Elizabeth A., born November 24, 1806; Lewis, born December 29, 1809. The grandfather, Edmund, was a farmer, and lived for the greater part of his life in New York, but for a

while lived in Pennsylvania, where his son, John P., father of the subject, was born. The latter was married in New York in 1816, to Laura Smith, of Connecticut. The issue of this union were fifteen children, viz.: Deborah, born July 26, 1819; Hannah, born October 8, 1820; Harriet, October 10, 1822; John L., October 11, 1824; Laura, July 9, 1826; Peter B., born March 16, 1828; William H., born February 1, 1830; Elizabeth, born November 1, 1832; Van B., born May 14, 1834; Martha J., December 17, 1835; David G., October 11, 1837; Henry C., October 8, 1839; Sarah E., born May 3, 1841; De Witt C., June 18, 1843; Richard F., June 24, 1846. The father, who was a man of varied occupations, came into the Kanawha valley about 1820, and settled in what is now Kanawha county, where he died in 1850, aged fifty-five. His son, Henry C., was born and reared in Kanawha county, where he was principally educated at home by his father. He came to Mason City in February, 1857. June 5, 1861, he enlisted in Company A, Fourth West Virginia infantry, and served two years on detached duty as dispatch bearer in the Kanawha valley. June 27, 1863, he started for Vicksburg, where he joined his regiment July 9, and went with Sherman on the march to Chattanooga. He fought with his regiment in the battle of Missionary Ridge, went with it to the relief of Gen. Burnside at Knoxville, Tenn., and afterward spent the winter at Larkinsville, Ala. During the next year he was in the memorable campaign and series of battles which are known in history as Sherman's "March to the Sea." His term of enlistment expired before the siege of Atlanta, and he was ordered back to Wheeling where he was mustered out of the service July 4, 1864. After that he returned to Mason City, where he has since resided. He first came to the place in 1857, and was married there March 4, 1865, to Lelia A. Bailey, their children being as follows: James M., born January 24, 1866; William H., May 20, 1867; Lemuel, March 7, 1871; Sudie, January 5, 1873; Nellie J., December 23, 1874; Nannie, August 27, 1876; Grace, January 4, 1879; Henry C., August 1, 1881. For eighteen years after the civil war, Mr. Turner was engineer for the Mason City Salt Works, and for five years has held that position with the Hope Salt company. He was recorder of Mason one term, member of the school board, and for two terms city mayor. November 26, 1889, he was appointed postmaster of the place, which office he now holds. In politics he is an ardent republican, and belongs to the G. A. R.

Love C. Wallace is the son of Peter Wallace and Nancy (Jordan) Wallace. Mr. Wallace was born August 4, 1844, in Cabell county, W. Va., and came to Mason county when a boy about nine years of age. He remained at home until of age and then started out for himself in the business of farming. He worked for a year as a renter and then bought 130 acres near where he

now resides. After remaining there for about nine years he moved upon the old homestead place, which is his present place of abode. November 12, 1868, Mr. Wallace was united in wedlock to Delilah Locke, and their children are as follows: Ellis M., Zenia L., Ira M., Nevada O., Luammon, Samuel V., Emmazetta, Hushel, Orville O. and Nancy Otie. During his whole life Mr. Wallace has kept steadily to the business of farming. He is now serving as constable of Hannan district, to which office he was elected by the people. He started life without any money or assistance, but has accumulated considerable property and a comfortable home, where he lives a quiet and contented life.

William H. Wallis, whose biography we are writing, was a son of David Wallis, of Halifax county, Va., whose father was John Wallis, of Scotland. John Wallis's wife was named Nancy, and her children were: David, William, Jesse, James, Woodson, Elizabeth, Jane and Nancy. David Wallis, the father of our present subject, was born in 1800, and came to Cabell county, W. Va.; remained there two years; moved opposite Gallipolis; remained there two years, and then settled in Gallia county, Ohio, where he made his home for six years. He then came to Mason county, W. Va., in 1844, settling in Clendenin district, where he lived until his death. In 1822 he was maried to Judy V. Eads, and the union resulted in the birth of the following children: Elizabeth, James B., Nancy C., Jane, William H., Judy, David, Jessie, Charles, Isaac, Joseph, Sarah, John, Gideon P. and May M. During his early life, David Wallis was a millwright, but afterward became a farmer. His wife was a daughter of Joseph Eads, a native of Ireland, who served during the war of 1812. William H. Wallis, the subject of our sketch, was born in Cabell county. W. Va., June 17, 1831, and came to Mason county with his father at the age of fourteen. He remained with his father until he was twenty-one years of age, for four years after which he was engaged in driving cattle and managing a farm. His marriage took place in 1856, to Mary E. Gise, a daughter of John and Margaret Gise, who were of German descent. The result of this marriage was the following children: Florence E., John, Maggie, Mary E., George W., William H., Charles L., Anna R., Robert E., Lillie C., Hattie C., Blanche and Jessie A. After his marriage Mr. Wallis located on John McCulock's farm as a renter, where he remained for twenty-five years. He then purchased 240 acres of hill land, to which he soon afterward added 100, then 47, then again 100 acres, and so on by continuous purchases, until he was owner of 922 acres of land in all, of which 400 acres are under cultivation. One of his deals was in 1871, when he bought a farm in Lewis county, Ky., near Concord, which he sold and subsequently bought the homestead place of 235 acres in Clendenin district. From this record, it

can readily be seen that Mr. Wallis is a man of business and enterprise. He has been quite successful in all his undertakings throughout life, and numbers his friends by the score, being popular with all who know him. He has held the official positions of overseer of the poor, member of the board of education for about four years, and justice of the peace for eight years. During his incumbency of these offices, Mr. Wallis so conducted himself as to enjoy general esteem and commendation.

Adam I. Watterson was born in Fifeshire, Scotland, September 25, 1823, being a son of Andrew and Isabella (Black) Watterson. His father was born in Kinrosshire, in 1776, and came to Beaver county, Penn., in 1830, where he lived until his death, which occurred in 1847. His marriage took place in 1803, to Isabella Black, and their children were: Alexandria, George, Andrew, Robert, James, John M. and Adam J. Andrew Watterson was a weaver by trade, but after coming to this country, devoted his life to farming. Religiously, he was a member of the United Presbyterian church. Adam Watterson came to Beaver county, Penn., with his mother, when a boy. He remained in that state until 1858, when he removed to Mason county, W. Va., and settled on a farm of 585 acres, which is still his place of residence. He has since added 500 acres to his original purchase, which makes him a heavy land holder, he being the possessor of over 1,000 acres. In 1848, he married Jane Anderson, a native of Pennsylvania, and their children were named as follows: John A. and James A. He was a second time married in 1858, to Eliza Phillis, which union resulted in the birth of Maggie J., Adam D. and Lizzie M. During the civil war, Mr. Watterson served as an independent scout for the Union army, during which period, he met with many stirring adventures. He rendered valuable aid to the Federal cause during his service, although he occupied no official position. In fact, he has never aspired to office, preferring to live the life of an independent farmer, in which he has been both prosperous and happy. Mr. Watterson has always been a great friend of the free school system, and did much to get it established in Clendenin district. In fact, he has always taken an active interest in all matters calculated to advance the welfare and prosperity of the community in which he lives, being looked up to and consulted by his neighbors as a wise advisor and a safe leader.

John T. Waugh was born in Meigs county, Ohio, March 12, 1813, and was the son of John Abner and Mary (Wright) Waugh, who were the parents of the following-named children: Alexaxnder, John T., Roderick, Henry, Eliza, Martha, Mary, Nancy, Betsy and Amanda. The parents were natives of old Virginia, who moved to Ohio and later to West Virginia, when the subject of our sketch was a small child. He grew to manhood in Mason

county where he received a limited education which he greatly added to in after life, by extensive reading and close observation. At about the age of twenty-five years he began life for himself in the business of flat-boating, and subsequently he entered the employ of Col. C. T. Beale, of Mason county. For thirteen years he acted as overseer of Mr. Beale's farmhands, also buying and selling cattle and other live-stock for Mr. Beale, which required him to make extensive trips to the markets of Baltimore and other eastern cities. Later he went to Missouri and Illinois, remaining west during the war, at the close of which he returned to Mason county and bought a farm on Big Sixteen Mile creek, in Arbuckle district, where he settled down for life. February 13, 1867, he was married to Miss Eudelier A. Adams, daughter of John D. Adams, of Mason county. Mrs. Waugh was born September 23, 1847, in Charlotte county, Va., and came to Mason county with her parents at the age of two years. The union of Mr. and Mrs. Waugh was blessed with the following children: Mary, Maud (deceased), Connie Elizabeth, Nora McCarty, John Abner (deceased), Robert E. (deceased), William Benjamin, and Richard E. Since the war the family have lived on the old farm. Mr. Waugh was a practical farmer, industrious in his habits, very persevering, and met with a good measure of success in his efforts. He was a moral and upright man and helped on every good cause, as he was a believer in churches although not a member of any. He was of a jovial and merry disposition and always had a pleasant word for every one. His death took place August 11, 1889, and it constituted a loss not only of a good citizen to the community but of a kind and loving husband and father to his family.

F. M. Whaley, postmaster at Point Pleasant, was born in Wayne county, W. Va., in 1856, and is a son of Hon. K. V. Whaley. The latter was a native of New York, and a son of David Whaley. In an early day he came with his widowed mother to Wayne county, Va., where he lived until his marriage was consummated in Illinois, with Louisa M. Purdue. Their children were as follows: Mary J., Charles M., Warren C., Harlan L., Fulton M., Carlisle L., Ida B. and Estella M. For a number of years Mr. Whaley lived in Wayne county, Va., and in 1862 moved to Mason county, where he resided until his death, which occurred in 1876. He was a farmer by occupation which he carried on in connection with lumbering. In 1861 he was appointed colonel of a Virginia regiment and aided in the organization of a second command. In 1861 he was elected to the lower house of congress as a republican to represent the Third (West Virginia) district. During the administration of President Johnson, Mr. Whaley was appointed collector in Texas. He was a prominent citizen in his day and a man of wide influence.

His son, Fulton M., was reared in his native county and in Mason. He received a fair education in the common schools. He learned the business of telegraph operating at Point Pleasant, and also studied medicine with a view to qualify himself as a druggist. He was appointed postmaster of Point Pleasant, December 21, 1890, by President Harrison. Some ten of eleven years ago he was married at Point Pleasant, to Miss Sarah Dotson, a native of Tennessee. Their children are: Maud, Eva and Killian V. Mr. Whaley is a member of the I. O. O. F. lodge, of Point Pleasant, and one of the representative citizens of the place.

Daniel Wilkinson was a native of Ireland, the date of his birth being unknown. He came to Baltimore, Md., when a lad eight years of age, and was here married April, 1827, to Dorcas A. Dawson, and unto them were born two children, William and James. In 1840, he was again married in Parkersburg, Wood county, W. Va., Eliza Davis becoming his wife. Bernard and Eliza were the fruit of this union. He was a third time married to Caroline Conrad, and their children were as follows: Sarah, Edgar, Emma and Daniel. Daniel Wilkinson was a member of the Presbyterian church. He was clerk of the county court of Wirt county for about eighteen years, being the first one to hold that position. In business life he was a merchant, and followed that calling most of his life. In 1865, he went to Edgar county, Ill., and purchased a section of land, here dying in 1869. William D. Wilkinson was born May 7, 1828, in Montgomery county, Md., and came to Wood county, W. Va., when he was a boy sixteen years of age. Here he clerked in a store for Mr. Bowman about two years, and then attended school for the same length of time. At the end of that time he returned to Baltimore, and took charge of his grandmother's store for about four years, again going to Wirt county, where he was married in 1848, February 4, to Miss Hannah F. Hopkins. Their union was blessed by the birth of James, Lizzie, Charles D., Thomas B., Dorcas A. and William. Mr. Wilkinson purchased a farm of 600 acres of land in Wirt county, W. Va., and here he lived until 1863, at that time becoming a resident of Mason county. He resided in the latter county until his death, which occurred August 8, 1867, and in his death the county lost one of its good citizens. He owned 140 acres of land in Mason county, upon which was situated good buildings. He and the wife, who was his cheerful and helping companion, were members of the Baptist church. Mrs. Wilkinson is a daughter of Levi Hopkins, and his wife, Priscilla Coe, who were married in Wood county, W. Va. Levi was the son of David and Susan (Drake) Hopkins, the latter of whom was a descendant of Sir Francis Drake. Levi Hopkins and wife were the parents of the following chil-

dren: David, Mary, Elizabeth, Edward, Brainard, Susan, Sarah, Hannah, Margaret and Thomas. Levi Hopkins was sheriff of Wood county, and he and his wife were members of the Baptist church. He was born in 1795, in Fauquier county, Va., and died in Mason county, in 1879. His wife was a native of Loudon county where she was born in 1793. Her death took place in Wood county in 1865.

H. H. Williams, one of the self-made men of Mason county, was born in South Wales, October 18, 1835, and is the son of Edmund and Rachel Williams. The parents were natives of South Wales, where they were reared and married. Their union was blessed by the birth of five sons and two daughters, viz.: William, John, Edmund, Mary, Henry H., David and Rachel. The father was a farmer by occupation, and lived and died in his native land. Afterward the mother married a Mr. Jones, and by this second marriage became the mother of the following named children: Maria, Daniel, Martha, Thomas and Lizzie Jones. These children were born in America. In 1845, Mr. Jones, his wife and the Williams children, emigrated to the United States and located at Baltimore. They went by wagon and team across the Allegheny mountains and reached Pittsburg, Penn., at the end of a two weeks' journey. Here they resided until 1853, when they went to Pomeroy, Ohio. Mr. Jones was a farmer by occupation, and in 1856 they again moved, this time coming to Mason county, W. Va., where Mr. Jones died in 1885, the mother having preceded her husband to the grave, dying in 1862. Henry H. Williams, the immediate subject of our sketch, was about ten years of age when his mother and step-father brought him to the United States. He received a limited education which he broadened in later life by close observation. Since his youth he has been a miner, mining principally in the Ohio and Kanawha valleys. He was for one year superintendent of the Hope Salt and Coal company, at Mason, W. Va. December 11, 1860, he led to the altar Miss Catherine Edwards, and they have no children. They have adopted a daughter, Kate M. Williams, who with her foster parents, is a member of the Baptist church. Mr. Williams is a Master Mason of Clifton lodge, No. 23, and also belongs to the LaFayette consistory, I. O. O. F. of Mason. Mr. and Mrs. Williams are highly repected in the community where they reside, and enjoy a large circle of friends.

Henry C. Williamson was born February 16, 1842, in Lebanon township, Meigs county, Ohio. James Williamson, his paternal grandfather, was born January 12, 1779, and was in the wars with Indians during the early settlement of Ohio. Col. David Williamson, his uncle, commanded several important expeditions, and was also with Col. Crawford, as second in command at the time of his defeat and capture by the Indians. His wife was Mary

McMahon, who was born February 10, 1784, and died December 18, 1853. His maternal grandfather, William McKay, was a soldier of the Revolutionary war, and was captured in company with Andrew Jackson by the British in trying to defend a fort. Wilkinson D. Williamson, father of Henry C., was born in Washington county, Ohio, August 2, 1808, moved to Meigs county, same state, in 1832, and afterward went to Jackson county, where he lived until his death, which occurred July 30, 1869. He was married to Flora McKay, and their children were as follows: Agnes, born July 25, 1832; Mary A., born September 27, 1834; James W., born November 15, 1836, was a captain of Company K, Eleventh West Virginia infantry; Amanda I., born October 13, 1839, died April 21, 1868; H. C., born February 16, 1842; W. A., born November 18, 1843; John A., born April 27, 1846; Jerome D., born May 6, 1848, died December 8, 1848, and Winchester D., born April 10, 1851. Mr. Williamson was married a second time to Nancy Kuntz. His general occupation was that of farming, but in an early day he did some flat-boating when it was his custom to make a trip to New Orleans once a year. On one occasion, at the locality known as Big Bonnet Carre church, he was robbed of quite a sum of money by some of the piratical crowd that in those days infested the Mississippi river. At the time mentioned he was running what was called a coaster. For many years he was a justice of the peace in Meigs county. He and his first wife were members of the Methodist Episcopal church, and his second wife of the Presbyterian. Henry C. Williamson, the subject of our sketch, became a resident of Mason county in 1881, where he has since remained. He was married in 1881, to Lydia E. Adams, and their children are as follows: Eugene, Victor, Flora A., Inez H. and Henry C., Jr. Mrs. Williamson, by a previous marriage, had two children, Iva M. and Edna S. Mr. Williamson enlisted in Company E, Fourth West Virginia infantry, in 1861, and was discharged August 6, 1864. Mr. Williamson has always been a farmer, but added to his usual occupation by frequently making trips south with produce boats. He and his wife belong to the Methodist church, and he is also a member of the J. R. Hall post, No. 20, G. A. R. The paternal grandfather of our subject was a native of Pennsylvania and went to Washington county, Ohio, at a very early day. In his day he was a successful stock-dealer and farmer. The farm on which our subject was born once belonged to the celebrated John Paul Jones. Mr. Williamson's grandmother on the paternal side was named McMahon, and she was of Irish extraction. The maternal grandfather was a native of the Lowlands of Scotland, and emigrated to North Carolina. On the same ship there came over with him from the Highlands of Scotland, a lady whom he afterward married in South Carolina. Subsequently they moved

to Tyler county, Va., and when they first located there, their nearest neighbor was twenty miles distant. The country was indeed a wilderness through which roamed wild animals and Indians.

R. L. Winkelblack, a leading citizen of Mason City, was born at Uniontown, Monroe county, June 15, 1818, being a son of Samuel and Jane (Young) Winkelblack. The parents were both natives of Monroe county, the father of German and the mother of Irish parentage. Samuel and Jane Winkelblack had the following children: Robert Lewis, John, Jane, George A., James and Franklin. About 1823, the parents emigrated by wagon down the Kanawha valley and landed at Gallipolis, Ohio. The father went on a visit to two sisters in the north part of Mason county, and being impressed with the country decided to settle there. So he sold his conveyance to the other family that had started with him to emigrate to the Wabash river while he located at Graham's station which was the place of his residence until death. Subsequently the mother with all the children excepting Robert Lewis went to Clark county, Mo., where she lived until her death. Robert Lewis grew to manhood in Mason county where he received but a limited education, most of his knowledge having been obtained by the experience of life. He learned the trade of a carpenter which he has followed since the age of seventeen years. In 1844, he chose his life companion in the person of Mary Saul, who was born in Meigs county, Ohio, August 25, 1825, and who still survives as his faithful wife. Mr. Winkelblack learned his trade at Pomeroy, Ohio, where he worked until 1853, and then went to Hartford City where he resided until 1890, in active pursuit of his regular business. At the date last mentioned, he removed to Mason City, which is his present home. Mr. Winkelblack began life under great disadvantages and without money, having worked three years at Pomeroy for $30 a year. By steady habits and upright conduct he soon gained confidence of the people which was speedily followed by plenty of employment involving important contracts. After going to Hartford City he was for many years superintendent of the Mason County Mining & Manufacturing Co., now the Hartford City Salt Co. In 1889 he resigned and has since been living a retired life, enjoying that ease and comfort which he has earned by many years of industry. He has been successful in his undertakings and is recognized as one of the progressive citizens of the community. He and wife are members of the Espiscopalian church at Pomeroy. They have an abundance of this world's goods and live in a home that is noted for its beauty, its comforts and its hospitality which they delight in dispensing to their friends. The life of this venerable citizen has been exemplary and may well be taken as a model for imitation by young men who have to make

their way in life through the obstacles of poverty and limited education. The qualities and virtues exhibited by Mr. Winkelblack during the course of his long life finally brought him prosperity and hosts of friends and they will do the same for all others who imitate his example.

Adam H. Wolfe dates his birth from 1838, and his place of nativity was Meigs county, Ohio. His parents were Lewis and Christina (Harpold) Wolfe. Lewis Wolfe was a native of Pennsylvania where he was born in 1803. He came to Mason county in 1846 and settled on the farm where his son Adam H. Wolfe now resides. He remained in Mason county until 1863 and then went to Meigs county, Ohio, where he lived until his death, which occurred in 1865. His marriage with Christina Harpold was productive of the following named children: David, Adam, Mallory, Israel, Henry, Dorothy and William. Mrs. Wolfe had been previously married to John Pickens, by whom she had two children: Spencer and Deborah. Adam Wolf came to Mason county when a boy seven years of age. In 1863 he returned to Meigs county, Ohio, but remained there only a short time. In 1864 he commenced teaching in Mason county, which occupation he followed for nine years, at the same time carrying on the business of farming. For some time he has been selling goods at Racine, Ohio. November 20, 1888, he was united in matrimony to Mrs. Emma C. Thornton, a daughter of J. M. and Isabella Williamson. By her first marriage to Henry Thornton, Mrs. Wolfe was the mother of the following named children: Harvey, Elbert E., Marietta, Bell, William C. and Lloyd E. Mr. and Mrs. Wolfe are a sociable and popular couple and have many friends.

David Young, a native of New Hampshire, was born in 1810, and came to Racine, Ohio, in an early day, being one of the first settlers of Meigs county. He was married to Sarah Carleton and unto them were born: Charlotte, Sarah and Carleton. David Young in early life was a carpenter and cabinet-maker. When he came to Meigs county he purchased 650 acres of land which he owned at the time of his death. He was captain of the militia of Sutton township and died at what is now Racine, Ohio, in 1833. His wife was married to John Blain but no children came to bless this union. Her death occurred about 1860. Carleton Young, the immediate subject of this sketch, was born December 2, 1826, in Meigs county, and here he resided until 1861. He then went to Mason county, W. Va., where he remained for a year, returning to Ohio at the end of that time, where he resided until 1872. Again he went to Mason county, which county has continued to be his home. January 27, 1848, he was married in Meigs county, Ohio, to Loraine Roush, a daughter of John and Elizabeth (Butler) Roush. She was born at Mt. Vernon,

Knox county, Ohio, May 17, 1830, and came to Mason county when a child five years of age with her father. The latter resided in Mason county until within about three years of his death during which time he was a resident of Meigs county, Ohio. He died in 1846 and the death of his wife occurred in 1880, on the 2nd of January. To Mr. Young and wife were born the following children: Lewis P., Artie V., Benjamin F., Ida C., Ella, Halleck C. and Linnie D. Lewis and Halleck now reside in Lincoln, Neb.; Benjamin F. is a resident of Russell, Ky.; Artie V. lives in Syracuse, Ohio; Ida is a teacher of music in the Methodist University, at Lincoln, Neb.; Linnie D. lives at Pt. Pleasant, and Ella is yet at home. Mr. Young has followed various occupations during his life, but the greater part of his attention has been paid to the lumber business. At present he resides on a farm of 104 acres in Graham district, Mason county, W. Va., his postoffice address being at New Haven. He is also the possessor of 250 acres of land in Meigs county, Ohio.

PUTNAM COUNTY.

J. D. Alford, the general merchant of Poco, Putnam county, W. Va., is one of seven children born to William and Sarah (Dolan) Alford. The father was born in Cabell county, W. Va., and the mother in Boone county. He died October 14, 1857. He was a farmer and tobacconist. James Alford, the father of William, was among the first settlers near Lincoln Court House, when bears and wolves were plenty. He died near the latter place. Sarah Alford is now living on Mud river, near Mt. Maria Church. J. D. is the third child. He was reared and educated in this county, and began the active affairs of life as clerk, and in 1875, embarked in the mercantile business for himself at Griffithsville, Lincoln county. Having remained in the latter place for seven years, he then established his present mercantile house at Poca. December 3, 1874, he was united in marriage to Miss Frances E. Meeks, of Winfield, Putnam county, by whom he has had two sons, Walter C. and Frank L. Mr. Alford carries a large stock of the best grade of goods, and is looked upon by those who know him, as one of the leading general merchants in that section of the state. He is an ardent republican, and voted first for Grant.

Thomas P. Carpenter, one of the most prominent physicians and citizens of Putnam county, W. Va., first saw the light of day in Madison county, Va., July 14, 1837, his parents being Uriel and Sarah (Utz) Carpenter, both natives of Virginia, and of German descent. The father was a farmer and a prominent member of the community in which he lived. He died in 1873, and his wife followed him to her reward in March, 1890. Uriel was a son of

Ephraim Carpenter, a Virginia farmer. Uriel and Sarah Carpenter had twelve children, six of whom now survive them. Dr. Thomas P. Carpenter was the fifth child born to them. Having received a good common school education in the schools of his native county he began the study of medicine with Dr. A. R. Barbee, and remained under his tutelage for three years. He then entered the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania, at Philedelphia, and was graduated therefrom in 1858. During the war, in 1861, he enlisted in Company C, Fourth Virginia cavalry, of the Confederate army, and served his cause faithfully until the end. He then returned to his home and taught school for five months, after which he resumed the practice of his profession. In 1858 he settled in Madison county, but one year later went to Sissonville, Kanawha county, and from there to Buffalo, Putnam county, in 1860, from which place he joined the army. He located in Poca, February 14, 1866, and has there built up a lucrative practice and an honorable name. February 7, 1867, was the date of his marriage to Miss Rebecca T. Shaw, a daughter of Dr. S. G. Shaw, of Point Pleasant, W. Va. Mrs. Carpenter was born in Mason county. Two children have grown up in their happy home, namely: Mary B. and Samuel T. Dr. Carpenter is a member of the State Medical society, and has been superintendent of the county schools for two years. Twice he has had the honor to be elected an alternate delegate to the national democratic convention. He cast his first vote for Buchanan. Dr. Carpenter is an assistant surgeon of the K. & M. R. R. Co.

A. B. Deuley, M. D., of Raymond City, W. Va., was born in Kanawha county, December 2, 1861, the son of Noah M. and Louisa (Milam) Deuley. The father now resides in Kanawha county, where he is engaged in farming. The mother died while A. B. was a boy. Dr. Deuley began his education in the common schools, but later went to Lebanon, Ohio, and there finished his scholastic training. When he was sixteen years old his father went to Texas, where the family remained six or eight months. Not liking the county, A. B. returned to West Virginia the same year. In 1881 he began the study of medicine, and one year later put himself under the direction of Dr. Fisher. He was graduated from the College of Physicians and Surgeons, of Baltimore, in 1885, and in the same year entered upon the practice of his profession at Sissonville, Kanawha county, W. Va. After remaining in the latter place for one year Dr. Deuley removed to Raymond City, and has since remained there, where he has come to be recognized as a leading physician. He is a member of the Kanawha Valley Medical society, and is also a mmeber of the county board of health. October 29th, 1889, was the date of his marriage to Miss Mary Ellen Eagan, daughter of

John Eagan, of Kanawha county. Dr. Deuley undoubtedly has a brilliant career before him. His political convictions are democratic. His first presidential ballot was cast for Grover Cleveland. Benjamin Milam, the maternal grandfather of the above, was one of the first settlers of Kanawha county. He was prominently identified with the county's earlier growth.

Charles T. Fife, son of Thomas and Rebecca C. Fife, was born in Charleston, Va., now West Virginia, May 20, 1836. He was educated in the public schools of that city, and afterward learned the carpenter's trade with his father. He was associated with his father in the contracting and building business for several years, after which he embarked in the grocery business at Charleston. He was deputy postmaster of Charleston under Mr. D. H. Snyder for two years. In 1857 he removed to the farm where he has since remained. During the late war he served in the Buffalo Guards for a short time, being compelled to leave the service on account of his health in 1864. He married Sarah C. Bronaugh, daughter of Ludwell Bronaugh. He has had seven children: William E., Mary E., Thomas L., Sarah R., Huston E., Robert G. and Anna C. Mary E. died of consumption in 1886, the rest of the family are living with their parents on the farm near Buffalo, Putnam Co., W. Va.

Colonel William E. Fife, of Buffalo, Putnam Co., W. Va., was born in the city of Charleston, Va., but now West Virginia, February 7, 1834, the son of Thomas and Rebecca C. (Estill) Fife. His father was born in Alleghany county, Va., in 1800, and in 1815 went to Charleston, where he was apprenticed to the carpenter's trade. Having served an apprenticeship of seven years, he then began working at his trade and followed it until his retirement from active life. In 1836 he purchased a farm of some 700 acres in Putnam county, and on this he erected a residence, which, with other substantial buildings, make this property one of the best farms in the county. He died in 1865 and his wife in 1843. He was a prominent contractor and builder during his business life, and erected some of the best buildings in that part of the state. He was a leading democrat and a public spirited man. His father, Edward Fife, was a native of Pennsylvania. He removed to Winchester and from there to Alleghany county, and was there married to a Miss Davis, of South Carolina. Himself and son, John, were soldiers in the war of 1812. Of the four sons and one daughter which composed his family, all are now dead. The children of Thomas and Rebecca Fife were Mary K. Snyder, widow of D. H. Snyder, of Charleston; William E., Charles T. and Julia A. Fife. William was reared in Charleston and was graduated from the State Military academy at Lexington, Va., in July, 1855. Subsequently he read law with Judge J. H. Brown; was admitted to the bar in 1857, but did not prac-

tice. He came to his present place of abode in 1857, living with his father, and has since made it his home. In October, 1859, an event occurred which changed the peace and quiet of his native state. John Brown had just made a raid and captured the arsenal at Harper's Ferry, but in return was himself captured and turned over to the state of Virginia for trial. Military companies were immediately raised all over the state. One was organized at Buffalo and he was chosen captain; he offered the services of the company to Gov. H. A. Wise, but was not accepted. Prior to this time he was appointed by Brig.-Gen. P. H. Steenbergen, adjutant and inspector-general with the rank of lieutenant-colonel in the Sixth brigade of Virginia militia. Whilst engaged in organizing the militia in his brigade, he organized several volunteer companies, who afterward joined the confederate army. On May 13, 1861, his company was mustered into the state service at Buffalo, by order of Gov. Letcher. A part of his company was in the battle of Scary Creek in June of that year. He remained in the service of the state until the 30th day of June, 1861, when his company was turned over to the Confederate army on Sewell mountain and his company placed in the Thirty-sixth regiment Virginia C. S. A., Col. John McCausland commanding, as Company A. He was at the battles of Cross Lanes and Carnifax Ferry, with his regiment attached to the command of Gen. J. B. Floyd, and followed this general to Tennessee. His regiment was in the battle of Fort Donelson, February 14, 1862, from which place they made their escape before the surrender and returned to Virginia with his regiment to recruit. Was in the battles of Giles' C. H., Fayettville, Cloyd's Farm, New Hope, Lynchburg, Monocacy, Snicker's Ford, Opequon, Leetown, Winchester, Cedar Creek, Waynesburg, etc., and served under different brigade commanders. He was promoted major in 1863, and lieutenant-colonel, March, 1864. He commanded his regiment all the time after his promotion to lieutenant-colonel, except a part of the time during the campaign of Gen. J. A. Early in the Shenandoah valley and the invasion of Maryland in 1864, and at the time the troops were disbanded at Christiansburg, April 12, 1865. He was wounded at Cedar Creek, October 19, 1864; was paroled and returned home June 20, 1865, where he has remained to the present time. In the year 1870, he was elected president of the county court and re-elected in 1874, and held that position for eight years. He owns a good Kanawha river farm of some 350 acres, and is considered a good farmer.

Edward H. Fravel, M. D., an eminent physician and scholar of Poca, Putnam county, W. Va., is a son of Philip James and Emma Ellen (Koontz) Fravel. He was born March 30, 1855, at Woodstock, Va. His parents are also Virginians, and the father, Philip James Fravel, who is one of the celebrated poets of

this day, is the son of David Fravel, of Swiss descent, and has been a merchant of Woodstock for many years. Both himself and wife now reside there at the present writing. They raised eight children, five sons and two daughters still survive. Edward is the oldest of these. He was reared in Shenandoah county, and attended the common schools and the academy of Woodstock, until he reached his seventeenth year, when he entered a military academy and remained there for two months, after which he returned home and taught various different schools for several years. After teaching for some time, he took a course at the Hampden and Sydney college, and in 1872, began reading medicine with Dr. G. W. Magruder, of Woodstock, now living in Fort Worth, Texas. After remaining with him for five years, Dr. Fravel entered the Jefferson Medical college in 1877, and two years later was graduated. In 1878, he had the honor to be elected a physician on the diseases of the eye at the Jefferson Medical college hospital, in Philadelphia, and did not begin the practice of his profession as a regular physician until 1880, when he located at Point Pleasant, W. Va., and remained there for two years, in partnership with Dr. Barbee. At the expiration of this time he removed to Poca, and has since built up a large and lucrative practice, amounting to several thousand dollars annually. He is president of the Ohio Valley Medical society, and is an honored lecturer each year in the Medical society of West Virginia, having already delivered them on the following important subjects: In 1880, The Ophthalmoscope; 1884, Diphtheria; 1885, "A Case of Cerebralembolus"; 1886, A Chromatopsia; 1887, Glaucoma; 1888, Anomalies of Refraction; 1888, Fifty Cases of Keratitis; 1889, A Case of Amaloid Degeneration of the Cornea, and in 1890, a valuable paper on Five Cases of Pneumonitis. Dr. Fravel married Miss Bettie Stewart, May 2, 1882, and they have three children: Mary, Stewart and Philip. Dr. Fravel is an honored member of the Kanawha Medical and Surgical society, and is a staunch democrat.

J. W. Matthews, a prominent lumber dealer of Poca, Putnam county, W. Va., was born in Kanawha county January 27, 1851, the son of F. W. and Mary Jane (Carney) Matthews. Mr. F. W. Matthews was born in Kanawha county, where he has been engaged in farming all his life. He is the son of George Matthews, who was born on the banks of the Potomac, in Virginia, and who migrated to the Kanawha valley in an early day. Subsequently he removed to Muskingum county, Ohio, where he resided for several years, but then returned to Kanawha county, where he died. He was born of Irish parentage, and was a tiller of the soil. The mother was born in Jackson county, W. Va., and still survives. Since attaining his majority Mr. J. W. Matthews has taken care of himself. His capital to start with was fourteen dollars, the

price of a heifer given him by his father. He first embarked in farming and lumbering. Although he still owns a fine farming property, he gives his attention chiefly to lumbering, and does a business of $75,000 annually in rafting lumber to Cincinnati. For the past three years he has made Poca his home, and has built a very fine residence there. His marriage to Sidney A. Slater, of Kanawha county, was solemnized in 1875, and has resulted in the birth of seven children, six of them now living, they are: Ida M. (deceased), Lelia D., Evodna E., Servetis A., Francis L., James G. and Rosa E. Mr. Matthews is a member of the I. O. O. F., Putnam lodge, No. 84, of Raymond City, and is a trustee of the same, he is also a member of the K. of P., Poca lodge, No. —. His first presidential ballot was cast for U. S. Grant. Mr. Matthews is a successful public spirited man, and is respected and esteemed by all with whom he comes in contact.

David McCoy, sheriff of Putnam county, W. Va., was born in Tyler county, that state, May 17, 1834, his parents being Abraham and Isabella (McKay) McCoy, natives of Ireland and Scotland, respectively. They were married while living in Tyler county, and in 1836 moved to Jackson county, where the father engaged in farming. Abraham was a captain in the state militia, and was an ardent democrat. He was a consistent member of the Methodist Episcopal church, and passed to his reward in 1838. His wife survived him until 1863. David McCoy was reared in Jackson county, where he was given a fair schooling. In 1866 he removed to Putnam county, and bought a farm of 400 acres, the farm being known as the Joab Early farm. Joab was the father of the Jubal Early. In the same year of his removal to this county Mr. McCoy married Miss Amanda B. Wells, daughter of Ephraim Wells, of Jackson county. Their six children are: Maggie B., William L., E. D., Charles E., Annie B. and Emma A. In 1888 Mr. McCoy was elected sheriff of Putnam county on the democratic ticket. In 1861 he joined Company B, Twenty-second Virginia volunteer infantry, Confederate army, with the title of second lieutenant. He was taken prisoner while on a scouting expedition, and was confined at Camp Chase for four months, and at Fort Delaware for twelve months, only being released at the close of the war. The family are members of the Southern Methodist church, of which Mr. McCoy is a trustee.

J. W. Nye, practicing physician and general surgeon, is a native Wythe county, Va., where he was born October 27, 1847. He is a son of Andrew J. and Elizabeth (Armbrister) Nye, both of the county and state above mentioned. The father is now a retired physician, seventy-five years of age and resides in his native county. He has practiced medicine for over fifty years and is in every respect highly esteemed, both in his capacity as phy-

sician and citizen. His father, John T. Nye, emigrated from Pennsylvania at an early day and settled in the "Old Dominion." The mother of our subject died in Wythe county, in 1888. Her father was George Armbrister who was a native of the state of North Carolina. Both the Nyes and the Armbristers were of German descent. The parents of our subject reared a family of three sons and four daughters, and all but one of the daughters are still living. Our subject was the fourth child of this family and grew up to manhood in Wythe county where he was also educated. He read medicine with his father and also practiced in connection with him for three years, having obtained his license in 1866. During the latter part of the war he served in the Confederate army being a member of Jackson's battalion. His marriage took place in 1872, his bride being Virginia S. West, of Putnam county, W. Va., and the same year he removed to Putnam county for residence and he has remained there since then in the practice of his profession. Dr. Nye is a member of the State Medical society, and also holds the position of examiner in the fourth congressional district of West Virginia. His wife is a member of the Baptist church and the family rank high socially, enjoying the esteem of all who know them.

Howard T. Simms was born in Putnam county, May 27, 1855, and is a son of Robert M. and Mary Ann Simms, both natives of Culpeper county, Va. The elder Simms was born in 1813, and removed with his parents to where he now resides in 1822. His father and mother were Henry and Margaret (Marshall) Simms, both of whom were natives of the "Old Dominion," but died in Putnam county, W. Va. The father of our subject combines the business of farming and merchandising, and has followed the last mentioned pursuit since 1839. He is the owner of about 2,000 acres of land, divided into several tracts. The marriage of our subject's parents took place in Putnam county in 1842, and they had a family of eight children, six of whom are living. Our subject, who was the sixth child, grew up to manhood in Putnam county, where he attended the common schools, and afterward took a course at Marshall college, state normal. On April 30, 1878, he was married to Allie Burgess, and they have the following named children: Hugh M., Mary and Jennie. Mr. Simms is one of the substantial farmers of Putnam, has been prosperous in business and stands well in the community.

James Stewart, a prominent agriculturist of Putnam county, was born and reared in Bath county, Va., October 16, 1816, having been the date of his birth. He was the son of Henry and Mary (Moore) Stewart, both natives of Virginia, in which state they died, the father of cholera in 1833, and the mother several years previous. Henry was a farmer and served in the war of 1812. His father was a native of Scotland, who emigrated to

America and settled in Virginia at an early day. His wife was captured by the Indians on Cowpasture river and was held a prisoner by them for several years. James was the ninth child, and is now the only surviving member of the family. His parents both dying when he was but a boy he was compelled to shift for himself. Until his twentieth year he supported life by working on a farm, but upon attaining the latter age he began the study of dentistry, which he continued until 1850. In 1840 he removed to Cabell county, and to Putnam county in 1850, when he entered upon a mercantile career at Winfield. Mr. Stewart took possession of the farm which he now owns in 1853, but continued in business in different parts of the county until 1860. In the latter year he began to turn his attention exclusively to agriculture, and has since devoted his time to that business with satisfactory results. He owns 1,800 acres of land, 300 acres of which is situated in the fertile Kanawha river bottom. In 1843 Mr. Stewart espoused Miss Harriman, of Kanawha county. She died in 1849, leaving three children, who have since died. He was again married in 1853, this time Miss Martha J. Staton becoming his wife. Their four children are: Bettie M., wife of Dr. Edward Fravel; Mattie E., James H. and Robert A. Mr. Stewart is a member of the I. O. O. F. For many years he was justice of the peace, and in 1875-76. represented Putnam county in the state legislature, and has held various minor offices. During the life of the whig party he was a follower of that policy, but in later years has been a warm adherent of the democratic party.

The Hon. L. J. Timms, a merchant of Buffalo, Putnam county, W. Va., first saw the light January 21, 1842, at the place where he now resides. Jesse and Mary A. (McCown) Timms were his parents. The father was a native of Wirt county, W. Va., but in 1839 removed to Poca, Putnam county, and while there was married. In 1840 he went to Missouri, but one year later returned and entered the employ of James A. Payne at Buffalo. In 1852 he purchased the mercantile business of Mr. Payne, and continued in it until his death in 1868. His wife still survives him; she resides in Buffalo. She is a zealous member of the Methodist Episcopal church, south. Jesse Timms for several years was interested in Kanawha river navigation, having owned an interest in Cincinnati packets that plied on that water. He was formerly a whig but changed to the democracy. His six children were: L. J., John E., of Pittsburg; W. M., Mrs. Emma E. Henderson, Mrs. Mary H. Robinson, and one other, Dr. C. W. Timms, now dead. L. J. Timms received his schooling in Buffalo. In May, 1861, he joined the Confederate army as a member of the Buffalo Guards, attached to Company A, Thirty-sixth Virginia regiment, holding a commission as corporal. He was taken prisoner

in Louisiana and kept in confinement for four months. During the latter part of the war he served in the Trans-Mississippi department. After the war he returned to Buffalo and engaged in the mercantile business. For the past three years he has had charge of the business of L. A. Carr & Co., at Buffalo. In politics Mr. Timms has been very prominent, having been elected a member of the house of representatives of West Virginia by the democratic party in 1882, and in 1876 was elected sheriff of Putnam county on the same ticket. He has served as a member of board of education of Buffalo district, and as mayor and councilman of Buffalo. July 10, 1874, in Cincinnati, he married Mrs. Grace Eveleth, daughter of James A. Payne. Mrs. Timms is a communicant of the Episcopal church.

Van Buren Walker, a leading citizen, and the proprietor of the largest general mercantile business in Poca, Putnam county, W. Va., was born in Kanawha county, April 22, 1835. A sketch of his parents — Albert G. and Mary (Sims) Walker — will be found elsewhere in this work. Mr. Walker was the third of twelve children. He was raised in the Kanawha valley, where he received his education in the common schools. Since his eighteenth year he has been engaged in business, at that time entering the employ of his father, who for many years operated a general mercantile business at Brownstown. In 1858 Mr. Walker embarked in trade for himself at Brownstown, and two years later removed to Poca. In 1862 he was married to Miss Maffett Chapman, a native of Nicholas county, W. Va., daughter of William O. Chapman. Four sons are the issue of this union, named: George A., John Hunter, now a physician; Lewis J., a printer, now residing in Chicago, and Lawrence. Mr. Walker has been a staunch democrat since reaching the age of a voter, having cast his first presidential vote for Buchanan. In connection with his large business he also carries on a local banking business. He is an energetic, enterprising business man and a public spirited citizen.

Hansford L. Walls, M. D., physician and surgeon, of Putnam county, W. Va., first saw the light in Frederick county, Va., March 16, 1861, his parents being John W. and Mary J. (Hansford) Walls. John W. Walls was born in Winchester, Va., in 1806, and died in April, 1871. For many years he was an able physician. His father was John Walls, who was a Pennsylvanian by birth. His wife was a Miss Watkins, a lady of German parentage. Mary J. Walls, the mother of the subject of this sketch, was born at Paint Creek, Kanawha county, and is still living. She married a second time, Maj. V. R. Rust, of Putnam county, becoming her husband. By her first husband she had one daughter and a son. Hansford L. Walls lived in Frederick county until he had reached his tenth year, at which time his mother

moved to St. Albans, W. Va. She was a daughter of Maj. John Hansford. Her grandfather, John Hansford, Sr., was one of the first settlers of this valley, and married a Miss Morris. Her father married a Miss Teass. Dr. Walls is, therefore, widely connected among the best families of the Kanawha valley. At the age of eighteen, Mr. Walls began the active affairs of life. In 1881, he graduated from the medical department of the university of Maryland, at Baltimore, and since that time has been engaged in active practice. His first attempt was made in Putnam county, where his step-father resided. The next year after his settlement there, he married Miss Cattie E. Rust, the only daughter of Maj. V. R. Rust. Mrs. Walls was born in Putnam county. Their home has been blessed by one child, Hugo V. Until 1887, Dr. Walls was located at his mother's home, but in the latter year he removed to Dego, where he has since built up a fair practice, and is gradually making his talents and ability felt in the community.

George White, the assistant superintendent of the Marnette Coal Mining Co., of Raymond City, and also a civil and mining engineer, was born in Scotland, September 3, 1856, his parents being William and Martha (Linsey) White. The father was a mine superintendent in his native land for forty-three years. His widow still survives him, residing in the land of her nativity. George White has been connected with the mining of coal since a boy. He was educated in the schools of Scotland, graduating at the Royal high school, at Edinburgh, and subsequently from the school of Mines at Glasgow. In 1878, he was united in marriage to Miss Maggie Buchanan, of Scotland, the daughter of Thomas Buchanan, who now resides with his daughter. His family consists of an only daughter, Miss Jennie R., and his niece Miss Annie. Mr. White came to the United States in 1882, and located at Buchtel, Ohio, where he remained for two years, after which he removed to Floodwood, Ohio, and there erected the two largest blast furnaces in Ohio, for the Ohio and Western Coal Mining Co. After remaining there for three years he located at Wellson, Jackson county, Ohio, and lived there three years; he then came to the Kanawha valley. Mr. White has been with the Marnette Coal Mining Co. for one year. He is a member of the Masonic Grand lodge of Scotland, and also of the Knights of Pythias, Florence lodge, No. 40, of Raymond City. He is a member of the Mining institute of Scotland and also of Mining institute of Ohio. He holds a certificate of competency from the British government as superintendent of mines. George and James L., the former's brother, are the only members of the family living in this country. James is his assistant engineer, and is also an expert. Mr. and Mrs. White are members of the Scotch Presbyterian church.

E. S. Arnold, senior member of the firm of Arnold, Abney & Co., wholesale dry goods merchants, was born in Berkshire county, Massachusetts, May 10, 1820, the son of John and Prudence (Smith) Arnold, natives of Connecticut. Until his eighteenth year he lived in Berkshire county, and there received an academical education. At the latter age he went to New York city, and became clerk in a dry goods house. In 1842, after having remained there for three years, he removed to Charleston, and engaged in the retail dry goods business for himself. He was one of the first merchants of the city, and is now the only surviving merchant who was in business at that time. His capital being small he started in a modest way. In 1858 he was elected sheriff of the county, and filled that office with much credit to himself until 1861, in which year he joined the Confederate army as a member of the Twenty-second Virginia regiment, but being sheriff of the county, he received an order from the governor to remain at his post. He therefore resigned his office, and was appointed to the quartermaster's department, and during the first year of the war was located at White Sulphur Springs, and at Richmond, Va. After that time he was stationed at Salem, Va., until the close of the conflict. In 1865 he returned to Charleston, and again engaged in the dry goods trade. In 1877 he changed his retail business to the wholesale exclusively, at the same time forming a co-partnership with F. W. Abney, under the firm name of Arnold, Abney & Co. This house now does the largest jobbing business in the city. Mr. Arnold retired from active business January 1, 1887. From 1848 to 1851, he was engaged in the manufacture of salt in connection with his other business, and was one of the directors in the Charleston savings bank. He was also president of the Kanawha Building and Loan association. In 1847 he married Cynthia Noyes, daughter of Isaac Noyes. She died in 1878. Two of her children survive: Isaac Noyes and Mrs. Kate Abney.

T. L. Barber, M. D., first saw the light in Marshall county, Ind., October 4, 1853. His parents were Daniel and Ann (Hulverson) Barber. His father was a native of Syracuse, N. Y., and his mother of Norway. They were among the early settlers of Marshall county, where they took up a tract of land and cleared a farm upon which they passed the greater part of their lives, and where they died and were buried, after sojourning for a few years in the oil regions of Pennsylvania, and then for a few years in Dodge county, Wis., farming and running a flour mill. Our subject went to Marietta, Ohio, where he lived with a relative and received six years' schooling at the Marietta college. After

graduating from that admirable educational institution he taught school for two years in Mason county, W. Va., in the Great Kanawha valley, after which he went to Philadelphia and secured one of the scholarships in the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania, by competitive examination. From this he graduated with honor in 1882, after which he came directly to Charleston, where he has since remained. Dr. Barber has built up an extensive practice and ranks among the very first physicians of the state. He is a member of the American Medical association, and of the State Medical society of this state, and is also an active member of Kanawha lodge, No. 20, A. F. & A. M., Tyrean Royal Arch, chapter No. 13, Kanawha commandery, K. T., No. 4, and is an active follower of the republican party. He was first married November 30th, 1882, to Miss Sarah Richardson Couch, daughter of James H. Couch, Sr., of Mason county, W. Va. She died February 13, 1884. Dr. Barber again married August 4th, 1885, to Miss Lucy Brown, daughter of Judge James H. Brown, of Kanawha county, becoming his wife. Three children have been born to them, viz.: James Brown, Timothy Lawrence and Sadie Couch. Both Dr. and Mrs. Barber are members of the Kanawha Presbyterian church, in which he is an elder. Dr. Barber is a member of the United States pension examining board, the medical examiner of a number of the largest life insurance companies in this country, and delights in the surgical branch of his profession, wherein he most excels, as is shown by his recent appointment as surgeon of the Kanawha & Michigan railroad.

James Bibby, proprietor of National Grist Mills, at Charleston, was born on the 27th of October, 1837. His parents were Joseph and Margaret (Swarbrick) Bibby, natives of Lancastershire, England. They came to America in 1832, and after a stay of about six months in Norfolk, Va., came to Charleston, making the journey overland in a spring wagon. The father was a miller by trade, and after his arrival was employed by the Ruffners to build a grist-mill on the Elk river on the site of the mills now owned by Mr. Bibby, his son. After the completion of the mill he conducted them for some time, subsequently purchasing them. He is the oldest miller in Charleston. In the early days of the salt industry he was engaged in manufacturing that important article. He filled several different public offices when Charleston was but a village, and was formerly prominent in the ranks of the whig party, later becoming a democrat. These parents reared eleven children; six of them are still living: Edward, James, Robert, William W., Samuel and John Henry. Those deceased are: Elizabeth, Mrs. Sarah Jane Noyes, Joseph, Isabella and Ellen. James, the subject of this sketch, learned the miller's trade while a boy. In 1860 he em-

barked in business for himself at the place where he now is. He was first married in 1863, Miss Emeline Stark, daughter of John W. Stark, becoming his wife. She died six years later, leaving three children: Ella, John W. and Joseph Bibby. In 1876 Mr. Bibby again married, this time to Miss Eugenie B. Atkinson, daughter of James Atkinson, by whom he has had three children: Mary, Fannie and James Atkinson. Mrs. Bibby is a valued member of the Methodist Episcopal church of Charleston.

Hugh L. Boggs, attorney at law, was born in Spottsylvania county, Va., June 12, 1853, son of Lewis Alexander and Elizabeth (Rawlings) Boggs. Hugh C. Boggs, the grandfather of our subject, was a native of Ireland, and a graduate of Dublin college, from which institution he held the degrees of A. M., and LL. D. He came to America while a young man and married a Miss Holiday, daughter of Major Lewis Holiday, of revolutionary fame, and settled in Spottsylvania county, Va., where he followed his profession as a minister of the Episcopal church, preaching at one time in the old stone church near Taylorsville, which was Henry Clay's place of worship, and he was a warm personal friend of his pastor. Lewis Boggs was born in the latter county, and was educated at Langolbin academy, Judge McCune, Rawley T. Daniels, Judge Robinson and George Stephenson, being among his classmates. He was admitted to the bar, for which he had been educated, but made farming his chief vocation. He served as chief justice of Spottsylvania county for over thirty years. He was an active communicant of the Episcopal church, and an ardent follower of the whig party. Hugh L. Boggs, his son, and our subject, was educated by tutors. He read law in the office of Hon. William S. Barton, of Fredericksburg, Va., and was admitted to practice in September, 1875. In 1881, he moved to Boyd county, Ky., where he remained four years, during which time, he was elected city attorney of Ashland. In December, 1887, he resigned that office and moved to Charleston, where he has since resided. In 1888, Mr. Boggs married Miss Julia V. Beach, daughter of Samuel and Sarah Beach, and one child has come to bless their home, Sarah Elizabeth. Mr. Boggs is a prominent member of the republican party, and his wife is an earnest communicant of the Episcopal church.

T. S. P. Bowers, a general merchant of Lock Seven, Kanawha county, W. Va., was born in Berkeley county, W. Va., in 1837, his parents being Adam and Catherine (Swingle) Bowers, natives of West Virginia and Washington county, Md., respectively. Both died in Berkeley county, where they had lived for twenty-five years. The father was a wagon-maker by trade, but in 1842 turned his attention to farming, and afterward became an excellent agriculturist. These parents were of German descent.

They raised three sons and two daughters, all of whom still survive them. T. S. P. is the third child, and was reared and educated in Berkeley county. A short time before the breaking out of the rebellion he entered Roanoke college, but was compelled to abandon his collegiate course on account of the war. When twenty-one years of age he began teaching. He enlisted in the Confederate army in 1861, in Company A, Tenth Virginia regiment and subsequently Company F, Seventh Virginia cavalry. He served until discharged on account of ill-health and then devoted himself to scouting. He was captured four times but managed to escape each time. Mr. Bowers participated in both battles of the Manassas, was in the battles of Cedar Mountain, Orange Court House, and was all through Jackson's campaign. At the battle of Cross Keys he carried Sir Percy Windham off the field. After the war he taught school in the Shenandoah valley, of Virginia, for thirteen years. In 1867 he married Miss Mary Etta Duffey, daughter of the late J. W. Duffy, of Moorefield, W. Va., and they now have two children, Willie R. and Norma L. Mr. Bowers came to Kanawha county, May 1, 1887, and assumed the position of secretary and treasurer of the Potomac Lumber company, which he filled for three years. In May, 1890, he established the general merchandise store at Lock Seven, which he now operates. He is a member of Washington lodge, No. 58, of the Masonic order, is a K. of H., and a member of the A. O. U. W. He is a communicant of the Presbyterian church, while his wife is a member of the Lutheran denomination. Mr. Bowers cast his first vote for Jefferson Davis.

Major Thomas L. Broun, attorney at law, was born in Loudoun county, Va. His parents were Edwin Conway and Elizabeth Broun. The former was born in Westmoreland county, Va., and the latter in Loudoun county, Va. In 1848 he graduated at the university of Virginia in several of the tickets, after which he taught school in his native county for two years. At the expiration of that time he came to Charleston and began the study of law under the late Hon. George W. Summers, and was admitted to practice in 1852. He formed a partnership with George S. Patton, which continued for several years, and became associated in business with Gen. Rosecrans and others, who were largely interested in the Coal river region. He was employed as the attorney for several different companies engaged in mining and shipping cannel coal from the Coal River region. After Gen. Rosecrans' resignation from the office of president of the Coal River Navigation company, Major Broun was elected to that position, and was continued in the same until the breaking out of the civil war. He entered the Confederate service as a private in the Kanawha Riflemen, and was soon promoted to the position of major in the Sixtieth Virginia regiment of "Wise Legion."

He was severely wounded at the battle of Cloyd's Mountain, in Pulaski county, Va., his former partner, Col. Patton, having been killed in battle about the same time at Winchester, Va. At the close of the war, Major Broun returned to Charleston, and soon after was re-instated in his old position as president of the Navigation company. As Confederate soldiers were not allowed to practice law in West Virginia at that time, Major Broun removed to New York city in June, 1886, where he was engaged in practicing his profession until November, 1870, making West Virginia law and land titles a specialty while in New York. In the last mentioned year he returned to Charleston, and has since devoted his energies to the law and the development of the Coal river region, in which he has a large personal interest. He is a member of the Kanawha lodge, No. 20, A. F. & A. M.; is a director of the Sheltering Arms hospital of Charleston, and a prominent communicant of the Episcopal church, in which he has served as vestryman and warden for many years. He is also a member of Camp Patton ex-Confederates. In June, 1866, he married Miss Mary M. Fontaine, daughter of Col. Edmund Fontaine, of Hanover county, Va., by whom he has had three children: Louise Fontaine, Edmund Fontaine and Annie Conway. Major Broun's father-in-law has the proud distinction of having been the first president of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad, and for many years previous to that was the president of the Virginia Central railroad. William Broun, the grandfather of Major Broun, was a native of Scotland, who settled in Westmoreland county, Va., and practiced law there when Virginia was a colony. His grandfather's brother, Dr. Robert Broun, settled in South Carolina, near Charleston. These brothers have a long line of descendants in Virginia, South Carolina, Alabama and other states. Originally the name was spelled Brohun. In course of time the letter *h* was dropped and the name was spelled "Broun," with an accent on the letter *u*, showing the contraction. His family being of French origin and from Bordeaux, France, the name is now generally spelled without the accent. He is and has been a successful practioner in his profession, and is thoroughly conversant with the resources of the great Kanawha valley and the contiguous country. For many years he has, at times, written and distributed among capitalists and his clients in New York and elsewhere, circulars, and reports containing valuable data and information respecting the coal, timber, etc., of the country drained by the great Kanawha and its tributaries.

Hon. Samuel C. Burdett, assistant United States attorney, at Charleston, was born in Scioto county, Ohio, September 23, 1846, the son of Samuel C. and Sarah (Ratcliffe) Burdett, and with them moved to Lawrence county, Ohio, when three years of age. He was reared in the town of Ironton, receiving his preliminary

education in the public schools of that place. Having learned the trade of sign-painting he followed that vocation for several years. After the war he went to Louisiana, where, on the 27th of March, 1869, he was united in marriage to Miss Mollie Taylor, a native of Alabama, but at that time a resident of Louisiana. In 1870 Mr. Burdett came to Charleston, where, for eight years, he continued to follow his trade. Meanwhile he was engaged in reading law every opportunity he could get, and in this way was enabled to pass a satisfactory examination for the bar in 1878. In the same year he was the greenback candidate for state senator. He carried Kanawha county over the democrat and republican candidates by 514 majority, and came within 500 votes of an election in a district usually giving 1,100 democratic majority. In the year 1882 he was appointed assistant prosecuting attorney of Kanawha county, and two years later was elected prosecuting attorney of the county. After holding that office for four years, he was in, 1889, appointed assistant United States district attorney for the district of West Virginia. Mr. Burdett is a member of the Kanawha lodge, No. 26, K. of P., and is also a member of the Mystic Circle. The Hon. Samuel C. Burdett has made a marked success in the legal field. He has come to be recognized as an able counselor and is known as the "silver tongued" orator. Eight children have been born into this happy home, named as follows: Frank, William, Mollie, Nellie, Mabel, Samuel C., Jr., Charles and Freddie.

Noyes S. Burlew, one of the rising business men of southern West Virginia, and a leading hardware merchant of Charleston in the great Kanawha valley, was born and reared in the state of New York, in Seneca county, where his father lived upon one of the more extensive farms along the shores of Cayuga lake. He studied in the county schools and at Cazenovia seminary. On the breaking forth of the Civil war he enlisted in the One Hundred and Twenty-six New York volunteer infantry, and with his regiment fought through the great conflict, until being disabled at the battle of Gettysburg, after long durance in hospital, he was honorably discharged. He then turned his energies toward the duties of civil life. Like many of the other young men who with him had traversed the sunny south, he had been impressed with her beauty and promise, even amidst the desolation of war, and in casting about for a likely field for business success, he turned toward West Virginia, and settled in Charleston. Here he took active part in developing the great natural resources of the state and neighboring region, and, in 1872, became a stockholder and director in the Charleston Lumber & Manufacturing company, in connection with other northern men. While still interested in the successful operation of industrial enterprise, he was called upon, in 1877, to act as deputy United

States marshal, and lead the famous raid of the United States officers upon the flourishing Moonshine distilleries of the Virginia and Kentucky border. The distinguished part he bore in these successful attempts at upholding the law lead to his further advancement in the service of the United States and, under Gen. I. H. Duvall, he acted as deputy United States internal revenue collector, which position he resigned to establish the present extensive wholesale and retail hardware house of which he is the proprietor. While at the head of this extensive business, his vigor of mind has found outlet in other enterprises of public and private profit. Among these are the South Side Improvement company, a corporation which is laying out and expanding an extensive suburban addition to the city of Charleston, and of which company he is a director and the treasurer. In connection with E. L. Boggs, under the firm name of Burlew & Boggs, he has for several years been lessee of the opera house in Charleston, and done much to secure to the people a high class of instructive and popular entertainments. And he is now connected with Frank Woodman in erecting the finest opera house in the state. Upon the social side of his life Mr. Burlew has found himself surrounded by a circle of warm friends. He is a Mason in high esteem, and has taken active part in the welfare of the Knights Templar of the state. In 1885 he married a daughter of the late William Rand, for many years a prominent banker and citizen of Kanawha, and resides in one of the most charming and hospitable homes of the city. He has given some of his hours of relaxation to the training and establishment of one of the most successful amateur stables in the Virginias. Descended from a family on whose great grass farm along the picturesque shores of Lake Cayuga were raised some of the finest stock and thoroughbred horseflesh of western New York, he brought the early acquired tastes southward with him. Among the notable horses which Mr. Burlew has owned and trained and developed by his own hand are Mikado, Belle Clinton, Norwood, Whitefoot, Kanawha Maid, and William R, which have passed from his hands at high and lucrative figures, while he still has in his stables Pearl McGregor, Highland Chief, Jr., Lattie Lambert and Queen Wood. But Mr. Burlew has not only found the time and opportunity to give attention to many diverse business enterprises and interests, and withal cultivate the social and neighborly instincts of his genial nature, but he has always found opportunity to keep alive his early love for books and literature, and is a Shakespearian scholar of some note, while in the way of elocution and histrionic ability his reputation is widely spread and favorably known throughout the state. Possessing a voice of wonderful compass, its careful training and the natural talent of the man have enabled him to attain unusual excellence in

amateur dramatics, and he has declined many flattering offers to take the stage in professional engagement. Mr. Burlew presents a fine type of the American citizen. Keen and alert in business dealings, of unimpeachable integrity in all affairs, affable and cordial in all social relations, scholarly and cultivated in personal attainment, it is upon the presence and sterling worth of such men that the prosperity and permanence of our country rests.

E. L. Buttrick was born in Boston, Mass., August 5, 1825, and is of English origin. William Buttrick, a native of the county of Essex, England, emigrated to America with other Puritans in 1635, settling at Concord, Mass., where he lived and died. He was a witness to the deed of cession of land at Concord to the colonists from the Indians and his lineal descendants hold and occupy a portion of the land William Buttrick acquired at that time under his original title. He became the father of Jonathan Buttrick who died at the advanced age of eighty-three years and upon whose tombstone at Concord is this epitaph: "He was followed to his grave by his widow and thirteen well-instructed children." Of these children there were two sons who served in the French and English war of the last century, and scaled the heights of Abraham with the devoted General Wolfe. John, another of the sons, commanded the militia in the memorable fight with the British at Concord on the 19th of April, 1775. He fired the first gun on the American side in the Revolutionary war. He is the identical individual to whom Emerson alludes as "The embattled farmer who fired the shot that echoed around the world." He bore the rank of colonel and was burried with military honors at Concord where a suitable monument records his deeds, his titles and his virtues. This distinguished man was the father of several children, among them being Horatio G., who is the father of E. L. Buttrick, the immediate subject of this sketch. Horatio G. Buttrick served as a major in the war of 1812, his civil vocations being those of a farmer and merchant. He removed from his native state of Massachusetts to Oneida county, N. Y., and there he died. In the county of New York above mentioned, our subject was reared. At the age of seventeen he was graduated at the Hamilton college, of New York, in the class of June, 1842. In this class were Hon. A. P. Willard, who became governor of Indiana; Hon. T. M. Pomeroy, a representative in congress from New York for six years; and Dr. Eurotas P. Hastings, one of the founders of the Jaffa college, at Ceylon, of which he was president many years and who for thirty-eight years was a missionary at the last-mentioned place. In the spring of 1843 Mr. Buttrick started out in the world with $25 as his total capital, first going to Mason county, Ky., where he taught the Helena academy until the fall of 1844, when with

a college comrade he went on horseback to central Georgia. He taught school there for a year when he returned to New York and commenced the study of law with the Hon. J. T. Miller, of Seneca Falls. He continued the study of law for a few years, when he was admitted to practice at Auburn. In the spring of 1848 he went to Oshkosh, Wis., where he began a successful career in his chosen profession. In the spring of 1854 he settled in Milwaukee and in 1862 was commissioned as lieutenant-colonel of the Twenty-fourth Wisconsin volunteers, being next year promoted to the colonelcy of the Thirty-ninth regiment from the same state. He commanded a brigade at Memphis, Tenn., until September, 1864, when he and his brigade were mustered out of the service. In 1871 Mr. Buttrick went to Wayne county, W. Va., for what he supposed would be a temporary sojourn, but circumttances caused him to locate permanently in the state. Accordingly he located at Charleston, where he has since conducted an extensive business in investigating, adjusting and litigating land titles. In 1851 our subject was married to Miss Fanny, daughter of James Burling, formerly of New York. The wife died in December, 1871, without leaving offspring. In 1873 Mr. Buttrick wedded Miss Jane, daughter of Hon. Edward Bigelow, of Grafton, Mass. One child, a daughter named Mary, came to bless this union. Mr. Buttrick is eminent commander of the Kanawha commandery, No. 4, K. T., and is also a companion of the military order of the Loyal Legion and a member of the American and West Virginia bar associations.

Cornelius Calvert, the prominent merchant and farmer of Peerless, Kanawha county, W. Va., was born in this county in 1838, and has always resided here. His parents were Mills W. and Catherine (Slack) Calvert, both natives of Virginia. The father removed to this region before his marriage. He was a cooper by trade, but in his latter days was engaged in tilling the soil. He died in 1849, and his wife in 1879. She was a devout communicant of the Baptist church. Cornelius began earning his own living by working on the public works making salt. For some fifteen years he was thus employed. In 1859, he married Drusilla A. Oaks, of Kanawha county. Her death occurred in 1884. The children of this union were: Ebenezer O., Mills A., James W. and Ida M., now the wife of Elbert R. Hoffman. Mr. Calvert has sixteen acres of fine farming land which he operates in connection with his mercantile business. For the past year he has been a supervisor of Malden district, having been elected by the democratic party, of which he is a firm supporter. In 1884, he married Dollie Dillard. Mrs. Calvert was born in Albemarle county, Va., the daughter of Thomas and Sophia (Perry) Dillard. Mr. Calvert is one of the substantial business men of the

R. S. Cowan

county, and is widely known for his public spirit and enterprise.

Charles Capito was born in Pittsburg, Penn., November 1, 1849, son of Godfrey and Catharine (Miller) Capito. The father was a blacksmith. In 1856, he moved to Mason City, Mason county, W. Va., where he established a brewery, and engaged in the manufacture of malt liquors. His son was reared in Mason City, receiving his education at Concordia college, Ft. Wayne Ind., where he was a student for six years. At the expiration of that time, he engaged in the drug business at Mason City, later embarking in the grocery trade. In 1872, he came to Charleston, and established a fancy grocery and vegetable business, which he operated until 1883, when he established a wholesale liquor and rectifying business. Mr. Capito is the vice president to the Charleston board of trade, president of the Kanawha Valley Building and Loan association, a member of the Kanawha lodge, No. 25, I. O. O. F. He is an active and valued member of the democratic party. In 1877, he married Miss Sophia Bentz, daughter of Henry Bentz, by whom he had four children: Gussie, Bertha, Henry and Katie.

William B. Carder, superintendent of the Charleston Street Railway company, was born in Page county, Va., August 17, 1838, son of James and Sarah F. (Coates) Carder. He was educated in the public schools of his native county, and afterward learned the cabinet-maker's trade. In April, 1861, he enlisted in the Confederate army as a member of the Smith Blues, which was consigned to the Fourth Virginia regiment. Mr. Carder held the commission of first lieutenant of his company. At the battle of Gettysburg he was captured and confined in prison until the close of the war. In January, 1866, he moved to Charleston, where he followed the business of building houses for ten years. In 1876 he was appointed foreman of the cabinet shop at the Moundsville state prison, and filled that position for two years, after which he resided in Fairmount, W. Va., for four years, being engaged in the furniture business there. At the expiration of that time he returned to Charleston, and for five years was the janitor of the state house. He contracted for and built the Charleston Street railway, and is now the superintendent of that company. He is a member of the National Building & Loan association, a member of the Charleston lodge, F. & A. M., and Tyrean Royal Arch chapter; also of the Kanawha commandery. In 1859 he married Miss Sarah F. Newman, by whom he has had five children: Mrs. Hallie Lee, Leonard, Albert S., Ada E., Walker S. and Goldie.

R. S. Carr was born in Guernsey county, Ohio, November 17, 1845, son of James Carr, of County Down, Ireland. The latter came to this country about 1822, when seven years old, settling near

Cambridge in the county above mentioned, where he grew to manhood. He was a plasterer by trade and married Margaret Stuart, a lady of Irish birth, who was the daughter of Robert Stuart, born in 1818, and came to this country in childhood. James Carr and wife had six children: Mary, Robert S., William C., Ella, James M. and Joseph H. In 1855 the parents moved to Point Pleasant, and ten years later to Charleston, where they now reside. Our subject was reared at Point Pleasant where he received a limited education which he has greatly improved since reaching his majority. In 1877 Mr. Carr began business for himself as a merchant at Charleston, having previously clerked for various firms. He sold merchandise until 1882, when he engaged in the steamboat business, organizing the "Ella Layman" towboat company, of which he has since been president. He has always taken considerable interest in politics. In 1878 he espoused the principles of the greenback party, with which he continued to be identified until the fall of 1890, when he joined the democracy. In the spring of 1879, he was elected a member of the city council of Charleston, serving three years, and in 1882 he was elected commissioner of Kanawha county, serving as president of the board. In 1886 he was elected to the West Virginia senate from the ninth district, as the candidate of the labor party, overcoming a democratic majority of more than 1,200. His term of office expired in January, 1891. In the session of 1889 he was elected president of the senate, in which high position he served during two sessions. By simply taking the oath at the close of his last term, he might have enjoyed the fleeting honor of being governor of West Virginia for the space of three days, but he refused the oath and lost the position. His marriage took place in 1869, with Miss Julia E., daughter of John and Elizabeth Wilson, of Charleston. The result of this union was the birth of a son named Fred N. Mr. Carr is a member of the K. of P., a progressive citizen in every respect, and one of the best known public men in the state.

John Carver, president of the Carver Coal company, one of the most important concerns in the state, was born in England, Summersetshire being the place of his birth, and September 9, 1842, the date. Aaron Carver, his father, died in England. Ann Hartmags Carver, the mother, now resides at Plymouth, Penn., having reached her seventy-sixth year. She emigrated to this country with her children in 1864, and located at Plymouth. She is the mother of five sons and two daughters, of which Worthy is the oldest. He is mine boss for the Susquehannah Coal company, having held that position for eighteen years. Elie was drowned in the Susquehanna river six weeks after the arrival of the family in this country. John, Enoch and James are the sons now living. John was educated in his native land. Soon after

coming to the United States he began active life as an employe in a coal mine in Pennsylvania, and, in 1868, went to California, where he was engaged in business until 1870, when he returned to Pennsylvania, and September 19, of the same year, was married to Miss Margaret Jones, of Plymouth, the daughter of William W. and Jenette Jones. In July, 1877, Mr. Carver moved to Coal Valley, W. Va., and became the superintendent of the Kanawha Coal company. While living there his first wife died, leaving two daughters and one son to mourn her loss. William A., Lizzie L. and Maggie are the children. In October, 1877, Mr. Carver formed a partnership with his brothers James and Enoch, and Jacob Schappart, for the mining of coal, the concern being known as the Morris Creek Crescent Coal company. The following year he, in company with Enoch, purchased the remaining partner's interest, and the style of the firm name was changed to Carver Brothers. In 1877 they opened a mine in Plymouth, known as the Carver Coal company, with John as president, Enoch, secretary, and James, superintendent. The capacity of this mine is 8,000 bushels daily, of the finest grade of domestic lump coal, which is shipped to Chicago, where the company operate two large coal yards, with Enoch Carver as western agent. The general offices are at 225 Dearborn street, Chicago. Enoch married Miss Frances Clewell, of Plymouth, Penn., and they have two sons and two daughters, named: Winifred W., Retta, Ethel M. and Enoch. The Carver Coal company purchased the Faulkner mine July 1st, 1890, which is near the first mine they bought. It is their intention to connect the two by a tunnel, which will increase their capacity to 1,000 tons of coal a day. His first wife having died, in 1882 Mr. Carver married Miss Frances Evans, of Plymouth, Penn., by whom he has had two sons and one daughter, John W., George E. and Frances L. The family reside at Charleston, with the exception of one son, William, who has charge of one of the company's yards in Chicago. Mr. Carver is a member of the Masonic order, Coal Valley lodge. His wife is an earnest communicant of the Methodist Episcopal church. Mr. Carver cast his first presidential vote for U. S. Grant.

William R. Combs was born in Raleigh county, Va. (now West Virginia), January 12, 1849, his parents being John and Peninah (Beller) Combs. John was born in Carroll county, Va., December 19, 1815, and now resides in Pulaski county, Va. His wife was born in Virginia, about 1827, and died in 1882, in Pulaski county, Va. They were the parents of nine children, six of whom are still living. William is the sixth child. He was reared on his father's farm, and given a limited education. Since his eighteenth year, he has taken an active part in the affairs of life, first as a coal miner, and subsequently as a liquor dealer in

Malden. He was married in 1871, to Miss Eliza Watts, a daughter of Silas and Spicy Watts, of Kanawha county, originally, but now residing in Illinois. Mr. and Mrs. Combs have had nine children, six of them still surviving, namely: Geneva R., Katie Lee, Lavinia R., Willie, Anna, and John. For some time Mr. Combs was engaged as a teamster in the Union army, under Gen. Floyd. He is a member of the I. O. O. F., Malden lodge 77, and is now a trustee of the Malden schools. He takes an active interest in everything pertaining to public educational matters, and, indeed, in all things promising public benefit.

John T. Cotton, M. D., the oldest physician in Charleston, was born at Marietta, Ohio, August 4, 1819, son of John and Susan (Buckminster) Cotton. The father was the sixth lineal descendant of the Rev. John Cotton, the father of Boston, as he was called, who laid deep and strong the foundation upon which has been built the great and powerful commonweath of Massachusetts. John Cotton, Sr., was born in Plymouth, Mass., and in 1815, moved to Marietta, Ohio, where he practiced the medical profession. He served as a member of the state legislature and was associate judge of that county for many years. He was a graduate of Harvard college, and an educated, refined gentleman. He achieved much in politics, and was a leading member of the whig party for years, having been president of the central district committee. He was also a prominent Mason, and an elder and deacon in the Congregational church. In 1847, he passed to his reward, having lived a life of usefulness and honor. His wife was also a native of Massachusetts. She died in 1861. Josiah D., M. D., David B., M. D., and John T. Cotton, M. D., were the children born to this union. John T. was born in Marietta, and was the first student graduated from the Marietta college, of which his father was the founder. Having graduated in 1838, he read medicine with his father, and attended lectures at the Ohio medical college, first beginning the practice of his profession at Ravenswood, W. Va. In 1845, he removed to Charleston and formed a partnership with Dr. Spicer Patrick. Dr. Cotton has made a great success in his profession. During the late war he had charge of the Confederate hospital at Charleston. Sarah Ashton Fitzhugh became his wife in 1845. She was a daughter of Henry Fitzhugh, of Ravenswood, W. Va., and grandniece of Gen. Washington. She died in 1883, leaving the following children: John, Henrietta, wife of Hon. E. W. Wilson, Mrs. Nannie Woodman, and Mrs. Sally Donnely, all of Charleston.

The leading physician and surgeon of East Bank, W. Va., is is Dr. William R. Cummings, who was born and raised in Botetourt county, Va., December 20, 1850, being the date of his birth. His parents are William H. and Maria (Booze) Cummings, who are still residents of Botetourt county. William H. is the son of

Absalom, who was the son of Hugh. Absalom was a farmer of Irish parentage. He died in Allegheny county, Va., at the age of ninety-five years. He was born in Ireland, and came to America in 1790, when but six months old. His father was a prominent Irish agitator, and was compelled to leave his native land and seek a home in the land of free opinions. Maria (Booze) Cummings was also a native of Botetourt county, Va., and is still living. William R. Cummings, M. D., is the second of eleven children born to these parents. He received his literary education in the schools of his native county, and began reading medicine in 1871, under Dr. E. F. Snead, of Buchanan, Va. Subsequently he entered the medical college of Virginia, at Richmond, and was a student there during the years 1872–73. He was graduated from the College of Physicians and Surgeons, at Baltimore, Md., in 1882. Since 1875 Dr. Cummings has been engaged in practicing his profession, having continued his studies after having attained the required proficiency to receive a license. His professional career has been a source of great credit to him, and his name is high up among the physicians of the Kanawha valley. Since 1879 he has been a resident of East Bank, Kanawha county, W. Va. July 15, 1875, he was married to Esterline Hays. November 1, 1877, she passed away, leaving one son, Norman E. On the 6th of February, 1879, Dr. Cummings again married, his wife being the daughter of James Mitchell, of Virginia. Two children have been born of this second marriage, Urna Vippa and George Franklin. Dr. Cummings is a member of the I. O. O. F., Morning Star lodge, No. 63, of Coalburg, of the K. of P., Kanawha lodge, No. 16, of East Bank, and is also a member of the Fraternal Mystic Circle. He was at one time a justice of the peace of Big Sandy district. Both himself and wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal church, of which he is a steward.

William P. Curry, the efficient station agent and telegraph operator of the C. & O. R. R., at Brownsville, W. Va., is a native of that town, having been born there April 22, 1847. During his boyhood he was kept in the common schools of the village and remained with his parents until he had attained his majority. At the latter age he began life for himself by learning the carpenter's trade with his father. He was engaged in this occupation for six years, but at that time was obliged to abandon it on account of its proving detrimental to his health. Securing the position of station agent for the railroad, he soon acquired a sufficient knowledge of telegraphy and was given that work to do in connection with his other duties. From time to time he has been advanced until now he is the express agent, station agent and operator. Mr. Curry has held this position since August 9, 1873, and it is remarkable that he has not been absent from his post a

single day since that time. His marriage to Miss Mary J. Johnson was solemnized February 2, 1874. Mrs. Curry was born in Boston, Mass., but soon after was taken to North Carolina and thence to Virginia. James and Margaret (Donnelly) Johnson, her parents, were both natives of Ireland. The father was a railroad constructor and stone mason. Mr. and Mrs. Curry have had eight children, seven of them living: Edgar M., Blanche M. (deceased), William P., Mary J., James M., Julian I., Frank J. and Lillian. Mr. Curry is a member of the Methodist church, and is also a member of the Olive Branch lodge, No. 38, of the I. O. O. F., of which he is a trustee, and has also been a trustee of the school district for nine years.

George Davis is recognized as one of the leading merchants of Charleston, W. Va., being a wholesale and retail dealer in all sorts of house furnishing goods, and agent for the Hazard Powder company, also the Hercules Dynamite company. Mr. Davis is a native of Belmont county, Ohio, where his birth took place in the year 1848. His father was William Davis, a contractor by calling. He was a native of the north of Ireland, where also was born Martha Johnston, who afterward became his wife, and unto whom there were born seven children. The parents were of Scotch-Irish descent. They came to the United States about the year 1816, and settled in Belmont county, Ohio, where their children were reared and educated, and where the father died. The mother still survives him. Their son, George Davis, who is the immediate subject of this sketch, was reared and educated in his native county, where he gained a fair education in the public schools. He learned the trade of a machinist, and after reaching his majority came to Charleston, W. Va., in the fall of 1868. In that year Mr. Davis built the first foundry and machine shop ever erected in the place, the same being known as the Anchor Stove and Machine Works. This business he continued to operate until 1874, when he sold the establishment. In 1879, he entered into the business which is his present occupation. He has proved to be an enterprising business man since his arrival in Charleston, and his energy and good judgment have brought him success in all of his undertakings. He was one of the originators of the Citizens' National bank, at Charleston, of which he has continued to be a director. He was also one of the five originators of the Charleston Street railway, and has been very conspicuous in the construction and management of the same. In addition to his active business career, Mr. Davis has always found time for social enjoyment, and the improvement which comes from association with secret societies. Among other things, he has always taken a lively interest in Masonry, which venerable order he has held the offices of grand high priest of the grand chapter, and grand commander of the

grand commandery of the Knights Templars. He is also saint grand commander of the supreme council, A. & A. S. R., thirty-third degree for the United States of America, its territories and dependencies.

P. F. Duffy was born in Ireland, March 15, 1840, his parents being Michael and Margaret (Fee) Duffy. The father visited the United States at the age of eighteen, but returned to Ireland on account of the death of his father, where he married. In 1855 the family came to the United States, and settled in Nicholas county, W. Va., where the parents still live. Our subject was reared on a farm, receiving a good common school education in Ireland. At the breaking out of the civil war, he enlisted in the Thirty-sixth Virginia infantry of the Confederate army, in which he served until the close of the war. He was taken prisoner during the campaign in the valley, previous to which time, however, he had been promoted to the position of first lieutenant of his company. After the close of the war Mr. Duffy went into the mercantile business at Webster Court House, W. Va., which he continued for about fifteen years. In the fall of 1876, he was elected sheriff of Webster county, in which office he served for four years. In 1884 Mr. Duffy was elected auditor of state on the democratic ticket, which office he now fills. He has been a resident of Charleston since May, 1885. His marriage took place in 1870 to Margaret Duffy, a native of West Virginia, who died without children in 1877. In religion, Mr. Duffy is a Catholic, and both as a public official and private citizen, he enjoys a high standing and extensive popularity.

E. H. Easley, clerk in the office of state auditor, was born in Giles county, Va., July 26, 1840, son of John S. and Agnes C. (White) Easley, of Halifax county, Va. His father was a soldier in the war of 1812. He was a farmer by occupation and an upright, godly man. E. H. Easley was a resident of Giles county until his fifteenth year, at which time he moved to Fayette county. He was educated in the public schools at Allegheny college, having studied with the intention of taking up the profession of medicine, but was hindered in that by the breaking out of the war, at which time he enlisted in the Sixtieth Virginia infantry, Company C, Confederate army, being commissioned first lieutenant of his company. In the seven days' fight before Richmond he was wounded and confined to the hospital and again was wounded at the battle of Cloyd's Mountain. Having served during the entire war he returned to Fayette county, where he was engaged in farming for several years. He was elected clerk of the circuit court of the county, and filled that office for twelve years. In 1885 he moved to Charleston, and has since been a clerk in the auditor's office. He is a firm democrat. Mr. Easley is a prominent member of LaFayette lodge, A. F. &

A. M., of Fayette county, and of the K. of H., of Charleston. He is a stockholder and director in the Charleston Mutual Building and Loan association. In 1876 he espoused Miss Araminta Tyree, of Fayette county, by whom he had two children: Eloise Agnes and Shirley Hampton. He and wife are members of the Baptist church, of Charleston, of which he is clerk.

W. P. Ewing, M. D., was born in Rockbridge county, Va., December 3, 1821, the son of Rev. John D. Ewing, who was a native of Rockingham county. He was a Presbyterian clergyman. He married Miss Drusilla La Fayette Tate, of Augusta county, Va. The Rev. John Ewing passed to his reward January 11, 1877. His son, W. P. Ewing, was reared in Rockbridge county. His education was received at Washington college. During the war he served as a volunteer surgeon on the field and in the hospital. In 1871 he came to Charleston, where he has since enjoyed an extensive practice. For a time he was professor of chemistry and physiology, and surgeon of the Kanawha Military institute, with the title of major. He is a life member of the Jefferson College Alumni association, and at the present time is president of the State Board of Health. He was one of the prime movers in the organization of the Kanawha County Medical society, and has served as the president of that society. He is a member of the American Legion of Honor, is nominator and medical examiner for the Equitable Life Insurance company of New York, with the power to nominate all medical examiners in this portion of the state. Under President Cleveland Dr. Ewing was a pension examiner, and he has also been city physician of Charleston. His marriage to Miss Annie P. Sturges, of Danville, Va., but a native of Louisiana, was solemnized January 20, 1848. Three children are the result of this union: Henry P., of Arizona; Fannie L., wife of M. W. Scott, of Arizona, and Ella W., wife of J. W. Marshall, also of Arizona. Dr. and Mrs. Ewing are members of the First Presbyterian church of Charleston, of which he is an elder and trustee.

Charles P. Fisher was born at Mt. Sidney, Va., April 2, 1835, the son of William and Mary (Keiser) Fisher, who settled in Charleston in 1836, where the father engaged in the jewelry business for many years. He was one of the leading men of the city. Was a justice of the peace, and a prominent member of the whig party of the state. Charles P. Fisher was given a good education, after which he learned the jeweler's trade in his father's establishment. With the exception of four years during the war when he was in business at Gallipolis, Ohio, Mr. Fisher has since been in the jewelry trade at Charleston. He is a member of Kanawha lodge, No. 25, I. O. O. F., having joined that organization over thirty years ago. January 2, 1870, he took unto himself a wife in the person of Miss Martha J. Cason, of

Charleston, a native of Staunton, Va. Mr. and Mrs. Fisher have an adopted child, bearing the name of Charles H. Fisher. Mr. Fisher and family are members of the Methodist Episcopal church, south, of which he is a trustee.

Hon. John B. Floyd, one of the leading attorneys of Charleston, was born in Logan county, W. Va., November 13, 1855. His parents were George R. C. and Ellen (Meade) Floyd, natives of Virginia, and settlers of Logan county, where his father still resides. The father was appointed governor of Wisconsin before the war, and also served in the state legislature of West Virginia. John B. Floyd received his scholastic training in the public schools of Logan county, and for two years was a student in the college at Rock Hill, Md., after which he studied law at the university of Virginia, and was admitted to the bar in Logan county. He came to Charleston in 1885, and has since resided here. In 1880, he was elected to the state legislature from Logan county, and in the fall of 1882, was elected to the state senate, and served during the sessions of 1883 and 1885. For five years he has been chief clerk to the secretary of state. In the year 1882, he married Miss Clara Jamison, daughter of Henry M. Jamison, of Wheeling, by whom he has had three children: Rosa M., John Julian, and George Jamison. Mr. Floyd is a member of the Catholic church, and is a staunch democrat. Besides his other duties, Mr. Floyd is extensively interested in real estate in and around Charleston.

Peter Fontaine was born in Hanover county, Va., April 20, 1840. His father was James Fontaine, who was also born in Hanover county, Va., and a son of Col. William Fontaine, a Virginian by birth and of French Huguenot descent, and was a colonel in the American Revolutionary war. Our subject's mother was Juliett Morris, of Virginian birth, and a daughter of William Morris, a Virginian of English lineage. Our subject is one of ten children, eight sons and two daughters. The father was educated for the bar, but farming was his occupation. He lived and died in Hanover county, Va., and here the mother still lives. He was reared on the farm and educated in the Hanover academy, of his native county, and at the University of Virginia, where he completed a classical course, and graduated in 1859. He returned home, and on the breaking out of the civil war he enlisted as a private in the Virginia cavalry of the "Northern Virginia" Confederate army, and served through the entire war, being successively promoted lieutenant, captain and major. He was adjutant under Brig. Gen. William C. Wickham and Maj. Gen. Thomas L. Rosser. After the close of the war Mr. Fontaine returned to his native county and for a short time engaged in business, and thereafter until 1871 was engaged in teaching private schools in Virginia, in which capacity he came to Charles-

ton, W. Va., to take charge of the St. Johns school, for females. One year later he entered the Virginia university and completed a course in law, and in February, 1873, returned to Charleston and began the practice of law, which he has since continued. He was married in Charleston in 1879 to Mrs. L. A. Laidley, formerly L. A. Whitteker, daughter of Mr. Aaron Whitteker. She was born in Charleston, and by her first marriage became the mother of a son and daughter. By her marriage with Mr. Fontaine she has a son and daughter. Mr. Fontaine and family are, by preference, Episcopalians in church faith. Mr. Fontaine is a member of the college fraternity of the university, known by the Greek letters, Beta Theta Pi. He has been identified with educational affairs, being for several years one of the examiners for teachers for the city of Charleston. He is commissioner of the United States courts sitting at Charleston, and the circuit court of Kanawha county. Though quite a young and unassuming man Mr. Fontaine is a progressive citizen and universally respected.

Philip Frankenberger, a prominent merchant of Charleston, was born in Germany, October 20, 1843. Heyman and Regina (Freundlich) Frankenberger were his parents. After receiving a fair education in his native land, he sought a wider field for his operations, and emigrated to America in 1858. He first engaged in the clothing business at Pittsburg, and from there went to Columbia, Penn., and in 1861 came to Charleston and entered the employ of his brother as a clerk in his clothing establishment. In 1864 he embarked in business for himself, and in 1881 started a wholesale department, which was necessitated on account of the great increase of his business. He employs several traveling salesmen and operates the largest clothing house in the city. He is a stockholder in and treasurer of the Kanawha Electric Light company, also a stockholder and director of the Citizens Bank. He is a member of the Kanawha lodge, No. 20, A. F. & A. M., also of the K. of H., and of the Hebrew Educational society, and of the Charleston board of trade. In 1876 Mr. Frankenberger married Miss Jennie Moss, of Akron, Ohio, by whom he had four children: Herbert, Max, Hortense and Rena. Mr. Frankenberger is a faithful republican. During the war both he and his brother were held prisoners by the Confederate army on account of their Union sentiments, but they remained true to their belief. Mr. Frankenberger is also a large owner of real estate in Charleston and is identified with many enterprises in and near the city.

Moses Frankenburger, president of the Citizens bank of Charleston, was born in Bavaria, Germany, December 18, 1835, his parents being Heyman and Regina (Freundlich) Frankenberger. He was reared in Germany and educated in the private

schools. When seventeen years of age he came to the United States, and first engaged as clerk in the clothing business at Elmira, New York, where he remained three years, after which he went to Dubuque, Iowa, where he was engaged in the same business. Subsequently he was sent to Pittsburgh, Penn., by the firm in charge of a store there. After three years he removed to Charleston, 1860 having been the date of his removal, and established a general mercantile business which he afterward merged into the clothing business. In 1873 he retired from active life, but after six years again embarked in mercantile pursuits. In 1885, his health again compelled him to retire. In 1889, Mr. Frankenberger became one of the principal stockholders, and helped to organize the Citizens bank, and has since been its president. He is a member of Kanawha lodge, No. 20, F. & A. M., and Royal Arch, Tyrean chapter, No. 13, of Charleston. His political faith is strongly republican, and he has served as a member of the city council for several terms. His marriage to Miss Fannie Ellinger, daughter of Samuel Ellinger, of Louisville, Ky., was solemnized in 1873, and has resulted in the birth of six children, as follows: Amelia, Rika, Samuel, Hugo, Leo and Bertram. Both himself and family are members of the Hebrew Educational society.

Hon. Joseph L. Fry, the present mayor of Charleston, first saw the light in Charleston, October 7, 1851. His parents were James H. and Jane A. (Donnally) Fry. His education was received in the public schools of his native city, and at the Charleston Institute, after which he took up the study of the law, but never completed the course. He early became active in politics, and his services were soon acknowledged by the democratic party, which elected him in 1875 to the office of city recorder, and for three successive terms he was kept in that office. In 1882 he established a book and stationery business which he has since conducted. In 1887 he was elected mayor of Charleston and again was honored by an election in 1889. From 1881 to 1883 he was city assessor. Mr. Fry is a member of the Kanawha lodge, No. 20, A. F. & A. M., and also of Keuka lodge, No. 26, K. of P. He married, in 1878, Miss Eliza J., daughter of Rev. James M. Follansbee, of the Methodist Episcopal church, south. Five children have been born into this happy home: Frank, Lee, Joseph L., Jr., Cleveland S. and Willdarrah. James H. Fry, his father, was a native of Virginia, and was one of the early salt manufacturers of the Kanawha valley. He was a member of the Virginia state senate for several terms, and was sheriff of Kanawha county for about thirty years. He died in 1864. His wife, who still survives him, was a daughter of Col. Andrew Donnally, after whom the first steamboat on the Kanawha river was named. She resides in Charleston, and is a devoted mem-

ber of the First Presbyterian church. Two of their sons, James H. and Andrew P., were soldiers in the Confederate army.

Patrick Frye, superintendent of the Morris Coal mine, was born in Kanawha county, Va. (now West Virginia), in 1850. His parents were Isaac and Sarah (Douglas) Frye, natives of Canada and Maryland, respectively. The father was a coal miner and was engaged in this occupation the greater part of his life. He died March 20, 1884, and his wife, February 16, 1886. Patrick was one of five children. He was reared and educated in his native town, and since reaching a suitable age to work has been employed in and around coal mines. He took charge of the Morris mine January 1, 1886. His long training and eminent adaptability for the work have combined to make him one of the best qualified mine superintendents in the Kanawha valley. He is an industrious and efficient man, and his effective services are properly valued by the owners of the immense property which is intrusted to his care and keeping. Mr. Frye took unto himself a wife in 1874, in the person of Miss Olive E. Smith, the ceremony having been solemnized on the 6th of May of the latter year. Mrs. Frye was born in Monroe county, W. Va. Seven children have been born in this happy home, namely: Melissa, Patrick H., James L., Olive, John W., and two others, now deceased. Mr. Frye cast his first presidential vote for Hancock, and since that time has been a firm adherent of the party to which that man belonged.

F. L. Garrison, one of the best known coal men in the Kanawha valley, and the general manager of the Stevens coal mine, and also superintendent of the Kanawha railroad, is a native of Pennsylvania. Mr. Garrison has been in charge of the mine since it was first opened, in 1885, and a great part of the credit for its successful operation is due him. This mine has a daily output of 350 tons of coal, and employs on an average, about ninety men. The railroad has recently been extended nine and one-half miles, to the new mines, "Acme," and Keystone, of the Stevens Coal company. Acme mine was put in operation December 8th, 1890, with a capacity of 250 tons per day, and Keystone mine will begin operation on January 5th, 1891, with a capacity of 100 tons per day. Mr. Garrison has won the respect and esteem of all with whom he comes in contact, by his efficiency in management and by his gentlemanly and courteous bearing.

C. C. Gebhart was born in Charleston September 11th, 1848, son of Charles and Margaret (Bender) Gebhart, who were among the early pioneers of Charleston. Mr. C. C. Gebhart attended the public schools of his native city in his boyhood, and at an early age entered his father's store, where he obtained a

thorough business training. In 1870, he established a general mercantile business. In 1883, he became one of the principal stockholders in the Standard Barrel company, and soon afterward purchased the entire stock, and has since conducted this enterprise under the name of the Gebhart Barrel factory. This factory makes both salt and flour barrels. Mr. Gebhart is a member of the Mystic Circle, and is a faithful democrat. In 1872, he married Miss Mary E. Hager, of Charleston, by whom he has had seven children: Mabel, Charles, Maud, Mary, Agnes, Eva, Margaret and Rosa. Both himself and wife are communicants of the first Presbyterian church of Charleston.

John H. Goshorn was born in Ohio, August 1, 1813, son of George Goshorn, a Pennsylvanian, of Dutch lineage, and Jane (Farrier) Goshorn, who was also a Pennsylvanian. George and Jane Goshorn had the following children: John J., William F., Jacob, David, Alden and Mary Jane. The parents first came to Ohio and then to West Virginia, settling at Charleston in 1822, where the father died in 1845 and the mother in 1878. For a number of years George Goshorn was in a hotel and ferry business at Charleston, being among the first to follow that pursuit. John H., the subject of this sketch, was only nine years old when his parents came to Charleston, which place has been his home throughout a long and active career in mercantile business. He first began in 1839, forming a partnership with his brother, William F., which continued until the recent death of the last mentioned, since which time the business has been conducted by our subject, his son George A., and his two nephews, William F. and H. D. Goshorn. In 1855, Mr. Goshorn was united in wedlock with Miss Betty A. Cowey, a native of England, who came to the United States with her parents when a child. The union of our subject and wife resulted in the birth of the following named children: Mattie C., George A. and Maggie P. The mother, who was for many years was a faithful and helpful companion of her husband, departed this life in 1887. Mr. Goshorn's tastes have never led him into politics, his time and energy being devoted to his business. As a citizen, he stands among the foremost in the public respect, and as a business man he ranks A1. He is practical and progressive in his methods, and during a long career has achieved decided success. His maxims have been, industry, integrity and frugality, by the practice of which virtues, he has succeeded in establishing himself on a solid basis in all that goes to make life desirable.

Hon. J. W. Goshorn, clerk of the county court of Kanawha county, was born in the city of Charleston, W. Va., October 26, 1852, the son of David and Sallie L. (McConihay) Goshorn, both natives of Charleston and of Scotch-Irish descent. For a number of years, Mr. Goshorn, Sr., conducted the Goshorn House, at

that time the only hotel at Charleston, abandoning which he engaged in the mercantile business. When J. W. Goshorn, the subject of this sketch had attained his eighteenth year, his father was removed by death from a community that loved and respected him. Being the oldest son, the caring for the family devolved upon him, and pluckily setting aside his studies, he threw himself in the breach, taking upon himself cares and responsibilities that many older men would have shrunk from. As bookkeeper and clerk for the "Active," a steamboat plying between Charleston and Cannelton, Mr. Goshorn for a number of years gave the utmost satisfaction to his employers and became one of the most popular of river men. For about eighteen months he operated a supply store on the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad, again returning to steamboating. Ever of sanguine nature, outspoken in his convictions, and a student of government, in 1876, Mr. Goshorn became first prominently identified in the politics of his country, making a particularly hard fight for the greenback nominee for the presidency. His cool, self-possessed methods, excellent judgment of human nature and straightforward manner of dealing with men and matters, despite a naturally retiring disposition, pressed him forward in the councils of the reform party, until in 1888, he was unanimously decided upon for chairman of the National Union Labor Executive committee. In 1884 he was elected to the county clerkship of Kanawha county, besides having been one of the most valued members of Charleston's city council for the past six years. When the floods of 1884 devastated the river valleys, Mr. Goshorn was first in the field organizing relief committees, contributing liberally from his personal purse, and in three hours after the adjournment of the citizens' relief committee at Charleston. Mr. Goshorn had on its way down the river the first boat-load of provisions for this purpose that reached the sufferers. On September 1st, 1886, Mr. Goshorn was united in marriage to Miss Bella D. Oxley, of Canada, daughter of Henry Oxley, M. D., an eminent surgeon of England, and granddaughter of Harry Oxley, one of the most influential directors of the great Midland railroad. The fruits of this happy union are two children, Oxley and Esba. Mr. Goshorn is a member of the first Presbyterian church Charleston, while his wife is a communicant of the Episcopal church. Mr. Goshorn is a prominent secret society man, being a member in high standing of Kanawha lodge, No. 25, I. O. O. F., Eureka lodge, No. 26, K. of P., as well as of the K. of H., N. U. and the Mystic Circle. Thoroughly acquainted with the politics of the country, in 1890, Mr. Goshorn determined to resign his position as chairman of the National Union Labor Executive committee and to no farther be identified in the third party movement. His reasons for so doing are best expressed by the following

which appeared in the *American Non-Conformist*, of Kansas, the official organ of the labor movement, in its edition of March 6th, 1890: "The labor and reform movement experienced what is considered by all prominent reformers, an irreparable loss, by the resignation of Hon. J. W. Goshorn, of West Virginia, as chairman of the Union Labor National Executive committee. The resignation occasioned much comment in reform circles, until the premises upon which Mr. Goshorn bases his action were learned. Mr. Goshorn has by no means lost enthusiasm in the cause, nor is his resignation based upon any selfish motives. As a man of vast experience in political matters, he has carefully examined the political and social status of the country, and has come to the conclusion that the conditions are such in the South that the maintenance of a third party in that section can only be fraught continuously with the dangers the true reformer seeks to obviate. He regards the centralization tactics now being pursued by the administration to be but the inception of a system of boodleized elections and negro supremacy in the south. * * * His policy in this connection, and it must be conceded logical, is to crush the scheme in its incipiency, and then by campaigns of education have the people realize the many improvements that can be ingrafted into the social and political systems of the country. * * *" In 1890, he was overwhelmingly made the nominee of the democratic party of Kanawha county for county clerk. The county at the time of his nomination was deemed hoplessly republican, the republican majorities of the election preceding reaching 1,500. But once in the race, Mr. Goshorn developed all his power of organizing and combining this with his personal popularity, elected his ticket, being re-elected by a majority of 502 to the office he has so well and capably filled.

W. F. Goshorn needs no introduction to the people of the Great Kanawha valley, as he was one of the best known citizens in this section. He was was born at Wheeling, W. Va., September 5, 1815, and died at Charleston, May 26, 1882. His father was George Goshorn, a well known man in the pioneer days. In 1847 the subject of this sketch married Eliza Daggett, and the union was productive of the following named children: Ellen B., wife of Dr. Lawrence Carr; William F., who married Effie Ward; Belle F., wife of W. A. MacCorkle; Henry D., who married Ettie Minsker; Addie J., wife of J. W. Kennedy, and Edward H. The father was an energetic and very successful business man. He entered mercantile pursuits in Charleston, as far back as 1839, in partnership with his brother, J. H. Goshorn, which firm continued until the death of Mr. Goshorn. The business of this old firm still continues in the building occupied since 1855, now being conducted by the surviving partner, his son George A., and W. F. and H. D. Goshorn, who are sons of Mr. Goshorn.

Throughout a long and active business career, William F. Goshorn maintained a character for the strictest probity. He was appointed by Gov. Jacobs, member of the Kanawha board, which had charge of the improvement and navigation of the Great Kanawha river. He was again appointed to the same position by Govs. Matthews and Jackson, and he served in all nine years, during nearly all of which time he was president of the board. During his administration, vast improvement was made in the navigation of the river. Mr. Goshorn was a prominent member of the democratic party, having served as member of the state executive committee, and at various times being a member of the local executive committee. He took great interest in all public enterprises and improvements, having an undisputed right to the title of progressive citizen. He was a model in every respect and enjoyed very general esteem. By his death the city where he spent the whole of his business life lost a valuable man, one who was recognized as faithful in all the relations of life.

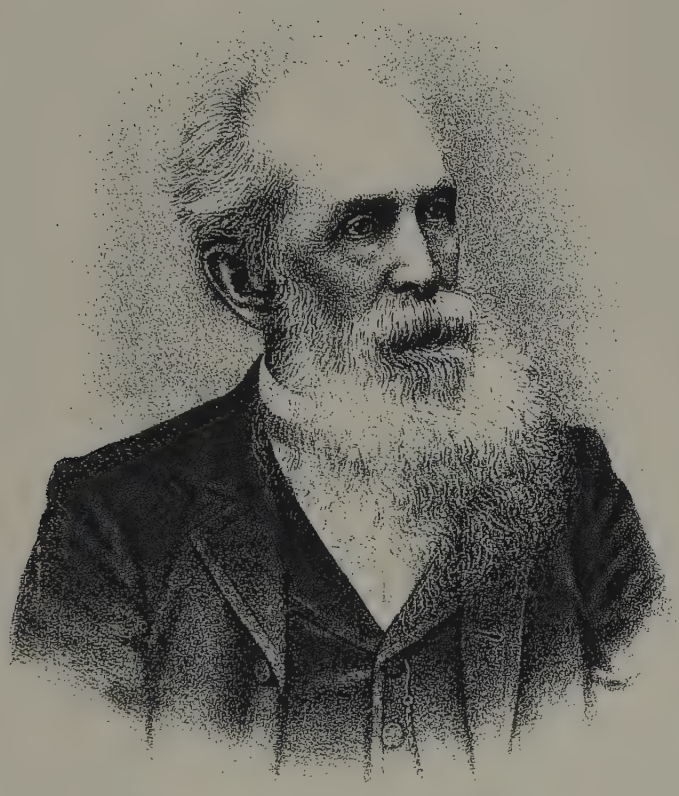
George Goshorn, father of J. H. Goshorn, was born in Pennsylvania, February 29, 1790. He moved to Belmont county, Ohio, from there to Wheeling, W. Va., and thence to Charleston, in May, 1822. His occupation was that of hotel keeping, but he also ran the lower, or Goshorn ferry, dying in Charleston, June 24, 1845. June 21, 1812, he married Jane Farrier, who died in Charleston, in August 22, 1879, in her eighty-fourth year. They had seven children as follows: John H., William F., Jacob, G. A., David, Mary Jane, George and Leonard, the latter dying quite young. John H. Goshorn was born in Belmont county, Ohio, August 21, 1813, and married Betty A. Cowey, August 30, 1855. She was born in the county of Durham, England. January 27, 1830, she came to this country with her parents and settled in Kanawha valley. She died in Charleston, August 8, 1887. They had three children, Mattie C., wife of A. P. Rand; George A., who married Miss Allie Cracraft, and Maggie P., wife of R. H. Shearer. J. H. Goshorn had a common school education and commenced business in Charleston in 1839, with his brother, William. F., under the firm name of J. H. & W. F. Goshorn, occupying the building on the river bank opposite the court house. In 1844, they opened a dry-goods store in an upper room of the building, now occupied by J. H. & W. F. Goshorn & Co. J. H. managed the grocery and hardware store at the old stand, and William F. managed the dry-goods business. In 1855 they moved their grocery and hardware business from the old stand into the lower room of the building they occupied for dry-goods and continued both branches of business under the firm name of W. F. & J. H. Goshorn until 1875-76 when they sold out their dry-goods and opened a wholesale and retail hardware business, occupying the whole building. They continued until the

death of William F., which occurred in May, 1882, after a successful business career of forty-three years together. He then organized the present firm of J. H. & W. F. Goshorn & Co., taking into partnership his two nephews, William F. and H. D. and his son George A. Mr. Goshorn, as a citizen, stands among the foremost in the public respect, and as a business man ranks A1. He is practical and progressive in his methods, and during a long career, has achieved decided success. His maxims have been industry, integrity and frugality, by the practice of which virtues he has succeeded in establishing himself an enviable name for integrity and honor and he now stands as one of the oldest and best citizens of Kanawha.

Samuel S. Green was born in Culpeper county, Va., December 7, 1841, the son of Daniel S. Green, a surgeon in the United States and Confederate States navies, and Virginia (Slaughter) Green. Mr. Green was reared in Culpeper county, and received his schooling in the academic schools of that county, and at the University of Virginia. He left the latter institution in April, 1861, and joined the Second Company Richmond Howitzers, at Yorktown, Va., in June following. In January, 1863, he was transferred to the Morris artillery, as first gun sergeant, and served in that capacity with the Second Corps Army of northern Virginia, under Gen.'s Jackson, Ewing and Early until the close of the war, participating in the battles of Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Cedar Creek, Petersburg and others. After the war he returned to his native county and engaged in farming for six years. He then resumed the study of law, and was admitted to the bar in Charleston, W. Va. He came to Charleston in 1873, and formed a partnership with James M. Payne. He was at one time the nominee of the democratic party for judge of the circuit court, but was defeated, owing to the party having been in the minority. He is a stockholder in, and attorney, for the Mutual Building and Loan association, of Charleston. In 1878 Mr. Green married Miss Julia Goodwin, of Charleston. His father Daniel S. Green, was born in Culpeper county, as was also his grandfather, John W. The great-great-grandfather, Col. John Green, of Revolutionary fame, was a native of Culpeper. Their ancestor came from England and was one of the early settlers of Culpeper county. John W. Green was a soldier in the war of 1812, and for many years was a judge of the court of appeals of Virginia. Daniel S. Green, who was, as has already been mentioned, a surgeon in the United States navy, was stationed off the coast of Mexico during the war with that country. He was fleet surgeon of Commodore Perry's expedition to Japan, and was surgeon on the United States Niagara, when, with the British steamer, the Agamemnon, the first Atlantic submarine cable was laid. He died in Lynchburg,

Va., in 1864. Capt. Phillip Slaughter, of Revolutionary note, was an uncle of Daniel's wife. Her father, Samuel Slaughter, was a farmer of Culpeper county.

Dr. John P. Hale.—A busy and useful life unfolds as the historian sets forth the career of the worthy gentleman whose name introduces this sketch. His paternal ancestors were English; they settled "at an early day" on the Lower James river in Virginia. Later the branch of the family from which Dr. Hale descended, located in Franklin county, one of the Piedmont counties of the state. His maternal ancestors, the Ingles and the Draper families, were Scotch-Irish. In 1748 they founded at Draper's Meadows, now in Montgomery county, Va., the first white settlement west of the Alleghenies in America. Dr. Hale's grandfather and grandmother, William Ingles and Mary Draper, were, in 1750, the first white couple ever wedded west of the Alleghenies in America. Afterward they located on New river, a few miles above, and established the first ferry crossing, ever since and still known as "Ingles' Ferry." Here five generations of the family lie buried and some of their descendants still own and occupy the original site. Here, on the 1st of May, 1824, was born the gentleman whose life constitutes the subject of this sketch. In early boyhood young Hale attended local schools in Wythe, Pulaski, Montgomery, Roanoke, Botetourt and Rockbridge counties, Va. In 1840 he came to Kanawha valley, and during 1841 and 1842 attended Mercer academy, then under the presidency of the late Rev. Dr. Stewart Robinson. In 1843 he commenced the study of medicine under the late Dr. Spicer Patrick. Upon graduating in 1845, at the medical department of the university of Pennsylvania, in Philadelphia, Dr. Hale formed a co-partnership with his late preceptor, Dr. Patrick. For a time they practiced together, but in 1847 Dr. Hale gave up the practice and engaged in the more congenial pursuit of salt making at Black Hawk, near Charleston. In 1850 he purchased the White Hawk salt property, a short distance above. In 1860 he purchased the Snow Hill salt property adjoining, and later the McMullen property, also adjoining. These three were united as one property, called Snow Hill, and it was for a long time the largest producing salt property in America, making 300 barrels or 1,500 bushels per day. Later, in connection with Messrs. H. C. Dickinson, W. A. Quarrier and J. E. Thayer, he purchased the Donnally, the Noyes and the Venable properties on the south side of the river, consolidating them into one property, which was long known as the "Splint Coal Property." Of this company Dr. Hale was the largest stockholder, the president and general manager. On this property there were at that time two active salt furnaces. The product of these, added to that of Snow Hill, aggregated about 600 barrels or 3,000 bushels of salt per day.



Yours truly
J. P. Hale

When the salt interest and manufacture in the Kanawha valley collapsed, Dr. Hale had long been both the largest individual salt manufacturer and the longest continuous manufacturer in America — nearly forty years. During that time he introduced several valuable improvements in the details of salt manufacture. Within sight of where he made salt so long, his great-grandmother, Mrs. Mary Ingles, while a prisoner among the Indians in 1755, helped to boil salt water and make the first salt ever made by whites west of the Alleghenies. During her captivity, she was the first white person ever in the Kanawha valley, and the first white woman ever in what are now the states of Ohio, Indiana and Kentucky. In 1851 Dr. Hale visited the first World's Fair in London, and while abroad traveled in England, Scotland, Wales, France, Italy, Switzerland, Germany, Belgium and Holland. In 1856 he was stockholder, president and general manager of Ruffner, Hale & Co., a large salt firm that bought up and marketed all the salt made in western Virginia and Ohio. In 1863 and after, he was president, general manager and stockholder of the Kanawha Salt company, organized and operated for the same purposes. About this time he helped to establish the first telegraph line to Charleston, long before they had railroad connections; it was a private enterprise. In 1857–58 Dr. Hale was a member of a house of salt dealers and general commission merchants in Cincinnati, under the name and style of Taylor & Hale. In 1858 he organized a company to manufacture cannel coal oil in the Kanawha valley and in Ohio. Coal lands were acquired in both states, and extensive works erected at Newark, Ohio, to manufacture oil, and a contract was made to furnish the city with gas, but the discovery of oil in wells brought all these plans to grief. In 1869 Dr. Hale introduced the first brick machinery into the valley, probably the first in the state. In 1870 he laid in Capital street, Charleston, at his own expense, the first brick street pavement ever laid in America. Now there are hundreds of miles of brick street roadway all over the country, and brick is probably destined to become the standard paving material of the future. In 1863 Dr. Hale was one of half a dozen gentlemen who organized the "Bank of the West" in Charleston, long the leading bank in that part of the state. In 1870 he helped to organize the Gas company of Charleston, built the works and was the first president as well as largest stockholder. In 1863 and the following years he was president and largest stockholder in a steam packet line running between Charleston and Cincinnati. In 1864 he built at Buffalo, N. Y., and introduced the first steam packet boat in the Upper Kanawha river above Charleston, called "Here's Your Mule." About 1868 he built in New York and brought out the first steam yacht ever in the Kanawha river, called "The Pet," she was a

screw propellor and very fast. In 1878 he constructed at Charleston, the steamers "Wild Goose" and "Lame Duck," to run in the trade of the Upper Kanawha, one from Charleston to Cannelton, and the other from Charleston to Browstown. The "Wild Goose" used the first Ward boiler ever built. In 1870 Dr. Hale built the first steam ferry boat, and started the first steam ferry at Charleston, and owned all the ferries in the city. In 1871–72 Dr. Hale was mayor of Charleston, during which time many important improvements were made. In 1871 to 1872 he built the first theatre in Charleston, with capacity for seating 800 people. It was a wooden structure, afterward burned. About the same time he established the first public steam laundry in the city, subsequently destroyed by fire. He was the first to introduce the public delivery of ice in the city. Was president and part owner of the company that started the first daily paper in Charleston about 1871, and about the same time was president of the first board of trade organized here. About 1884–85 was president and largest stockholder of the American Brick Pavement company, afterward changed to Hale pavement company, owners of the patent of the Charleston Brick pavement. In 1872, in connection with Mr. R. W. Morgan, introduced the first barrel making machinery in the valley, with a capacity for manufacturing 1,000 barrels per day. In 1871 he was one of the commissioners appointed by the governors of the states bordering on the Ohio river and tributaries to endeavor to secure the improvement of the navigation of these rivers by the general government or otherwise. The improvement of the Kanawha and other West Virginia rivers, as well as of other western streams, since then and still under construction by the government, it is believed, resulted from the efforts and labors of this commission. Before the war Dr. Hale was one of the directors of the board of the "James River and Kanawha Co.," who were then improving the Kanawha river by a system of sluices and wing dams. After the war was one of the directors on a Kanawha board organized by West Virginia to succeed the old James river and Kanawha board, and carry forward the same work. In 1861 he organized and commanded an artillery company called Hale's battery, for southern service; but, from a misunderstanding with the commanding officer some months later, resigned. Volunteered and acted for a time as assistant surgeon during the battles around Richmond. At the request of the Confederate cabinet made a trip throughout the southern states to examine and report on the safest and most practical places at which to manufacture a supply of salt for the Confederate states. In 1871, in order to aid in securing the location of the capitol of the state at Charleston, Dr. Hale built a temporary state house at a cost of about $75,000, advancing most of the means to pay for the

same. In 1871–72, with the same view of influencing the capitol location, he erected, at his own cost, the then finest hotel in the state, called the "Hale House," which was afterward burned. The building of this hotel, the state house, the gas works, the steam ferry and some other improvements, made at the time while the question was about on a balance, had much to do in determining, probably decided, the location of the capitol at Charleston. In 1872, in connection with the late John C. Ruby, Dr. Hale started in Charleston, a large wholesale grocery, the first in the valley. In 1874–75 Dr. Hale spent nearly a year abroad, chiefly in London, but traveled through England, Scotland, Wales and Ireland. In 1875, after some years of decline in the prices of salt in which he was so largely interested, aided by the panic of 1873, and the general depression in business and decline of value of property which followed, there came a crisis in Dr. Hale's business affairs. He failed and went into bankruptcy. From having been quite prosperous, engaged in a number and variety of enterprises, employing in the aggregate from 300 to 400 men, he was left by this reverse of fortune financially stranded, without business and without means. In an effort to recover or build up again, he leased from his assignees his late furnace, Snow Hill, and purchased a salt property called the "Big Bend Furnace," near Pomeroy, Ohio; but the fates were against him and both enterprises failed. For many years Dr. Hale was largely engaged in steamboating, and owned a number of steamboats and barges. By an unprecedented rise in the river with accompanying ice gorges in the winter of 1879–80, he had four steamboats and ten salt and coal barges crushed, wrecked, sunk and practically lost within about fifteen minutes. In 1876 he was one of the state commissioners to the centennial at Philadelphia, where West Virginia made a very creditable exhibit and success. About 1881–82–83, in connection with Mr. H. S. Hallwood, he organized the Peabody Coal company, and started coal works some eighteen miles above Charleston; then organized the Kanawha Barge Yard company, and erected a saw-mill and barge plant at the mouth of Coal river. Soon after organized the "Peerless Coal Co.," and opened mines below Field's creek. But from lack of means to operate them, and other unfavorable conditions, these enterprises all ended in failure and collapse. While "nothing succeeds like success," "misfortunes never come singly," but mutually act and re-act as reciprocal cause and effect. Dr. Hale has been a prolific as well as interesting contributor to the newspapers and magazines. About 1883 he published a pamphlet on the unwritten life of Daniel Boone, giving his early history before he went to Kentucky, and particulars of his life after leaving that state, about eleven years of which he spent in the Kanawha valley, and about which his bi-

ographers knew nothing. In 1886 he published a volume of historical sketches from the earliest settlements west of the Alleghenies down to date, called "Trans-Allegheny Pioneers." He was one of the vice presidents of the West Virginia Immigration society organized at Wheeling in 1887. Was also a member of the Charleston Industrial Development association, and prepared some articles on the resources of the state which were published and largely circulated. In 1888, May 1, he prepared an historical address for the Charleston centennial celebration. In December of the same year, on invitation of the managers of the Cincinnati Centennial and Inter-state Exposition, he delivered an historical address in Music Hall, Cincinnati. In January, 1890, he helped to organize the West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian society, and was elected its president, and was unanimously re-elected in January, 1891. In 1890–91, Dr. Hale prepared for this volume, "History of the Kanawha Valley," a paper on the pre-historic occupation of this valley, treating of the mounds and mound builders; also a paper on the origin, development and decline of salt making, long such an important industry in the valley; also a paper on the navigation of the great Kanawha river, and its improvement by the state and general governments, and a general history of the valley including the settlement of Charleston and its subsequent growth. In politics Dr. Hale is a conservative democrat. In religion he is a free thinker, accepting whatever seems to him good and wise, but discarding what his judgment cannot accept, and holding in abeyance for farther light what he cannot understand. He is not a member of any church, and has never belonged to any of the secret societies. He is temperate in all things. Dr. Hale has never married, and is at present nearly sixty-seven years of age. At the conclusion of some notes, furnished for the information of the biographical writer, Dr. Hale indulges in the following melancholy observations which are not without a vein of pathos: "Such is a brief outline of my descent and very unimportant and uninteresting career, now nearing its close. No one can so thoroughly realize its mistakes, imperfections and shortcomings as myself. The rose-colored hopes of my youth were doomed to disappointment; the loftier and nobler objects and aims of my early manhood were unattained, and the cherished aspirations and ambitions of my maturer life were unrealized; but regrets are unavailing now. 'There's a divinity that shapes our ends,' and I was one of that 'innumerable throng' cast to play the humble, uneventful and commonplace rolls in life, and my record is made. My neighbors and the public who have known me will pass upon its merits and demerits and make up their verdict as to what manner of man I have been." We think that the doctor's neighbors and the public generally will be in-

clined to disagree with his disparaging estimate of his life's work. Readers of the foregoing outline will generally agree that the doctor's life has not only been busy but useful, and marked by enterprise and a commendable desire for the general progress and welfare of his community. None of the children of men live to realize in full the roseate hopes that are emblazoned on the horizon of their youthful visions. To do one's best is all that can be asked of any of us, and it may be safely affirmed that when compared with the mass of mankind, the lifework of Dr. Hale will rise far above the average.

H. L. Hamilton was born in Fluvanna county, Va., May 27, 1846. His parents, A. M. and Mary V. (Lewis) Hamilton were both natives of Virginia. The father was born in Cumberland county in 1822, and the mother about 1826. They came to Kanawha county in 1869, where the father afterward became prominent. He was the sheriff of Goochland county for several years. Both himself and wife are now spending the last years of their lives in peace and comfort in Kanawha county. H. L. Hamilton was one of eleven children. His education was received in Goochland county, Va., and also at the business college in Poughkeepsie, N. Y., where he was graduated. He came to Kanawha county in 1869, with his parents, and when about twenty-one years of of age, began the active affairs of life as a deputy sheriff under his father's administration, serving in that capacity for several years. Since 1882, he has been in the employ of the Cannelton Coal company, having first been made the manager of their store, and subsequently promoted to the position of book-keeper. In 1862, he enlisted in the Confederate army, and for one year, served with the corps of topographical engineers, after which he joined the Fourth Virginia cavalry and served with them until he was wounded at the battle of Five Forks, in March, 1865. He participated in the battles of Shenandoah valley, and was with the army about Richmond and Petersburg. After remaining in the Richmond hospital for about two months, he returned home. In 1874, he married Miss Mattie A. Harris, a native of Hancock county, Va. Their children are: R. L., M. V., M. H. and T. A. Under State Superintendent of Schools, Pendleton, Mr. Hamilton was clerk, and for one term, served as clerk of the state legislature, and was also a clerk in the auditor's and treasurer's office. Mrs. Hamilton is an earnest member of the Baptist church.

Charles W. Henley first saw the light in Kanawha county, in 1833. William Henley, the father of Charles, was an expert miller, and was considered the best in the state, being sent for far and near to repair mills. He was born in Nelson county, Va., and his wife, Catherine Davis Henley, in Amherst, Va. They removed from Botetourt county, Va., in 1831, to Kanawha

county. William was born February 27, 1795, and died in Lincoln county, W. Va., April 20, 1880. He was the son of Thomas Henley, of English descent, and a native of Virginia. He was the son of William Henley, and William the son of Edward, who emigrated to this country about 1760, and landed at Jamestown Colony, Va. Catherine Davis Henley died in 1858. Charles is the seventh of ten children. He has always resided in Kanawha county, where he has been engaged in the railroad contracting business since 1853. He has held several contracts on the C. & O. R. R., besides vaious other roads. He was married to Miss Josephine E. Henson in 1875. Mrs. Henley was born in Putnam county, W. Va., the daughter of J. C. Henson. Mr. and Mrs. Henley have been blessed by the advent of four children in their home, named as follows: Fannie K., Charles Romeo (deceased), Flossa May and Clara A. Soon after his marriage he purchased a farm in the vicinity of St. Albans and for ten years continued to live there. Since 1888 the family have resided in St. Albans. Mr. Henley is a member of the Washington lodge, No. 58, having been made a Mason at Fincastle, Botetourt county, Va., and is also a Royal Arch Mason. In 1861 he enlisted in Company G, Fifty-seventh Virginia regiment, but was subsequently taken sick and obliged to withdraw. He was then sent to Botetourt county to erect three iron furnaces and manufacture iron for the Confederate army. Mr. and Mrs. Henley are Baptists.

One of the leading physicians of Charleston, is Robert S. Henry, M. D. Dr. Henry was born in Harford county, Md., in 1852, his parents being Robert and Susan (Waltham) Henry. The father was a native of Ireland, and his mother of Maryland. Robert Henry, Sr., was a graduate from Trinity college, Dublin, and also of Edinburgh college. He died in 1879, aged sixty-three years. He was a staunch democrat, and for many years, held the offices of superintendent of education, and examiner and treasurer of schools for Harford county, Md. His wife still survives him, and resides at Baltimore. Robert S. is their only child living. He was brought up in Harford county, and was graduated in the classical course from St. John's college, at Annapolis, Md., and also from the Maryland agricultural college. He graduated from the latter institution at the head of his class, in 1873. He first engaged in teaching at Boonesboro, Md., later becoming principal of schools in Hagerstown, Washington county, Md. While in the latter place he studied medicine. When the question of establishing a county college was being agitated in that county, Dr. Henry was chosen as the one best fitted to organize the institution. He accomplished it and was the first president of the college. In 1883, he graduated in medicine at the university of Maryland, and for a short time was assistant at

the college. He removed to Charlestown in 1883, and has since built up an extensive practice, having made a specialty of diseases of the eye, ear and throat Dr. Henry is chief surgeon of the K. & M. railroad, and is also surgeon and medical expert for the C. & O. railroad. He is a member of the State Medical society, of West Virginia, is president of the Medical and Surgical society of Kanawha valley, and was a delegate to the ninth national medical congress in 1889. In 1876 he married Angie Crampton, by whom he has had two children: Nina and Cora. Dr. Henry is a democrat.

C. D. Hereford, the prominent general merchant of St. Albans, was born in Putnam county, W. Va., November 14, 1846, his parents being Dr. Sydenham and Lovinia S. (Flowerrew) Hereford, both natives of Virginia. They removed to what is now West Virginia, in 1834, and both died in Putnam county, the mother January 13, 1863, and the father December 21, 1884. He was among the early physicians of the state, at the time of his death being seventy-two years old. These parents reared three sons and one daughter, who still survive them, viz.: Thomas P., a physician of Missouri; A. E., wife of J. H. McConnihay; Henry C., and the subject of this sketch. The latter was educated in Putnam county. In 1864 he commenced mercantile business at Point Pleasant. In 1869, he went to Lexington, Mo., and there engaged in the mercantile business. In 1872 he took up his residence at St. Albans, where he embarked in the general mercantile trade, and now has a well stocked store and a very large custom. With the exception of six months, Mr. Hereford has been in business for the past twenty-six years. His industry and enterprise, coupled with a very decided ability for business have served to make him a substantial, prosperous business man. On the 17th of August, 1875, Miss Anna May Roth, daughter of the Rev. E. Roth, a Baptist clergyman of Corder, Mo., became his wife, and has borne him four children: Henry Kendall, Will Delafield, Cassius D. and Walter Donaldson. Henry K. and Cassius D. are dead. Mr. Hereford is a member of the Washington lodge, No. 58, of the Masonic order, and of Royal Arch No. 13, at Charleston, commandry, No. 4, of Charleston, and of the Shrine, at Wheeling. Both himself and wife are communicants of the Baptist church. He has been a councilman of St. Albans for several years, and is a loyal democrat.

W. D. Isaac, general manager of the Kanawha Brick Company, was born in England, March 7th, 1848, son of Reece and Catherine (Davis) Isaac. Until twenty-one years of age he remained in his native land, having meanwhile received a good common school education, and also having learned the stonecutter's trade. In 1869 he came to America, and first found employment on the construction of the C. & O. R. R., after which

he came to Charleston and engaged in contracting. He contracted to build the basement of the custom house at Charleston. In 1882 he engaged in the manufacture of brick, and soon after formed a co-partnership with William Gillehan, under the firm name of Gillehan & Isaac. In 1888 the Kanawha Brick company was organized, and Mr. Isaac became one of the principal stockholders. This concern is equipped with the newest and best machinery for the manufacture of brick, and at present are turning out the highest grade of pressed brick. Mr. Isaac was a government inspector of masonry during the construction of the lock No 4. He is a member of Kanawha lodge, F. & A. M., and has served on the city council. He is a staunch republican, and takes an active interest in every movement promising the public welfare. July 6th, 1874, he was united in marriage to Miss Mary Ann Lewis, a native of Ohio, by whom he has had five children: Jennie, George, Annie, Arthur and Lewis. Mrs. Isaac is a member of the Kanawha Presbyterian church.

Gustave Jelenko, junior member of the firm of Jelenko Brothers, wholesale dry goods merchants, was born in Pressburg, Hungary, January 18, 1845. After receiving a good schooling in his native land, he learned the trade of making silk ribbon at Vienna, working at that trade for about five years. In 1864 he came to America and first found employment in a dry goods store at Cincinnati, where he remained six months. In December, 1864, he removed to Buffalo, Putnam county, and with his brother, purchased an interest in a business there. This house has since gone under the firm name of Jelenko Brothers. In 1872 they established a branch house at Charleston, and three years later moved their entire business to that city. In November, 1873, they added the jobbing business to their retail department, and continued up to 1880, since which time they have been doing a large jobbing business, having been the first exclusive jobbers in the city. This house has large and increasing trade throughout West Virginia, Ohio and Kentucky. Mr. Jelenko is a member of the K. of H., also of the Hebrew society, Keshar Shel Basel, and of the Hebrew Educational society. In 1875 he married Miss Nannie Loeb, daughter of Jonas Loeb, and they are the parents of nine children: Carl, Solomon, Julius, Adela, Jesse, Jeanette, Florence, Lillie and Birdie. Jacob Jelenko, senior member of this firm, was born in Pressburg, Hungary, May 18, 1840, son of Solomon and Teresa (Rausnits) Jelenko. At the age of nineteen he engaged in the mercantile business with his father at Pressburg and Vienna for some years. In 1863 he came to the United States and first located at Johnstown, Penn., where he was a clerk in a general store. From there he went to Cincinnati, where he rose from clerk to buyer. In 1864 he removed to Buffalo, W. Va., and established a general business with a

Mr. Stern. Mr. Jelenko is a member of the K. of H., of the Keshar Shel Basel, the I. O. B. B., and of the Hebrew Educational society, of which he is president. In 1870 he married Sophia Loeb, by whom he has had one child: Melanie.

Okey Johnson was born at Long Reach, Tyler county, Va., March 24, 1834, his parents being William and Elizabeth Johnson. The maiden name of the mother was Elizabeth Dye. The father was born in Hampshire county, Va., in 1789. The mother's parents were reared in Fauquier county, Va., and removed to Monroe county, Ohio, where the mother was born in 1807. Both died at Long Reach, W. Va., the mother in October, 1869, and the father in March, 1871. The father was by occupation a farmer and had been high sheriff of Tyler county, under the old statute of Virginia that gave the shrievalty to the oldest justice of the peace. The father came to Tyler county from Hampshire county, in 1813, where he lived ever after and died there. He was twice married, and came to Tyler with his young wife, who was Elizabeth Taylor, to whom there were born six sons and one daughter. The first wife died in 1828 and he married the second in 1831, to whom there was born seven sons and one daughter. The daughter of the first wife married Friend Cochran, a prosperous farmer in Pleasants county. The daughter of the second wife married J. W. Carter, D. D., now pastor of the First Baptist church of Raleigh, N. C. The subject of this sketch was reared on a farm until twenty years old. He went to high school in Marietta, Ohio, in 1854, and graduated from said school in June, 1856. The same year he entered Harvard law school, whence he graduated with the degree of LL. B., in 1858. In 1874 Marietta college conferred on him the honorary degree of A. M. After he had graduated in law, in 1858, he raised two crops of potatoes on his father's farm, and with the potatoes and apples from his father's farm, made two successful trading trips to Memphis and New Orleans. He first commenced practice in Tyler county and ran for prosecuting attorney in 1860, but was defeated. In 1861, the year of the commencement of the civil war, he stayed at home. In May, 1862, he commenced the practice of law in Parkersburg, W. Va., and pursued the same, together with politics, until 1876, when he was, by the democratic state convention, nominated as a candidate for judge of the supreme court of appeals. Prior to that, in 1870, he was elected to the state senate, and, in 1871, was elected a member of the constitutional convention which met in Charleston in January, 1872. Mr. Johnson was very active in the convention and on the stump to secure the ratification of the constitution which he had helped to frame. He was elected judge of the supreme court in 1876, by a majority of 17,000, and served his full term of twelve years on that bench. He was president of the court for seven and one half years. On

the 1st of January, 1889, he retired from the bench, and has been actively engaged in the practice of law at Charleston ever since. He was married in 1863 to Sarah Elizabeth Jackson, the widow of B. W. Jackson, who was a brother of Gen. W. L. Jackson, of the Confederate army, known as "Mudwall Jackson," and daughter of the Hon. J. M. Stephenson, of Parkersburg. They have five children, one son and four daughters, three of whom are grown. During his judicial life he lived at Parkersburg, except from March, 1879, to March, 1883, when he lived in Wheeling, where his business mostly called him. He removed to Charleston in November, 1888, and that is now his permanent home. He is a Baptist and has been for forty-two years. His wife and children are Episcopalians. He is a member of the West Virginia Bar association. He was not in the civil war; he was a Union man, but would not engage in a fratricidal strife. His brother, D. D. Johnson, was colonel of the Fourteenth West Virginia infantry.

J. W. Kennedy, attorney at law, was born in Augusta county, Va., April 21, 1854. His parents were Isaac and Virginia A. (Bartley) Kennedy, natives of Augusta and Louisa counties, respectively, and now residents of Augusta county. Our subject was educated at Washington and Lee university, from which he was graduated in 1880, after which he came directly to Charleston, where he was admitted to the bar, and has since been engaged in practicing his profession, having met with flattering results. He is a strong democrat. In the year 1882 he was united in marriage to Miss Addie I. Goshorn, daughter of William F. Goshorn, of Charleston. Six children have been born to this happy and accomplished home, named as follows: Eliza Virginia, Walker MacCorkle, Helen Daggat, Gertrude, William and Belle F., the two latter having died in infancy. Mr. and Mrs. Kennedy are communicants of the First Presbyterian church, of Charleston.

William N. Klase, M. D., one of the prominent physicians and surgeons of Kanawha county, W. Va., was born in Pennsylvania, in 1857, his parents being Francis and Rebecca (Schaeffer) Klase, Pennsylvanians by birth. These died, the father, October 12, 1887, the mother, June 26, 1887. Dr. Klase was reared in Pennsylvania, receiving his education in the common and high schools of Northumberland county. Having chosen the medical profession as his life work, he, in 1880, began studying under Dr. Reynolds, of Reynoldsville, Penn., and in 1885 entered the Jefferson medical college, at Philadelphia, where he remained one year, after which he became a student in the Medical college of Virginia, at Richmond, and was graduated therefrom in 1889. Immediately after graduation he began practicing at Coal Valley, W. Va., but removed to Cannelton in

October, 1889. Miss Fannie Allen, of Charleston, W. Va., became his wife, September 26, 1888, but only lived for three weeks after her marriage. Dr. Klase is a member of the Masonic fraternity, and of the Lutheran church.

Alex. T. Laidley was born in Morgantown, W. Va., with a twin sister (who died in infancy), April 14, 1807. His father, James G. Laidley, was the eldest of eight children of Thomas Laidley, born in Philadelphia about 1780, and in 1806 he married Harriet B. Quarrier, a daughter of Alex. Quarrier, born in Richmond, Va., June 3, 1787. Thomas Laidley emigrated from Scotland to America, arriving at New York city in 1774. The name in Scotland was originally Laidlaw, but was corrupted to Laidley, and to this day there are Laidleys in Scotland, in and about Edinburgh and Glasgow, descendants of the old families of Laidlaws. Thomas Laidley resided in Philadelphia after the close of the Revolutionary war, and was induced by Albert Gallatin to take a partnership with him in the sale of merchandise on the Monongahela river, and about the year 1789 moved his family to Morgantown. He represented Monongahela county in the Virginia legislature in 1797–8, and again in 1800–1, and espoused the cause of the Federalists in those exciting times. He was a member of the legislature at the time of the passage of the celebrated resolutions of 1798, taking ground in opposition to their adoption. James G. Laidley was educated for the bar in Virginia under Chancellor Wythe. Upon being admitted to the bar he located in Parkersburg, about 1802. He held many offices connected with the courts of that (Wood) county, which county he represented in the legislature for two consecutive years. When war was declared against Great Britain in June of 1812, he raised a volunteer company of riflemen, entered the army, and served in the northwest under Generals Leftwich and Harrison. He was brevetted to the rank of major for distinguished services on the battlefield. He died at Parkersburg, W. Va., September 5, 1821. At the age of thirteen, Alexander went to Cabell county to reside with his uncle, John Laidley, and entered the clerk's office under John Samuels, the clerk of the Cabell county courts, from the formation of the county in 1813–14, till his death, about the year 1859. He resided in Cabell county till June, 1824, when he came to Charleston and went into the clerk's office under another uncle, A. W. Quarrier. He remained in the clerk's office about six years, discharging his duties efficiently and well. In 1830 he kept store for Summers & Whitteker, in Malden, occupying a similar position in the dry goods and grocery store of Cox & Turner. In October of the same year he removed to Wheeling, and afterward did business for Knox & McKee, commission merchants, till February, 1832, when a vacancy occurring in the office of deputy clerk of the circuit court

of Ohio county, he engaged with Mr. Chapline, the clerk, as his deputy, and also in the same capacity under the clerk of the county court. Mr. Chapline's term of office expired in May of 1838, and Mr. Laidley was appointed by Judge Fry to the responsible position of clerk of the court, which office he held for two terms of seven years each. The constitution of the state, of 1850–51, providing for an election of clerks by the popular vote, Mr. Laidley became a candidate for the office which he had filled so long, and was defeated at the election in 1852 by a democratic candidate. In 1854 he removed to Kanawha county where he has since resided. In this county he held the office of master commissioner in chancery up to the beginning of the war, under appointment of Judges Summers and McComas. Major Laidley enjoyed, while in Wheeling, the reputation of being one of the very best clerks in the Old Dominion. In 1872 he applied to the judges of the court of appeals, who were elected under the new constitution of West Virginia, for the position of clerk of that court. Notwithstanding his most excellent qualifications for the position, he was not a man of party service, and the judges saw fit to give the position to one who had done the most for party—a gentleman, however, of character and ability. Major Laidley has been twice married. By his first marriage in September, 1835, to Miss Blaine, a cousin of Hon. James G. Blaine, he had one child, Capt. R. Q. Laidley, who died in Charleston, in February, 1873, from disease contracted during the civil war while serving in defense of state rights. By his second marriage he had no children. His education was somewhat limited, he never having attended school since he was twelve years of age; still he acquired a pretty thorough knowledge of the English language by application in county and circuit court clerks' offices. His special fort was in an office of the kind, where he usually excelled. Major Laidley is now beyond four score years and is still surprisingly active and vigorous for a man of his years, and only in the recent year he wrote and published a most excellent work, entitled: "Geneological Table and History of the Quarrier Family in America." Since early life the major has been a member of the Masonic fraternity. He is a Knight Templar Mason, and is a most excellent citizen.

J. J. Laidley was born in Charleston November 15, 1851, his parents being James M. and Mary (Beauhring) Laidley. He was reared in Charleston, and received his scholastic training in the public schools of that city. In 1872, he embarked in the grocery business, in which he continued for two years, at which time he became captain of the steamboat Winona, plying between Charleston and Coal Valley, he being one of the owners of the boat. In 1885, he was elected city assessor, and has since filled that office with much satisfaction to all concerned. Three

years after his election to this office, Mr. Laidley again engaged in the grocey trade, at that time establishing the business which he now operates. The concern is known as the Charleston Market House, and is situated at 225 and 265 Kanawha street. On the 14th of November, 1878, Miss Josie Wilson, daughter of John Wilson, became his wife, and has borne him three children: Florence N., Lillian Q., and Virginia B. The family are valued members of the first Presbyterian church of Charleston. Mr. Laidley has long been an active and useful member of the democratic party. He is held in high esteem in both the business and social circles of the city.

Richard H. Lee, M. D., of St. Albans, W. Va., was born in Tennessee, August 31, 1826, the son of Stephen and Mary (McIntosh) Lee. The father was also a native of Tennessee. He removed to Illinois when his son was about two years old, and there was engaged in his profession of teaching. When Richard was four years old his mother died. Shortly after his mother's demise the boy was bound out to a man in Illinois, with whom he remained until the breaking out of the Mexican war. He served in that war for one year in Company K, Second Indiana regiment, and was twice wounded at the battle of Buena Vista, for which he now receives a pension from the government of eight dollars per month. He began practicing medicine at Gallipolis, Ohio, in 1853, and remained there for seven years, at the expiration of which time he came to the Kanawha valley and raised Company A, Eighth West Virginia infantry for the Union army. This company was afterward made the Seventh West Virginia cavalry. Having served all through the war with faithfulness and devotion to the cause of his country, Dr. Lee located at Wheeling, W. Va., and remained there until 1866. In the latter year he came to St. Albans, and has since remained here. May 10, 1849, he espoused Miss Mary A. B. Jenkins, daughter of Thomas Jenkins, a native of Virginia. Dr. Lee has been practicing his profession with marked success for forty years, and is now the oldest physician in St. Albans. He is a member of the Washington lodge, No. 58, of the Masonic order, and is also a member of the G. A. R., John H. Oley post, No. 90. The gentleman for whom the post is named was colonel in the regiment to which Mr. Lee belonged. He has held the office of justice of the peace for sixteen years, and for twenty-two years has been on the school board, of which he is now president. He is a staunch republican, and voted for Gen. Scott the first time he cast a ballot. Mr. Lee is a communicant of the Methodist Episcopal church.

Charles C. Lewis, one of the prominent merchants and large land owners of Charleston, first saw the light in Kanawha county, Va., April 15, 1839, his parents being John D. and Ann

(Dickinson) Lewis. His father was born in Bath county, Va., in 1800, and moved to Mason county, Va., when an infant. His home for the greater portion of his life, was about five miles above Charleston, on the Kanawha river near the mouth of Campbell's creek, where he afterward owned large tracts of coal and salt land. He was one of the early salt manufacturers of the valley. He died in 1882. Charles C. Lewis received a good education in the private schools of Charleston and at Mercer academy. After spending three years as a clerk with his grandfather, Col. William Dickinson, he became interested with his father in the salt business, and remained with him from 1861 until 1869, at which time he retired from the salt industry and engaged in farming for two years. In 1871 he was made president of the Kanawha Valley Bank, and for fifteen years filled that position most acceptably. In the year 1883 he, with P. H. Noyes, organized the wholesale grocery house of P. H. Noyes & Co., the largest wholesale grocery house in the valley, although retaining a half interest now takes no active part in the concern. He is administrator of the large estate left by his father, the care and duties of which, with that of his own and widowed sister, Mrs. H. C. Dickinson, take his whole time and attention. For a number of years he has been receiver of the Kanawha circuit court, and city treasurer, having been elected and several times re-elected to the latter position. In 1864 Mr. Lewis took unto himself a wife, in the person of Miss Elizabeth Wilson, daughter of Nathaniel V. Wilson. Six children have been born to them: Charles C., Jr., John D., Virginia, Josephine, Ann and Goodrich, the latter died in childhood. Both himself and family are members of the First Presyterian church of Charleston, of which he is an elder.

James J. Lovell, a prominent coal operator of Charleston, was born in Mason City, Mason county, W. Va., July 21, 1854. His father was R. C. M. Lovell, who was born in Charleston. He married Miss Mary Patrick, daughter of Dr. John Patrick. Joseph Lovell, his father, came to Charleston in 1830, from Virginia. He was a lawyer, and ranked among the leading men in his profession in the state. He died in Charleston at the age of forty six years. R. C. M. Lovell was early engaged in the manufacture of salt in the Kanawha valley, and did an extensive business. He served as mayor of Charleston for some time. In 1854 he removed to Mason county, and was the founder of Mason City, and one of the pioneer coal operators of that section. He shipped the first boat load of coal to New Orleans from that district, and himself and partner shipped the first boat load of coal to Cincinnati. He now resides at Covington, Ky., where he located in 1862. At that time he purchased a line of steamers, consisting of seven boats, which plied between Cincinnati and Memphis.

These boats carried government supplies during the late war. Subsequently selling the line he embarked in the steamboat building business at Cincinnati, and continued therein until 1870, at which time he organized the Southern Ohio Coal Co., with mines at Mineral City, and is its president and general manager. In 1871 he took charge of the Raymond City mines, and operated them for about one year, at the expiration of which time he went to Campbell's Creek and opened the mines now in operation by his company. In 1883 he retired from active business. Both he and his wife are members of the Episcopal church. Their family consists of three children: Mrs. Ella Crosbey, James J. and Joseph B. James J. lived at Mason City until 1862. He was educated in his native county, and at Covington and Cincinnati, having taken a course in mining engineering. In 1873 he came to Charleston, and two years later became connected with the Pioneer Coal Co., of which he is general manager and principal stockholder. This company is one of the largest on the river. They are now operating their fourth mine. Mr. Lovell is a member of Salina lodge, No. 27, F. & A. M., and is an ardent democrat. In 1888 he was nominated for sheriff of Kanawha county. In 1877 he married Miss Elizabeth Clarkson, daughter of J. D. W. Clarkson, of Charleston, by whom he has had four children: Alfred S., Mary, Elizabeth and James J., Jr. He and wife are members of the Episcopal church, of Charleston, and are highly respected and esteemed by a large circle of friends and acquaintances.

Dominick Layden, one of the most enterprising and successful merchants of Kanawha county, is an Irishman by birth, having first seen the light of day in Ireland, August 12, 1844, the son of Dominick and Bridget Layden, both of whom lived and died in their native land. John Layden, the grandfather of our subject, was a soldier in the French army, his father was Francis Layden, a Spaniard, who was the son of Luke. The maternal grandfather was Daniel Hagerty, who was the son of Charles Hagerty. To Dominick and Bridget Layden nine sons and four daughters were born. Two sons and two daughters now reside in Kanawha county. The principal of this biographical mention landed in New York, April 13, 1863, and remained there until July, 1865. In the latter year he came to Charleston, W. Va., and lived there two years, after which he removed to Brownstown, W. Va., and has since been engaged in the general merchandise and liquor business there. In 1873, he took Miss Mary Higgins to wife. Mrs. Layden was born in Albemarle county, Va., May 5, 1852. The children that have been born to this happy union are: Michael, Ellen, Mary A., James, Bridget, Rose, John T., Maggie and Katie. In addition to his prosperous mercantile career, Mr. Layden has for some time operated a very

superior farm of some ninety-six acres, in the vicinity of Brownstown, which is under the highest cultivation. The family are communicants of the Catholic church. Mr. Layden is one of the most public spirited men in the county, and is ever ready to do all in his power to advance any movement promising the public benefit.

William A. MacCorkle, of Charleston, was born in Rockbridge county, Va., his parents being William and Mary (Morrison) MacCorkle. The family is an old established and well-known one of the valley of Virginia. The Rockbridge branch of the family, from which Mr. MacCorkle directly descends, was among the first and largest land owners of that section where it has existed for over a century and a half. The family descends from the ancient clan of MacTorquill, of Loch Awe, which from the time of King Kenneth, held by grant the lands of the Scottish locality above mentioned. "The name which in some places of the Highlands is still called MacTorquill, is perhaps one of the most ancient in the country of Argyle," says Anderson in his "Scottish Nation." In childhood, Mr. MacCorkle went west with his parents, living in Missouri until 1872, when the family returned to Virginia. In 1879 he was graduated from the Washington and Lee university with the degree of bachelor of law. When called to the bar, Mr. MacCorkle located in Charleston, where he has since continued in active practice of his profession. From 1883 to 1888 he held the position of city solicitor. At present he is vice president of the Citizens' National bank, and a member of Gov. Fleming's staff, with the rank of colonel. He has been active in the development of the state, having been president of the Charleston Industrial association, and temporary president of the Wheeling Industrial convention. He is interested in a number of industrial enterprises in Virginia and West Virginia. In 1884 he was united in marriage with Belle, the second daughter of the late William F. Goshorn, Esq.

Hon. Henry Clay McWhorter, attorney-at-law, was born in Marion county, Ohio, February 20, 1836, his parents being Fields and Margaret M. (Kester) McWhorter, both natives of Harrison county, Va. The father was one of the pioneer physicians of Marion county, Ohio. He served in the Federal army as a member of a Missouri regiment. His son, Walter F. McWhorter, was a sergeant in Company B, Ninth Virginia infantry, Union army, and was killed in 1864 at the battle of Cloyd Mountain. The subject of this sketch moved with his parents to Harrison county, Va., from their home in Ohio when but six years of age. He was educated in private schools and at the institute at Ravenswood, Jackson county, Va. In 1861 he enlisted in the Union army in Company B, Ninth Virginia regiment. In September of the same year he was commissioned lieutenant of the

company, and in March of the following year received the commission of captain of Company G, same regiment, and served in that capacity until 1863, when he was forced to resign from active duty on account of serious wounds, but remained in the provost marshal's office until the close of the war. Previous to his enlistment in the army he had taken up the study of law, and on his discharge after the war he resumed his studies and was admitted to the bar at Charleston in 1865, and has since had a large and lucrative practice. He is a member of Blundon post, No. 73, G. A. R., and also a member of Kanawha lodge, No. 20, A. F. & A. M.; Tyrean Royal Arch Chapter, No. 13; Kanawha commandery, K. T., No. 4, and a member of the K. of H., being a past grand dictator for West Virginia. Mr. McWhorter is the president of the Kanawha Publishing company, and is more or less interested in many different enterprises. Although no politician he is a staunch republican, and has not been without political preferment. He represented his county in the state legislature in the sessions of 1865-6-7 and 1868, as a member of the house of delegates, having been chairman of the Judiciary committee in 1866 and speaker of the house in 1868, and he was also a member of the sessions of 1885 and 1887. During the years of 1869 and 1870 he was prosecuting attorney of Kanawha county, and was commissioner of the United States district court for many years. In the year 1888 he was a candidate on the state ticket for the supreme bench, and was only defeated by a few hundred votes. He has served as president of the board of education of the city of Charleston for a number of years, and has been a city councilman and also a city solicitor. Mr. McWhorter has been married three times, his first wife having been Miss Mary Hardman, who died April 22, 1878. Three children survive her, Mrs. Maggie L. Flagg, Minnie Steele and Romeo C. The second wife was Mrs. Eliza F. McWhorter, who died September 1, 1881. On the 8th of January, 1885, he was united in marriage to his present wife, who was Miss Lucy M. Clark. Mr. and Mrs. McWhorter are influential members of the State Street Methodist Episcopal church, of which he is recording steward and treasurer; he was also a delegate to the general conference of 1880, which was held at Cincinnati, Ohio, and was reserve delegate to the general conference of 1888, which met at New York. He is also a director in the West Virginia Conference seminary at Buckhannon, W. Va.

O. H. Michaelson is the son of Charles J. and Catherine (Abbe) Michaelson, and was born in Hamburg, Germany, September 28, 1846. His father was born December 11, 1815, his parents being Henry C. and Catherine (Vantuhn) Peterson Michaelson. Charles J. Michaelson was reared in Hamburg, and given a thorough German education, besides learning the Eng-

lish language. In early life he worked in a saw and lumbering mill and factory, learning, among other things, the manufacture of gutta percha and rubber goods. While thus engaged, he gained an experience which led to an important turn in his career. His employers in Germany had begun the vulcanizing of rubber goods, and in their interests he came to America in 1850, locating in New York, later in Boston, where he was engaged for his employers under Goodyear's patent for hardening rubber. Subsequently Mr. Michaelson invented a valuable improvement in the same line, and but for the dishonesty of his employer's clerk, who came to America, stole the patent and sold it to the German firm, Mr. Michaelson would certainly have made a fortune out of his invention. He was married in Hamburg, to Catherine Abbe, and they had a family of the following mentioned children: Charles, Otto H., Adelia, and Amanda (born in Germany), and William, Henry and Jennie, born in the United States. When Mr. Michaelson came to the United States in 1850, he brought his family with him, and continued to work for his Hamburg employers for some time. Afterward he removed with his family to West Virginia, locating in Parkersburg, where he lived until 1870, and then went to Charleston, where he has since remained. Otto H., the subject of this sketch, resided with his parents until 1861, when he learned the watchmaker's trade, which he followed in connection with repairing musical instruments for a number of years. In 1862, he enlisted in Company B, Fourteenth West Virginia regiment, United States army and served until the close of the war, taking part in the many battles fought by the armies of Gens. Crook and Sheridan. After his discharge, in 1865, he engaged in the mercantile business at Parkersburg. In 1868, he went to Middleport, Ohio, where for a while he conducted the jewelry business, and repairing of musical instruments. In 1870, he came to Charleston, where he pursued the same line of business. In 1886, he organized the Kanawha Electric Light company, of which he is the present manager. Afterward he organized the Charleston Gas and Electric Light company, which absorbed the first mentioned company. His marriage took place in 1868, at Parkersburg, where he wedded Miss Mary E. Parrish. She is a daughter of John J. Parrish, who was born in Lynchburg, Va., March 12, 1820; and who, at Charleston, was united in marriage with Miss Martha E. Miller, born at Malden, Kanawha county, February 21, 1830. Martha E. is the daughter of Philip Miller, an early settler of Kanawha county, at Malden. He was born in Rockbridge county, Va., in 1795, and after serving in the war of 1812, came to Kanawha county, and was united in marriage with Elizabeth Finch, born in Fluvanna county, Va., within the year 1795, dying at Parkersburg, W. Va., 1879. Philip Miller was the

progenitor of the following children: Evaline, Catherine, Lizzie, Martha E., Lucy, Henry, George and Calvin. He was a merchant tailor, and lived at Malden for many years, removing to Louisville, Ky., in later days, thence to New Albany, Ind., where he died in 1874. John J. Parrish was a steamboatman, and followed this vocation for many years, boating upon the Ohio. In 1877, his steamer, J. N. Camden, blew up, and he was seriously injured, which led to his insanity, and at last his death. He was universally respected, and soon after his marriage removed to Parkersburg, W. Va., where he reared his family, which consisted of the following named: Mary E., Emma J., Mattie V., Nannie and John J., of which but three now survive. Mary E., now our subject's wife, like her maternal grandparents, is an ardent member of the Methodist Episcopal church, and takes an active part in all charitable enterprises, being at present one of the directors of the home for the destitute women and children at Charleston. Their children are: John, Belle and Nelson. Fraternally, Mr. Michaelson is a Knight Templar, member of the K. of P., I. O. O. F. and the G. A. R. He is an excellent and enterprising citizen.

Arnold Midelburg was born in Austria on November 1st, 1840, son of Carl and Carolina (Berger) Midelburg, who came to America in 1866. He was educated in his native land, and there learned the weaver's trade, and worked at that occupation before coming to this country. October 31st, 1866, he came to the United States, and for eighteen months, was employed in Connecticut, after which he removed to Cleveland, Ohio, and there engaged in the mercantile business as a clerk, later, becoming a traveling salesman for a dry goods house of that city. In 1870, he established a mercantile business at Brownstown, W. Va., and in 1871, moved to Boyer Ferry, Fayette county, known now as Sewell Depot, W. Va., where he erected the first cabin and the first store, which he still conducts. He also has a large saw-mill business there, and has constructed many tram roads and built many of the buildings of the town. He owns several thousand acres of land in Fayette county, which is underlaid with coal and fire clay, also three store houses and one residence. For the past two years he has resided in Charleston. He is an active member of the republican party. In 1874, Mr. Midelburg married Miss Bertha Schoal, a native of Germany. They are the parents of three children: Sadie, Ferdinand and Charles. The family are members of the Hebrew Educational society, of Charleston and he is a member of the Germania society.

D. D. Miller, M. D., of St. Albans, Kanawha county, W. Va., practicing physician and surgeon, was born April 5th, 1855, at the mouth of Thirteen Mile creek, Mason county, the son of

William J. Miller, formerly of Goochland county, Va., and Ruth A. Miller, *nee* Rice, of Mason county. Colonel Miller, the father of the subject of this short sketch, was one of the most influential citizens of the Old Dominion, while the Rice's, his maternal side, were of the most prominent and respected of their section. In 1859 Colonel Miller came to Kanawha county, locating at St. Albans, where the family has since resided. For twelve successive years was Colonel Miller elected mayor of St. Albans, and in all public-spirited and progressive movements his name and influence were ever foremost. When about seventeen years of age, with a liberal education, gained at the public schools, Baptist college of St. Albans, and Marshall college, of Huntington, W. Va., the subject of this sketch first took up the study of medicine, with Dr. J. C. Sale as preceptor. So assiduously did he devote himself to the study of his chosen profession and such marked progress did he make, that before he had attended any school of medicine his opinion was eagerly sought by regular practitioners and frequently did he find himself in full control of cases that were despaired of by those old in the profession. In 1882 he became enrolled at the Louisville Medical college, graduating with high honors, leading his class, February 27th, 1888. Declining many flattering offers from different sections of West Virginia and adjoining states, Dr. Miller located at St. Albans, the home of his family, building up a most lucrative and successful practice. As a neighbor and citizen none are held in higher esteem than Dr. Miller. Generous to a fault, his services and advice are never fruitlessly sought by the deserving poor. Frequently has he been urged by his friends to accept political honors, but in every instance have these overtures met with firm declination, his life being entirely bound up in the noble profession of his choice. For a number of years Dr. Miller has been a member of St. Mark's Episcopal church, also one of the foremost of the Masonic fraternity of his city, he now filling the office of steward of Washington lodge, No. 58, A. F. & A. M. Dr. Miller is also city physician, having been elected last April, 1890. It is such public-spirited, learned and popular men as Dr. Miller that are bringing the mountain state of West Virginia from comparative insignificance rapidly to the foremost rank of stateship. It is men of his stamp and calibre that lead in all movements of good for people and his country.

James K. Mohler, of the firm of the Mohler Lumber Co., of Lock Seven, Kanawha county, W. Va., is a native of Augusta county, Va., having first seen the light there in 1855. His parents are D. F. and Elizabeth (Sillings) Mohler, and they still reside in Augusta county. James passed the early part of his life in his native town, and was married there in 1879 to Miss Stambach. Their children are: Emma F., Lena B., Esile G.

and Charmie E. Mr. Mohler is a Mason, being a member of Smith lodge, No. 46, of Worthington. In 1889 he came to Lock Seven and has since resided here. He learned the lumber business with his father, who operated a large lumber business for many years. The present firm composed of D. F. Mohler, and his two sons, William E. and James, first began operations in this region in February, 1889. Their plant has a capacity of 35,000 feet of lumber a day. Most of their product is hardwood lumber, and finely finished timber. Their principal markets are Buffalo and New York, N. Y. The concern employs about forty-five men, and is one of the most successful lumber companies in the state.

John Morgan was born in Chester county, Penn., May 25, 1828, his parents being Eli and Sarah (McCall) Morgan. The father was born in 1801, and lived to the age of eighty-three years. John Morgan was reared in Chester county, where he received a public school education, after which he served an apprenticeship to the cabinet-maker's trade. From 1849 to 1868, he was engaged in business for himself in Center county, Penn., and while living there, in 1851, was married to Miss Charlotte Brisbin (a sister of Gen. James S. Brisbin). In 1862 Mr. Morgan enlisted in the Federal army and served as second lieutenant of Company C, One Hundred and Thirty-sixth Pennsylvania volunteer infantry, for nine months, after which he was made lieutenant colonel in the recruiting service of the state, in which capacity he served for several months. In 1868 he removed to Virginia and engaged in farming and contracting, and in 1872 moved to Charleston, W. Va., where he has since been engaged in contracting and building. In February, 1890, Mr. Morgan established the planing-mill business, which he has since operated so successfully. Mr. Morgan is a member of the National Union, of Charleston, being a charter member of the same. The republican party of the state has no truer constituent than he. Seven children have been happily born into the home of Mr. and Mrs. Morgan, named as follows: E. P., E. L., J. S., Maggie, Birdie, Grace and Carrie B. The family are members of the Methodist Episcopal church.

P. H. Noyes, a leading merchant of Charleston, was born in Charleston, September 20th, 1835, son of Franklin and Nancy (Venable) Noyes. Franklin Noyes was born in Columbia county, N. Y., and came to Charleston when a young man. He engaged in the mercantile business for about forty years, and was also interested in the early salt manufactories of the county. He was a quiet, thorough business man and had the respect and esteem of the community at large. Our subject received his education in the public schools of Charleston, and at the age of thirteen years entered his father's store as a clerk, and has since been en-

gaged in mercantile pursuits. In 1856 he established his first business in Charleston, and in 1882, embarked in the wholesale grocery trade in connection with C. C. Lewis, under the firm name of P. H. Noyes & Co. Mr. Noyes, though not a partisian, has generally voted the democratic ticket, and has served as a member of the city council and also as president of the Board of Trade of Charleston, being a charter member of that organization. In 1868 he married Miss Kate A. Wilson, daughter of N. V. Wilson, of Charleston. Mr. and Mrs. Noyes are the parents of four children, named as follows: Katie A., Philip H., Jr., Nat. Wilson and Elizabeth Ruffner. The family are members of the First Presbyterian church of Charleston, and are reckoned among the most refined and benevolent people of the city.

William Ira Oakes, of the firm of Oakes, Donnally & Co., wholesale and retail feed dealers, and steamboat and railroad transfer-men, was born in the Cabin creek district, Kanawha county, May 15, 1841, son of Ebenezer and Drusilla (Drown) Oakes. His father was a native of Vermont, but came to Kanawha valley when fifteen years of age, having been one of the early pioneers of the valley. He started as a day laborer, and was famous as a wood chopper. He early became interested in the salt industry. His wife was a native of Marietta, Ohio, but was a resident of the Kanawha valley at the time of their marriage. They were both consistent members of the Methodist Episcopal church. The father died in 1872. Six of the nine children born to them are living. William I. was the eighth child. He was brought up on the homestead place, and followed farming until 1862, when he joined the Confederate army, as a member of Jackson's artillery, and was soon commissioned sergeant. Among the many battles in which he participated may be mentioned, the Wilderness, Coal Harbor and Gettysburg. After the war he found employment as a clerk on the steamboat Mountain Boy, and was employed on various different steamers. Subsequently he partly owned the steamer West Virginia, and was a partial owner in the Iantha, and also in the Mockingbird. Until 1875 he was engaged in the steamboat business, having carried on the wharf boat at Charleston during a portion of this time. In 1872 he established the first transfer business ever in Charleston, and this has steadily grown until it now does an enormous business. Mr. Oakes is a charter member of the Craig Scale company, and of the Charleston Iron Fence company. He has been a democratic member of the city council, and is now a member of Kanawha lodge, No. 20, A. F. & A. M., Kanawha lodge, No. 25, I. O. O. F., and Kanawha City lodge, 465, K. of H. In 1875 he married Miss Eliza V. Hamilton, of Virginia. She is a member of the Presbyterian church, and her husband of the Methodist Episcopal.

Robert T. Oney, cashier of the Kanawha Valley Bank, was born in Bedford, Va., February 8, 1845, the son of James and Mary (Thomas) Oney. He was educated in a private institution of his native county. In 1861 he enlisted in Jordan's battery as a private, and was disabled at the battle of Sharpsburg, thereby being compelled to retire from active service, but remained in the department service until the close of the war. After the war he engaged in business at Bedford, Va., until 1868. During that time he also acted as deputy clerk of the county court. In the latter year he came to Charleston and connected himself with the Kanawha Valley Bank as a clerk, in which capacity he served until 1873, when he accepted a clerkship in the Bank of Huntington, of which concern he was made cashier in 1876. Mr. Oney was engaged as cashier of this bank until 1883, at which time he returned to Charleston and entered upon the duties of the responsible position which he has since held. The Kanawha Valley Bank is one of the largest financial houses in the state, and no small share of its success is due its present cashier, who has evinced remarkable ability in his calling. Mr. Oney is the president of the Charleston Mutual Building and Annuity company, is treasurer of the National Union Benevolent Order, treasurer of the Mystic Circle, is chairman of the committee on the development of Charleston, and is a director in various enterprises. Mr. Oney is a member of the Baptist church, and a man interested in all benevolences.

Benjamin H. Oxley was born June 19, 1853, in Franklin county, Va., being a son of Jenkins M. and Elizabeth (Miles) Oxley. The father and mother were natives of Bedford county, Va., of English and Scotch-Irish descent, respectively. They were the parents of four sons and four daughters. In December, 1869, they came to Lincoln county, W. Va., where the mother died in 1882, the father departing this life in Charleston in 1889. Our subject was reared on a farm and obtained a liberal education in the public schools. When eighteen years of age he began school teaching, which occupation he pursued for eight years, teaching and farming alternately according to the season. Meantime, he was assiduously pursuing the study of law, and was admitted to the bar in 1880, and began the practice of law at Hamlin, in Lincoln county, and is still engaged in the practice of his profession. He is a decided democrat in politics, and in 1884 was elected to the West Virginia house of delegates to represent Lincoln county. In 1886 he was elected to the state senate from the seventh district, and took a prominent part in the interesting political events of the sessions of 1887, 1889 and 1890. March 12, 1890, he was appointed adjutant general of the state, by Gov. Fleming, and also holds the position of quartermaster-general. He is chief of the governor's staff and the incumbent becomes

ex-officio state librarian. Mr. Oxley is a member of the West Virginia Bar association, a Master Mason and K. of P. In May, 1889, he was united in marriage to Miss Fannie Burton, of Charleston. Since his appointment as adjutant general, Mr. Oxley has made his residence in Charleston, where he has become very popular both in his public and private relations.

Alfred S. Patrick, M. D., was born in Charleston, on August 6, 1831, the son of Dr. Spicer Patrick and Lavinia V. M. (Bream) Patrick. He was educated at Marietta, Ohio, college, and after leaving college read medicine with his father. Subsequently he was graduated from the Ohio Medical college, at Cincinnati, 1853 being the year of his graduation. He began to practice at Mason City, Mason county, W. Va., in 1854 and remained there until the fall of 1859, when he came to Charleston and entered upon the successful professional career, which has placed him among the front rank of medical men. On the 8th of May, 1861, he enlisted in Company A, Twenty-second Virginia regiment, Confederate army, afterward being commissioned surgeon of the regiment and remained in that capacity until the close of the war. At that time he returned to Charleston and remained there until 1872, when he removed to Lewisburg, Greenbrier county, W. Va., where he resided until the spring of 1889. In the latter year he once more took up his abode in Charleston, and has since continued to reside there. In the year 1862 he was joined in marriage to Miss Virginia A. Mathews, of Lewisburg, by whom he has had two sons and two daughters, viz.: Mason Mathews Patrick, lieutenant in the United States army engineer corps; Mary Maud, Virginia Spicer and Alfred Bream. The family are members of the Episcopal church.

James Monroe Payne was born in Giles county, Va., May 21st, 1848. Charles H. Payne and Rebecca (Price) Payne were his parents. His father was born in Franklin county, Va., was a farmer, and filled several county offices. Thomas Payne, of Campbell county, Va., was the father of Charles H. Payne, and a member of the large and wealthy family of that name, which has been prominent in that section of the state for more than a century. Thomas Payne married Miss Frances Powell, of Franklin county, Va. James M. Payne was reared in Giles county, near the home of his maternal ancestors, and received his scholastic training at Roanoke college, and studied law under James P. Holcombe, formerly of the university of Virginia. He was admitted to the bar in October, 1871, at New Castle, Craig county, Va., and practiced his profession there until February, 1873, at which time he removed to Charleston and formed a partnership with Mr. S. S. Green. He was married in October, 1880, to Miss Belle Abney, a native of Louisiana. Two sons have been born

to this union, Arnold Abney and James Monroe. Mr. and Mrs. Payne are members of the First Presbyterian church, of Charleston. He is a stock-holder in the Mutual Building and Loan association, attorney for the Coal River Boom and Driving company, and other corporations, and has been successful in his practice. He is a democrat, but does not take an active part in politics. The only office that he has held since moving to West Virginia, was that of councilman of the city of Charleston. He was chairman of the Drainage and Ordinance committees, when the present system of sewerage was adopted by the council. He was an advocate of high license, and during his term of office, succeeded in raising the retail liquor license from $100 to $500, thus increasing the revenue of the city far beyond what they were previous to his service. He has ever been found among the benevolent and public spirited men of the community, and has been a friend to every movement promising the public welfare.

Thomas Porter, an industrious and respected citizen of Brownstown, is the keeper of lock number five, on the Kanawha river. Mr. Porter was born in Charleston, W. Va., February 26, 1856. His parents, B. F. and Mary (Mathews) Porter, were also natives of Kanawha county, and were life-long residents of this region. The father died March 21, 1888. He was a contractor and builder, and also engaged in farming during the greater part of his life. His father was John Porter, who was a native of this county, and who for many years was engaged in the manufacture of salt. His wife, Jane, who was a daughter of Gury Mathews, still survives him. Thomas Porter is the fifth child of a family of six. He received his schooling in his native town and has resided here since his boyhood, having removed from Charleston while young. In 1886 he espoused Miss Nannie Williamson, by whom he has had one son, Clay. For fourteen years Mr. Porter has been in charge of the lock here, and during that time has discharged his duties with faithfulness and efficiency, not having been absent from his post but four days in the fourteen years. Both himself and wife are consistent members of the Methodist Episcopal church, and he is also a member of the I. O. O. F., Olive Branch lodge, No. 38.

Hon. William A. Quarrier.—The late Hon. W. A. Quarrier was the eldest son of Alexander W. and Caroline W. Quarrier, and was born in this city, then but a village, on the first of October, 1828. He departed this life at his home in Charleston, suddenly, after a short illness, on the 10th of September, 1888, aged nearly sixty. In his early youth Mr. Quarrier attended the local schools of the town; later, Mercer academy, the then leading educational institution of the valley, and completed his course at the university of Virginia. He chose law as his profession, and practiced

it with success and distinction up to the time of his death. He attained and maintained a prominent and honorable position among the very ablest members of the bar in the state. His bearing in his profession was dignified, courteous and always considerate of the rights and feelings of his adversaries. His conduct at the bar was a model for the younger members of the profession to pattern after. His head was large and high and was equipped with brain and nerve power of the finest grain and most delicate texture. His mind was broad and comprehensive; he thought vigorously, logically and lucidly, decided coolly and dispassionately and acted justly and disinterestedly. The influence he wielded in his official, professional and personal relations—after his duty—was used generously, kindly and helpfully for those who needed help, in the several ways in which it could be effected; and many are the young men and old, the widowed and the needy, white and colored, who have reason to remember gratefully his benefactions. His charities and kindnesses were bestowed modestly and without ostentation. Probably no other man in the valley would have been so largely missed as Mr. Quarrier has been. Not only missed in his official and professional position and relations, but, so great was the confidence of the public in his sound, clear judgment and broad liberal views on all subjects coming under his observation and consideration, and in his scrupulously, conscientious integrity, that he was the confidante and receptacle of the private plans and schemes, the hopes and fears of a great many men who went to him for friendly advice and assistance in avoiding, settling or compromising existing or threatened troubles and complications, legal, financial and personal. His feelings and efforts were always in the interest of peace and harmony, and it is safe to say that his power for good and the good he actually did in such cases, were greater than those of any other man in the valley. Mr. Quarrier was six feet two inches in height, and his weight about 200 pounds; he was straight as an arrow, and his erect carriage and dignified bearing with his perfection of physical proportions made him a very striking figure and one of the handsomest men in the state. For intellectual capacity and culture, lofty moral character and stamina, he was admired and esteemed by all who knew him. He was a man of naturally æsthetic and literary tastes, finely developed and cultivated. He was a voracious and general reader; he did not confine himself to any special subjects nor line of thought, but culled from the general field of literature; he digested and assimilated well what he read; had a wonderfully large fund of accumulated knowledge and had admirable command of it for ready information, illustration or explanation, making him ready in debate or argument, and a most entertaining and instructive conversationalist. He possessed a keen and

appreciative sense of wit and humor; he listened with interest and pleasure to a good story or anecdote, and himself related them with remarkable spirit, force and effect. Early in the late civil war Mr. Quarrier was connected with the southern army, in this valley; he was at and helped to fight the battle of "Scary," one of the first engagements fought during the war. He was, as first lieutenant, in command of part of the guns of an artillery company. He escaped unhurt, while his next lieutenant (Welch) was killed by his side at his guns. Later, Mr. Quarrier resigned his commission in the army, and was engaged by the state of Virginia to superintend the making and distribution of salt for the state and other southern states, at Saltville, in southwestern Virginia. He was a man of pronounced domestic tastes and habits; to him there was "no place like home," and he was never so happy as when at home in the bosom of his family. His widow and seven children survive him. In politics Mr. Quarrier was a democrat of decided convictions, but was not an active politician, nor an office seeker, the methods of the demagogue were very obnoxious to him. On two occasions, when his ability and influence were supposed to be necessary to help carry some local legislation of importance, he was elected to the legislature of the state, and accepted and served. Later, his friends ran him for United States senator, but he was defeated. For several years before his death, Mr. Quarrier, in addition to his general legal practice, was the chief attorney and counselor of the Kanawha & Ohio railroad. He did not profess any of the church creeds, but his partialities were strongly in favor of the forms of the Protestant Episcopal church, of which he was a constant attendant, and to his influence and aid chiefly, the congregation is indebted for their new and elegant stone church, from the solemn aisles and arches of which, alas! his remains were the first to be borne to their last resting place. He was largely read, and extremely well versed in all the theological teachings and tenets; he had given the subject a great deal of careful and earnest thought, and fully appreciated the great difficulties and mysteries that overhang human life and destiny, past, present and future. The writer of this sketch knew Mr. Quarrier intimately from his boyhood up—about half a century—and takes pleasure in recording his own appreciation with the general estimate of the high intellectual capacity and attainments, the exalted character and great moral worth of the man. H.

George B. Reynolds, the lessee of the Blacksburg coal mines, was born in Plymouth, Luzerne county, Penn., in 1853. Fuller and Elizabeth (Hancock) Reynolds were his parents. Our subject was educated in his native town and afterward was employed in the coal mines in that vicinity for several years previous to his removal to Kanawha county. In 1882 he moved to the Ka-

nawha valley, and for about four years was interested in mines on Cabin creek. The celebrated Blacksburg mines were opened by him in 1886. Their capacity at present are some 200 tons of coal a day, the product being of the finest quality of gas and steam coal. All of this production is shipped by rail to the various markets of the country. Mr. Reynolds married Miss Maria Graham, also a Pennsylvanian, and their union has been blessed by the birth of six children. Mr. Reynolds is a member of the Mystic Circle of East Bank. His wife is a communicant of the Episcopal church. He is a very successful man, his energy and business capacity are unlimited, and no better proof to this is needed than the excellent management of the mines under his direction.

J. E. Rollins, the efficient cashier of the Citizens bank, of Charleston, and a member of the firm of Tyree, Rollins & Co., wholesale druggists and tobacconists, was born in Fredericksburg, Va., February 21, 1846, son of Enoch and Lydia Ann (Layton) Rollins, natives of Virginia. Our subject was reared and educated in his native county. When twenty years of age he went to Staunton, Va., where he accepted the position of bookkeeper in the National Valley bank, and for twenty years was connected with that bank in one capacity and another. At the time of his resignation, in May, 1888, he held the position of assistant cashier. After leaving the bank Mr. Rollins formed a partnership with Mr. Tyree, under the firm name of Tyree, Rollins & Co. In 1889 they removed their business to Charleston. Soon after, he became cashier of the Citizens bank and has remained so up to the present time. In 1882 he was the caucus nominee of his party for state treasurer (democratic), which was then in the minority in the legislature of Virginia, and as a matter of course, failed of election. He has served as a member of congressional and gubernatorial conventions in his native state and in many different ways has been recognized by his fellow citizens. He is a director in the Kanawha Valley Building & Loan association. At the age of sixteen Mr. Rollins entered the service of the Confederate army, and shortly after was appointed a midshipman in the Confederate navy, and until after the war, was stationed below Richmond, on the James river. He is one of the original members of the K. of P. at Staunton, Va., and is a member of the Royal Arcanum, and past grand dictator of the K. of H., for the state of Virginia, and for two years was supreme representative of that order.

J. C. Roy, president and general manager of the Roy Furniture factory, of Charleston, was born in that city on the 2nd of October, 1852, the son of L. C. and Mary (McGuffen) Roy. He was given a good education, and afterward engaged in the mercantile business, in which he continued for eight years. At the expiration of this time he established a lumber and planing-mill

business, and in 1889, the Roy furniture factory was organized, and now has a capacity of from 250 to 300 sets of furniture per week. Since its organization he has acted as its president and general manager. Upon the organization of the Citizens bank, he was elected vice-president and has since filled that position. He is a stockholder in the Kanawha Woolen mills, and president of the same, and is also president and a director of the Kanawha Brick company. Mr. Roy is a member of the Kanawha lodge of I. O. O. F., and the National Union of the Mystic Circle. In 1874 he was united in marriage to Miss Nannie Rand, daughter of C. C. Rand, of Charleston, by whom he has had three children: Nellie, Taylor and Elsie. Politically, Mr. Roy is a democrat, and has served as a member of the city council, and also as a member of the school board. He and his wife are communicants of the Methodist Episcopal church, as were also his father and mother. Both his parents were natives of Upshur county, W. Va., and settled in Kanawha county in 1837, where his father was engaged in the manufacture of salt barrels. J. C. Roy has made his own fortunes, having started with nothing. His reputation as an upright, successful business man is undisputed.

Joseph Ruffner, attorney at law, was born at Cincinnati, Ohio, October 9, 1848, and is a son of Daniel and Elizabeth (Honeyman) Ruffner. The parents removed to the interior of Ohio, when the son was a child, and in 1854 removed to Charleston, W. Va., and later to Campbell county, Ky. Joseph was given a fair literary education in the schools of Charleston and of Campbell county. In 1868 he entered a law office at Cincinnati, and began the study of law. He was admitted to the bar in 1870, in Kentucky, where he began the practice of his chosen profession. In 1871 he located in Charleston, where he has continued in the general practice of law, with the exception of three years he spent in the west. He is a member of the West Virginia State Law association, and has been an active member of his profession. He is a member of the I. O. O. F., but has kept himself free from political complications. In 1875 he wedded Miss Mary Jackson, an accomplished lady of Richmond, Ind.

Capt. James H. Sentz, a well-known citizen of Spring H Kanawha county, W. Va., who owns and operates a general merchandise establishment at that point, and also occupies the office of postmaster, is a native of Kanawha county, where he was born in 1837. His parents were Henry and Eliza (Moorehead) Sentz, natives of Rockbridge county, Va., of Dutch and English descent, respectively. At an early day they settled in the Kanawha valley, where the father worked at his trade. When he first located in Kanawha county, he was engaged in teaching school for two years. Both died in this county, the father when James was eight years old, the mother in 1861.

James and one sister are the survivors of the three children born to these parents. For twenty years Capt. Sentz figured very prominently in the steamboat interests of the county, having owned and operated his own boats during that time, at first serving as his own captain and pilot. While a boy he divided his time between the common schools and working at different salt furnaces on the river, at marking salt as it was inspected. He was married in 1862, to Miss Elizabeth Jane Gardner, the youngest daughter of Nathan Gardner, who moved to Kanawha county from Rockbridge county at an early date. Eight children have blessed this happy union: John (deceased), James, Robert, Nona, Charles, Channing, Noble and Arthur. The family are members of the Presbyterian church, and the son, James, is a popular divine at that church, now preaching in New York City. Capt. Sentz first embarked in the mercantile trade in 1862, at Black Hawk, where he remained seven years. In 1886, he established his present business at Spring Hill. He also owns a tract of land consisting of 240 acres in that vicinity, besides other property. He was appointed postmaster in 1889. For several years he has operated a brick factory, employing twenty men, with steam machinery, and all modern appliances. He is much interested in educational matters, and is a benevolent, public spirited man. It was his generosity that made the building of the new Kanawha Presbyterian church, at Charleston possible as he gave them $3,500 and loaned them $1,000.

Addison M. Scott, C. E., the subject of this sketch, was the son of a New York farmer, born in Tompkins county in 1843. During his boyhood he worked on his father's farm and attended district school. At about sixteen, and for several years following, he attended Ithaca academy, at Ithaca, N. Y., and himself taught school during the winters. In the spring of 1866 he made a trip to the west, and while at St. Paul joined a party then organizing there under Gen. G. K. Warren (the old corps commander of the army of the Potomac), for a survey of the upper Mississippi river. Upon the disbanding of this company at St. Louis late in 1866 he returned home and renewed his studies at Ithaca academy. In the fall of 1867 he accepted a position as assistant engineer under Gen. Warren on the improvement of the upper Mississippi, just then getting under way. He remained on this work for several years; much of the latter three years of which he was principal assistant engineer on the large railroad and highway bridge built by the United States government over the Mississippi at Rock Island. He remained on this work from the first survey for location until the completion and opening of the bridge in 1873. In this year (1873) the United States government undertook the improvement of the navigation of the great Kanawha river. Col. William E. Merrill, of the United

States engineering corps, was placed in charge, and Mr. Scott was selected as his first assistant and resident engineer. Through the several changes that have occurred in the organization of the river improvement force here Col. Merrill, Major Turtle, Capt. Ruffner, and since 1874 Col. William P. Craighill. Mr. Scott has been continuously retained in his position of chief assistant and resident executive engineer. During his seventeen years' engagement here he has devoted himself with persevering zeal and energy to the duties of his professional position, mastering thoroughly the theory and practical details of the Chinoine movable dams, which the government has adopted in the improvement of the great Kanawha and some other rivers; the first in America having been built in this river. (For a full description of the Chinoine dam and account of the improvement of the navigation of the great Kanawha river, see a separate article on that subject elsewhere in this volume.) To his subordinates Mr. Scott is courteous and kind, winning their respect and esteem, while he himself possesses the unbounded confidence and kind regards of his superior officers. In his profession he has achieved an enviable reputation for capacity, skill and executive ability. In his general intercourse with the public Mr. Scott is a modest, unassuming, courteous gentleman. He is accurate, prompt and thoroughly reliable in all business engagements and transactions. He is now forty-seven years old and is ummarried.

Hezekiah Scott was one of seven children born to James and Jane (King) Scott. His birth took place in Kanawha county, W. Va. (then Virginia), February 9, 1842. Both parents were natives of Kanawha county. The father died at Charleston, Va., during the cholera scourge of 1849. He was a lifelong resident and farmer of the county. His father was also named James. James, Sr., was of English descent, and was a soldier in the Mexican war. Jane Scott, the mother of the subject of this sketch, died in 1889, of la grippe. She was the mother of seven children, three of whom still survive her. Hezekiah was educated in the public schools of his native town. While still engaged in obtaining an education, the rebellion broke out and in August, 1862, he enlisted as a private in the Union army, Company D, Thirteenth West Virginia volunteer infantry. Soon after he was promoted to the rank of sergeant, later to color bearer, and from that to second lieutenant, which position he held until the close of the war. Mr. Scott participated in many battles, among them being, Winchester, Va., where he was grieviously wounded in the head, neck and shoulder by the same bullet, Barboursville, Buffington Island, Fayetteville, and all the principal engagements in the Virginia valley. At the close of the war, Mr. Scott returned to his home and entered the ranks of the

church, as a minister of the Methodist Episcopal denomination. From 1866, to 1884, he was in charge of various circuits and stations, but at that time, was compelled to retire on account of ill health, caused by the wounds received while in his country's defense. Since that time he has been engaged in the mercantile business at Malden, and in July, 1889, was appointed postmaster. In 1876, he married Mrs. Elizabeth (Peacock) Adamson, a native of Durham county, England. Three sons and four daughters have been born to this union: Joseph, Ellen; Mary, deceased; John, Anna and Gertrude. Mr. Scott is a member of the I. O. O. F., Malden lodge, 77, and Masonic lodge, 27.

W. D. Scott, senior member of the firm of Scott Brothers, druggists, was born in Charleston, October 14, 1848, son of Edward and Mary A. (Snyder) Scott. The father was a native of Powhatan county, Va. He came to Charleston when a young man and here followed the tailor's trade for many years. His wife was born in Charleston. She still survives him, he having died in 1872. Their children were: Charles, W. D. and George W. Charles was a member of the Twenty-second Virginia regiment, Kanawha riflemen, and died at Dublin Depot, Va., of pneumonia, in 1863. W. D. Scott was educated at the old Charleston institute. His first business venture was made in the book business, with J. L. Fry, under the firm name of Fry & Scott, and continued until 1886, when he became a member of the firm of Scott Brothers. He is a member of Kanawha lodge, No. 20, A. F. & A. M., and is a constant communicant of the First Presbyterian church of Charleston. George W. Scott, junior member of the above firm, was born in Charleston, September 29, 1854, and was also educated at the Charleston institute, after which he was engaged in the grocery business for several years. In 1886 he became associated with his brother in the purchase of the business of W. A. Bradford & Son, the firm of Scott Brothers having been formed at that time. This is one of the leading drug houses in the city, and its owners are regarded as among the progressive and able business men of Charleston. George W. Scott is a charter member of the Knights of the Golden Eagle, and is a staunch democrat. He also attends the Presbyterian church.

A well-known man of Kanawha county, W. Va., is A. C. Shaver, the popular manager of the Robinson Coal Co.'s store at East Bank. Mr. Shaver is a son of James and Mary Ann (Edwards) Shaver, and was born in Gallia county, Ohio, July 21, 1843. James Shaver is also a native of the same county, and still resides there on his farm. He was the son of Thomas, who was born in Delaware, and came to Ohio at an early day. Mary Ann Shaver is a native of Scotland, and now lives in Gallia county. Her father was William S. Edwards. Mr. A. C.

Shaver, the subject of this mention, passed his boyhood and early manhood in Ohio, and there obtained a good common schooling in the public schools, after which he attended the Scheshine and Ewington academies. In 1864 he numbered himself among his country's defenders, by enlisting in Company E, One Hundred and Forty-first Ohio volunteer infantry. After one hundred days' service he re-enlisted in the One Hundred and Ninety-fourth Ohio volunteer infantry, and remained with them during the remainder of the war. For a short time he served as corporal, but left the army with the rank of orderly sergeant. At the close of the Rebellion he returned to Ohio and entered the Ewington academy for one term, after which he taught school for one term. At the expiration of this time he came to the Kanawha valley and settled at Coalburg, June 17, 1865. He first took charge of the Kanawha & Ohio Coal Co.'s store, and later was made manager of the Robinson Coal Co.'s store. For over fifteen years he was the postmaster of Coalburg, and is now a member of the Coalburg council. For twenty years he has been a Mason, and Knight Templar for three, and is also a member of the G. A. R. Mrs. Shaver was Miss Minnie Barker before her marriage. She is the mother of five children: Dorothea, Minnie, Clara (deceased), William B. and Ada. Mr. and Mrs. Shaver are prominent members of the Free Will Baptist church, Mr. Shaver having been the organizer of that church in the Kanawha valley.

J. R. Shaver, the leading florist of Charleston, was born in Huntingdon county, Penn., November 17, 1838, his parents being Nicholas and Keziah (Etmer) Shaver. After receiving a good schooling he engaged in the general mercantile and lumber business in Center county, Penn., where he continued for six years. In 1862 he enlisted in Company I, One Hundred and Forty-ninth Pennsylvania volunteer infantry, and was soon after promoted to the office of first lieutenant of that company. He was wounded and taken prisoner at Gettysburg, again wounded at Coal Harbor, where he had the misfortune to lose one of his ears. In 1871 he came to Charleston and embarked in the lumber business. In 1878 he was appointed deputy United States marshal and served in that capacity for three years. One year after his retirement from the latter office he established his present business and is now the most extensive florist in the city. He is a member of the Masonic fraternity, of the Royal Arch, K. T., being past commander of the Charleston lodge. Mr. Shaver is a staunch republican, and a wide awake, progressive business man.

Major William Sharp, one of the most extensive coal operators of the Kanawha valley, is a Scotchman by birth, having been born in that country in 1836, the son of William and Jen-

nette (McAlister) Sharp. The father still resides there at the age of eighty years, his wife died when twenty years old. Major Sharp left the land of his nativity in 1857, and came to America. He was first employed in this country by a coal company in the Wyoming valley as a book-keeper. Subsequently he worked in the mines in order to obtain a practical knowledge of mining, and at the expiration of one year was put in charge of the mine. Later he was made the superintendent of the Burnsides Iron and Coal company, of Shamokin, Penn., and held that position until the property was sold to the Mineral R. R. Mining company, with whom he remained for four years. For three years he was the superintendent of the Anthracite coal mine, and then began operations for himself by opening the first mine at Reynoldsville, Penn. At the expiration of eight years Mr. Sharp came to the great Kanawha valley, and here, in 1881, commenced a new mine, and has since been engaged in mining at various places in the valley. He is now connected with the Consolidated mines of the Kanawha valley. Mr. Sharp's wife, who was Miss Mahalia Klase, a sketch of whose family appears in another place in this work, has borne him five children: Jenette, Frank, Albert, Edith and Cheirington. Mr. and Mrs. Sharp are communicants of the Presbyterian church. Mr. Sharp is a man of culture and refinement. His scholastic training was obtained in the normal school of Glasgow, Scotland.

Albert D. Shrewsbury was born near Malden, Kanawha county, W. Va., September 16, 1867, son of Dickinson and Mary Jane (McConihay) Shrewsbury. Joel, his paternal grandfather, was a native of Bedford county, Va., and one of the early settlers of the valley, later becoming a prominent salt manufacturer. His son, Dickinson, now lives in the eastern part of Kanawha county, having retired from active life. Albert D. Shrewsbury was educated in the public schools of Kanawha county, at Pittsburg and at the Columbian university at Washington, D. C. He was a graduate from the latter place with the degree of Bachelor and Master of Laws; before which graduation he read law with Andrew McCamant, of Altoona, Penn., and was admitted to the bar at Washington, D. C., in 1887, and practiced there for one year, after which he located in Charleston. He is attorney and the West Virginia representative of the Adams Coke Oven company of Pittsburgh, also attorney and general agent for the Northwestern Guarantee and Loan association, of Minneapolis, Minn., for West Virginia, Maryland, Washington, D. C., Kentucky and Ohio. He is also agent for the sale of large tracts of lands in West Virginia, and does a general corporation practice.

R. R. Skees was born at Pittsburgh, Penn., July 30, 1842, son of James and Sarah Ann (McCowan) Skees, natives of the same city. They removed to Charleston in 1866, where the father en-

gaged in the furniture business, establishing the first store on Capitol street. He was the first undertaker in the city. Both he and his wife were prominent members of the Presbyterian church. He died in 1875, and his wife in 1887. Their family consisted of three children: Mrs. Sarah Ward, R. R. and John. R. R. Skees was taken to Gallipolis, Ohio, by his parents when but one year old. After receiving but little schooling, he, at the age of twelve years, entered his father's store and began learning the furniture and undertaking business. When they removed to Charleston he became a partner in the business with his father, and this continued until the latter's death. Since that time Mr. Skees has disposed of the furniture department but still continues to be the leading undertaker in the city. In 1888 he established a livery stable in connection with his other vocation, and this too is the best of its kind in the city, he having over fifty horses in constant service. He is a member of the I. O. O. F., and is a strong republican. He has served with credit as a member of the city council. In 1869, Mr. Skees married Miss Ella Elias of Cincinnati, Ohio, who bore him one child, viz.: Ellis H., now a partner in his father's business. He was married a second time, Miss Jennie Goshorn, daughter of S. C. Goshorn, of Cincinnati, becoming his wife. Mr. and Mrs. Skees are valued communicants of the Presbyterian church.

John Slack, one of the most prominent citizens of Charleston, was born in Kanawha county, W. Va., May 4, 1810. John Slack, his father, was a native of Washington county, Penn. He came to Kanawha valley in 1794, and remained one year. In 1796, he made a permanent settlement there. His father, Philip Slack, accompanied him to the Kanawha valley, and they purchased a tract of land on the Elk river, about six miles from its mouth. He married Miss Comfort Samuels, and settled on the Elk river in 1800, and there cleared a farm which he operated for many years. Subsequently he cleared another farm on Blue creek, where he died in 1857. For many years he served as a magistrate, and by virtue of that office, was sheriff of the county for one term. He was one of the leading whigs of his time, and a prominent member of the Methodist Episcopal church. His wife died in 1846. The family consisted of three sons and three daughters, of which the following still survive. John, the eldest, living; Martha, widow of Edwin High, and Benjamin. Greenberry, a son now deceased, served as justice of the peace for many years. During the war he was a Unionist, and was active in the withdrawal of West Virginia from the Southern cause, and active in the organization of the new state, which he served for a number of years as a member of its senate. John Slack was reared on the homestead farm, and was given a course of study in the schools of that day. In 1841, he was appointed

deputy sheriff by his father, and continued under several different administrations. When the office was made elective, he was elected sheriff in 1854 and 1856, and since that time has served several terms as deputy sheriff. For over thirty years he has been connected with the sheriff's office. In 1858, he hung Preston S. Furley, the first criminal hung in Kanawha county. In 1861, he was appointed clerk of the circuit and county courts, and later made recorder of Kanawha county, continuing in that office until 1872. Since that time he has lived in retirement from active business. He was active in securing the erection of the first capitol at Charleston, and gave as much money as any other one man. His marriage to Miss Sarah R. Porter, daughter of John Porter, of Kanawha county, was solemnized in 1844, and has been blessed by the birth of the following named children: Edward, Nicholas, George, and eight others now deceased. Mr. Slack is a republican, has served as a member of the city council, and also of the school board, and for many years has been a trustee of the Methodist Episcopal church. His extended career as a public servant has ever been marked by strict integrity, and faithfulness to every trust reposed in him. His name is attainted by no reproach or whisperings of unfaithfulness to the public.

One of the leading business concerns of St. Albans is the Potomac Lumber company, of which Thomas J. Slyger is the owner. Mr. Slyger is one of four children born to George and Margaret (Gilpin) Slyger. The former was born in the western portion of Virginia, and the latter in the eastern. Mrs. Slyger passed to her eternal reward in the year 1889. Her husband still resides in Maryland, where Thomas was born on the 19th of July, 1847. His education was received in the schools of his native town, and he had been out of school but a short time when he became interested in the lumber business which he has since followed. Mr. Slyger came to St. Albans in 1884 and established the Potomac Lumber company. Thomas and Sarah (France) Slyger were joined in the bonds of matrimony in Maryland, in the year 1872. Their home has been brightened by the birth of eight children, six of whom are now living, named as follows: Edith, Alva, Walter, Lillie, Bessie and Garnett. Mr. Slyger is a Mason, belonging to lodge No. 100, Salem lodge, is a Royal Arch Mason, No. 18, belongs to the Antioch commandery, No. 6, and is also a member of the Knights of Honor. Both he and his wife are active and consistent communicants of the Methodist Episcopal church, and are to be found with the benevolent and charitable people of the community.

Major J. S. F. Smith has been prominently identified with the business interests of the state for nearly half a century. He

settled in Kanawha county sometime before the war, and here married Martha Jane Hansford, in 1849. She is a native of this county, and a daughter of Felix G. Hansford, who was a prominent man and also a native of this county. He was a son of Major John Hansford, who was one of the first settlers of this region, and an owner of large tracts of land in the Kanawha valley. Major and Mrs. Smith have been blessed by the birth of three children: Mary G.; Martha, wife of Oscar A. Veazey, civil and mining engineer, and Carrie, wife of Mr. C. H. Frazier, the superintendent of the Faulkner mines. About the year 1845 Major Smith was made a member of the Masonic fraternity at Lewisburg, Greenbrier county, Va., at the Blue lodge, No. 49. Both he and his wife are active and prominent communicants of the Missionary Baptist church of Clifton, where they reside, Mr. Smith being the superintendent of the Sunday school of that church. He first began as a merchant in 1855, in partnership with F. G. Hansford, which was continued for about two years, at the expiration of which time he accepted a position as book-keeper for a coal company at Paint Creek, and subsequently became superintendent of an oil company. He was major on Gen. Chapman's staff, of the Confederate army, and served during the greater part of the war. He was taken captive in Greenbrier county, and held at Charleston for three weeks. His half brother, Augustus Bailey, major of the Twenty-second regiment, was killed in battle at Drupe Mountain, Greenbrier county, W. Va. For three years he was editor of the *Lewisburg Chronicle*, in Greenbrier county. Mr. Smith has served as a school trustee of his district for several terms, and is one of the leading men of the county. His parents were John and Mary Smith, both of Scotch descent. The father was a merchant. He died before the birth of his only child, and his wife afterward married Judge Bailey. Major J. S. F. Smith was born in Charleston, S. C., in 1822.

Major Thomas Fife Snyder, son of David H. and Mary K. (Fife) Snyder, was born in Charleston, Va., now West Virginia, July 11, 1854. He was graduated from the Virginia Military Institute, July 4, 1874. After leaving school he was appointed commandant of the University of the South, at Sewanee, Tenn., where he remained until 1876, when he was elected professor of mathematics and commandant of cadets at the Maryland Agricultural college, where he remained for two years. In 1878 he was elected professor of mathematics and military science, at the West Virginia university. In 1880 he returned to Charleston and established the Kanawha Military Institute, as a private enterprise. This school was chartered by the state with full university powers. Major Snyder is captain of the Kanawha Riflemen, one of best drilled military organizations in the country. It

played an important part during the late war, and won much glory for its present and future members. David H. Snyder was born in Kanawha county, Va., opposite to Charleston, in February, 1825. His father, David, came to America with his brother Daniel, soon after the Revolutionary war, and married Rebecca, daughter of Robert Christian, a soldier of the Revolution, and also of the war of 1812, being wounded at the battle of Coney Island. Christianburg, Va., was named for him, he being its founder. His wife was Mary Houston. David H. Snyder was educated in Charleston and was its postmaster during the administrations of Pierce and Buchanan. At the outbreak of the Rebellion he was appointed to a staff position by Gen. Henry A. Wise. He was a self made man, honored and respected by all who knew him. He died in 1865. He began life as a clerk in a salt manufactory, then engaged in mercantile business. He was a very prominent member of the I. O. O. F. He married Mary K. Fife, daughter of Thomas Fife, who settled in the Kanawha valley in 1815. She survived him till 1890, loved and respected by all. She left two children: Thomas and William F., a prominent physician of Randolph county, a graduate of Jefferson medical college. He married Isis, daughter of Col. J. H. Woodford, of Barbour county. They have one child, Thomas A.

J. M. Staunton, M. D., was born in Allegheny county, N. Y., September 29, 1819, the son of John W. and Sarah (Brewster) Staunton, native of Massachusetts. They moved to New York state about the year 1816, and there engaged in farming. Subsequently, they removed to Cattaraugus county, where the father served as county clerk for sixteen years. They were earnest communicants of the Presbyterian church. They both died in Cattaraugus county. Their son, and our subject, attended the public schools in New York state, later studying medicine under his elder brother, Jonathan Brewster Staunton. He then attended lectures at the old Geneva Medical college (since removed to Syracuse, N. Y., and a part of Syracuse university) and began the practice of his chosen profession with his brother, in 1845. In the year 1859, he removed to West Virginia, and for four years, was engaged in manufacturing oil from cannel coal in connection with two of his younger brothers. In 1875, he settled at Charleston, where he has since obtained a large practice. He is a stockholder in and director of the Diamond Ice company, of Charleston. He is a member of the state and county medical societies. His political faith is founded upon the tenets of the republican party, of which he is an active and valued member, having been a U. S. pensioner examiner at Charleston several years. In 1847, he married Miss Mary E. Wilber, daughter of Church Wilber, a native of Vermont state, but now deceased. They have seven children: Sidney A., of the United States navy; Mrs.

Mary L. Staunton. Susan A., E. W., Frederick M., Archibald G., and Kate S. The family are members of the Kanawha Presbyterian church, in which he is an elder. E. W. Staunton, son of the above, was born in Kanawha county, February 17, 1865, and was educated in the Charleston public schools. In 1883, he and his brother, Frederick M. Staunton, became the managers of the Diamond Ice company, and also dealers in coal. In 1889, he was elected to the office of city sergeant, and still holds that position. F. M. Staunton is a director in the Knoxville Building & Loan association.

M. H. Straughan has been prominently identified with the Standard Coal company of Handley, Kanawha county, W. Va., since 1888. He is the son of George and Sarah (Holden) Straughan, now residents of Coal valley, where the father owns and operates a coal mine. He is a native of England, having emigrated to this country in 1852. Before coming to America Mr. Straughan was engaged in operating coal mines in his native land, but sought a wider field for his work in the United States. His wife was also born in England. M. H. Straughan came to the Kanawha valley in 1874 from Goodson county, Va., where he was born in 1862. Most of his schooling was obtained at his new home, as he left Virginia when but ten years old. He married Miss McConnihay, of Kanawha county, in 1884, and they have had two children. Mr. Straughan is a member of lodge No. 74, of Coal Valley, of the Masonic order. He and wife are communicants of the Presbyterian church.

John L. Stump, a practicing physician and surgeon of West Charleston, was born in Gilmore county, W. Va., May 19, 1852. His parents were Rev. John and Mahala (Huffman) Stump, both natives of West Virginia. His father is a well-known minister of the Baptist church, and has been a preacher of the gospel about forty-six years, and is still actively engaged in the work of the ministry, and is pastor of West Charleston Baptist church. The grandfather of our subject was named Michael Stump, and he was born near Mt. Vernon, Va. He was fond of telling that in his boyhood he had often hunted with Gen. Washington. He was a surveyor by occupation, and a justice of the peace for forty years, from whose judgment no appeal was ever taken. He was also sheriff of Lewis county for six years, and lived to the advanced age of ninety-six years, his death occurring in Calhoun county, W. Va., March 19, 1884. His father was one of the first settlers of Gilmore county, and also bore the name of Michael Stump. The last mentioned was a soldier in the war of the Revolution under Gen. Washington, and lived to be over eighty-three years of age. He entered a great deal of public land in the county of Gilmore, where his death subsequently occurred. The Stump family were of German descent. The parents of

our subject reared a large family of children, of whom he was the fifth in birth. He was reared in Gilmore county, until the age of seventeen, meantime attending the common schools, where he obtained most of his education. At the age above mentioned, he removed to Kanawha county, in 1871, where he has since made his home. In 1876 he began studying medicine under Drs. L. L. Comstock and W. P. Ewing, of Charleston, W. Va. In the sessions of 1879-80 he attended the medical college at Richmond, Va. He practiced until 1887, and graduated in 1888, at the college above mentioned. Dr. Stump has met with decided success in his business, and now enjoys a lucrative and widely extended practice. He is a prominent member of the West Virginia Medical society, and takes much interest in every thing connected with his profession. His marriage took place August 11, 1875, his bride being Ella Copenhaver, of Kanawha county. Their union has been blessed with the birth of the following named children: Charles, Wilber and Erra D. The grandfather of our subject on the mother's side was Alexander Huffman, who was of German descent. He represented Gilmore and Calhoun counties in the state legislature, and was a man of influence and prominence. The subject of our sketch is a member of the Masonic order of Charleston, also of Glen Elk lodge, No. 95, I. O. O. F., and of Glenwood camp, No. 40. His wife is an active member of the Baptist church, and the family ranks well socially and enjoys a wide circle of friends. The great-great-grandfather of our subject was a colonel under Gen. Washington in the war of the Revolution, and served with distinction through the same, and underwent the terrible suffering endured by that valiant band at Valley Forge, with the illustrious father of his country.

William S. Summers was born in Kanawha county, Va., August 27, 1834, his parents being William S. and Sydney L. Summers. The father was born in Alexandria, Va., in 1797. He was a son of William and Isabella (Shaw) Summers, the father being a direct descendant of the Summers family that came to America with Leonard Calvert in 1634, and settled in Maryland. The progenitor of the family who came over with Calvert, was the father of John Summers, who built the first house on the site of the city of Alexandria, and was the father of William Summers. John Summers was born in Maryland in 1687, and died in Alexandria in 1791. William Summers was the father of several sons, among the number being our subject's father. The latter married Miss Sydney L. Summers, who lived to the advanced age of eighty-six years, and died at Charleston. The marriage resulted in the birth of the following named: Albert E., Anna I., who married R. J. Ryon, and William Sydney. The father was a merchant by occupation, and come to the Kanawha

valley in 1820. He merchandised and manufactured salt during his entire business life. Our subject was educated at the old Mercer academy at Charleston, and at the university of Virginia. He studied law, was admitted to the bar in 1857, and began practice at Charleston. At the beginning of the civil war he entered the Confederate service, served throughout the war, and after the surrender returned to Charleston to resume the practice of law. What was known as the "Ironclad oath" was required of legal practitioners at that time, and our subject, being unable to subscribe to this oppressive test, abandoned his profession and became a civil engineer. This business he has since followed, and has frequently been called on to do important engineering work in connection with the construction of railroads and bridges. Mr. Summers is a member of the Masonic fraternity, being past master of Kanawha lodge, No. 20, A. F. & A. M., past high priest of Tyrean Royal Arch, chapter No. 13, past eminent commander of Kanawha commandery, No. 4, K. T., and was for several years prelate of the latter body. October 12, 1886, he was united in wedlock to Miss Nannie E., daughter of Dr. James Stewart, living near Raymond City, Putnam county, W. Va. They are descendants of the famous Stewart family of Scotland. Mrs. Summers died September 1, 1887, of typhoid fever. Our subject is a citizen of Putnam county, but has an office in Charleston. In his business relations as well as in society, he stands in the front rank and enjoys very general esteem.

Job E. Thayer, one of the best known business men of the state, was born in Braxton county, December 19, 1827, the son of Job and Fannie (Taylor) Thayer. He was given but slight opportunity to gain an education but received most of his education under the tutelage of his mother. He learned the trade of a coppersmith, sheet-iron worker and tinsmith, and first carried on that business in Charleston. After having been engaged in various different enterprises in various different places and having met with more or less success he finally, in 1872, returned to Charleston, where he has since resided. He is now engaged in the manufacturing and repairing of steamboats, and does a very extensive business. At the breaking out of the war he was the senior captain in the state militia. During the war he built a boat which took part in several battles and became famous. She was known as the Peace Maker. Mr. Thayer is secretary and treasurer of the Charleston Dry Dock company, and a member of the Phoenix Coal & Coke company, of which he is also secretary and treasurer. Mr. Thayer is a prohibitionist of the most pronounced type, and takes an active part in the affairs of the party. He was first married in 1857 to Miss Eliza J. McClung. She died in 1860. He was again married in 1863, Miss Addie Harbin becoming his wife. Eight children are the result of this

union: Lydia, John G., Addie P., Hattie D., Louise T., Julia B., Job Edwin and Edith W. The family are members of the First Presbyterian church of Charleston, of which he was a deacon for several years, and is now an elder.

William T. Thayer, a member of the firm of O. A. & William. T. Thayer, was born near Charleston, in Kanawha county, July 22, 1831. After obtaining a good public schooling he engaged in the tin, copper, sheet-iron and stove business at Malden, and subsequently established a foundry and machine business, with his brother, O. A. Thayer. During the war he joined the Confederate army as a member of the famous Kanawha riflemen, and was later transferred to Dr. Hale's artillery. Mr. Thayer is the treasurer of the Little Fire Creek Coal company, president of the Beury Coal and Coke company, treasurer of the Buffalo Creek Coal company, and also president of the following companies: The Potts Valley Mining and Manufacturing company, the Sterling Coal and Coke company, and a director of the Charleston Steam Ferry company. He was one of the charter members of the Bank of the West, which was merged into the State bank, and from that into the First National bank, of Charleston. In December, 1863, he married Miss Ann E. Atkinson, daughter of John C. Atkinson, of Fort Smith, Ark., by whom he had three children: William T., Jr., Mary Atkinson and John A. The family are members of the First Presbyterian church, of Charleston. Mr. Thayer was a large contributor at the time of the building of this church, and is always to be found with the progressive and enterprising men in church and business circles. He and his brother are among the wealthiest men of Charleston, and this is the more to their credit, insomuch as they started life with nothing but youth and health. They are men of fair minds and strict probity.

Otis A. Thayer was born in Putnam county, W. Va., October 26, 1835, son of Job and Fannie (Taylor) Thayer. He was reared in the Kanawha valley, receiving his education in the public schools of that period. In early life he and his brother, William T., established a foundry and machine shop at Malden, then the center of the salt and coal industry, and there did an extensive business until 1870, when they erected their present plant at Charleston, moving their business to that city. This is the largest concern of the kind in that section of the state. In addition to the latter business they are also extensively interested in the coal business in the New River fields. Mr. Thayer is a stockholder and director in the Charleston Steam Ferry company, president of the Little Fire Creek coal company, treasurer of the Buffalo Creek Coal and Coke company, director of the Sterling Coal and Coke company, and treasurer and director of the Potts Valley Mining and Manufacuring company. At

F. S. Thomas
Charleston
W. Va.

the breaking out of the war he was a lieutenant in the state militia, but took no active part in the conflict. Mr. Thayer's marked financial success is due solely to his own individual efforts, and what is far better, one who throughout his career has preserved his integrity. In 1864, Miss Annette Putney, daughter of Richard E. Putney, of Malden, became his wife, and has borne him five children: G. Todd, James R., Annette M., Otis A., Jr., and Harry G. The family are members of the First Presbyterian church of Charleston. Mr. Thayer's parents were natives of Massachusetts, and moved with a colony to Maryland, where they purchased land in the French Creek valley, and subsequently moved to the Kanawha valley. Four of their sons are now living, viz.: Seth, Job E., William T. and Otis A.

Dr. F. S. Thomas, the subject of this sketch, was born near Sissonville, Kanawha county, W. Va., August 18, 1850. Upon the death of his father, George D. Thomas, in 1863, young Thomas at the early age of twelve or thirteen, was thrown upon his own resources. He soon comprehended the fact that he was not born to a life of luxuriance, indolence and idleness, and like a brave lad, as he was, he set to work to make his way in the world by his own exertions, turning his hand to any useful and paying occupation that offered, sandwiching study with his work from time to time as opportunity permitted. These personal efforts and struggles were persistently continued until at twenty, he had acquired a fair English education, accumulated a little means, and, what was of equal importance, had established a well grounded confidence in himself. When, at about twenty-five or twenty-six, he determined to settle upon some definite purpose and plan for his future career, he decided to adopt the profession of medicine, and entered the office of Dr. F. P. Carpenter, of Putnam county, to commence his studies. Later he attended medical lectures at, and graduated from the University of Maryland in 1878. Returning to his native county he located and offered for practice in the town of Malden; his success was immediate and gratifying, even exceeding his own expectation. In the fall of 1879 he married Miss Ruth Lee Putney, daughter of the late Dr. James Putney, who had long been the leading physician of Malden. Feeling the need of a wider field for his professional operations, Dr. Thomas moved to and opened his office in Charleston in 1884, and here his success has been commensurate with his broader field and opportunities. With a commendable determination to thoroughly qualify himself in all the branches of his profession and to keep up with the rapid advances being made of late years, Dr. Thomas attended a post-graduate course in the Bellevue Hospital Medical college, New York, in the winter of 1886–7, and received the diploma of that institution, and has taken post-graduate courses and hos-

pital practice in New York and Baltimore nearly every winter since. His studies and practice have been general, covering the entire field of medicine. He is a good surgeon, a skillful obstetrician, and a successful general practitioner. He is well-known throughout the Kanawha valley as a consultant, and in most difficult and complicated cases he is either employed as principal or called in consultation. This is a high compliment to the doctor's skill and reputation, both by the public and by his professional brethren. For a few years past Dr. Thomas has been devoting much study to nervous and mental diseases, in which he is now an admitted authority in the valley, and he is looking forward to the possibility that he may conclude to devote himself to that class of practice as a specialty. He is yet in the prime of his early manhood — being but forty — with the prospect of a long, useful and honorable career before him. From his native pluck and unaided exertion, which have made him what he is, his professional skill and reputation, his prompt and close attention to his professional duties, and his courteous, gentle and pleasant manners, he has won and deserves the admiration, confidence and esteem of his friends and neighbors and the general public. Personally, Dr. Thomas is tall, erect and fine looking. In his domestic relations he is happily situated, having an attractive home, an amiable wife and two interesting children.

J. M. Thomas, the efficient superintendent of the Kanawha county poor farm, was born in that county in 1833. Pleasant and Sarah (Rust) Thomas, his parents, were both natives of Virginia, Buckingham and Fauquier counties, respectively. Pleasant came to this county when a child in arms with his father, James, who located at Upper Falls on Coal river, where he and his brother Joseph built the first grist-mill, and the only one operated in that section for many years. Their father was a native of Wales. James was a soldier in the Revolution, was in the battle of the Brandywine and was present at the surrender of Cornwallis, at Yorktown. Sarah Rust Thomas was a daughter of an Englishman. Pleasant Thomas, who was a farmer, died in 1867. He was a captain of the state militia at different times, and was always known as "Captain" Thomas. His wife died at the age of ninety-two years, June 23, 1890. J. M. and two sisters are the children left of the six born to these parents. Mr. Thomas has always lived in Kanawha county. He was first married October 19, 1855, to Miss Elizabeth Thomas, a cousin. She died in January, 1859. J. C. and Pleasant E. were the fruit of this union. March 15, 1860, he married Miss Rebecca Milam. She passed away December 1, 1865, leaving two children, B. F., and another deceased. On the 1st of September, 1867, Mr. Thomas led Miss Mary Maddox to the marriage altar, and three children

are the result of the union, Sarah F., William D., and one dead. Mr. Thomas has been a trustee of the schools for many years. He is a member of the Old School Baptist church and his wife of the Missionary Baptist denomination. He cast his first presidential vote for Buchanan.

John L. Thornhill, real estate and insurance agent at Charleston, W. Va., was born in Rappahannock county, Va., February 22, 1861. His father was LaFayette Jonathan Thornhill, and a native of the Old Dominion, and of English extraction. He wedded Fannie M. Zimmerman, also of Virginian birth, but of Scotch-Irish lineage. Unto the marriage there were born two children, our subject being the younger. The father died in Virginia and the mother subsequently became the wife of B. F. Nays, with whom she now lives in Charleston, W. Va., since 1866. The subject of this biography was reared in Charleston, where he gained a limited common school education, which he has broadened through the avenue of books, papers and experience. From early boyhood he has been on his own resources, and has engaged in whatever work or employment he could for a livelihood, always manifesting an energetic and industrious character. He served an apprenticeship at the printer's trade; was for a time a telegraph messenger; served as clerk in the Charleston post office, and for six years managed the *Daily and Weekly Star*, of Charleston. In 1884 he was elected vice president of the West Virginia Press association, and was the West Virginia delegate to the convention of the National Editorial association which was held at San Antonio, Texas, in 1888. At the age of eighteen years he was made mail and banking clerk for the West Virginia house of delegates, and held the position for seven years. In March of 1890, Mr. Thornhill suspended the newspaper business and has since been actively engaged in the real estate and insurance business. He is the special agent for West Virginia for the Mutual Benefit Life Insurance company, of Newark, N. J., and has made a marked success in his present business. In 1890, October 15, Mr. Thornhill was united in marriage with Miss Clothielde D. Powell, of Danville, Va. Mr. Thornhill is a zealous member of the order of K. of P., and of the Mystic Circle.

John A. Truslow was a well known and prominent figure of Charleston for more than two-thirds of a century. He was born in Charleston, then but a small village, on the 13th of March, 1813. He acquired a good common school education in the village, under the tuition of Herbert P. Gaines, Jacob Rand and other prominent educators in the early history of the town. Upon leaving school, and when quite young, he conducted a tailoring establishment there. In 1833, May 8th, he married Miss Rebecca Sheperd, also a native of Charleston. His second business venture was a tannery in connection with a leather, sad-

dle and harness store. In 1852 he was made magistrate under the old law, and served for upward of twenty-five years. At the close of the civil war he was elected mayor of the city and served four years. In both these positions he made a useful and efficient officer, but received no salary or fees for either. In 1867 he built a hotel on Front, now Kanawha street, and named it the St. Albert, after his own middle name. November 4, 1868, he married Miss R. S. Leps, of Romney, Hampshire county. In 1876 he rebuilt his hotel, which had been burned the year before. He was a warm friend and admirer of the late Judge Summers, and in 1871 was instrumental in having Summers county named after Judge Summers. It is not given to all to be heroes, martyrs, statesmen or world reformers. Mr. Truslow was not aggressive and did not aspire to be any of these. His was of a modest, unpretentious and retiring disposition, and he led a quiet and comparatively uneventful life, free from antagonism and bitter personal conflict, enjoying the good will, confidence and esteem of his friends and neighbors, who appreciated his plain, practical common sense and straightforward unambiguous methods. He was scrupulously correct and upright in all his dealings and a thoroughly conscientious man. In politics he was early an "old line whig," later, he was, for a time identified with the greenback party. In the latter years of his life he was a democrat, though at all times conservative. He took little or no part in politics beyond casting his vote. Caution was largely developed in him and he was a believer in rigid economy, public and private. He did not often visit or go into society, but enjoyed a quiet and earnest talk about serious matters with his confidential friends, and equally a light social, jocular chat. He had not a robust constitution, but leading a temperate life in all things, he enjoyed a fair degree of health, until the effects of age began to tell on him. He often allowed himself to be worried, or worried himself unnecessarily about his current business affairs, and everyday trivial matters, making mountains out of mere hills. For about fifty years he was a member of the First Presbyterian church, and was an elder after 1867. He was sometimes sorely troubled about the scripture teachings and interpretations, and the mysterious workings of Providence. He often criticised the church tenets and creeds, reserving to himself the right of large freedom of thought, and what he could not understand he did not accept unreservedly, but with a sort of mental reservation and protest. In business he was fairly prosperous. His judicious investments in town lots and his persistent holdings realized him an independent competence. He provided handsomely for his widow, and having no children, remembered liberally his family relatives. From his advancing age and waning strength he very well knew for some time before his death that his end was near.

He talked about it calmly and philosophically, and seemed resigned to, and ready for, the great change, which he hoped and believed would better his condition. The mysterious change came August 4, 1890, and he was no more. His long pilgrimage was ended, and he rests in Spring Hill cemetery, leaving to his many friends the memory of a long and useful life of stainless integrity and honor.

Oscar A. Veazey, of Dego Station, is a well-known civil and mining engineer. His birth place was in Fayette county, Va., (now West Virginia), at Kanawha Falls, May 25, 1851, being the date of his birth. He was the son of James and Eliza (Stockton) Veazey. James was born in Maryland. He first went to Beaver county, Penn., where he became deputy surveyor of the county, and later a steamboat captain. After moving to Fayette county, he embarked in the general mercantile business with a man by the name of Amkeny, the firm name being Veazey & Amkeny. They owned two stores, one at Ganley Bridge, and the other at Fayetteville. Mr. Veazey's death occurred December 15, 1860, near the mouth of Twenty Mile creek, on Gauley river, where he had removed two years previous. Mrs. Veazey died at the same place in November, 1859. The origin of the Veazey family was in France, but later they adopted England as their country. Eliza (Stockton) Veazey was born at Kelly's creek, in Kanawha county, October 20th, 1825, she being a daughter of Aaron Stockton, a native of Princeton, N. J., born January 14th, 1785, who was a first cousin of the famous Commodore Stockton. Oscar is the only living issue of this marriage, the other four children having died young. He was raised in Fayette county, where his schooling was begun. Subsequently he went to Lewisburg and attended the school near that place, then taught by George W. Taylor, who was also Mr. Veazey's mother's instructor, about twenty-five years prior to this date. In 1866, Mr. Veazey entered St. Vincent's college, at Wheeling, W. Va., and remained there for three years. On the 1st of September, 1869, he started with an engineering corps for Sewell, Fayette county, under the command of Maj. William A. Jones, to locate the proposed line of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad, from that point to Hawk's Nest. As as example of the hardships they were compelled to undergo, it will be sufficient to say that it took the corps two months and twenty days to locate eleven miles on New river. Meanwhile they lived in tents which were transported in boats. Mr. Veazey remained in the employ of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad until January, 1872, since which time he has been a civil and mining engineer. May 24, 1877, he was married to Miss Mattie B. Smith. She was born in Kanawha county, W. Va., January 22, 1853, the daughter of J. S. F. Smith, a native of Charleston, S. C., who was at one

time the editor of a paper in Lewisburg, Greenbrier county, W. Va. The children born of this happy union are: Verna, Victor and Kathleen, and three others deceased. Mr. Veazey was appointed first inspector of mines of West Virginia, May 31, 1883, by Gov. J. B. Jackson, and served with satisfaction to all until July 1st, 1885, when his term of office expired. Previous to his appointment to the office of state mine inspector, Mr. Veazey was chief engineer of the Paint Creek railroad, the Kanawha railway, and the Kanawha & Coal River railroad, all of which were located by him, and the two first mentioned were constructed under his supervision. In the year 1887, he was employed for nearly a year by the Baltimore & Ohio railroad as chief engineer of the Baltimore, Grafton & Charleston railroad, a branch line of the Baltimore & Ohio. When the Baltimore & Ohio abandoned the building of this line, Mr. Veazey was employed for a time on the main Stem division of the Baltimore & Ohio but resigned to return to his more lucrative general practice of civil and mining engineer in the Kanawha valley.

J. W. Vickers, of the Vickers Wagon company of Charleston, was born in Pulaski county, Va., December 3, 1846, son of Harrison and Zerelda (Bateman) Vickers. After obtaining a good schooling in the public schools of his native county, Mr. Vickers learned the wagon-maker's trade, later engaging in the manufacture of wagons at Dublin, Pulaski county, where he continued for several years; during the time built the Banner house, No. 2. In 1879 he came to Charleston and established his present works, which has since grown to such an extent that they have been compelled to erect the commodious buildings now occupied by them on the corner of State and Court streets. This concern manufactures all kinds of buggies and wagons. In 1861 Mr. Vickers joined the Confederate army as a member of the Fourth Virginia infantry. He was taken prisoner and confined at Point Lookout for three months, while being transferred to Elmira he jumped from the train 100 miles from New York and made his escape. He holds the office of lieutenant colonel in Camp Patton, and is an active member of the democratic party. On December 4, 1866, he married Miss Alice Haney, daughter of Hiram Haney. She died in 1874, leaving one child, May. Mr. Vickers married Miss Jennie Graham for his second wife, and she has borne him five children: Estella, Graham, John, Bertie and Virginia. Both he and his wife are active members of the First Presbyterian church of Charleston. While living in Pulaski county Mr. Vickers was a member of the town council of Dublin for several years, and was also town sergeant.

Charles Ward, the subject of the following sketch, was born at Southam, near Leamington, England, in 1841; was educated in the Non-conformists' private school in Leamington, after which

Charles Ward

he was placed with the Leamington Gas compamy, where he became practically acquainted with, and proficient in, the various branches of the gas business. He served here with this company until he was twenty-one, and engaged with them for one year longer, when he was offered and accepted a position with the Liverpool Gas company, having charge of the Gaston district, where he remained about two years, when the company recommended him to a large and old established iron works in Liverpool, as manager of their works. Their business was to furnish ornamental and artistic iron work for public buildings. During this engagement, in 1866, he married Miss Margaret Mackville, formerly of Halifax, England. They have now three children living. In 1870, moved by a spirit of adventure and a desire to try his fortune in the new world and at the same time to gratify the wishes of his wife, to follow her parents, who had removed to this country, he came over to America, stopping first at Cincinnati, where his wife's parents then resided. In the the spring of 1871 the Charleston Gas Works, then newly erected, secured the services of Mr. Ward, as gas engineer and general superintendent, which position he held to the advantage and satisfaction of the company until, in the financial depression following the panic of 1873, the gas works changed ownership, organization and management. After this Mr. Ward opened a gas and steam fitting establishment, with a general stock of gas, steam-fitting and kindred supplies, in which he did a fairly good business. In 1878, a friend of his, who was building a steam packet boat for the upper Kanawha (above Charleston) where light draft and speed are required, consulted Mr. Ward as to the best style of machinery, and especially boiler, to suit the requirements of the case. He soon decided that the usual practice of using flues or tubes with fire within and water on the outside was erroneous, and should be reversed, and he contracted to build a boiler for the boat on the plans he had outlined. There was much general interest manifested in the result of the experiment. Among steamboat engineers and others there were of course many to predict entire failure; others thought it had some good features, but shook their heads in doubt as to its practical success; while still others believed, with Mr. Ward, that the theory and principle were correct, and that they could and would be worked out to success. When the boat was launched and the test made the boiler developed some very strong points of advantage, but, as usual, with new inventions, it also developed some defects; these Mr. Ward set about vigorously to remedy, devising a better system of tube connections, better water circulation in the boiler, less tendency to prime, greater accessability of parts for necessary repairs, etc. He then purchased a small Ohio river passenger steamer (the Katydid) noted for its

light draft and high speed. He constructed and put on her an improved Ward boiler, taking off her two old boilers. The effect was to lessen the weight, occupy less space, lessen the draft of water and increase the power and speed. This marked success induced the United States engineer in charge of the Kanawha river improvement to order one for a small steamer he was constructing for the use of the government on the river. This proved as great a success as the last, and the boat and the boiler have been in active use from that day to this. The publicity of these results brought Mr. Ward orders for his boilers from the Ohio and Mississippi rivers, the lakes, New York bay and Hudson river, and a number of fast yachts have substituted these boilers for those previously in use, with the result in every instance of giving the boat lighter draft and greater speed. The attention of the government was attracted to the boilers and the navy officials have had them put on several launches and torpedo boats with such success and satisfaction that the secretary of the navy, some time last year, advertised for offers of boilers to be used on the war vessels building and to be built; the boilers offered for competition to be thoroughly tested by a commission composed of proficient government engineers and experts. Several styles of boilers were offered for competition, but, as the thorough and exacting character of the tests became known, one by one withdrew, until but two remained, the Ward boiler and one other. These were submitted to the prescribed tests. The Ward boiler went through the ordeal without failure, hurt or blemish, giving more than satisfaction to the commission, while the competing boiler broke down twice under the severe tests. The commission reported the Ward boiler as in every respect successful and satisfactory, and the secretary of the navy has followed it up by a contract with Mr. Ward for boilers for one or more of the war vessels now under construction, with the implied probability that they will be put on all the new government vessels. Later, and quite recently, a naval journal has taken up and discussed through its columns the subject of naval boilers and the latest improvements of this country and of Europe, considering the strong points of comparative advantages of each as to safety, low weight, economy of space occupied, capacity for high pressure, minimum of danger from explosion, rapidity of steam raising, efficient circulation of water, amount of evaporation per pound of fuel consumed, etc. The conclusion arrived at by these competent and practical engineers is that Mr. Ward's boiler is the best "all round" boiler in the world. This is very high, but, no doubt, deserved praise, and places Mr. Ward in the front rank of the important inventors of the age, and should, and no doubt will, enable him to reap a rich harvest of pecuniary reward, as well as honors, for the long years of labor and struggle,

with anxiety and hope deferred, which he and so many other inventors have encountered by the way in their progress to eventual and well-merited success. No sketch of Mr. Ward could do him justice without the current history of this boiler invention, with which he has been so long and so thoroughly identified. Mr. Ward is theoretically and practically familiar with most mechanical subjects, but in steam machinery generally, he is a high authority, being, from long application and close study, one of the best informed steam machinery engineers in this country. He is an associate of the American Society of Naval Engineers; member of the American Yacht club and some other societies. He has long been a member of the Presbyterian church, and a Mason of high degree and standing. He has fine natural and cultivated musical talent, and was, for a number of years, president of the Charleston Harmonic society. Physically, Mr. Ward is of low stature, heavy set and inclined to *embonpoint;* in manner, a polite and courteous gentleman; in habit, a very systematic, methodical and accurate man in the conduction of his own business affairs and his intercourse and dealings with others. He does not seek publicity or companionship, but devotes his time to the study of subjects that interest him and the practical working out of his own plans and schemes. He has firmness and dignity but is not aggressive, on the contrary, is modest and retiring. He is a valued and useful citizen, and has the respect and confidence of all who know him.

Joseph A. Wood, M. D., one of the leading physicians and surgeons of Kanawha county, W. Va., was born in that county November 24, 1857, the son of James S. and Ellen E. (Alexander) Wood, the former of whom was born and reared in Fayette county, where he died September 26, 1887. He was a mechanic and operated a farm in connection with his trade. He was the son of Elijah Wood, who was born in Virginia and was one of the pioneer settlers of Fayette county. He died in 1886, in his eightieth year. Ellen E. Wood is a native of Kanawha county, and now resides at Paint Creek, near the place of her birth. Doctor Wood's literary education was obtained in the public schools of his native county. In 1877 he began the study of the profession which he had chosen as best suited to his tastes and talents, under the tutelege of Dr. J. P. Harriman, with whom he continued until 1879, when he entered the Eclectic Medical institute, of Cincinnati, Ohio, and was graduated therefrom in the spring of 1882. He then returned home and began to practice, and has since evinced much skill and wisdom in his profession which is ample proof of the intelligence of his choice of a life vocation. September 6, 1888, he was appointed house physician of the Sheltering Arms hospital by the board of directors, and in March, 1890, was elected by the medical and

surgical staff as its physician for an indefinite period. He married Miss Harriet A. McGraw, December 13, 1882, by whom he has had three sons: Fred G., aged seven years; Herbert F., aged four years; and Robert D., aged two years. Mrs. Wood was the daughter of Alexander and Nancy McGraw, pioneers of Fayette county. He is now dead, but his wife resides in the old homestead. Dr. Wood is an honored member of the surgical society of the Kanawha valley, and has been a trustee of his school district ever since he attained his majority, an honor which few can boast of. Both he and his wife are members of the Baptist church, and after the death of his father he succeeded him as a steward of the society, which position he still holds. Although a republican Dr. Wood cast his first vote for John P. St. John.

Atherton M. Wooldredge, superintendent of the Black-Band Coal & Mining company, comes from an old Massachusetts family. His father John, the son of Thomas, who was born at Marblehead, Mass., of English parentage. In early life, he was engaged in the fisheries quite extensively, but later, became a shoe manufacturer. John was also born in Marblehead, and for many years was a prominent shoe manufaturer of Lynn, Mass. He now resides in California. His wife, Elizabeth Briggs Wooldredge, is now deceased. She was born in Marblehead. Atherton M. Wooldredge was born in 1851, in Marblehead, Mass. Until his twentieth year, he was engaged in acquiring an education, and was given all the advantages of the excellent schools to be found in that great educational state. Soon after leaving the Chauncy Hall school, of Boston, Mr. Wooldredge engaged in the manufacture of shoes at Lynn, which he continued for ten years. He then turned his attention to the railroad business, and in 1884, came to the Kanawha valley. For the first eleven months he occupied the position of assistant superintendent of the Black-Band Coal & Mining company, but at the expiration of that period, was promoted to his present office. Mr. Wooldredge is also superintendent of the Kanawha & Coal River railway. He has shown himself one worthy to be entrusted with great responsibilities, and is one of the most efficient mine superintendents in the state. He is a communicant of the Methodist Episcopal church, south, and his wife, a Baptist. He takes a deep interest in the political issues of the day, his political convictions being strongly republican. He cast his first presidential vote for R. B. Hayes. Mr. Wooldredge, at present, resides at Spring Hill, Kanawha county, W. Va.

Frank Woodman is a native of Mineral Point, Wisconsin, where he was born September 26, 1846. His father was Cyrus Woodman, a native of Maine, and decended from one of the oldest families of Massachusetts of Puritan lineage. He was

reared in his native state and graduated from Bowdoin college. He was educated for the bar but abandoned the profession in early life and went west, where for many years he was interested in land speculation, his partner being C. C. Washburn, of Madison, ex-governor of the state of Wisconsin. About the close of the war, he returned to New England and located at Cambridge, Mass., where his death occurred in 1889, aged nearly seventy-five. In early life he married Miss Charlotte Flint of Maine, member of a well known family. The marriage took place in Illinois and was productive of six children, the living ones being: Mary, Frank, Walter and Edward. The mother is now seventy-six years of age and resides at Cambridge. The subject lived with his parents in Wisconsin until nine years of age, and then spent three years with the family in Germany and France, where he learned the languages of both those countries. At the age of sixteen he entered the Phillips Exeter acadamy and three years later became a student at Harvard college where he was graduated in 1869, with a degree of B. A. and subsequently took the degree of B. M. Later he studied civil engineering at the Cambridge Scientific school and for three years thereafter worked on railroads in the northwest in the line of his profession. In 1871–72, he visited Paris, and for one year studied civil engineering in the polytechnic school of that famous capital. While absent abroad, Mr. Woodman visited many portions of Europe. In 1875 he settled at Charleston, W. Va., where he has since remained. When he came to Charleston, he purchased the Kanawha Woolen Mills machine shop, at present operated by a stock company of which our subject is secretary and treasurer. He holds the same positions in the Charleston Gas Co., is superintendent and treasurer of the Water Co., treasurer of the Kanawha Brick Co., stockholder and director in the Roy Furniture Co., and the Citizens National bank, president of the Salt Sulphur Springs Co., of Monroe county, and secretary of the Newcastle Land & Improvement Co., at Charleston. In 1884, he married Miss Nannie, daughter of Dr. John Cotton of Charleston. They have two children, both daughters: Ashton F., and Charlotte.

FAYETTE COUNTY.

J. L. Beury, general manager of the William Beury Coal & Coke company, the largest mining company in the New River district, is a Pennsylvanian by birth, and the son of Christian Beury, who emigrated from England to this country and settled in Pennsylania, where for many years he was engaged in operating coal mines. J. L. is the second of seven living children. He has been engaged in the coal business thirty years, and has been

conspicuous in the West Virginia coal fields since 1871. He was the first to ship a carload of coal from New River. He came to to the New River district when it was a wilderness inhabited by none except wild beasts. He has opened up nearly all of the leading mines, such as the Iwinnimat, Fire Creek, Echo, Caperton and Hawksnest. The mines operated by William Beury, Cooper & Co., are the Echo and Caperton, both producers of heavy steam coal. This company ships about sixty per cent. of all the coal shipped from the New River district, amounting to about 100,000 tons annually. Mr. Beury was married in Pennsylvania, to Miss Julia A. Foulds, and soon after brought her to the wilds of the New River country. She was a girl of seventeen years of age, and left a comfortable home to follow her husband into the wilderness, being the first white woman to live in Iwinnimat. They lived in a little log cabin for about five years at that place, when the nearest railroad was at White Sulphur Springs. From there they went to Hawksnest, which was wild country also, where they could get provisions but once a month; from the latter place they removed to Ansted; thence to Caperton, and finally to Beury, where they now reside. Mr. Beury has accumulated an immense fortune, having 25,000 acres of valuable land beside his mine interest. Four children have grown up in their home, named: Thomas C., Henry B., Joseph E. and Daisy E. The substantial and elegant home, which this man and wife so richly deserve after their life of hardship and privation, is in striking contrast to the log cabin which they lived in.

Mr. W. A. Brazie, the talented editor of the *West Virginia Free Press*, published at Fayetteville, Fayette county, W. Va., was born in Fayette county, December 27, 1871. His father, H. W. Brazie, is a native of New York state, having first seen the light at Utica, May 18, 1831. His wife, Mrs. M. S. (Walker) Brazie, was born in Brownstown, Kanawha county, W. Va. They are of French and German descent, respectively. Mr. W. A. Brazie learned the printer's trade in Fayetteville, and has since been identified with the press of that portion of the state. He was made editor of the *Free Press* in February, 1890, and is the youngest editor in the state, if not in the country. His progress has been remarkable thus far, and it is needless to say that if no evil happen him his future career will be even more bright than his past has been. His paper is the official republican organ of the county, and is a well edited, comprehensive publication. The *Free Press* was established in 1878, under the name of the *Enterprise*, was subsequently changed to the *World* and in the course of time was given its present title.

E. W. Bridge, secretary of the Beechwood Coal & Coke Co., of Claremont, Fayette county, W. Va., was born in Augusta, Me., December 6, 1849, his parents being William and Eliza

(Perkins) Bridge, who are still living at the age of eighty-four and eighty-three years, respectively. The father is the son of Judge James Bridge, who was an early settler and prominent judge of the state of Maine, and the mother the daughter of George Perkins, a nephew of Gov. John Hancock, of Massachusets. When E. W. Bridge was about seven years old, his parents moved to Boston, and he had the splendid educational advantages offered in the public and private schools of that city. He left Massachusetts to go to Pennsylvania in 1868, having accepted the position of manager of a coal company's store in the latter state. Since that time Mr. Bridge has been connected with coal mining in one capacity or another. He came to Caperton, W. Va., in 1880, and took charge of the office of William Beury, Cooper & Co., and acceptably filled that position until 1886, when he was tendered the secretaryship of the Beechwood Coal & Coke Co., which he accepted. Mr. Bridge was married at Shamokin, Penn., in the year 1883, to Miss Anna C. Kitchen, and they are the parents of three children: Samuel Haas, Helen R. and Lucy Perkins.

One of the older physicians of Fayette county is Dr. George H. Caperton, who for many years has been a successful physician. He is a native of Monroe county, W. Va., and was born there December 28, 1828. His academical training was obtained at the Virginia Military institute, where he graduated. Having decided to pursue a professional life he began the study of medicine in 1851, and was graduated from the medical college of the university of Pennsylvania in 1853, having taken a course of lectures at Richmond, Va., previous to his entering the university. During the war he was stationed in a military hospital for two years, having served in the ranks the first year of the war. August 23rd, 1854, was the date of his marriage to Miss Mary E. Henderson, a daughter of Walter and Mary E. (Holcombe) Henderson. Of the eight children born to them five are now living. One son, G. H., is the superintendent of the Fire Creek Coal and Coke company; Jane E., is the wife of Massey Warrick; Sarah P. married John P. Wales, and Florence and William G. Dr. Caperton came to Fire Creek in November, 1881, and he now has a practice confined principally to the coal and coke works of the town. He is a Mason, and he and his family are members of the Presbyterian church. The parents of the above mentioned were Hugh and Jane (Erskine) Caperton. For seven years the grandmother was held a captive by the Shawnee Indians in Mercer county. She was a native of Virginia, was born August 2, 1786, died May 20, 1831. Hugh was born April 17, 1781, and died February 9, 1847, in Monroe county. He was a farmer and merchant, and during

his lifetime was a prominent and influential member of the community in which he lived.

Of the many enormous coal enterprises of the famous and fair Kanawha valley, the Carver Brothers' mines, near Coal Valley, figure very prominently, having a daily production of over 300 tons, and employing from eighty to a hundred men. The general manager of this prosperous concern is Aaron Carver, a nephew of the Carver Brothers. Mr. Carver was born near Minersville, Schuylkill county, Penn., May 9, 1861, the son of Worthy and Hannah (Williams) Carver, both natives of England, now residents of Nanticoke, Luzerne county, Penn. Their five children are all living. Mr. Carver in 1886 fulfilled the divine command by marrying Miss Anna L. Kent, of Virginia, a sketch of whose family will be found elsewhere in this work. Their home has been blessed by the advent of two children: Aaron K. and Julia. Mr. Carver is a member of the Masonic fraternity, lodge No. 74, of Coal Valley. In 1877 the Carver mines were first opened, and in 1887 Mr. Carver took the position of general manager, having then been with them since 1882. By his uniform courtesy and his evinced executive ability he has come to be one of the most popular mine managers in the Kanawha valley.

George W. Champ, a leading dealer in general merchandise, and also the proprietor of the Crescent Hotel, of Coal Valley, is the son of Sewell P. and Almeda (Eastwood) Champ. Sewell Champ was born in Craig county, Va. For many years he lived in the Kanawha valley, where he worked as a maker of salt fixtures. His later life was devoted to farming. He died in Kanawha county in 1866. His father was Christopher Champ, who was born in Botetourt county, Va.; his wife was of Irish descent, but he of French. Almeda (Eastwood) Champ was born in Kanawha county, and is now living in Charleston. George W. Champ, the principal of this biographical mention, was born in Kanawha county, Va., October 11, 1849. After receiving a fair common school education he worked as a plasterer for ten years, after which he embarked in the general mercantile business at Coal Valley in 1883. Mr. Champ has been twice married, his first wife being Jennie Cooper, of Fayette county, to whom he was united in marriage September 20, 1882. Carl Champ is the issue of this marriage. June 4, 1890, he was joined in wedlock to Miss Anna Allen, of Rockbridge county, Va. Mr. Champ is a member of Henrietta lodge of I. O. O. F., of Coal Valley, of which lodge he was a trustee for one year. Since February, 1890, he has been the proprietor of the Crescent Hotel, and has thus made a great success of it. Mrs. Champ is a consistent member of the Baptist church.

M. A. Cheney, the president and manager of the Stockton Lumber company, of Kanawha Falls, W. Va., is a native of Massachusetts, having been born in that state January 8, 1854. He was the oldest of three children born to Damon E. and Elizabeth Z. (Manard) Cheney, natives of Massachusetts and New Hampshire, respectively. The father is now living in Kanawha Falls and is the superintendent of the mill at Kanawha Falls. Mr. M. A. Cheney received his scholastic training in his native state. He came to Kanawha Falls May 5, 1880. Two years previous to his removal he was married to Miss Helen Tyrell, of Chicago, Ill. Her parents are John and Caroline E. Tyrell, now residing in Chicago. Clara M., John T., Damon L. and J. Burleigh, are the children that have come to bless the home of Mr. and Mrs. Cheney. Mr. Cheney is a member of Montgomery lodge, No. 64, of the Masonic fraternity, of Kanawha Falls, and is a republican. The Stockton Lumber company is a large concern. Its capacity is enormous and the property consists of saw- and planing-mills at Kanawha Falls, and also a portable saw-mill on Bell creek, and nine miles of logging railroad, which mill and railroad is superintended by his brother, L. D. Cheney. Mr. Cheney has shown great ability and enterprise in his management of the business and doubtless has a very bright business career open before him.

The children born to Nehemiah and Catherine (Mankin) Daniel were: Jesse, Joel M., Robert H., Sarah H., William G., James H., and Nehemiah, now living, and Mary A., Nancy J., Massey E., Frances E., and Martha S., deceased. Nehemiah, Jr., the subject of this sketch, was born in Raleigh county, W. Va., February 27, 1848. His boyhood was passed in the common schools of the county, and his father dying when he was but four years of age, and his mother fourteen years, he was obliged to take care of himself at an early age. He first worked as a farm laborer. In 1880 he came to Fayette county, W. Va., and has since remained here, having engaged in the liquor business at Beury. In 1870 he was married to Miss Lizzie Evans, who died one year later. Miss Nellie Davis became his wife in 1873. Her death occurred in 1884. Jesse W. is the only living issue of the latter union. Mr. Daniel is a member of the I. O. O. F., Sewell lodge, No. 93. He has considerable interest in the Fayette Coal and Coke company, and has been successful in his enterprises generally.

John William Davis, one of the most efficient young physicians in the state, is the only child born to James L. and Deniza J. (Venable) Davis, natives of Albemarle and Bath counties, Va., respectively. They now reside in Kanawha county, W. Va., having moved there during the war. Mr. Davis was a salt manufacturer previous to the war. He was a captain in Gen. Pickett's

division of the Confederate army. Since the close of the Rebellion, he has been engaged in the mercantile business. His father, John Davis, was a native of Wales. John W. Davis was reared in Albemarle county, Va. In the year 1877, he was graduated from the university of Virginia, as a civil engineer. Two years later, he began the study of medicine, under Dr. J. T. Cotton and soon after, entered the college of Physicians and Surgeons at Baltimore, and was graduated therefrom in 1881. After his graduation, Dr. Davis practiced his profession until 1887, when he went to Europe. After remaining there for two years he was made a member of M. R., C. S. E. At the expiration of this time, he returned to America and settled permanently in Coal valley. He is the resident physician for the mines of the Carver Brothers, the Union Coal company, the Mount Morris Coal company, the Kanawha Coal company, and Straughn & Company. March 20, 1888, he was married in London, England, to Miss Lillian Sykes, of South Kensington, London. Dr. Davis, during his comparatively short career, has received more than the ordinary honors bestowed on young professional men, and having had the degree of Ph. D., conferred on him in addition to his medical degrees. He is a member of the K. of P., the I. O. O. F., Olive Branch lodge, No. 38, of Brownstown, and also of the Cleveland lodge of Elks of Cleveland, Ohio.

Daniel G. Dent, one of the principal merchants of Fayette county, W. Va., was born in Boone county, Va., in 1856. His parents were W. M. and Eliza (Harless) Dent, the former of whom was born in Bedford county, Va., in 1831, and the latter in Boone county; she died in 1872. W. M. Dent came to the Kanawha valley in 1848, and until 1870 was engaged in boating on the Kanawha river. Daniel was the second of eight children. He was reared in Boone and Kanawha counties and received a good common school education. In 1875 he married Miss Sarah Ellen Goodwin, of Roanoke, Va. She is a daughter of Abner J. Goodwin. Their one child is, Onvil T. Mr. Dent settled in Coal valley in 1884, and for about five months was in the employ of M. T. Davis & Co., as a coal weigher. He then became the manager of the Union Coal company's store, in which capacity he served for one year. He then went to Cannelton and became the book-keeper and commissary for C. H. Strong & Son, government contractors at Mt. Carbon, W. Va., remaining there until 1886, when he entered the employ of the Great Kanawha Colliery company, as manager of their store. After the expiration of three years, Mr. Dent embarked in his present business enterprise at Coal Valley, and now has a large and increasing business. He is a trustee of the school district in which he resides.

Alexander W. Hamilton, the present incumbent of the office

of clerk of the circuit court of Fayette county, W. Va., and the candidate for re-election in the fall of 1890, was one of three children born to James B. and M. I. (Wood) Hamilton. The children are: William T., Bettie S. and Alexander W. The latter, the subject of this mention, was born June 2, 1856, in Fayette county. When fifteen years of age, having previously been engaged in obtaining an education in the common schools, he accepted a position as clerk in a general store at Mountain Grove. For seven years he was employed as a clerk and at the expiration of that time was made shipping clerk and weigh master for a coal company, which position he held for four years. Miss Rachel M. Jones, of Fayette county, became his wife in 1882, and has borne him two sons and one daughter, namely: Grace V., James C. and Edward S. In 1884 he was elected to his present honorable position and has discharged his duties to such good effect that the people have chosen him as a candidate for re-election at the next election. Since casting his first presidential vote for James A. Garfield, Mr. Hamilton has been an active and loyal member of the republican party, and is considered as one of its most valued constituents in the county." He is a member of Lafayette lodge, A. F. & A. M., No. 57, of Tyrean Royal Arch chapter, No. 13, of Charleston, Kanawha commandery, No. 4, of Charleston, and is a Knight Templar. James B. Hamilton, father of the above, was born in Nicholas county, Va., and died October 3, 1864. He was a very skillful civil engineer. His father was Col. Thomas B. Hamilton, who was raised in Bath county, Va., and came to Fayette county before its organization. His father was a native of Scotland. M. I. (Wood) Hamilton, the wife of James B., was born in Fayette county, and still survives her husband.

One of the largest coal companies now in operation in the Kanawha valley is the Gauley Mountain Coal company, of Ansted, W. Va., which is composed of the following stockholders, viz.: George Bliss and Hon. Abram S. Hewitt, of New York, R. W. Montague, of White Sulphur, W. Va., and A. M. Hobson and William N. Page, of Virginia; William N. Page, president and general manager, and A. M. Hobson, assistant general manager, have been officers of this company since its organization, in September, 1889, when it was changed from what was known as the old Hawk's Nest Coal company to its present name (The Gauley Mountain Coal company). The present capacity of this mine is about 1,000 tons per day, which is proposed to be increased as rapidly as possible to meet the enormous demands for this particular coal; this property has all the Kanawha and New River coals, but the 14-feet steam vein is the only one now in active operation. This mine is connected with the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad's main line by a standard

gauge branch of four miles in length, and gives employment to about 200 men at present.

One of the leading young physicians and surgeons of Fayette county, W. Va., is Charley S. Hoover, M. D., the subject of this sketch. He came into this world in 1862, in the state of Virginia. His parents, John S. and Jane Wilson (Jeffries) Hoover, were both naties of the same state, Mrs. Hoover's father being William Franklin Jeffries, a prominent and wealthy gentleman of English descent. These parents had nine children, of which Charley was the sixth. He was reared in the Kanawha valley, and received his education at Shelton college, from which he was graduated B. A. He began the study of medicine under Dr. J. T. Cotton, of Charleston, and remained with him for two years, when he entered the Ohio Medical college at Cincinnati, Ohio, and graduated there in 1882. During his course there he received considerable practice in the various hospitals of the city. He next entered the university of Maryland, and graduated therefrom in 1884. Since 1884 he has been located at Coal Valley, and has built up an exceptionally fine reputation and a good practice. He is regular physician for several mining companies, and is also surgeon for the C. & O. R. R. company. He is one of the most prominent Masons in the state, having taken all the degrees, and is one of the youngest men in the state who has reached that standard. He is a democrat, and cast his first vote for Cleveland.

Dr. Nicholas Johnson, M. D., was born in Louisa county, Va., July 26, 1839, his parents being Thomas and Martha (Winston) Johnson. The father was born in 1785, and died when Nicholas was but five years old. He was a farmer of Scotch-Irish descent, and a prominent man of his county. His wife was a native of Louisa county, having been born there in 1800; she died when her son was but twelve years of age. Left an orphan, his brother, Bickerton Johnson, was appointed his guardian. His education was obtained in the common schools at Hanover academy. He began reading medicine in 1857 at the Richmond Medical college, where he took four summer and two winter courses of lectures, and also half session at Jefferson Medical college, Philadelphia, from which he seceded with 300 southern students, when John Brown was hung at Harper's Ferry. In 1861 he graduated from this institution (Richmond), and almost immediately after graduation enlisted in the Louisa county Blues, Thirteenth Virginia regiment of the Confederate army. He was a private for eighteen months, having been in the first battle of Manassas. Subsequently he was appointed assistant surgeon of the regiment and served in that capacity during the remainder of the war. He was under Stonewall Jackson in all of the principal battles of the Shenandoah valley. After the war, he returned home

penniless, his property having consisted of fifty slaves. Until 1871 he practiced his profession in his native county, but in the latter year came to West Virginia, and has lived at Powellton since 1886. February 9, 1876, he was joined in marriage to Miss Sally Langhorne, of Botetourt county, Va., by whom he has had six children: Agnes K., Linda W., Mary L., Thomas Lyle, Lewis P., and one daughter now dead. Mr. Johnson is a prominent member of the Masonic fraternity, having been made a member in Botetourt county, Va., in 1874. Dr. Johnson has served as a member of the board of health of Kanawha county, and is a member of the medical society of the Kanawha valley. He has achieved much during his professional career, and is regarded as one of the leading physicians of the county. His wife is a communicant of the Episcopal church.

William R. Johnson, the owner and operator of the Crescent Coal mines, tract of 473 acres, of Fayette county, W. Va., is a native of Chesterfield county, Va. Mr. Johnson commenced operating these mines in January, 1877, and so rapid has been the progress of this mammoth concern that he now employs from 200 to 225 men, mining about 400 tons of screened coal a day. He also owns sixty-two coke ovens with a capacity of about seventy tons daily. The Crescent mines consist of three different mines, of different qualities of coal, eagle, gas and block. The proprietor of them was the first operator to ship coal by barge on the Kanawha river, the event taking place April 5, 1888. The enterprise of this man is not satisfied, however, by the slow method of shipping his product by boat when railroad facilities can be obtained, and the coal and coke are put on the market as rapidly as possible. Mr. Thomas G. Bartlam is the efficient superintendent, and Mr. J. C. Grymes the bookkeeper. Previous to engaging in the coal industry, Mr. Johnson was a contractor and civil engineer on the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad, and was the contractor and builder of the Big Bend tunnel, near Hinton, on the line of the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad. This tunnel is one and a quarter miles in length.

Lester Keller, M. D., was born in Gallia county, Ohio, February 25, 1859, the son of Stephen and Lynia (Louks) Keller, natives of Ohio. The mother died December 31, 1888. The father is still living in Ohio where he has always been engaged in tilling the soil. He is a son of Abraham Keller, who was of German descent. Dr. Keller was raised in Gallia county, and there completed his schooling in the high school at Gallipolis. He chose the medical profession as his life work and began reading in 1879, with Dr. W. W. Mills, of Gallipolis. He shortly entered the Ohio Medical college, of Cincinnati, and was graduated from that institution in 1883. For nine months he was engaged in practicing at Gallipolis, but at the expiration of that time, in

1884, came to North Coalburg, Kanawha county, W. Va., and remained there for a year and a half. At this time he removed to Beury, Fayette county. He now has an extensive practice. June 16, 1883, Miss Mary Allen, daughter of Col. J. Allen, of Ironton, Ohio, became his wife. Dr. Keller is the vice-president of the State Medical society, having been elected in 1890, and is also a member of the Kanawha Medical and Surgical society, and is secretary of the Fayette county Medical society, and an active member of the National Association of Railway Surgeons. He is the local surgeon of the C. & O. R. R., and is on the staff of the Sheltering Arms hospital of Kanawha county. He and Dr. Vanden are physicians for William Beury, Cooper & Co., at Caperton and Echo, Central Coal and New River Coke companies. He is a prominent republican, being elected in 1890, over three opponents to the state legislature from Fayette county.

Charles H. Kent, book-keeper for the M. T. Davis Coal company, was born in Campbell county, Va., April 6, 1833, the son of George W. and Ann A. (Olliver) Kent, both natives of Charlotte county, Va. The father emigrated to St. Charles county, Mo., about 1830, he died there in 1833, about six months before the birth of his son, Charles H. Soon after his death his widow returned to Virginia, and is now residing at Lynchburg, at the age of seventy-eight years. Her father, Joseph Olliver, was a Revolutionary soldier. His wife was Ann Askew, who came from England with Lord Dunmore. Charles H., and his brother Robert L., a prominent lawyer of Lynchburg, who died in 1858, were the only children born to this marriage. Mr. Kent was educated in the common and high schools of his native town, and also attended the New London Academy. Soon after finishing his education he went to work at Yellow Branch, Va., and was engaged in business there for three years, after which he entered the employ of the Virginia & Tennessee R. R. After four years with the latter company he became their agent at Buford station, and was also made postmaster there. Having remained with the company for two years in this capacity he then accepted the position of book-keeper for I. and T. Steers, contractors on the C. & O. R. R. At the breaking out of the war he recruited 300 Irish soldiers for the Confederate army, then removed with his family to the old homestead, and there engaged as book-keeper for Thomas Steers, who operated the Cloverdale furnace, which made the iron for the Confederate government. In a short time he entered a company from his native county, under Capt. William Patterson. At Drury's Bluff they were engaged with all the gunboats there, when they made their attack on the fort. His company having been disbanded and distributed Mr. Kent was assigned to Capt. J. Hatlee Norton's company of heavy artillery, but this proving too monotonous he

obtained a transfer to Carpenter's battery, which was in active service in Louisa county, Va. This battery was in all the battles around Richmond, Spottsylvania Court House, at Lynchburg, and the Shenandoah valley, was with Gen. Early in his raid on Washington, and many other noted engagements. He was wounded at the battle of Winchester, December 19, 1864, and was compelled to be absent from his command for six months, but rejoined it early in the spring of 1865, and participated in the battle of Five Forks, Dinwiddie county, Va. Mr. Kent was married in 1853, to Miss Lucy W. Otey, a daughter of John B. and Angeline M. Otey, of Bedford county, Va. Robert O. and Anna L. are the children born of this happy union. Mr. and Mrs. Kent are members of the Methodist Episcopal and Presbyterian churches, respectively.

The Beury Coal & Coke company, one of the big concerns of West Virginia, has for its general manager Mr. O. C. Kubach, a practical coal man who has had many years of experience and has used them well. Mr. Kubach is a native of Germany. He came to this country when sixteen years old and settled in Pennsylvania. He came to Stone Cliff, Fayette county, W. Va., in August, 1885, and immediately assumed the responsible position which he now fills. He is also a stockholder and secretary and treasurer of the company. Since 1869 he has been actively identified with coal mining, and has never given his attention to any other business. This mine was first opened in 1880 by J. H. Bramwell, the present company purchasing it five years later. They now own some 2,000 acres of coal land. Their mine has a daily production of 500 tons of the best quality of steam and coking coal, and also have sixty beehive coke ovens, with a monthly capacity of 1,700 tons. Mr. Kubach took Miss Clara M. Mowry in marriage in 1874. She died in May, 1885, leaving two children, Howard C. and Clara M., to mourn the loss of a loving mother. In September, 1888, Mr. Kubach was again married, Miss Betty A. Toland becoming his wife. Anita T. is the fruit of this union. Our subject is a member of Shamokin lodge, No. 255, F. & A. M., of Shamokin, Penn., and past master of that lodge, also a member of Shamokin chapter, No. 264, R. A. M., at Shamokin, Maysville commandery, No. 10, K. T., of Maysville, Ky., and also of Osiris Temple, A. A. O. N. M. S., of Wheeling, W. Va. He became identified with the National Guard of Pennsylvania in 1874, serving for some time as second lieutenant of Company D, Seventh regiment infantry. In July, 1875, he was commissioned by Gov. Hartranft adjutant of the regiment, which position he held until March, 1881, when he resigned.

Frank E. Lair, manager of the Mount Carlton Coal company's store at Powellton, W. Va., was born in Rockbridge

county, Va., June 9, 1859. John and Fannie (McGuffin) Lair, his parents, are also Virginians, and reside in Rockbridge county, where the former operates a farm, having formerly been a merchant. They had seven children, five sons and two daughters. Frank attended the common schools of Rockbridge county and remained with his parents until his eighteenth year, when he launched out into commercial life as a clerk in a mercantile establishment, and liking the business has since made it his vocation. He removed to his present residence in 1889, and took charge of the Mount Carbon Coal company's store, which he has since managed, having given great satisfaction to all concerned. In 1884 he took unto himself a wife in the person of Miss Bettie E. Bowling, of Allegheny county, Va., and they have had three children: Frank E., William B. and Harry. Mrs. Lair is a member of the Baptist church. Mr. Lair is deputy postmaster of Mount Carbon. His first presidential vote was cast for Hancock, and he has since affiliated with the party which nominated him.

Charles Irvin Lewis, one of the oldest and best known physicians in the Kanawha valley, was born in Kanawha county, W. Va. (then Virginia), July 16, 1836. He was the eldest of two sons. His preliminary schooling was obtained in the public schools of the county, and he afterward became a student in the Virginia Military institute, in Rockbridge county, Va., which was then under the command of "Stonewall" Jackson. Jackson was one of the professors not in charge. Having decided to pursue the study of medicine with the intention of becoming a practicing physician, he obtained a place with Dr. W. D. Easley, in 1855, and commenced his medical studies, afterward reading with Dr. Thornton, of St. Albans. In 1858, he graduated from the Jefferson Medical college, of Philadelphia, and in the fall of the same year, took up his residence at Cannelton, Va., where he remained until the breaking out of the Rebellion. At this time, he, by his own efforts, raised a company for the Confederate army, which was known as Company I, Eighth Virginia cavalry regiment. For the first six months he was in command, but was superseded by Tom Huddleson, who held the command but a short time, Huddleson being killed, when Mr. Lewis was re-instated, and served until the close of the war. He figured in several engagements in West Virginia, and East Tennessee, was in the battle of Cedar Creek, went with Gen. Early on his raid to Washington, and through it all conducted himself with faithfulness and bravery. At the close of the war he returned to Cannelton and continued in his practice there until 1884, when he moved to Kanawha Falls, and now resides there in retirement from his arduous labors, blessed with the comfort of a life, spent in usefulness and uprightness. Dr. Lewis is a member of the

Montgomery lodge, No. 64, of the Masonic order, and his political faith is founded on the tenets of the democratic party. Thomas A. and Mary (Stockton) Lewis, the parents of the above, were both Virginians. Thomas was born at Sweet Springs, Monroe county, Va., the son of Dr. Charles Lewis, who was also born in Monroe county. The latter was one of the leading physicians of the county, as well as one of the oldest. The Lewis family was originally of French extraction, but wandered away from their native land and became identified with Ireland and Portugal. The name in France was spelled Louis, and in Portugal was changed to Lewis. Thomas Lewis was the clerk of one of the first steamboats to ply on the Kanawha river, and for a number of years was engaged in the steam boat business. At one time was a deputy sheriff of Fayette county. His death occurred in Cannelton in 1880. His wife was Mary Stockton, who was born in Kanawha county. She died in 1877, mourned by a host of friends, as well as the sons who had lived to call her blessed.

David Edward Llewellyn, the efficient and successful general manager of the Mount Carbon Coal company (Limited), is a native of Wales. He was born in that country August 9th, 1863. His father was Mr. M. Llewellyn, a well-known mining engineer and colliery manager. Mr. D. E. Llewellyn was educated in the mining school of Wales, and at the age of twenty-one years, passed the difficult government examination, and qualified as a mining engineer, being granted a first-class certificate of competency in colliery management. Previous to his coming to America, he was connected with the Powell Duffeyn Steam Coal Collieries, at Aberdare. From the date of his arrival at Powellton on the 18th of January, 1889, Mr. Llewellyn acted in the capacity of assistant general manager until June 1st, of the same year, when he assumed the entire charge of the company's plant, and remained in that position until December, 1890, when he left to take over the general managership of the Thurmond Coal Company's mines, Thurmond, W. Va. Mr. Llewellyn's business ability and skill as a mining and civil engineer are undoubted. Since coming to this country he has but continued the wonderful success which characterized his every effort in the land of his nativity, and if life and health be spared him, he will, without doubt, become one of the leaders of his calling in the United States. Mr. Llewellyn is married and has one child, a beautiful little girl, named Gwladys Irene. Both Mr. and Mrs. Llewellyn are communicants of the church of England.

Symington Macdonald, the general manager of the great Kanawha Colliery Co., is one of the most efficient coal operators of the Kanawha valley, and, although his residence in that region has been short, he is well and favorably known. Mr.

Macdonald was born and raised in Scotland, where he was born January 5, 1844. John and Eliza (Webster) Macdonald, his parents, died in their native land, aged respectively, eighty-two and seventy-nine years. Symington is one of ten children born to them. Having acquired a good education in the land of his nativity, Mr. MacDonald became interested in mining, and for a number of years was manager of various coal and iron mines in Scotland. In the course of time he went to New Caledonia and took charge of the New Caledonia Mines Co.'s mines. Remaining there in that capacity for three years he came to Mount Carbon, Fayette county, W. Va., and assumed the management of the Great Kanawha Colliery Co., with whom he has since been identified, having won golden opinions as to his executive ability and gentlemanly character. In 1886, the year of his removal to Mount Carbon, Mr. Macdonald was united in marriage to Miss Elizabeth H. Fyfe, a Scotch lady. Three sons have been born to them, namely: Symington, George F. and Hew Webster. Mr. Macdonald is a member of the Mining Institute of Scotland, and he and his wife are members of the Scotch Presbyterian church.

George W. McVey, now deceased, was a son of Samuel McVey, who was a native of Scotland. He came to America when a young man, and in 1852 settled in Fayette county, Va., where he was engaged in working at his trade of a cooper until his death in 1855. George W. was born in Greenbrier county, Va., now W. Va. His death occurred July 27, 1889. He was a man of much prominence in his day, having held the office of county commissioner and was also a deputy sheriff of Greenbrier county. He came to Fayette county in 1852. His wife was Mary Morehead, who was born in Greenbrier county. She died in July, 1884, having been the mother of nine children, of whom George W., Jr., was the second. He was born in Greenbrier county, Va., May 21, 1843, and lived there until about eight years of age, when, with his parents, he came to Fayette county. The greater part of his education was received in his new home, and he has since remained in that county, where he has been identified with the business interests of the community for several years. He owns and operates a fine farm and in connection with this industry is engaged in mining in the state, having considerable coal property. In 1865 he was joined in marriage to Miss Eliza Smailes, of Fayette county. She died in 1872, leaving one daughter, the wife of James W. Masterson. Mr. McVey married for his second wife, in 1875, Miss Mattie Rogers, also a native of this county. Six children are the issue of this marriage: Elma, Elmo, James, Thomas, Dottie and Georgie M. Mrs. McVey was killed in a runaway accident July 24, 1889. Mr. McVey was elected sheriff of Fayette county in 1884, serving

one term. He was appointed deputy United States marshal by H. S. White, and is still serving. He is a member of A. F. & A. M., No. 57, of Fayetteville, Tyrean Royal Arch chapter, No. 13, and Kanawha commandery, No. 4. He is a member of the Shrine at Wheeling, and is a thirty-third degree Mason.

D. F. Mahood comes of an old Virginia family, both his parents were natives of that state and were the children of Virginians. His father, Thomas Mahood, the son of William, was a carpenter of Irish descent, he died in 1861. His wife was Malinda Wilmore; she died in 1880, at the home of her son D. F. Mahood, while visiting him. D. F. was one of seven children. Until about sixteen years of age he remained with his parents in Giles county, Va. At that time he came to West Virginia (then Virginia,) and attended school in Fayette county. After leaving school he became a clerk in a mercantile house at Fayetteville, and in 1866 began business for himself at Oak Hill. After four years he removed to Loop Creek and engaged in business there until 1884, when he established his present store at Mount Carbon, Fayette county. Although doing business at Mount Carbon, Mr. Mahood still resides at Loop Creek. During Cleveland's administration he served as postmaster of Mount Carbon. His energy and enterprise have served to build up a very good business, and he has come to be recognized as one of the leading citizens of the county. In 1867, Mr. Mahood married Miss Margaret Coleman, a native of Fayette county, by whom she has had one child, Ida. Mrs. Mahood is a communicant of the Methodist Episcopal church, south. During the war of the rebellion, D. F. Mahood enlisted in Company I, Eighth Virginia regiment, as a private and served his cause long and faithfully. He was engaged in the battles of Knoxville, Jonesville, Fayetteville, Morristown and several other hotly contested engagements too numerous too mention here. He was taken prisoner seven miles below Lynchburg, Va., and was confined at Camp Chase for one year. His political convictions are democratic. His first presidential vote was cast for McClellan.

The Hon. John C. Montgomery is the son of James C. Montgomery, mention of whom is made elsewhere. Mr. Montgomery was born in Fayette county, Va., September 26, 1848. He has always resided in Coal Valley with the exception of three years during the war. Mr. Montgomery has erected the larger portion of the town of Coal Valley, and now has the finest hotel between Charleston and Richmond in course of construction. In 1878 he was elected to represent the people of Kanawha county in the state legislature, for two years he served as a justice of the peace of Cabing Creek district, and was president of the board of education of that district for four

years. He is an ardent and efficient member of the democratic party and cast his first vote for Horace Greely. July 4, 1871, he was united in marriage to Miss Margaret J. Lykins, a daughter of Herod Lykins, of Fayette county. Peter Lykins, the grandfather of Herod Lykins, was the first settler at the mouth of Smithers creek, in the Kanawha valley. Mr. and Mrs. Montgomery are the parents of three children: Lawrence, Bertha and Blanche.

James W. Montgomery was born in Kanawha county, W. Va., April 9, 1846, his parents being James and Amanda (Brandon) Montgomery. James Montgomery was born in Fayette county, W. Va., his death occurred in 1880. He was one of the most prominent men in the state before its division, and represented Fayette and Raleigh counties in the state senate for three terms, and for two terms was sheriff of Fayette county. At the time of his death he owned nearly the entire town of Coal Valley. For two years during the Rebellion he was in the quartermaster's department of the Confederate army, but was obliged to withdraw on account of his age. His father was Henry Montgomery, one of the first settlers of the county of Fayette. Amanda (Brandon) Montgomery was a native of Kanawha county. She died about 1852, having been the mother of five sons and one daughter. James W. Montgomery received but a limited education on account of the existing war. For the past twenty years he has been engaged in the mercantile business at Coal Valley, and so well has he prospered that he is at present the proprietor of over 100 houses and lots in the town of of Coal Valley, and practically owns one-half of the place. He does an immense business in his general store, besides taking an active part in in several different enterprises. For twelve years past Mr. Montgomery has been the postmaster of Coal Valley, having been the first occupant of that office in the village. His first vote was cast for Seymour on the democratic ticket. On May 15, 1873, Miss Bettie M. Farley became his wife, and has borne him the following children: Lee, Charles, Helen, Alice and Florence (deceased). Mr. Montgomery's maternal great-grandfather was Benjamin Morris. In 1774 he built a frame dwelling in Coal Valley, the nails for which he conveyed by horseback from Alexandria, Va. It is still standing and is occupied.

John Nuttall, the proprietor and operator of the Nuttallburg Coal & Coke company, is an Englishman by birth, having come to this country in May, 1849, and settled on Staten Island, where he remained for seven years. In 1856 he removed to Center county, Penn., and after fourteen years' residence there came to Fayette county, W. Va. Since 1856 Mr. Nuttall has been extensively interested in coal mining. His first land purchase in West

Virginia, was made in 1870, and the first mine opened was four years subsequent. In July of the same year he shipped the first coal from New River valley. In 1882 the second mine was commenced, and the two properties now have a daily production of 400 tons of coal each. This coal is all heavy steam coal, and is always marketable at the best prices paid for that article. Three hundred and fifty men are employed. In addition to this valuable property Mr. Nuttall owns some 2,500 acres of the best coal land obtainable. He now resides in Nuttallburg with his family. This town was named in his honor, and is a monument to his enterprise and public spirit. Mrs. Nuttall's maiden name was Martha Blume. She is his third wife. By his first marriage Mr. Nuttall had four children, and by his second, one. Both he and his wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal church, and he is also a member of the Masonic fraternity, having been initiated into that order twenty years ago, while living in Center county, Penn.

J. E. Robins, M. D., comes from an old Pennsylvanian family, members of which have been prominently and honorably identified with the medical profession of that state for over half a century. Dr. Robins is a son of Harvey and Elizabeth (Haffley) Robins, Pennsylvanians. The father is descended from Puritan stock, while the mother was of German descent. Joseph Robins is the father of Harvey. He is still living Northumberland county, Penn., where he has practiced medicine for over fifty years. His three brothers, and three of his sons, were physicians, Harvey being the only one that did not take a profession. He is a speculator. The subject of this sketch first saw the light in Northumberland county, Penn., in 1861. He was reared and educated in his native county and there began the study of medicine under the direction of his uncle, Dr. Ed. Robins, with whom he remained for one and a half years. He graduated from the Jefferson Medical college in 1883, having taken three courses of lectures before entering college. Dr. Robins first practiced at Mount Carmel, where he remained until January, 1886. In the latter year he came to Claremont, Fayette county, W. Va., and has since made an enviable reputation as a physician. Judging from the past, his future career promises much. Dr. Robins is the regular physician for the Beechwood and Alaska Coal companies, and is also a member of the medical staff of the Sheltering Arms hospital of Kanawha county. He is a member of the medical society of Fayette county. In 1888, he was united in marriage to Miss Anna Knapp, an accomplished lady of Mason county, W. Va.

James J. Robinson, the well known lumberman and general merchant, and also proprietor of a saw-and planing-mill, of Riverview, Fayette Co., W. Va., came to this state when but nine years

of age with his parents, his birthplace having been in Pennsylvania, and the date of his birth July 23, 1854. William and Rose (Keearney) Robinson, his parents, came from Ireland to the United States before James' birth and settled in Pennsylvania. James was the sixth of eight children. His first actual experience of the working world was had while employed in a round house at Parkersburg, W. Va. About the year 1877 he began to learn the lumber business, and so well was he pleased with it that he decided to follow that department of trade; accordingly, on July 10, 1882, having saved a little money by close economy, he started a saw-mill in Fayette county. His business rapidly increased, and on the 13th of January, 1887, he established a general merchandise and lumber business at Riverview. September 12, 1883, Mr. Robinson was joined in marriage to Miss Cathline Smith, a Virginian by birth, and they have two children, Roy and Houston. Mr. Robinson is strongly republican in his political views, having cast his first presidential vote for James G. Blaine. His energetic labor well directed by business like and enterprising methods, have made him a successful man. He is highly respected in the community in which he lives, not only for his financial success, but also for his uprightness of life.

L. B. Rupert, M. D., the son of Cyrus Alexander Rupert, M. D., one of the oldest and most distinguished physicians of the state, was born in Greenbrier county, W. Va., November 19, 1862. His father was born at Point Pleasant, Mason county, W. Va., and now lives in retirement at Rupert, Greenbrier county, W. Va., that town having been named in his honor. He is a graduate of the medical college at Charleston, S. C. His wife was Rachel McClung. Mrs. Rupert was born in Greenbrier county and is still living, having been the mother of seven sons and eight daughters, twelve of whom still survive. L. B. Rupert passed his boyhood in Greenbrier county, and was a regular attendant of the public schools. He completed his literary education at Concord, Mercer county, W. Va. Having studied medicine under the tutelage of his distinguished father for several years he entered the Louisville Medical college, of Kentucky, and was graduated therefrom in 1886. His first experience as a practitioner was had at Caperton, W. Va., where he remained from March to July of 1886. He then took up his residence at Nuttallburg, and has since met with much success. He is the surgeon for the Nuttallburg Coke & Coal company, and has an extended practice. In 1887 he married Miss M. E. Carpenter, of Augusta, Ga. John Albert Broadus and Mary Emily are the children of this happy union. Dr. Rupert is a member of the Fayette county and state medical societies and is a Good Templar. He and his wife are communicants of the Baptist church, and are leaders in benevolent works.

Rufus French Sarver, a prosperous merchant of Mount Carbon, Fayette county, W. Va., is the oldest of eleven children born to George Harris and Harriet (Kemper) Sarver, both natives of Giles county, Va. The father is a blacksmith by trade, but for the past few years has been engaged in agriculture near Charleston, W. Va. The mother died in February, 1890. Rufus Sarver was born in Giles county, W. Va., April 16, 1851, and there acquired a portion of his schooling. While yet a child he removed with his parents to Craig county, Va., and thence to Mercer county, and from there to Boone county, where they remained until 1864, when they took up their residence in Kanawha county, and have since lived there, with the exception of a short time spent in Jackson county. Mr. Rufus French Sarver began the active affairs of life by working at various things, finally becoming a coal miner in the summer of 1873. He first became a miner at Blacksburg and worked there until 1875, when he removed to Coal Valley, W. Va., and was elected magistrate to fill an unexpired term of two years, and at the end of that period was re-elected for four years, meanwhile he continued to work in the mines. In the summer of 1885, he embarked in the general mercantile trade at Mount Carbon, W. Va., and has continued with such success that he now owns and operates a well stocked store, handling general merchandise and all kinds of miner's supplies. In 1878, he married Miss Nannie W. Martin, who was born in Nicholas county, W. Va., November 9, 1857. She died January 31, 1880, and on December 25, 1881, he married Miss Mary E. Rippetoe, also a native of Nicholas county, by whom he had the following children: Alice E., Edna M., Rufus F. and Fannie E. Mr. Sarver is a Mason, belonging to Lodge No. 74, of Coal valley, he is a republican, and cast his first vote for Grant. Mrs. Sarver is a Baptist.

Leo Schaffer, senior member of the firm of Schaffer, Morgan & Co., the leading and most enterprising merchants of the thriving town of Sewell, Fayette county, W. Va., is an Austrian by birth, having come into this world in that country June 24, 1860. Six children were born to his parents, William and Terisia Schaffer, of which he was the youngest. Both his father and mother are now deceased. Mr. Schaffer has always been engaged in the mercantile business, having been in business in his native land for eight years prior to his seeking a new home in America. He arrived in the United States in 1888, and in May, 1890, the firm of Schaffer, Morgan & Co. succeeded A. Middleburg in the largest mercantile business of Sewell. Mr. Schaffer is the managing partner of the concern, Mr. David Morgan and Joseph Hall only being represented by their capital. He has rapidly adapted himself to the ways of the new country and already has a large circle of friends and acquaintances. His success in trade

has been marked by characteristic enterprise and uprightness. Mr. Schaffer is a prominent member of the K. of P., New River lodge, No. 38, of Sewell, and is K. of R. and S. of his lodge, and also a member of the Grand lodge. He is a lieutenant of the Uniformed Rank of New River division, No. 7, and was largely instrumental in its organization. Although his residence here has been short, he is recognized as an influential and useful citizen. Messrs. Morgan & Hall are engaged in the mining business. Mr. Morgan was born at Wales (England), and Mr. Hall in the state of Ohio. Mr. C. O. Coder is connected with the firm as confidential man; he was born at Marysville, Ohio, and is esteemed amongst his fellow citizens at Sewell; he is captain of the Uniform Rank, division No. 7, K. of P., at Sewell.

Ballard R. Smith, M. D., a promising young physician and surgeon of Rush Run, Fayette county, W. Va., first saw the light in Hanover county, Va., November 4, 1860, his parents being John Ballard and Maria L. (Rouzie) Smith, Virginians, who are now residents of Augusta county. Dr. Smith took a special literary course at Washington & Lee university, Lexington, and began the study of medicine in 1879, with Dr. E. J. Rouzie, of Hanover county, Va., with whom he remained for one year, after which he took one course of medical lectures at the University of Virginia, and, in 1882, was graduated from the University of Maryland, Baltimore. After graduation Dr. Smith had the advantage of practice in a hospital. He settled in Rush Run in May, 1889, having received the appointment as physician to the Rush Run Coal & Coke company. He is a member of the Medical Society of Virginia, and also of the Fayette County Medical society. His marriage to Miss Jessie C. Keesee was solemnized in 1883. Mrs. Smith is a native of Richmond, Va. They are the parents of two children, Miriam Erle, and an infant son. Dr. Smith is a member of the Masonic order, of Greenville lodge, No. 111, A. F. & A. M., and his wife is a communicant of the Presbyterian church. While residing in Greenville Dr. Smith was a member of the town council for some time. He is recognized as a leading citizen of Rush Run, and is well launched on a successful career.

William Thompson, who is the superintendent of the Eagle Coal & Coke works, is a native of Scotland, where his birth took place in 1843, he being one of five children born to John and Catherine (Hogg) Thompson. In 1864 he married Miss Agnes Lawson, and the union resulted in the birth of eight children, of whom six (two boys and four girls) are still living. Mr. Thompson has been engaged in mining for several years. In 1870 he came to the United States and located at Brazil, Ind., where for a time he was underground manager for the Western Iron & Coal Co., situated at Knightsville, Ind. Later he occu-

pied the same position in the employ of the Watson Coal Co., with headquarters in the same district. He next moved to Jackson county, where he was made general manager of the Drew & Wasson Coal Co., for two years. In the year 1884 he came to the state of West Virginia and accepted the position of superintendent of the Eagle Coal & Coke works in Fayette county, under the general management of William Wyant, the proprietor. In politics Mr. Thompson is a republican, and cast his first vote for Gen. Grant. He has always taken an active interest in the affairs of his party. He is a member of the Masonic order, to which he has belonged since 1871, and also belongs to the I. O. O. F., which he joined in 1880. Mr. Thompson and wife are members of the Presbyterian church, and he is an able business man, possessing a wide experience in the mining business.

Richard Tyree was born near Richmond, Va., and came to Greenbrier county at an early date, his father having been one of the original settlers of old Virginia. He was of Scotch-Irish descent. Richard raised five sons, as follows: Francis, William, John, Samuel and George. Richard died in Fayette county, Va. William Tyree, one of the sons, was a farmer of Fayette county. He was twice married; his first wife being Rebecca McClung, who bore him two sons and one daughter; his second wife, Sarah C. McClung, bore him but one child, a son. William and both wives were natives of Greenbrier county, Va. The former died in 1885, and the mother while her oldest son was yet a child. This son is W. A. Tyree, M. D., a leading physician of Fayette county, W. Va., and the principal of this biographical mention. Dr. Tyree was born in Fayette county, August 18, 1837. He was given a common schooling in his early youth and later was sent to an academy, where he completed his literary education. He first began the study of medicine in 1857, with Dr. John J. Stites, of Fayetteville, and subsequently was graduated from the medical department of the University of Virginia, in 1867. On the 5th of April, 1861, he enlisted in Company C, Twenty-second Virginia regiment, of the Confederate army, as a lieutenant, and served with faithfulness and valor until he was severely wounded in the left lung, November 6, 1863, which incapacitated him for further service. Among the battles in which he fought are the battles of Droop Mountain, first battle of the Kanawha valley, battle of Lewisburg, White Sulphur, Parisburg and Beverly, from which it will be seen that he was confined to the lines of West Virginia. In 1868 he married Miss M. J. Houston, of La Salle county, Ill., a daughter of John Q. A. Houston, a minister of the Campbellite church. Two sons and two daughters are the issue of this happy union: Hellen G., Eurice V., William F. and Paul A. From 1867 to 1878 Dr. Tyree resided in Dewitt county, Illinois, moving from there to Texas, where he

remained until 1881, when he returned home and has since resided in Thurmond, Fayette county, W. Va., where he has a large practice. He is a member of the Fayette County Medical society, was a member of the State Medical society of Illinois, while a resident of that state, and is also a communicant of the Presbyterian church, while his wife is a member of the Methodist Episcopal denomination, she having joined that church in 1879, while residing in Texas.

One of the most successful of the younger physicians of Fayette county, W. Va., is George W. Vanden, M. D., an Ohioan by birth, Gallipolis, Gallia county, being the place of his nativity, and November 27, 1863, the date of his birth. He is the second of three sons born to James and Esther (Andrews) Vanden, who still reside at Gallipolis, Ohio, where the father was engaged for many years in the carriage manufacturing business, under the firm name of James Vanden & Son. About two years ago he retired from the active affairs of life, his sons, H. J. & E. W. Vanden, then assuming the business of hardware and agricultural implements, under the firm name of H. J. Vanden & Co. Doctor Vanden's grandfather, Joseph Vanden Bemden, came to this country with his father from Holland, when four years of age, and was one of the early settlers of Gallipolis, being intimate with Daniel Boone and Simon Girty. Dr. Vanden was given excellent educational advantages and improved them. He was graduated from the Gallipolis high school, June 3, 1881, and from the Medical College of Ohio, in Cincinnati, on March 10, 1886. Since that time he has been actively and successfully engaged in the profession that he so wisely chose as his life vocation. He first located at Peabody, Kanawha Co., W. Va., but at the expiration of a year removed to Caperton, Fayette county, where he still continues to reside. He was married November 27, 1888, to Miss Addie Allen, daughter of the late Colonel James Allen, of Ironton, Ohio. Mrs. Vanden is a communicant of the Episcopal church. On January 1, 1890, he formed a partnership with Dr. Lester Keller, of Beury, W. Va., the firm assuming charge of the practice at the extensive collieries and coke plants of William Beury, Cooper & Co., at Beury and Caperton, the Central Coal company at Central, and the New River Coke company at Caperton, and doing a great amount of surgical work, from the accidents in the mines and on the Chesapeake and Ohio railway, on the main line of which the above named works are situated. Doctor Vanden holds the office of coroner of Fayette county, and is a member of the medical and surgical staff of the Sheltering Arms hospital of Kanawha county. He is a member of the Fayette County Medical society, the Medical and Surgical society of the Kanawha valley, and of the West Virginia State Medical society, and was recently appointed as a delegate from the latter

organization to the American Medical association, which meets in Washington, D. C., in 1891. He is a member of Longdale lodge, No. 14, Ancient Free and Accepted Masons, and is K. of R. & S., and M. of F. of New River lodge, No. 38, Knights of Pythias.

The mining of coal being one the greatest industries of the state of West Virginia, the men who have made this great enterprise successful are among the chief benefactors of the state. One of the largest coal companies is the Wyant Coal and Coke company, of which Mr. William Wyant is president and principal stockholder. This company operates the Eagle and Diamond mines, situated at Eagle, Fayette county, W. Va. Mr. Wyant is of German parentage, his parents, Valentine and Barbara Wyant, having been born in Germany. The father came to this country when eleven years of age, and the mother when sixteen. They settled in Pennsylvania, and it was in that state that William first saw the light. Valentine was a merchant, and his son followed in his footsteps until his twenty-eighth year. Since that time he has been engaged in mining. The diamond mine was purchased by him in 1884, and was opened in 1889. This produces a very fine grade of gas coal. The Eagle mine was first opened in 1877. The capacity of both mines is 500 tons daily. In connection with these mines fifty-four coke ovens are operated with a daily capacity of over eighty tons. From 350 to 400 men are employed. In addition to this concern Mr. Wyant is also a large stockholder in the St. Clair company, of which Thomas Wharton is secretary. Mr. Wyant has accumulated a a large fortune by his industry and ability, having personal property in McKeesport, Pa., valued at over $75,000. The store operated by the Wyant Coal company is another source of great revenue, it doing an annual business of over $60,000. All of the productions of the mines is carried to the market by rail, the slower method of transporting by river not having found favor in the eyes of this energetic man. Mr. Wyant has a wife and three children. He is a member of the Masonic fraternity.

John C. Wysor is one of thirteen children born to George W. and Margaret A. (Miller) Wysor, both natives of Virginia. George W. Wysor was born and always lived in Pulaski county, Va., where he died October 1, 1883. He was the son of Henry Wysor. He (Henry Wysor) was a farmer and a breeder of blooded cattle, and exhibited an ox weighing 3300 pounds at the Philadelphia fair. He was a soldier in the Mexican war. George W. was also a farmer and stock-raiser. The mother still resides in Pulaski county. John C. was born in the latter county, May 12, 1854. Having acquired a thorough schooling he, in 1874, began the study of medicine with Dr. John L. Stearnes, of Dublin, Va., and two years later entered the college of Physicians and Sur-

geons at Baltimore, from which he graduated in 1878. He first located at Christiansburg Depot, Montgomery county, Va., but subsequently removed to Brownsdale, Minn., and remained there two years, after which he returned to Montgomery county and for nearly two years practiced at Radford. At the expiration of that time Dr. Wysor located at Kanawha Falls, and thence moved to Coal valley. He arrived in the latter place April 3rd, 1882, and the following day formed a partnership with Dr. J. M. Laird, which partnership still exists. Dr. Wysor has achieved much in the comparatively short time of his residence in Fayette county, and already has an enviable reputation for skill in his profession. August 27, 1884, he was united in marriage to Miss Alice E. Pugh, daughter of William and Fannie (Farley) Pugh, of Buckingham county, Va. Three children have been born to them: Julia Bentley, Frank Laird and Alice Margaret. Dr. Wysor is a member of the Medical society, of West Virginia, and both he and his wife are communicants of the Presbyterian church. He is a democrat.

CHAPTER XX.

BY A. L. KNIGHT.

MEDICAL HISTORY OF THE KANAWHA VALLEY FROM 1790 TO 1890 — EARLY DIAGNOSIS OF FEVERS — OLD-TIME DOCTORS AND THEIR METHODS — DISEASES PECULIAR TO THE FIRST SETTLERS — MEDICAL WRITERS ABROAD — INFLUENCE ON THE AMERICAN PRACTITIONER — LIST OF COMPLAINTS IN THE VALLEY SCIENTIFICALLY DEFINED — MEASLES, MUMPS, "KIDNEY TROUBLES," AND OTHER EVILS FLESH IS HEIR TO — CHOLERA AND ITS RAVAGES — IMPROVEMENT IN MEDICAL TREATMENT — HOW THEY USED TO BLEED 'EM — CALOMEL AND JALAP — SUPREMACY OF THE LANCET — THE "ROOT AND YARB" DOCTOR — HE "SNEEZED" HER — PERIPATETIC PHYSICIANS AND THE INEVITABLE SADDLE-BAGS — DESCRIPTION OF A LONG NIGHT RIDE — FORDING MILL CREEK BY MOONLIGHT — PEN PORTRAITS OF OLD-TIMERS — THE HARVEYS, PUTNEYS AND OTHERS.

DR. JOHN EBERLE, who wrote a treatise on the practice of medicine in the early part of the present century, and who at the time was accepted as good authority, said that "the history of practical medicine consists of little else than a review of the doctrines concerning the nature and treatment of fevers." "If we except," says Van Swieten, "those who perish by a violent death and such as are extinguished by mere old age, and which are indeed few, almost all the rest die either of fever or of diseases accompanied with fever."

We read in Pliny with what fear and trembling the Romans endeavored to have this universal disease, fever, appeased by their supplications in the temple of Fanum, and hence perhaps it is that fevers are called diseases by Hesiod, and that Horace calls all diseases fevers, when they rushed out of the box of Pandora.

> "*Post ignem ætherea domo*
> *Subductum, Macies et nova febrium*
> *Terris in cubuit cohors.*"

About the middle of the eighteenth century or perhaps a little earlier, the medical profession of America began to regard fever more as a symptom of diseased action, than as a *causus morbi*.

But the nature of the supposed morbid influences causing fevers, and many other diseases, at the advent to the Kanawha valley, of its pioneer physicians about the beginning of the present century, was still in a state of disputation in medical textbooks then in use, and the outward manifestations as langor, loss of appetite, chills, increasing temperature, quickened circulation, nausea, coated tongue, wakefulness and delirium, with general functional derangement, lasting from one to six weeks, were regarded both by physicians and laity as some form of fever; and by the number and intensity of these signs its class was determined and treated. Perhaps it is proper to say that a pretty fair classification of diseases was found in the medical literature of that period, since much of the nomenclature then is vogue is still retained. It is safe to say that fevers were the most prevalent disease of the valley for the first half of the nineteenth century. They were divided somewhat with reference to some supposed causes, and the foregoing symptoms. Paludal or malarious fevers were subdivided into intermittent, remittent and bilious continued. Their symptoms being so characteristic, the laity generally recognized and often successfully treated them, except the form called "bilious continued," which bordered so closely upon another division of fever regarded as idiopathic or simple continued, that it was generally referred to the diagnostic acumen of the nearest physician who (although in the neighborhood) resided anywhere from two to thirty miles distant. Next in the order of frequency, though not in gravity, was fever of inflammation or in common parlance, inflammatory fevers. Under this head were included pleurisy, pneumonia or lung fever, inflammatory rheumatism, and that form of dysentery when the lower bowels only were inflamed.

Of still less frequency were the so-called idiopathic or continued fevers, designated as winter fevers, though appearing sporadically at all seasons of the year, and described by some German and French writers under the name of gastro-enteric fever, by which was meant an inflammatory condition of the entire alimentary canal. This form of fever was the *probum magnum* of the medical profession down to the first third of the present century.

Its cause rested upon unsatisfactory, vague and various theories, promulgated from every quarter of the civilized world. Some authors contended with much plausibility that it was due to cold, exposure, violent exertion and improper diet. Others (the humorists) insisted that the blood was primarily affected by some remote toxic influence, and hence the starting point of the disease; that the febrile phenomena, together with the irritation, sub-inflammation and inflammation of the stomach and bowels, dry, fissured tongue, scanty urine and delirium were but conse-

quential. For thirty odd years these conflicting theories swayed medical thought, and of course the few practitioners of the valley took and were guided by such doctrines as were taught in their medical schools and text-books. Fortunately this form of fever is rare in all newly settled places.

Later the nasology of this fever was changed and described under the name of synochal (from the Greek *syn* and *ocho* to hold or continue), and was divided by certain differential symptoms into synochus, synocha and typhus, according to the degree of nervous prostration; the first being regarded as inflammatory, which as the inflammation subsided might or might not degenerate into the second form. The third was supposed to be caused by some additional influences.

The medical reader will doubtless not fail to recognize in the foregoing class of continued fevers those of the present time under the generic term of zymotic or fermentative fevers, such as gastric, gastro-enteric, typhoid and typhus. Though a typical case of the latter (typhus) perhaps has never been seen in the valley. The writer concludes by way of parenthesis, that they were nothing other than our present fevers modified by malarial influence which abounds in all newly settled land. Some of our modern writers entertain the same idea, and go so far as to give the specific name of typho-malarial to one of our zymotic fevers. But the writer does not assent to this complicated form of fever in those cases occurring in the winter season.

Among the principal teachers and writers of medicine and surgery from the middle of the eighteenth to the first half of the present century who influenced the practice in this country, we have space only for their names. Dr. Erasmus Darwin, father of Charles Darwin, the scientist and naturalist; Priestley, Cavendish, Sydenham, William, Charles Wells and John Forbes, of England; William Stokes, of Dublin; James Gregory and John Abercrombie, of Edinburgh; Robert and James Graves, the two Hunters and Wilken, should have been mentioned as Englishmen; James Skoda and Rokitansky, of Vienna, and Lavoisier, of France. Some of these, the younger Hunter and Rokitansky, made vast strides in their studies of pathology or morbid anatomy, toward rational medication, but from all of them, including the renowned Cullen, of Edinburgh, our American medical writers drew their inspiration, their voices and medical treatises being familiar to many of them. Besides, the libraries of the earliest physicians of the valley were generally well filled with the productions of European medical authors, and were added to from American publications as they appeared. There were no specialists in the valley till within the past few years. For the first sixty years of this century, the doctor of medicine, was surgeon, obstetrician, aurist,

oculist and even dentist, as far as extracting teeth. Other specialties were not thought of until within the last decade.

Contagious diseases were very rare prior to 1860, so much so that a majority of the population, even many of the adults and elderly persons, had never contracted measles; and only a few sporadic cases of variola or small pox had been reported before that date, notwithstanding a large portion of the inhabitants were unprotected by vaccination. Since then there have been two or three hundred cases appearing in different parts of the valley. Varicella, or chicken pox, was more frequent than measles during the early settlements but has grown more and more rare. Scarlatina, or scarlet fever, was even at the first settlements divided into scarlet rash, scarlatina simplex, and scarlatina gravior. The two former appeared endemically every three to seven, the latter from seven to ten, and sometimes fifteen years, and for the past thirty years some localities have been scourged as often as every five or six years, with the grave or malignant form of the disease. Tonsilitis, or inflammation of the tonsils, was frequent along the marshy and malarious bottoms of the rivers and creeks, in autumn and spring. The disease was known as quinsey. It was not, however, confined to the bottom land and gradually became less frequent with the decline of the potency of malaria.

Diphtheria was not recognized under that name in any part of the valley prior to 1850, though it doubtless was seen twenty or thirty years earlier, and known as putrid sore throat, which is the more probable because that form of throat disease was highly contagious. Membranous croup which generally went by the name of bold hives, was not very prevalent in the early history of Kanawha, but pseudo croup, or false croup, a species of asthma in childhood, was quite common.

The valley people as a whole were hardy, and in the early part of their history phthisis, pulmonalis or consumption was scarcely known. Later, the ratio of deaths from that disease to deaths from all causes was perhaps not over one in thirty, but it has gradually increased its ratio to one in ten. But we must not lose sight of the fact that the mortality among children under five years of age, by hygienic progress has been growing less. There is an apparent increase of consumption by taking our data from the ratio of deaths. But since it is well known that consumption is nearly always fatal, while other diseases are becoming, from improved medical treatment, less fatal, this is further proof that the ratio of deaths is not a safe guide in estimating the increased or decreased frequency of any given disease. Cynanche parotidea, or mumps, was not considered a disease of much importance, and therefore we have no data from which to estimate its frequency. Whilst it is classed as a con-

tagious disease it is only transmissible at certain stages of the disease. When it has passed the febrile stage, only those very susceptible are obnoxious to it, and hence many persons exposed to mumps time after time, may escape the disease. The same may be said of partussis or whooping-cough, that is with reference to the gravity of the disease, though it has been, when complicated with summer diarrhoea or bronchial inflammation, frequently fatal.. In those of a strumous or scrofulous constitution, it often resulted in a form of asthma, more frequently in bronchitis, an inflammation of the air passages to the lungs, and which are about as unremediable as consumption, though the victim of either of the former conditions has a much longer prospective lease of life, than in the latter. From the fact that none of the physicians of the valley, in its early history, registered their cases, we have no means of knowing how often this section has been visited by this spasmodic cough. It must have been but casual, for fifty years ago adults, after twenty-five and forty years of age was known to have had it. Roetheln or German measles were not of very frequent occurrence; at least the disease was not recognized by that name until about the middle of the present century, dermatologists, prior to that time, placing it in another class, skin disease.

Not over one in a thousand of the population has been afflicted with periostitis, or inflammation of the white fibrous tissue or membrane, the immediate covering of the bones of the body, and perhaps not more than one in 2,000 with exostosis, a disease of the bone structures, which induces swelling of the immediate integuments, covering them, without the usual sign, (redness), and which was called by physicians and laity for many years "white swelling." They applied the same appelation to another quite different disease, now known as phlegmasia dolens, or "milk leg," of the lying-in woman. Comparatively few cases of the latter grave disease have been seen in the valley. It is meant by this assertion that not over one in 10,000 accouchments, occurs. But having no statistics of the above disease for the valley, its ratio to births, is assumed from those given in one or two limited localities. Puerperal fever, or fever of child-bed, was seldom met with in the first half of the present century. Since then it has been more frequent, and was in 18051–52, to some extent epidemic, and again in 1865–66 was endemic in Mason county. It is worthy of remark that although erysipelas had appeared at various times prior to those dates, it was decidedly more frequent, and synchronous with attacks of puerperal fever. So remarkable was this fact that some medical writers (contributors to our medical periodicals), attempted to establish theoretically a common cause for the two diseases. This idea, however, has been exploded, by the microscopist, notwithstanding clinical ex-

perience seems to favor it. But, as it is proposed to give the history only of diseases of the valley for the past century it would be a digression to theorize on their nature and causes.

Functional diseases, or diseases confined to any special organ of the body, either idiopathic or as a sequence of other diseases, may be properly grouped and named by the appellations they bore in the early history of the valley, as the liver, kidney, spleen, heart, stomach, eye, ear, brain, etc. All of these, when not marked by evidence of inflammation, were designated by the physicians, as liver complaint, kidney trouble, heart disease, enlarged spleen, stomach trouble, defective eyes, deafness, mental derangement, etc., whilst the laity would generally say that the liver, kidneys, etc., "were out of whack." Both were right in a certain sense, but not up to present diagnostications. The above derangements were not more common than at the present day. Neurasthenia, or debility of the nerves, as well as paralysis, were extremely rare, unless we include under the former hypochondria and hysteria, of which the charming Great Kanawha valley had its reasonable share. Carcinoma, a name which includes three species of cancer, was about as frequent here as in other portions of the country, though to determine it statistics are wanting. Those diseases which become constitutional after their inception, the name of which is purposely withheld, were unknown to the people of the valley prior to 1820. From that date, or perhaps somewhat earlier, the product of the salt furnaces was transported to the larger cities on the banks of the Ohio river, in flatboats, the crews of which brought back, in addition to a part of their wages, this confidential and loathsome disease. However, this does not apply to the crews as a whole, but to a casual one among them, and we are happy to state that the disease did not attack many, if it did any, of the other classes of society, and therefore, rural districts have been and are at the present, almost exempt from this properly dreaded malady.

Dysentery, summer diarrhoeas of children, less frequently of adults, and cholera infantum were, as is common to newly settled places, very prevalent and often fatal. First when appearing in autumn or epidemically, which was on an average of every seven or eight years. The second being so in very elderly persons, and in the form of cholera morbus in the middle-aged, though less so than the first. Cholera infantum, prior to 1860, was generally fatal, and prevailed annually.

The epidemics of the valley were: First: Very grave and fatal form of fever between the years of 1813–14, with such anomalous symptoms that physicians were at a loss what to call the disease. From information obtained from eye witnesses fully fifty per cent. of those attacked died. Second: An epidemic of influenza, to which many succumbed. The fatal cases were gen

erally ushered in with a severe chill, the surface of the body becoming cold, and the patient often dying before reaction was established, from which fact the people designated the disease as, "cold plague." This was in 1832. Third: In the following year was the first visitation of Asiatic cholera to the valley; beginning in the Kanawha salines, doubtless brought there by the river men in commerce with cities on the Ohio. It again appeared in 1848–9, from which the valley suffered throughout its entire extent; and three years later, in 1851–2, it prevailed in various localities within the valley, though many thought it a continuation of the disease of 1848. And again in 1866 with a less death rate; perhaps not over twenty per cent. of the cases. This was the last epidemic scourge of this dread disease in the country, though a few sporadic cases were reported in 1872–3 without sufficient evidence, however, and were most probably grave cases of American or cholera morbus.

The treatment of disease underwent but little change from the first to the middle of the nineteenth century. From then it began to be modified and was gradually changed to that of the present time. Hence, remarks upon general practice must be understood to apply to treatment and remedies prior to 1850. Nor is there space in this chapter to give in detail the treatment of the various diseases heretofore mentioned. It is deemed sufficient to merely mention the plans and remedial agents then in use, which are at present almost discarded, and when resorted to now-a-days are not used to the extent that they were during that period. Thus, the lancet, scarificator, cupping-glasses, leaches, calomel, tartar-emetic, jalap, ipecacuana, Peruvian bark, Indian hemp, belladonna, aconite and opium, constituted the sheet-anchor of a doctor's armamentarium for the first half of the present century. To this list should have been added blisters and clysters. We are not to infer, however, from this list that they did not have an extensive materia medica. On the contrary they had thousands of remedial or medicinal agents which where classified about 100 years ago by M. Barbier, as follows:

1. Tonics;	4. Emollients;	7. Narcotics;
2. Excitants;	5. Emetics;	8. Purgatives;
3. Diffusibles;	6. Temperants;	9. Laxatives;
	10. Incertæ Sedis.	

This classification was extended by subdivisions some time after by Dr. A. T. Thompson, which was succeeded by that of Dr. Pereira and was in use till about 1850. At the latter date Dr. Robley Dunglison made a classification which has been adhered to by most of the regular physicians down to the present, notwithstanding the introduction of a great variety of new remedies and the consequent changes in modes of treatment within the past decade.

In contrasting the methods of treatment of the early physicians, with that of those of the latter half of the present century, it is proper to state the aims and mostly the ends reached were precisely the same, though differing so widely in their methods. Nor have there been such pathical changes in the character of most diseases of the valley during the past ninety years as to demand newer and improved methods of treatment. We must then look for other causes in the gradual changes in the methods of the physicians of the different periods. Thus from the contiual observations of pathologists, the pathogenic elements of disease become gradually better understood, and hence hygenic and preventive means, curtailed very much the great abuse of medicinal agents, especially that of heroic and often drastric medication.

Again, symptons of disease have been so closely scrutinized, that those becomming gradually recognized as common to all diseases, little by little lose their importance, so that physicians of the present day generally withhold their diagnosis until one or more pathognomic symptoms are observed. That is until a symptom or symptoms are present, peculiar to the disease in question. And whilst the science of symptomatology is as old as the art of medicine, it has become gradually better understood and defined, which became another aid in the determination of the real pathological condition, and hence remedies were sought for that would act especially upon certain organs. These views were held down to the latter half of this century, and are still entertained by the laity, irregular doctors and a few "old-fogy" physicians. The profession have not found many such remedies.

In the early methods, for instance in a well marked case of intermittent fever, it was usual at its onset to give an emetic of some kind, generally tartarized antimony, followed next day with calomel and jalap, each ten grains for an adult. Then, if febrile symptoms was high on the fourth day, the patient was bled and ordered Peruvian bark, in half to draghm doses, repeated every hour or two, till paroxysms ceased. The same course was followed in remittent fever, where vigor took the place of chill, with continuous fever, slightly less in the forenoons, with a somewhat freer use of the lancet, together with nauseants as a febrifuge. This method generally reduced this form of fever to an intermittent, with full ague chills, when the poor devil was congratulated for being out of all danger; notwithstanding he was doomed to mope around with a gorged liver and enlarged spleen, with general malaise for several months. Strange to say, continued fevers of the bilious and other types were treated for the first week or ten days in the same manner; that is by vomiting, purging and blood-letting,

then small doses of calomel "for its alterative or constitutional effects," carried to the extent of ptyalism, and often to the point of loosening the teeth, and sloughing of the cheeks and jawbones. Happily this method has had no place in practice for the past fifty years except in that "acquired" disease spoken of uuder the head of diseases of the valley. It is the opinion of the writer that the abuse of this valuable drug laid the foundation for the medical schisms so undeservedly popular, known as "Thompsonian system," "eclecticism," which began to flourish about the middle of the present century; though the latter was never extensively practiced in the valley except that portion bordering on the Ohio river.

In pneumonia, pleurisy, inflammations of the brain, deep-seated congestions and inflammatory fevers, the lancet, cupping-glasses and blisters, played the principal role, at the head of which was the lancet. About every hundredth man kept one from rusting by frequent use. In fact, it was the rule, to be bled every spring, just after maple sugar making. But for forty years the lancet has been superseded, even in the above mentioned diseases, by arterial sedatives, sinapisms and hot embrocations have taken the place of cups and blisters, to a great extent. Opiates and other anodynes were used as at present.

The writer is not certain that modern methods of treating pneumonia without blood-letting is the better way. The late Samuel D. Gross M. D., read a paper before the American Medical society, "on the lost art," in which he deplored the almost disuse of the lancet.

The earlier physicians of the valley were generally classically educated, good anatomists and presumably skillful surgeons, but did not practice beyond minor surgery prior to the introduction of chloroform, as an anaesthetic about 1844. Since then, major operations have occassionally been done in the valley, and within the past five years, several laparotomies have been reported. The valley is now provided with aurists, opthalmotogists and gynaecologists. Obstetrics was principally in the hands of midwives till 1850, but since then the practice has been gradually passing to the physicians. Prior to the passage of the act regulating the practice of medicine in the state of West Virginia, there were scattered here and there, Thompsonian or root and "yarb" doctors, whose methods were a combination of the obsolete ones of physicians and the ordinary domestic practice (from away back). These woods doctors were audacious in direct proportions to their ignorance of pathology, and would undertake to cure anything from scabies or itch, to caveinoma or cancer. Still they should have a niche at least on the pedestal of the fane to medical history. Their success, with their crude, but innoxious remedies furnished by the bountiful hands of nature,

gave many beneficial lessons to the regular physicians. Their harmless, but often efficient "teas," led the regulars to adopt more extracts and tinctures to the exclusion of harsher remedies. But the "firum ovæ tea," given to make the measles break out, the "stercus vaccæ," as a poultice in snake bite, and the blood of a black cat's tail, for erysipelas and shingles, were not adopted by the regulars. There was an instance by which enthusiasts of the profession might possibly profit. It happened in Mason county, two regulars and a Thompsonian being *particeps criminis*.

There was a difficult accouchment in Mercer's Bottom, of that county, at which two prominent M. D.'s of the regular school were officiating. The case had progressed to that condition in which the younger M. D. proposed to use forceps. They stepped out to talk the matter over when there approached an old fellow carrying a pair of huge saddle-bags, although afoot and minus the M. D. appendage to his name. Out of bantering, one of the M. D.'s in a very serious manner, stated the case to him. "Well, gentlemen," said the old fellow, "have you sneezed her?" "No." "Well, before trying them hurtful things I'd sneeze her." "Suppose you try it," said they, and proceeded with their former discussion. Old "root and yarb" proceeds at once to "sneeze her" and lo! before their discussion was half completed a new citizen was claiming its rights in the state by that peculiar sound of voice so welcome to the accoucheur.

The difficulties and hardships of the pioneer physician's were great indeed. First, they kept and dispensed their own medicines — an inconvenience only known to those who have filled the double office of practitioner and apothecary. Then he and his horse were burthened with the old fashioned weather-beaten saddle-bags, called by our grandmothers "saddle-pockets," in which at best, a limited supply of the most ordinary medicines and a few surgical instruments could be stowed away. As a matter of course, a circuitous ride of fifty, sixty, often 100 miles, with perhaps thirty or more patients to provide for, would exhaust the largest pill-bags of all save the stronger medicines. Out of such a difficulty there was but one escape, that is like Dr. Bob Sawyer, of Dickens' Pickwick story, "give 'em calomel all round," which would hold the fort till a new supply of medicinal ammunition could be sent on. Then there were but few public roads or highways; in many sections not even a bridle path. All of the choice bottom and contiguous lands bordering on the Ohio and Kanawha rivers were in large military surveys, and in many instances owned by non-resident parties and therefore unimproved. The remaining portions were sparsely settled and hence three-fourths of the valley was a primitive wilderness.

However, the undergrowth of small bushes, except in deep,

loamy soils where the dog-weed, paw-paw and hazel flourished, were not nearly so dense as in after years, so that courses could be followed by day or moonlight by means of blazed trees, ridges, streamlets, etc. But these Heaven-gifted courses of travel were from time to time obstructed by the settlers themselves by newly made fields and clearings where the unwary traveler would often find himself confronted with heaps of logs and brush, or a newly-made rail or brush fence lying directly across the faintly outlined bridle-path. In the latter case the hillside cow-trail around the field bordering on the inclined, stony, ragged edge of the hill, offered the only feasible way of continuing the tiresome ride.

The reader will perceive by the foregoing that these laborious journeys could be made by the pedestrian or upon horseback only; and hence a physician having within his field of practice from one to two thousand inhabitants was compelled to keep in good condition from two to four good saddle horses, such as did not hesitate to climb the ragged hills or to swim the swollen streams when so required, and stamina to endure his rounds of visits which often required from one to two days and nights over just such roads and by-ways as above described. And all this labor of man and horse at the extortionate price of twenty-five cents per mile, measured by the crude guesses of the patrons. The doctor was dressed in the home-grown and home-spun fabrics of the country, made by the dextrous hands and woven on the crude looms of the grateful wives and daughters, recipients of his medical skill and arduous labors. Contrast this, ye modern Æsculapians, with your soft kid-gloved hands, dainty gold-headed canes, eye-glasses to simulate age and experience, good roads, paved sidewalks, who wear imported linen and fare sumptuously, who move behind fast horses in easy-going phaetons or on the flying railroad coach; ye who claim to have pushed ahead in the front ranks of medical progress, but who, in collateral erudition are inferior to your sturdy gray-haired brethren or fathers who have gone before you, though better versed in technology and a higher appreciation of the money value of skill and labor. Look back upon those self-denying heroes of the healing art, undaunted by rain, sleet, snow or swollen streams in their tiresome rounds of mercy.

Suppose we follow the doctor or go with him in imagination on a thirty-mile night visit. It is cloudy, but the pale-faced glimmering moon gives sufficient light to distinguish a brier-patch from a brush heap. Time of year, last of March; time of day 9 P. M. The road a trail leading through the forest, from one settler's cabin to another, often over a "new clearing," where logs may be lying promiscuously around, or rolled into heaps prepatory to burning; brush piled here and there in lofty

heaps, in and near the now almost obliterated path. Thence around the brush fence of last year's tilled field. Studded with girdled stumps, cornstalks, fodder-shocks and butterweed; what an ecstatic feast for the esthetic eye of a learned physician who contemplates such a landscape, over the brush fence on the hillside "by the light of the moon." But never mind the road, nor the magnificent landscapes, let us start from the doctor's residence, an unpretentious log cabin, surrounded by negro quarters, smoke-house and dog-kennels on three sides. Standing on the bank of "La Belle Riviere," with a lane leading to the quarters whose sides were good, seven-rail worm fences. A "Hel-o-h Marsa doctoh," was heard above the deep bellowing from the throats of half a score of well kept stag-hounds.

"Helo, yoself, who is yo?" was answered by old Nick the hostler. "I's Adam, wat 'longs to Mike Rader Is dat you, Niggerdemis?" (Nicodemus). "Yes, I's him." "Well, tell de doctah dat Marsa Mike Rader done got the newmony feber; says him guine to die sure ef de doctah don't hurry up. The doctor, who heard the last sentence, ordered old Nick to saddle up Tom, his favorite bay stallion, who was strong as a buffalo and active as a roebuck, upon whom he was soon mounted, with pill-bags and shot-gun which he generally carried on jaunts of this kind. Off they go: The doctor in the lead, because better acquainted with the paths near home. No mishap for the first mile, which brought them to Nicholas Yeager's clearing, in which were met Nick and his two cur dogs. The latter had been baying something for two hours, which Nick supposed to be a raccoon, or an opossum, but proved to be a skunk, judging from the odor, so unlike that of cream and peaches," or "*boquet de rose.*"

"N'aus verdamter Hunden, was machen sie ein verfluchte stinkender Sltisz Jagen?" said Nick to the dogs now rubbing their noses upon the ground. "Wh-e-e! marsa doctah, hain't dar no way to go round dat ar smell, sah? wh-ih!" "Guess not, Adam, don't take more'n your share of it, you rascal." On they went past George Riffle's and Peter Yeager's to Old Town Creek, near the site which afterward became that of Yeager's mill. Here Adam espied a bear cub, at which he shot and wounded; it set up a cry of pain. "Come on," said the doctor, putting spurs to his horse, "the old she bear will hear that cry and be after us in a jiffy; we can't shoot by moon-shine." That was enough, Adam required no more urging, but his horse did, and away they went, Adam trying hard for the lead, which the fleet Tom positively refused. Two and a half miles further, being five miles from the Ohio river, brought them to the first cabin of James Ball, on the bank of Old Town Creek. Here the bellowing of deer-hounds was answered by the hoots of night owls in the neighboring forest. This was the last habital

tion on their route, twenty-five miles more through the native forest, with Mill creek to ford or swim at the mouth of Cow, now one of its tributaries. Thence up Mill creek, past where the town of Ripley now stands, eight miles to Michael Rader's, fully thirty miles from the starting point, which they reached at 6:30 A. M. The incidents of this visit the writer had from the doctor, Jesse Bennet. It is but a sample visit of thousands upon thousands made by the pioneer physicians in the counties of Fayette, Kanawha, Putnam and Mason. Should we not look with filial reverence to those pioneer doctors and keep their memories green and preserved from the lethean mould ere their very names be forgotten? With this object in view, the writer will give a short biographical sketch of each one of whom he knew personally, and also of those whom he knew by reputation to the extent of materials furnished him. Sketches of the others, together with the present practitioners of the valley, will be found appended in this history of the great Kanawha valley, of which this is but a chapter.

Undoubtedly the first physician in the valley was Dr. Jesse Bennet, born in Frankford, Philadelphia county, Pennsylvania., July 10th, 1769, and died July 13th, 1842. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Peter Hogg, attorney, in 1793. He settled in the city of Philadelphia, where he practiced medicine about three years, and from thence removed and located on the bottom of the Ohio river six miles above the confluence of the Kanawha with that stream, where he lived and practiced for forty-five years. He was of Norman-French extraction; was a thorough anatomist and a most excellent surgeon. One case of his dexterity as a surgeon is here given upon the authority of his sister-in law, Mrs. Nancy Hawkins, who was an eye witness. His wife was confined on the 14th day of January, 1794, and her accouchment could, in the opinion of himself and a medical friend (name not given), only be completed by the cæsarean section, which was successfully performed, but before closing the abdominal section the doctor, with the remark, "this shall be the last one," removed both ovaries. The mother and child both lived. In the language of Mrs. Hawkins, "He spayed her." The writer is not aware that the operation was ever reported. It is given under his conviction of its truthfulness and for its historic interest. It antedates Battey's and Hegar's oophorectomies more than fifty years, and Poro's operation over seventy years. Dr. Bennet in addition to his practice found time to take part in the formation of the county of Mason, in 1804. He was for many years colonel of its militia; represented the county in the Virginia legislature in 1808–9; was a good marksman, and in the healthiest times of the year joined his neighbors in the chase or the exciting "shooting matches," or trials of marksmanship for

the choice pieces of the slaughtered beef. He always kept a fine stud of horses, some of which were always victorious at the "Sand Hill" races, though the doctor was in no sense a gambler. In his day the best horse was the victor. In the war of 1812 he served as surgeon of the Second Virginia regiment at Maumee.

The doctor was not orthodox in his religious sentiments, but was never disrespectful to those who were. The door of his hospitable home was always ajar to the genteel, good and cultivated, so the clergy of all denominations made it a point in their ministerial rounds, to lodge at least a night with the doctor. It happened that the Rev. Mr. Smithers spent a night with him in June, 1815, the June rise in the Ohio river having caused Old Town creek to be unfordable from backwater. The doctor took the Rev. Smithers next morning, on his horse, behind him, and with some difficulty, the horse swam over with his double load. On the opposite side they met old Kyer, the slave of Col. Charles Lewis, to whom the doctor said: "Well Kyer, if old Tom had sunk, and drowned Mr. Smithers and me, which one would 'Old Nick' have first grabbed for?" "He-he. Mr. Smithers," said Kyer. "Why?" "'Cause he ain't sho' ov Mr. Smithers, but he is done sho' ov yo now sah." "Get, you rascal, said the doctor, tossing a Spanish quarter dollar to him.

Henry B. Harvey, M. D., was born near Fincastle in Botetourt county, Va., March 24, 1788, and died April 11, 1837, one mile below the town of Buffalo, then Mason, now Putnam county, W. Va., on his farm. He began the study of medicine when he was but sixteen years of age, in connection with his other studies, and was graduated in the university of Pennsylvania in 1808. Shortly after he and his only brother, Col. Lewis Harvey, came to Mason county. He located in Point Pleasant, and the colonel, on a large tract of land, extending from the Kanawha river to the mouth of Old Town Creek, given them by their father, Col. Robert Harvey, who made the first pig iron west of the Blue Ridge. The land was afterward recovered by the heirs of Col. Charles Lewis. Dr. Harvey married Miss Sarah S., daughter of Col. Joseph Hale, who had recently emigrated from Loudoun county, Va., and continued the practice of medicine till 1812, when he was appointed surgeon of Capt. Peter H. Steenbergen's company of volunteer militia, which was ordered to Norfolk.

After the war he resumed the practice of medicine at the same place and practiced for several years. On account of failing health he removed to his wife's farm, situated one mile below Buffalo, as before stated. He was remarkably kind-hearted and generous to a fault. Perhaps no physician did more gratuitous practice in the same space of time. Most of the people of his day were impecunious, and as his farm products were ample,

so was his benevolence. He continued to keep medicine from which the poor were supplied, regardless of its cost. He died beloved and regretted by all who knew him. He left a large family.

Dr. James Crain Bronaugh Harvey, fourth son of Dr. Henry B. Harvey, was born in 1826, near Buffalo, and died in 1862, in the city of New Orleans. He only practiced medicine in his native valley a few months, but his highly intellectual endowments, his untiring zeal in the study of science, should give him a place in the history of the great Kanawha valley. He read medicine with Dr. Owen Seebrell, of Buffalo, Putnam county, W. Va. Was graduated at the university of New York in 1853, and soon after went to New Orleans, where he entered into partnership with the widely known Dr. Stone, of that city. He soon distinguished himself in surgery; also in chemistry and natural history. He was the first to discover viviparous fish in the trans-Atlantic waters, contrary to the theory of Hugo, of Paris, that they could not live in the Atlantic. He captured some specimens in Lake Pontchartrain. It is said that Professor Darling, of the New York university, regarded him as one of the most intellectual young men of the country and predicted that he would, if he lived, become very eminent in his chosen profession.

Dr. Richard Ellis Putney came to the Kanawha valley about the year 1815 from East Virginia, and soon after located in the village of Malden. He was a graduate of the Jefferson Medical college of Philadelphia, Penn., and was presumably the third regularly educated physician to settle in the valley. He married a daughter of Col. Daniel Ruffner, who drilled the first salt well of of the valley in the year 1808. He enjoyed the reputation of a skillful physician and faithful, conscientious practitioner; but as the country was sparsely settled, there was not sufficient lucrative business in the practice to satisfy his financial ambition. Hence he devoted his leisure time to the manufacture of salt. He took a deep interest in the growth and prosperity of his section of the valley, and advocated a system of free schools. In religion he was a strict Presbyterian and an elder in that church from middle age to his death, which occurred May 13, 1862.

Dr. James Putney was born on the 5th day of July, 1816, at Kanawha Salines, in Kanawha county, W. Va. He was the son of Dr. Richard Ellis Putney, who was a man of prominence and distinction, not only in his profession but also in business and political and religious matters, having been a ruling elder in the Presbyterian church for many years, and having represented Kanawha county in the legislature of Virginia, and was for many years an extensive salt manufacturer. Dr. James Putney's ma-

ternal grandfather, Col. David Ruffner, was one of the pioneers of the Kanawha valley, having emigrated there in 1796, from the Shenadoah valley, and was the first person who ever bored a salt well in Kanawha (1808), and who first used coal as a fuel in that valley. Dr. James Putney received a liberal school education, as he was growing up at home, and then was sent, at seventeen years of age, to the college at Athens, Ohio, where he remained two years, and then became a student at Washington college at Lexington, Va., during the years 1836–7. After completing his collegiate course, he returned home and read medicine under his father's supervision for two years, and about 1840 commenced practicing medicine in connection with his father. After practicing some two or three years, being desirous of keeping up with the rapid advance of medical science, he attended a course of lectures at the Cincinnatti, Ohio, Medical college, from which he received a diploma. His instructors there were Drs. Shotwell, Locke, Mussey, Harrison, Morehead and Buchanan. He also attended lectures at Louisville, Ky., under Drs. Gross, Cooke and others. He returned to Kanawha and resumed his practice with renewed zeal and enlarged skill, and at once secured an extensive practice. On the 7th of May, 1850, he married Mary E. Reed, the daughter of Samuel C. Reed. Five children were born to them, all of whom survive; two daughters and three sons, named in the order of their ages, Maria, Herbert Ruth, Henry and James. After his marriage he continued assiduously at his profession, and at the same time, engaged in the culture of the grape and in horticulture generally, not on a very large scale, for he engaged in it mainly as a recreation, although he was an enthusiastic lover of the cultivation of the soil, and was constantly experimenting with new and rare plants, fruits and vegetables, many of which he introduced into his native county. When the civil war broke out his sympathies attached him to the cause of the Union, but he took no part in the conflict, until in May, 1862, when he became a surgeon in the United States army, and was ordered to join Fremont's command at New Creek, and accompanied it up the valley of Virginia and was with his regiment in the front, at the battle of Cross Keys, and thence passed over the Blue Ridge and was at the fight at Cedar Run on South Mountain. At that time Dr. Putney was acting as brigade surgeon, and was close by Gen. Bohlen, when the latter was killed by a shell, and he himself came near falling a victim to the enemy's sharp shooters. The fatigue, the loss of rest, and constant calls upon him for his professional services very nearly exhausted his strength, and then the two days fight of the second battle of Bull Run, following closely, entirely broke down his strength, and a severe attack of neuralgia supervening and his whole system sinking under the heavy strain that

had been put upon it so long and continuously, he resigned his position as surgeon, was taken to Washington, where he lay sick for some time, before he had strength enough to return to his home in Kanawha. His improvement in health was not very great, even after his arrival at home, but he was able to attend to some professional duties, and he received the appointment of army examining surgeon for the Third district of West Virginia, which position he held until nearly the close of the war, when his health again became so feeble that he was compelled to resign. After the close of the war, and his health was somewhat restored, he received the appointment of examining surgeon for pensions in his district, which position he held until within a few months of his death. The disease, which finally carried him off, was Progressive Locomotor Ataxia, with which he was first attacked about seven or eight years before his death. Its advance was very gradual, commencing in his feet, and slowly extending up his lower limbs, until he became unable to use them without the aid of crutches, for three years before his death. His physical sufferings were very acute, but he bore them with heroic and christian fortitude. He found relief from his sufferings in death, on the 6th day of September, 1876, and was laid to rest in the private cemetery of his Ruffner ancestor, near Malden, in Kanawha county. Dr. Putney was, in his youth, a man of robust physical frame, nearly six feet in height, and of large proportions. With the exception of an attack of sciatic rheumatism when he was about twenty-two years of age, his health was good until he went into the army. He was a man of fine mental powers; his mind was acute and analytic. He was not content to be left behind in the progress of his professional science, but was a student to the day of his death. His practice was a large and laborious one, and he was ever ready and prompt at the call of the suffering, whether rich or poor. Even whilst on his last bed of suffering he did not cease from ministering to his patient, who would either come or send to him for advice, which would be given, in the intervals of his paroxysms of pain with skill and clearness, unaffected by his bodily sufferings, which did not dim nor diminish the force of his mind. In his domestic relations, he was a most admirable man. As a father and husband, he was tender, gentle and affectionate. Some years before his death he connected himself with the Presbyterian church, of which he remained a consistent and active member until his death. He spent his whole life in his native place, and those amongst whom he labored for thirty-five years as a physician, can and do bear testimony to the broad and kindly charity of his heart, and to his high professional skill.

Dr. Eli Herdman Moore was born in Wellsburg, Brooke county, Va., April 4, 1814. He was the only son of Robert

Moore, Esq., and his wife, Margaret Herdman, daughter of Samuel Herdman, of Delaware. After pursuing his preliminary studies in the public and select schools of the town, he entered Washington college, Pennsylvania, in the year 1833, and remained until illness compelled him to return home, within a few months of graduation. Soon after he left college he turned his attention to the study of medicine, and pursued his medical studies under the direction of Dr. John C. Campbell, now of Wheeling. He attended two courses of lectures at Jefferson Medical college, Philadelphia, graduating in the class of 1840, and on returning home he immediately commenced the practice of medicine in his native town, and continued it with singleness of purpose and untiring assiduity up to the time of his death. In personal appearance, Dr. Moore was tall and slender, dark eyes and hair, and with features and look beaming with intelligence, and with the manners of a true gentleman, he was naturally modest, reserved and unassuming; popularity he never courted, and ever regarded quackery with the most thorough contempt. He possessed good natural abilities; was a close student, often sitting up until a late hour at night. Constant study and observation, and a mind cultivated and enriched with useful, practical and scientific knowledge, rendered him a skillful and scientific practitioner. Called away in the prime of life, and in the height of his usefulness, his death was most sincerely lamented by all who knew or appreciated him. The medical profession of his own county have lost their most valued counselor, society a most useful citizen, and the Church of Christ has also sustained a severe loss, as he had been an elder in the Disciples church for many years. He had gathered around him a large and valuable library, not only of medical but of miscellaneous books. He was an ardent admirer of fine paintings and engravings. So that the surroundings of his home always testified the inner life and character of the man. Through the beautiful in nature he read the infinite mind, the wisdom, power and love of God.

Dr. Sydenham Herford, was born in Loudoun county, Va., June 17, 1811, within one mile of the residence of James Monroe, afterward the fifth president of the United States. He was educated at the grammar school of Rev. John Ogleby, in Fauquier county, after which he studied medicine under the tutorship of his father, Dr. Thomas Herford, who, at that time, was one of the most distinguished physicians of the state, both as practitioner and contributor to medical literature. He was graduated at the Jefferson Medical college at Philadelphia in 1833, and practiced medicine some two years at Centerville. He then practiced in Rectortown, Fauquier county, for two years, and from there moved to Gallipolis, Ohio. In 1837 he settled in Buffalo, now

Putnam county, where he practiced eight years, when he made a visit to his old home, and after one year settled at Red House Shoals, resuming practice which he continued to 1871. In 1863 he lost his wife by death. Some time after he married Miss Mary E., daughter of William and Elizabeth Burford, a sister of Capt. A. J. Burford, late of the Confederate army, with whom he lived till his death. He was a man of extraordinary practical ability, thoroughly versed in the literature of his profession, had a well stocked library of medical works, but they were not up to the advanced progress of medicine of the later years of his practice. He devoted the last fifteen years of his life to mercantile business. He was highly respected as neighbor, physician and merchant. He was extremely modest and unpretending, also very reticent in regard to the events of his varied life.

CHAPTER XXI.

BY VIRGIL A. LEWIS.

POINT PLEASANT, THE OLDEST ENGLISH TOWN ON THE OHIO — CLAIMS OF WHEELING — OF MARIETTA.

WHICH is it! Wheeling, Marietta or Point Pleasant? That it is one of these is conceded, but which one is in reality the oldest? Let us examine the records. These are now the only source of information, for more than a hundred years have passed away since the founding of these towns, and all who could have told of it have long since passed from among the living. Every student of American annals is familiar with the claims of France to the Ohio valley and of her efforts to maintain the same. He knows also of the claims of Great Britain to the same territory, and upon which these were based by both nations. The former acted upon the principle that "They should *keep* who have the power," and the latter upon a nearly similar one that "They should *take* who can." France, convinced of the justness of her title, after addressing an appeal to the nations of the world, determined not to yield before the threatening attitude of her powerful rival, and accordingly began the erection of a cordon of forts, extending from St. Lawrence to the Gulf of Mexico. In 1746, as a preliminary step in taking possession of the country drained by the Ohio and its tributaries, the Marquis de la Gallisoniere, governor-general of New France (Canada), determined to place along the "Oyo" of La Belle Rivere, a number of leaden plates suitably inscribed, asserting the claims of France to the country on both sides of the river, even to the sources of its tributaries.

The command of the expedition, whose duty it was to deposit these plates, was given to Capt. Bienville de Celeron, and consisted of eight subaltern officers, six cadets, an armorer, twenty-five soldiers, 180 Canadians and fifty-five Indians. The expedition left Montreal June 15, 1749, and on the 29th reached *La Belle Rivere*, at the junction of the Allegheny and Monongahela rivers. From there the expedition descended the river, depositing plates at the mouths of the principal tributaries, among them, one at the mouth of Wheeling Creek (now Wheeling); one at the mouth of the Muskingum (now Marietta), and another at

the mouth of the Great Kanawha (now Point Pleasant). Of these, the ones interred at Marietta and Point Pleasant have been found. These were the first Europeans that descended the Ohio, and they carried the beautiful *Fleur-de-lis* — emblem of France. None had yet borne to the banks of the "Beautiful river," the Red Cross of St George — the proud and gorgeous ensign of old England.

The final contest for territorial supremacy in America was near at hand. The truce secured by the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle ended, and the war-cloud was transferred from Europe to the wilds of North America, where the storm burst with all its fury, and continued to rage for six long years. The struggle ended, and the world knows the result. The power and dominion of France have disappeared, and no traces of their lost sovereignty exist, save in the names of the prominent streams and landmarks of the country, and in the leaden plates which, inscribed in her language, still lie buried on the banks of the Ohio.

It now only remained for England to possess the country thus wrested from a sister kingdom, and her explorers, surveyors and adventurers hastened to the Ohio valley. In 1765 Major George Crogan and party descended the Ohio and saw the present sites of Wheeling, Marietta and Point Pleasant. (Appendix, Butler's History of Kentucky, p. 365.) Five years later, in 1770, Washington, in company with several Virginians, crossed the mountains to Fort Pitt, and thence descended the Ohio to the mouth of the Great Kanawha, where the month of October was spent in making surveys. When the work was completed the party returned to the east. At that time all authorities agree that there was not an Anglo-Saxon settlement from Fort Pitt to the mouth of the Ohio. Then, when and where was the first one made?

Claims of Wheeling.— There was, then, no English speaking people residing on the banks of the Ohio prior to the year 1770, but De Hass says (History of Northwest Virginia, p. 332), that, "On a bright morning of June in that year, Colonel Ebenezer Zane stood on the high bank of the Ohio just above the confluence of Wheeling creek and gazed upon the outspread landscape of island, hill and river. The founder of a future city was then upon the site upon which it was to be reared. Erecting a cabin, he remained one season on the Ohio, and then returning east he induced a few resolute friends to accompany him. He removed westward in the spring of 1772, but deeming it unsafe to carry his family to the banks of the Ohio, he left them at Redstone (now Brownstown, Pennsylvania), and in company with his brothers, Jonathan and Silas, and two or three others, proceeded to take possession of their rights on the Ohio." Completing his cabin and having opened a clearing, Mr. Zane visited

Redstone and that fall made a final removal. With the opening of the spring of 1773 came a number of settlers from the south branch and thus was formed a settlement that has grown to be a city of many thousand. (De Hass, p. 334.) Thus was laid the foundation of the "Nail City," so long Virginia's metropolis of the west.

We have quoted from Dr. De Hass's valuable work because it is believed that his personal acquaintance with representatives of the Zane family, access to their family records, private papers, etc., insure accuracy in the narration of events with which the brave and honored pioneers who bore that name were connected.

A storm of Indian warfare hovered near; Dunmore's war was at hand. The stockade was the only place of safety. Several at once arose along the frontier, among them Fort Fincastle, at the mouth of Wheeling creek. It was built in 1774, by a company of Virginia militia, under the joint direction of Maj. Angus McDonald and Capt. William Crawford. (History of Pan Handle, p. 93.) In 1776, Patrick Henry became the first commonwealth governor of Virginia, and in honor of him the name of the fort at Wheeling was changed to Fort Henry, and as such it was known until the ruthless barbarian no longer visited the southern banks of the Ohio. Then its walls were razed to the ground to make room for the dwelling places of civilized men.

On the 26th day of September, 1792, by an act of the general assembly, a ferry was established from the lands of James Caldwell, in Ohio county, across the mouth of Wheeling creek to the lands of Ebenezer Zane. (Shepherd's Virginia Statutes at Large, vol. 1, p. 158.) The same act provided for the establishment of several ferries from lands in Ohio county across the Ohio river to lands in the Northwest territory.

Wheeling was legally constituted a town by legislative enactment, December 25, 1795, when the General Assembly enacted, "That the late property of Ebenezer Zane, as the same is already laid off in lots and streets in the county of Ohio and on the Ohio river shall be established a town by the name of Wheeling, and John McIntyre, Andrew Woods, Henry Smith, Archibald Woods, James Nelson, Robert Woods, Absalom Martin and William Waddle, gentlemen, shall be and they are hereby constituted trustees thereof." (Shepherd's Virginia Statutes, vol. 1, p. 424.)

Wheeling became the seat of justice of Ohio county (created in October, 1776) in 1797, and the first county court convened at that place at the house of John Gooding, an innkeeper, May 7, 1798. (History of the Pan Handle, p. 156.)

Claims of Marietta.—The most important act of the last Continental Congress was the establishment of a settled government for the northwest territory. It was one of the most important

laws ever enacted by the representatives of the American people. That vast domain had been ceded to the general government by New York, Massachusetts, Connecticut and Virginia, and the next important event was to be the founding of a new state within its limits. This was done by the Ohio company of associates, formed in 1786, and composed for the most part of officers and soldiers of the Revolution, whose homes were principally in New England. Its purchase, the terms of which were completed October 17, 1787, embraced a tract of land containing about one and a half million acres. This was the second survey made within the present limits of Ohio, and was situated principally within the present boundaries of Washington, Athens, Meigs and Gallia counties, in that state.

At a meeting of the directors of the company held November 23, 1787, Gen. Rufus Putnam was chosen superintendent. Early in December six boat builders and a number of other mechanics were sent forward to Simrall's Ferry (now West Newton), on the Youghiougheny, under the command of Major Hatfield White. The party reached its destination in January, and at once proceeded to build a boat for the use of the company.

Early in winter the pioneers left their New England homes and began the journey to other homes to be found in the western wilderness. They passed over the Alleghenies and reached the Yougiougheny about the middle of February. The "Mayflower," as the boat was called, which was to transport the settlers to their destination, was forty-five feet long, twelve feet wide and of fifty tons burden. All things were in readiness. The voyagers embarked at Simrall's Ferry and passed down the Youghiougheny into the Monongahela, thence into the Ohio and down that river to the mouth of the Muskingum, where they arrived April 7, 1788, *and there made the first permanent settlement of civilized men within the present limits of Ohio.*

Their settlement was established upon a point of land between the Ohio and Muskingum rivers, just opposite and across the river from Fort Harmar, built in 1786, and at the time of the coming of colonists, garrisoned by a small military force under the command of Major Doughty. At a meeting held beneath the spreading boughs of the trees on the banks of the Muskingum, July 2, 1788, it was voted that Marietta should be the name of the town; it being thus named in honor of Maria Antoinette, queen of France. Thus was founded Marietta fifteen years after the first settlement of Wheeling, and fourteen years after the building of Fort Henry.

Claims of Point Pleasant.— Now, let us briefly notice Point Pleasant in the olden time. The first Englishman (so far as there is any record) that saw the site of Point Pleasant was Christopher Gist, who came as an explorer to the Ohio valley in

1750, in the interest of the Ohio Land company, a corporation formed before the French and Indian war, and composed of Virginians and Marylanders, with the single exception of Mr. Hanbury, of London. Gist's journal may be seen in the archives of the Massachusetts Historical society.

So far as known, the first white woman who saw the mouth of the Great Kanawha was Mary Ingles, who was taken prisoner by the Shawnee Indians, July 8, 1755, at the time of the Draper's Meadow's massacre — now Blacksburg, Montgomery county, Va. A few days after she passed the site of Point Pleasant on her way to spend a period in captivity beyond the Ohio. Four months later, when returning to her friends on the upper waters of New or Wood's river, she again saw Point Pleasant. (Trans-Allegheny Pioneers, p. 29.)

In 1763 Mrs. Hannah Dennis, when returning to her home on James river, from a three years' captivity among the Shawnee Indians, crossed the Ohio river on a drift log at the mouth of Kanawha, and many days later reached Fort Young on Jackson's river. (Withers' Border Warfare, p. 69.)

In 1764 Capt. William Arbuckle, one of the most daring pioneers whose names appear in frontier annals, reached the site of Point Pleasant. It is a matter of record that he was the first white man who traversed the Great Kanawha valley. (See McMullen's Biographical Sketches.)

As before stated, Washington reached the site of Pt. Pleasant in the autumn of the year 1770. With him were Dr. Craig, Joseph Nicholson, Robert Bell, William Harrison, Charles Morgan, Daniel Renden and Colonel William Crawford, the latter of whom was burned at the stake by the Delaware Indians in what is now Crawford township, Wyandot county, Ohio, June 11, 1782.

An encampment was made and the work of surveying at once began. "A large sugar tree and sycamore at the mouth of the Kanawha and immediately on the upper point," was marked as the place of beginning. From this point a line was run to the mouth of Three Mile Creek on the north side of the Kanawha, and thence a zig-zag line to a point on the Ohio, one mile below Letart Falls; then a line with the meanderings of the Ohio to the place of beginning. This survey contained 51,302 acres or eighty square miles, and was subdivided among the patentees as follows: First a tract of 9,876 acres, including the present site of the town of Pt. Pleasant, for Andrew Lewis; then a tract containing 5,000 acres for George Muse; then a tract of 5,000 acres for Peter Hogg; then a tract or 8,000 acres for Andrew Stephens; then another tract of 3,000 acres for Peter Hogg; then another of 5,026 acres for George Muse; then a tract of 3,400 acres for Andrew Waggener; then a tract of 6,000 acres for John Poulson;

then a tract of 6,000 acres for John West. Operations were then transferred to the lower side of the Kanawha, and a tract of 13,532 acres was surveyed for Hugh Mercer and lastly a tract containing 10,990 acres on the south side of the Kanawha river for George Washington. These lands were all granted to the several patentees for services in the French and Indian war, every one of whom it is believed were with Braddock at the battle of Monongahela.

In the spring of 1773, James McCown, Hancock Taylor and James, George and Robert McAfee, all afterward prominent in the history of Kentucky, joined the party of Col. Thomas Bullitt, who for services in the French and Indian war, had received a patent for the lands upon which Charleston, the capital of the state, now stands, and all proceeded to Kentucky. In the year 1771, Simon Kenton and two companions — Yeager and Strader — reared the first cabin in the Great Kanawha valley, on the bank of Elk river, about two miles from the present city of Charleston. Here in the spring of 1773, they were attacked by the Indians. Yeager was killed, and Kenton and Strader, both wounded, fled down the Kanawha, and found refuge in a hunters' camp at Point Pleasant. (Trans-Allegheny Pioneers, p. 66.)

On the first of October, 1774, General Lewis's army, 1,100 strong, under the guidance of Captain William Arbuckle, reached Point Pleasant, and on the 10th of the same month waged the most fiercely contested battle ever fought with the Indians in Virginia, if not on the continent. Indeed, its desperate character has no parallel in the annals of forest warfare. That evening as the sun sank behind the low hills of the western wilderness, 140 wounded Virginians were borne by more fortunate comrades, into the encampment. A hundred detailed men at once reared the walls of Fort Randolph, and from that bloody October day, to the present time, an English speaking people have dwelt at Point Pleasant.

Capt. Arbuckle was placed in command of the fort, and in this capacity he was serving in 1778, when visited by Gen. George Rogers Clarke, then on his way to Kentucky, to lead the expedition against the British posts of Kaskaskia and Vincennes. Capt. Arbuckle left Lieut. McKee in command, and accompanied Gen. Clarke in his western campaign. (Butler's History of Kentucky, p. 48.)

The general assembly, December 26, 1792, passed an act establishing a ferry from the lands of Thomas Lewis, across the Ohio to lands in the Northwest Territory. The same act provided for the establishment of a ferry across the mouth of the Kanawha, from the lands of Thomas Lewis to the lands of Robert Henderson, opposite; the rates for a man being 6 cents. (Shepherd's Statutes at Large, p. 158.)

December 19, 1794, the general assembly enacted that "Two hundred acres of land, the property of Thomas Lewis, at the mouth of the Kanawha river in the said county of Kanawha, as they are already laid off into lots and streets, shall be established a town by the name of Point Pleasant, and Leonard Cooper, John Van Bibber, Isaac Tyler, William Owens, William Allyn, John Reynolds, Allen Prior, George Clendenin and William Morris, gentlemen, appointed trustees thereof." (Shepherd's Statutes, vol. 1, p. 321.) Thus was begun the legal existence of Point Pleasant, one year and six days before that of Wheeling.

Now what are the facts? Simply these: That before the founding of Marietta and while the owl hooted amid the branches of the lofty trees, the howl of the wolf and the scream of the panther resounded through the forest, and while the fox "dug his hole unscared," on the site where that city now stands, daring pioneers, among whom were Daniel Boone, John Van Bibber, John Reynolds, Isaac Tyler, Michael See, Robert St. Clair, Benjamin Eulin and Luman Gibbs were dwelling in their cabin homes around the walls of old Fort Randolph at Point Pleasant. From beneath the mistletoe dressed boughs of the old sentinel tree which stood near by, a weary sentry had watched for the coming of the savage foe, fourteen years before a single white man had found a home at Marietta.

Fort Henry at Wheeling and Fort Randolph at Point Pleasant, were both reared the same year — 1774. Both withstood the storm of savage warfare until the war-whoop of the barbarian was no longer heard on the banks of the Ohio. Then those who had found refuge within these walls went forth to conquest — not with the rifle — but with the axe to conquer the wilderness, that they might transmit a rich inheritance to their posterity.

Now, what do the records show? This: that Point Pleasant is fourteen years older than Marietta; twelve years older than Charleston, the capital of West Virginia; fifteen years older than Cincinnati; seventeen years older than Gallipolis, and twenty-two years older than Chillicothe. It is seventeen years older than Harrodsburg, the oldest town in Kentucky, in which state the first log cabin was built the same year that Fort Randolph was reared at Point Pleasant. Thus Point Pleasant is the oldest English town on the banks of the Ohio south of Pittsburgh. It is the "Jamestown" of the Ohio valley.

CHAPTER XXII.

FORMATION OF MASON COUNTY — TOPOGRAPHY — NAMING OF THE COUNTY — THE COUNTY SEAT — BURIAL OF THE LEADEN PLATES BY THE FRENCH — PRINCIPAL TOWNS IN MASON COUNTY — HON. JOHN HALL — NATURAL RESOURCES — NEWSPAPERS.

MASON COUNTY was formed by the act of the general assembly of Virginia, approved on the 2nd day of January, 1804. It was taken from Kanawha county, and is bounded on the north by the Ohio river, on the east by a portion of that river and Jackson county, on the south by Putnam and Cabell counties, and on the west by the Ohio river. It contains 432 square miles of surface. The topography of the county is undulating, the surface being divided into bottom and hill lands. The land produces all the cereals common to the temperate zones, and its mineral resources are rich. A very large portion of the county is under cultivation. The climate is mild, equable and salubrious. The county takes its name from a distinguished character of Revolutionary times—George Mason, who was born in 1725. He was one of the framers of the constitution of Virginia, and was a member of the convention which framed the constitution of the United States. He was, however, opposed to the ratification by Virginia of that important document, believing that it had monarchical tendencies, which would ultimately absorb the state governments. Doubtless in consequence of this belief, his name was not attached to the constitution.

The county seat is Point Pleasant, situated near the confluence of the Kanawha and Ohio rivers. It is historic ground, having been the battle field of a famous contest between the pioneers and Indians in 1774. In this battle the whites numbered 1,100, and were led by Gen. Andrew Lewis, the Indians being under the leadership of the noted warrior, Cornstalk. This battle was sanguinary and long-protracted, the issue for some time being doubtful, success and repulse alternating between the contending forces. The Indians were finally outflanked and put to flight, but not until Cols. Lewis and Field and seventy-five of their men had been killed, and 140 were wounded. The town of Point Pleasant was established by an act of the general assembly of Virginia, approved December 19, 1794, and

Leonard Cooper, John Van Bibber, Isaac Tyler, William Owens, William Allyn, John Reynolds, Allen Prior, George Clendenin and William Morris, were appointed by the same act its first board of trustees. In 1833 an act of incorporation was passed by the geneal assembly. The site of the town was first explored as far back as 1750 by an agent of the Ohio Land company, named Christopher Gist, who made an extended survey of that point and the contiguous territory.

Among those white people who first saw this most favorite locality we may mention Mrs. Mary Ingles, a captive of the Shawnee Indians, who, in July, 1755, passed the site of the town on her way to Ohio, having been captured in the Draper's Meadow massacre, in what is now Montgomery county, Va., and on her return, a few months later, from her captivity, she again passed through the place. Again, in 1763, Mrs. Hannah Dennis, who had also been captured by the Indians, was conveyed by her captors across the Ohio river at this point on a log raft. In 1764 Captain William Arbuckle, said to be the first white man who explored the Kanawha valley, visited the site of Point Pleasant. The most distinguished visitor of this point, however, was Gen. Washington, who, with several companions, made his camp there in October, 1770, and began a survey of the land, a large tract of which he became the owner by virtue of a grant for military service in the French and Indian war. The place of encampment was made the initial point of the survey, which included eighty square miles of territory. The names of those who shared these grants with Washington were Andrew Lewis, Peter Hogg, George Muse, Andrew Stephens, Andrew Waggener, John West, and Hugh Mercer, and their grants varied from 3,000 to over 13,000 acres of land. George Washington's grant covered a tract of 10,990 acres on the lower side of the Kanawha, while to Andrew Lewis was granted a tract of 9,876 acres, including the present site of Point Pleasant.

Though these names are given as among the first who saw and occupied the site of Pt. Pleasant, it is in proof that the French had been there some years before and at this very confluence of the two rivers, had planted one of their leaden plates to indicate that the country was in their possession. While the Indians were in undisturbed ownership of this whole country bordering on the Ohio river, La Salle, the French explorer, had taken possession in the name of his government, and these lead plates were to attest the French possession. A translation of the inscription upon this plate reads as follows: "In the year 1749 of the reign of Louis XV., king of France, we, Celoron, commander of a detachment sent by Monsieur the Marquis de la Galissoniere, governor-general of New France, to re-establish tranquility in some Indian villages of these cantons, have buried this plate of

lead at the confluence of the Ohio and the Chatauqua, this 29th day of July, near the river Ohio, otherwise Belle Riviere, as a monument of the renewal of the possession we have taken of the said river Ohio, and of all which empty into it, and of all the land on both sides as far as the sources of the said rivers, as enjoyed or ought to have been enjoyed by the kings of France, preceding, as they have them maintained themselves by arms and by treaties especially those of Ryswick, Utrecht and Aix la Chapelle." This, the fifth of the several plates deposited, was buried at the confluence of the Ohio and Kanawha, on the 18th day of August, 1749. This plate was found by a boy, in March, 1846, while playing on the banks of the Kanawha. It was found projecting from the banks of the river several feet below the surface of the ground. The place selected by Celoron for the interment of this plate was one of surpassing beauty. It was then in all its primeval beauty and picturesqueness, crowned with its native forest trees, and it fully justified the name afterward given it by the early settlers, Point Pleasant.

In the beginning of October, 1774, Point Pleasant became the rendezvous of Gen. Lewis' army, consisting of 1,100 men under the immediate command of Capt. William Arbuckle. On the 10th of that month one of the most determined and hard fought battles of the whole Indian warfare began and resulted the same day in the wounding of 140 Virginians. From this bloody outcome the settlement of Point Pleasant took its rise, 100 of the survivors of this sanguinary battle being detailed to build Fort Randolph. This fort was placed under the command of Capt. Arbuckle, which position he held till February, 1778, when he was visited by Gen. George Rogers Clark, then leading an expedition against the British forces stationed at Vincennes and Kaskaskia. Leaving the fort in the command of an under-officer, Lieut. McKee, Capt. Arbuckle joined Clark in his western campaign. The place was for a long time subject to the incursions of hostile Indians, who seized upon every opportunity to commit their characteristic depredations, in many instances killing and scalping defenseless women and children and waylaying and capturing men who ventured too far from the fort unarmed and unprotected. These incursions continued up to 1791, the last attack occurring in May of that year, when Indians to the number of thirty attacked a party of eighteen white men one mile north of the fort on the banks of the Ohio. The whites suffered defeat, two of their number were killed, one was taken prisoner with his black slave accompanying him, and the rest made good their escape. The name of the black boy taken prisoner was not given in the original account of the battle, but he afterward became a chief among the Indians and took part among the friendly tribes in behalf of the Americans, in the war of 1812.

William See, a son of one of the whites who was killed in the encouter, and who was born within the fort in the evening of the very day on which his father was killed, was a volunteer in the Mason County Riflemen, who also took part in that war. In 1813, during this war, by a strange coincidence he met and became acquainted with this colored chief, who informed him that the Indian who shot his father, Michael See, was still living, but was very aged, helpless and blind. Young See besought the chief to tell him of the whereabouts of the Indian, but fearing the young man would undertake to avenge the murder of his father, the chief declined to give the information. There are many other affecting examples of Indian barbarities in the history of the early settlement of Point Pleasant, among them the capture of two girls named Tyler, who, venturing too far from the fort in search of the cows belonging to their family, were ambushed by the Indians, taken prisoners, hurried off on a long and tedious journey to Detroit, where the younger died of a broken heart. Her elder sister remained a prisoner for some years, but finally married a French Canadian, by whom she was permitted to re-visit her friends in Point Pleasant, where she spent several months renewing her childhood connections and acquaintances. But it was not her home, and she took a final leave of her earlier friends to rejoin her husband, who awaited her at Detroit. She closed her eventful life in Montreal, at an advanced age.

Some of the other principal towns in Mason county are Clifton, West Columbia, Letart, Tract, Flat Rock, Henderson, Rock Castle, Brighton, Beech Hill, Arbuckle, Apple Grove, Grimm's Landing, Pomona, Hickory, Ashton and Upland.

This county furnished, in the person of Hon. John Hall, the president of the constitutional convention which framed the first constitution of the state of West Virginia. He began his active life in this county, having come to Point Pleasant with his parents in 1829. They came from Pennsylvania, and the parents, after residing some years in Mason county, returned to that state, but the son remained and became conspicuous as one of the leading citizens of the state. Though he began life as a farmer, he was soon selected for public office. At the age of thirty-seven years he was elected to the general assembly of Virginia, and was re-elected, serving two terms, after which he was chosen a member of the state senate. In 1852 he was elected a presidential elector on the whig ticket, and when West Virginia was set off from the old state he was chosen a member to the constitutional convention and, as above mentioned, was made the president of that body. He proved himself equal to such a distinction and was one of the most active and efficient advocates for the admission of the state into the Union. He furnished two sons for the Union army, both of whom were slain in the

defense of the cause of the Union; both had been educated in military science and both held a commanding rank in their respective regiments. John Hall was born in 1807, in Ireland, and died April 30, 1882. He sleeps beside his two sons, who gave their lives to their country, in the cemetery at Eight Mile Island. Another of the distinguished pioneers of Mason county was John Cantrell, who settled on the banks of the Ohio as early as 1794, when he was but fourteen years of age. In 1802, he removed to the north bank of the Kanawha, but a short distance from the mouth of that stream. He became one of only three settlers who held places on the Kanawha, between Point Pleasant and Charleston. He was one of the first justices of Kanawha county, before its division, and in 1805 he was elected a representative of Mason county in the general assembly of the state, a preferment to which he was several times re-elected. He took part in the war of 1812, with the rank of major of his regiment. He held various county offices, and survived till after the formation of the new state, closing his useful and eventful life on the 17th of June, 1863.

Mason county, by its position upon the Ohio and by being bisected by the Kanawha, has probably a larger amount of what is termed alluvial soil than any other county. It has fifty miles of bottom lands upon the first named stream, and more than thirty miles of the same upon the Kanawha. Consequently its area of fine farming lands is not probably surpassed by any county in the state. All the grains and root plants are raised in profusion in these rich alluvial soils, and the labors of the agriculturist are crowned with an abundant reward. Upon the more hilly portions there are rich deposits of iron ore, which, in quality, rival those of any other portion of the country. The coal found in this region is equal, if not superior in quality, to any found in any other locality, and the means for its transportation are unequaled, its navigable rivers offering unusual facilities in that direction. Salt is found on both sides of the Kanawha river, as well as in its bed, and is reached by boring from 300 to 1,000 feet, the briny element when struck rising to a level of the river. The proximity of coal for the purposes of evaporation, makes the production of salt all the more easy and cheap. The quality of this product is unsurpassed. Taking into account the extent and quality of the iron, coal and salt deposited in this county, and the unsurpassed facilities for transportation in all seasons of the year, there is a splendid future for this county in the development of its exhaustless natural resources. Hardly second to these subterranean products is the supply of lumber to be found in its still primeval forests. White oak, white and yellow poplar, hickory, black walnut, cherry, white ash, maple, beech, white

and yellow pines — in fact almost every species of wood used for building and finishing purposes are found in great abundance and of rare excellence in quality, within the boundaries of Mason county.

Newspapers.— The newspapers in existence at the present time in Mason county consist of *The Mountain Messenger*, a republican sheet begun in 1889, at Point Pleasant, and under the management of T. L. Davies; *The Register*, democratic, begun in 1862, and now conducted by G. W. Tippett; *The State Gazette*, republican, first issued in 1881, and now edited by Miss L. N. Simpson. Considering the extensive circulation of newspapers from the capital city, these journals appear to be in the enjoyment of a very fair patronage, which speaks well for the intelligence and culture of the inhabitants of the county.

CHAPTER XXIII.

AREA OF PUTNAM COUNTY — ITS FORMATION — THE COUNTY SEAT AND PRINCIPAL TOWNS — ITS FIRST COUNTY COURT — TOPOGRAPHY — NATURAL RESOURCES — EARLY SETTLERS — INCIDENTS OF EARLY HISTORY — NEWSPAPERS.

PUTNAM COUNTY has an area of 320 square miles. It is bounded on the north by Mason county and a small portion of Jackson county; on the east by Kanawha; on the south by Kanawha and Lincoln counties, and on the west by Lincoln, Cabell and Mason counties. The county was created by authority of an act of the general assembly of Virginia, passed March 11, 1848. Its county seat is Winfield, and its other principal towns are Pike City, Liberty, Round Knob, Pliny, Buffalo, Hurricane, Teays, Carpenter, Elsinore, Johnson's Shoals, and Poca. The county was formed from portions of Kanawha, Mason and Cabell counties, and its political history is consequently of much more recent date than of those counties. Its first county court met on the 22d of May, 1848, and was composed of the following named justices: Mathew D. Brown, Alexander T. Handley, John C. Thomas, Sr., Mahlon S. Morris, Lawrence A. Washington, Lewis S. Boling, John Morgan, John Ruffner, William A. Alexander and James Smith. Elijah Kimberling was chosen crier *pro tem.*, and Hart C. Forbes was appointed county clerk; George W. Summers, prosecuting attorney; Daniel B. Washington, commissioner of the revenue; Samuel T. Wyatt, surveyor of lands, and Addison Wolf, coroner. The court then named Mathew D. Brown as the first high sheriff of the new county.

The topography of the county is hilly and rolling. Bordering the Kanawha there are bottom lands of about a mile in width, composed of deep loam and of great fertility. The soil upon the hills is of a clayey and calcareous nature, well constituted for the production of wheat and other cereals. Tobacco of an excellent quality is also quite extensively raised, for which the soil is well fitted. A large portion of the county is heavily timbered. Farming, lumbering and mining are the principal industries. Coal is found in great abundance and of fine quality, and limestone and sandstone suitable for building purposes are found in the quarries. The navigable streams, consisting of the Kanawha and Pocotalico, in conjunction with the railway lines, afford extensive means for transportation, and the smaller

streams present extensive water power for the manufacture of flour, lumber, and cloth textures. The shipments of coal, lumber, grain, flour and other products of the mines, of the soil and of the manufacturing industries are quite extensive. Both the climate and the soil upon the hilly portion of the county are peculiarly fitted for the growing of the grape, and the conditions for the production of this luscious fruit offer unlimited and exhaustless resources for profitable production. Cranberries are a spontaneous production of the county, and other wild berries find here a willing soil and a genial climate. These limitless resources of nature only await the stimulus of enterprise and capital to make this county rich and prosperous. In location, in the salubrity of its climate, in the fecundity of its soil, in its great water-ways, affording easy and facile transportation of its agricultural and manufactured products and in those great undeveloped riches which lie hidden under the surface to which allusion has been made in this paragraph, Putnam county is destined at no distant future, to sustain a dense and wealthy population.

Among the early settlers of the county, before it was separated from the other counties of which it then formed a part, were James Conner, who visited this locality in 1775, and fixed upon it as his future home; Charles Conner and James Ellis, who located there in 1799 and John Dudding, who located on the Kanawha nearly opposite Johnson's Shoals about the same year. A little later came Benedict Sanham. Other families soon followed, among whom were William Hensley, who constructed the first grist-mill in the settlement upon the Pocotalico, the Caruther family, the Harmons, the Tacketts, the Asburys, the Nulls and the Dixons. Their operations were at first of a primitive character, but it was not very long before the great natural attractions of the region began to draw others to swell these small beginnings.

Teays Valley, which took its name from the man who first visited it, and who was a relative of Thomas Teays, received its first actual settler in the person of Thomas Reece. He built the first cabin near the center of the valley in the first year of the present century, and his coming was soon supplemented by the arrival of Richard McAllister, George Bentley, Bennett Barrister and Samuel Frazier. The tract of country on which Buffalo is located was first visited by Gen. Washington and his corps of surveyors, among whom large portions of contiguous lands were distributed by the government in recognition of their invaluable military services during the French and Indian war. The surveys of these lands were made in the fall of 1770, and the awards of the several portions were made immediataly on the completion of the surveys. The Oldaker family located in this

county in 1800, and Jonathan Hill, Thomas Scott, Ira Dillon, William Clark and Lewis Tackett made their appearance in the years 1816–18. The site of Winfield, the present county seat of Putnam county, was first occupied, it is believed, by a person named Jones, in 1815, and he is said to have furnished corn to the boatmen navigating the river, at the low price of twelve and a half cents per bushel. About one mile above Buffalo is a historic spot which has for a century past been pointed out to the visitor of this region as Tackett's Pine, made memorable in the time of the Indian war in the Kanawha valley. About the period of this sanguinary struggle, a man named Tackett had settled near the mouth of Cole river, one of the tributaries of the Kanawha, and in 1786, while engaged in hunting, Tackett was made a prisoner by a roving band of Indians. They made him fast in a canoe and took him down the river to a landing opposite Knob Shoals. From the canoe they marched their prisoner to a pine tree on the summit of the Knob to which they bound him hand and foot. Considering him securely fastened they left him, with the expectation, at least on his part, that they would soon return and make some further disposal of him. These expectations, however, were illusive. He was doomed to spend a dismal night and a long day of suffering in this helpless and painful situation. When hunger and thirst began seriously to affect him, he commenced calling loudly for help, hoping that either friend or foe might come to release him from his intolerable bondage. But his shouts were ineffectual. At length a fearful storm arose and the tempest threatened to prostrate the tree to which he was bound, upon his helpless form. But the storm proved the means of his deliverance. It was attended with a deluge of rain, and, as he was bound with buckskin thongs, happily for him the water so soaked and loosened his bonds that by a desperate effort he was enabled to free himself. He made a quick passage to the river bank and hastily swam to the opposite shore. He had not too soon placed the shoals which were named for him between him and his late captors, who appeared near the starting point of his watery voyage, evidently enraged and disappointed that their captive had, by a strange providence, overreached and escaped them. But he had only taken the initial step toward his complete deliverance. Clendenin's fort, thirty-eight miles distant, was his nearest "city of refuge," and faint and hungry, but with a heart stimulated and upborne by the necessities of his situation, he hurried off upon his long and desperate race, literally never stopping to breathe till he reached that safe retreat. He afterward returned to revisit the scene of his fearful adventure, though not till peace had been established with the savages. He, however, did not re-establish

himself on his claim, but betook himself to his old home to die. Tackett's Pine, like its namesake and one time prisoner, has been dead for many years, and its remains, like his own, have mostly returned to their original mould, but the spot upon which both stood through that trying episode, the one in hopeless despair and the other racked by the fury of the elements, will be memorable to their latest posterity. The incident is one of those romances in real life, stranger and far more interesting than fiction.

The site upon which Winfield, the county seat of Putnam county, is located, was originally owned by Charles Brown, who was the owner of 400 acres of land, upon a part of which the town is built. Near this point Mr. Brown established a ferry across the river, as far back as 1818. The first hotel in the town was built by George C. Boyer in 1850. The act of incorporation of Winfield was passed by the general assembly in February, 1868. Buffalo is distinguished as the oldest town on the Kanawha between Charleston, the capital of the state, and Point Pleasant, the principal town in Mason county, and one of the most historic towns in the Kanawha valley. The site of Buffalo originally belonged to a Mr. Clarke, was transferred to his daughter, Mary A. Clarke, by gift, who afterward married Benjamin K. Craig. He, in 1834, proceeded to lay out the town, but it was not incorporated till about three years later.

In a sanitary point of view, Putnam county, in common with the whole Kanawha valley, is most favorably located. The winters are comparatively mild, and there is none of the oppressive heat in summer which prevails in even higher latitudes where the face of the country is less variegated. The air is healthful and bracing and the springs from the more hilly regions afford pure water. The malarial atmosphere which prevails in countries upon a nearer level with the sea, or in the vicinity of extensive marshes, is not known here, nor are the mountain springs contaminated with the overflow of surface water, impregnated with hurtful organic substances. The conditions of healthfulness are answered in every particular in this region, favored by natural advantages to a superior degree.

The incidents of the early history of the county are unique and interesting. Though remote from the earlier settlements of the Old Dominion, it formed a portion of the actual theater of the long-continued tripartite struggle between the French, the Indians and the Americans for its permanent possession. In its most perfect development, when its hidden treasury of ores shall be brought to the surface and utilized, when its dense forests, rich with woods for mechanical purposes, shall be converted into lumber, its agricultural and manufacturing possibilities brought

out and its great natural currents for transportation shall more fully become the medium of inter-state traffic, it will become the abiding place and heritage of a dense and prosperous citizenship, where progress, civilization and refinement shall find a favorite home.

Newspapers.— There are at present only two newspapers published in Putnam county, both issued at Winfield, the county seat. *The Putnam Democrat* was established in 1876, and, as its name implies, takes the democratic view in its politics. It is under the management of J. W. Miller. *The Irrepressible* is a republican organ and was first issued in 1879. P. C. Stephens is its proprietor. The population of the county compared with that of surrounding counties is small in number, but its local press appears to be well supported, indicating that its ratio of readers is fully sustained.

CHAPTER XXIV.

FORMATION OF FAYETTE COUNTY—THE COUNTY SEAT—THE PRINCIPAL TOWNS—MINERAL AND AGRICULTURAL RESOURCES—TOPOGRAPHY—HISTORIC INCIDENTS—JOHN R. PEYTON—MARSHALL'S PILLAR—CLIMATE—NEWSPAPERS.

FAYETTE COUNTY was formed in 1831, by detaching certain portions from Kanawha, Greenbrier, Nicholas and Logan counties. It is bounded on the north by Kanawha and Nicholas counties, on the east by Nicholas and Greenbrier, on the south by Summers and Raleigh, and on the west by portions of Raleigh and Kanawha counties. It contains 740 square miles. It takes its name from that illustrious foreigner who so generously espoused the cause of the American colonies when the oppressions of the mother country became too grave to be longer endured—the brave, patriotic, disinterested La Fayette. The county seat, Fayetteville, also takes its name from the same distinguished and venerated personage. The other principal towns in the county are: Dietz, Gauley Bridge, Clifty, Ansted, Victor, Mountain Cove, Russellville, Maywood, Raven's Eye, Hawk's Nest, Dempsey, Kincaid, Mossy, Oak Hill, Leb Long, Boyd's, Mount Hope, and the several railroad towns of Quinnimont, McKendree, Stonecliff, River View, Fire Creek, Sewell Depot, Caperton and Nuttallburgh. The Gauley and New rivers here form a junction, a little below which the famous Gauley Falls are seen. Both the mineral and agricultural advantages to be availed of in this county, are strong incentives for the lavish outlay of capital and industry within its borders. An abundant reward awaits such outlay. The surface of the county is hilly, mountainous, and the elevation of the table land is high. The soil, even upon the mountains is fertile, its formation being a rich, light loam, peculiarly adapted to the production of tobacco. Upon the Meadow river there are some fine bottom lands; the depth of soil varies from six to twelve inches. Besides tobacco, the soil is finely adapted to the culture of wheat, rye, corn, oats, barley and all varieties of grasses. The principal exports of the county are coal, timber, tobacco and cattle, for the last of which its hills affords the finest pasturage. The mining, farming, lumbering and stock-raising industries find ample markets in Richmond, Baltimore, Cincin-

nati and New York, to which the facilities for transportation are easy, and at low rates. The varieties of coal found in the mines are soft bituminous, splint and cannel. For building purposes, the quarries contain an abundant supply of excellent sandstone, and the mineral springs send out a generous flow of health-giving waters. The coal resources are being largely worked, lumber is manufactured into barrels and other commodities. The many sites for waterpowers are taken advantage of for various milling and manufacturing purposes. The Kanawha, the Gauley and the New rivers are all navigable for steamboats and batteaux, and afford extensive facilities for the carrying trade for many months of the year, and the Chesapeake & Ohio railroad supplements these facilities when navigation is impracticable, eventually there will be a complete system of canals, which, in conjunction with the navigable streams and the railroads, will make the opportunities for travel and transportation all that can be desired.

Among the historic incidents which distinguished this county, it is said to have been in part the scene of a remarkable local romance entitled "New Hope, or the Rescue," illustrating some of the strongest and most impressive features of frontier life, the interest of the work being heightened by the fact of its unknown authorship. The county was also for some years the residence of a well-known individual in the person of John Rowsee Peyton, whose eccentricities of character made him widely famous. He was the son of Capt. Garnett Peyton of the United States army, and a native of Madisonville, Va. There he was born December 6, 1806, and when of sufficient age to be entrusted from home, he was sent to the Staunton academy to perfect his common school education. In 1845 he acquired an estate in Fayette county, to which he removed and engaged in stock-raising. This business he followed up to the time of the breaking out of the civil war. Though a full-blooded Virginian he was strongly opposed to the secession movement. His political affiliations were with the old whig party, and he was constitutionally a unionist. But when the outbreak really came he was not able to resist the popular pressure of his neighborhood, and though then of an age that ought to have exempted him from military duty and of an excessively corpulent frame, he offered himself to the Confederate service, and enlisted in a Virginia regiment, attached to the Stonewall brigade. His first experience upon the battle field was in the desperate struggle at Bull Run, the first regular engagement of the war. But he was little fitted for such violent service, and after this, his initial baptism in the war's dread occupation, he was detailed for recruiting service in the southwestern part of the old state. His end was as melancholy as his disposition had been bright

and humorous. He was assassinated in 1862 by three Confederate deserters who had drawn him into an ambush near the summit of Bent Mountain at the foot of which, at an inn, he had stopped for dinner while journeying through Roanoke county. He had undertaken the ascent of the mountain and when he had nearly reached the top upon horseback, the concealed assassins fired a volley of musketry at him which brought him lifeless to the ground. The dastardly homicide was perpetrated in cold blood, possibly under the apprehension that Col. Peyton might have been in search of them and, though they were disguised, his presence might lead to their capture. But the assassins did not escape detection; they were caught and tried and one of them expiated his crime upon the gallows at Salem.

One of the notable points indicated on the map of Fayette county is Hawk's Nest, more properly named Marshall's Pillar. It is a steep and lofty formation upon the river banks, one of those strange freaks of nature which excite the wonder and admiration of the naturalist and attract the curiosity of all beholders. In 1812, Chief Justice Marshall made an official visit to the spot as one of the Virginia commissioners, and his was the first to ascertain its lofty height, having placed himself upon its elevated summit. Hence its more proper name. It towers 1,612 feet above the bed of New river, and 2,363 feet above tide water. One hundred and seventy-seven feet above the level of the river is a coal vein of two and a half feet in thickness. At 978 feet elevation a seam of bituminous coal occurs, eleven feet in thickness. At 1,178 feet, three to four feet of splint are found. The next four veins are composed of splint and cannel, varying from three feet four inches, to ten feet six inches in thickness. The summit formation is of black flint. The space between the first and second coal seams is filled with conglomerate occupying some 400 feet of elevation. This point is well worth a visit from anyone in quest of nature's wonders.

The climatic conditions which prevail in this county as regards healthfulness, are like those which characterize the Kanawha valley at large, but it has more than the average range of hilly country, which circumstance contributes largely to the purity of its atmosphere. The mountainous character of its surface gives it protection from the bleak winds which sweep over level countries, and the same cause produces a delicious coolness in summer. A comparatively equable temperature of neither too torrid nor frigid, is conducive to healthfulness and longevity. There are medicinal springs whose waters give tone and vigor to the human system, and supplement the beneficent properties of the air, by which the health of the diseased is restored

and that of the sound preserved and perpetuated. These are some of the characteristic advantages which make Fayette county desirable as a permanent residence and a favorite resort for the transient seekers of health and pleasure.

Newspapers.—The capital of a state is likely to be the place of issue of the larger number of newspapers, and the Kanawha valley is largely supplied from Charleston, a short but comprehensive history of whose press is to be found under the annals of Kanawha county. The number of newspapers in Fayette county is quite limited, and by the latest returns, consists of the *Fayette Democrat*, begun in 1883, at Fayetteville, the county seat, democratic in politics, and owned by Buell Lewis, and the *West Virginia Free Press*, established in 1890 at Fayetteville by W. A. Brazie, republican in politics.

CHAPTER XXV.

THE FORMATION OF KANAWHA COUNTY — THE FIRST SETTLER — THE SITE OF CHARLESTON — THE FIRST COUNTY COURT — CLIMATE — MINING INTERESTS — FRUIT — NEWSPAPERS.

KANAWHA COUNTY has, from time to time, suffered a diminution of its former ample proportions, which as its population increased might have made it too unwieldy. This diminution has been caused by the formation from its original territory of several other counties or parts of counties now contiguous to it. It was itself formed in 1789, from Greenbrier and Montgomery counties, and became one of the pioneer counties of western Virginia. Its area at that time was 2,090 square miles, and its population numbered 9,334. Since the period of its formation it has been whittled down from its first imperial dimensions, like a father dividing up his real possessions to his descendants, to only 980 square miles—about one tenth its first size. It is at present bounded on the north by portions of Putnam, Jackson and Roane counties, on the east by Roane, Clay and Nicholas counties, on the south by Fayette county, and on the west by Boone and Putnam counties. It takes its name from the important river which flows through a portion of its territory. Charleston is the county seat as it is also the capital of the state. Its mineral area within its original boundaries was greater than that of any other in the Union.

The first settler within the present limits of the county was Walter Kelly, who settled on what is now called Kelly's creek in honor of his name. This creek empties into the Kanawha, twenty miles above Charleston, the county seat. At that time he was what in later times has been called a squatter; his title was then called a "tomahawk title," which was a tacit agreement among the hunters, trappers and other settlers of the western region, that by blazing the dimensions of his claim upon a tree near a spring, cutting his name in the bark of the tree and giving the date of his claim, his tract was located and no one thereafter disputed his title. His claim, thus recorded, embraced several hundred acres of land. Here he reared a log cabin and cleared a field for farming purposes. His nearest neighbors were a white settlement in Greenbrier county, fully eighty miles

off, where a fort had been erected for protection from marauding bands of Indians who infested the country on every side. Kelly's adventure was ill-advised and reckless, considering his environment and his remoteness from succor in case of an Indian attack. The Indians about this time were preparing to make a general attack upon the white settlements. Col. Charles Lewis, who was then in command at Williamsburg, had sent out instructions to have notice given along the Greenbrier river of the evil intentions of the savages. An express was sent to Kelly. When it arrived at Kelly's cabin there were present Capt. John Field, who had been in active service during the French war, and was then engaged in making surveys, a young Scotchman and a negro woman who accompanied Field. On learning of the state of affairs, Kelly immediately dispatched his family to Greenbrier, under the protection of his brother. Capt. Field did not apprehend immediate danger, and so determined to remain at the cabin with Kelly. Left with no persons but the Scotchman and the negro woman, Kelly and Field had not long to wait before the reality of the danger of which they had been warned became evident. The Kelly family had hardly passed out of hearing before a party of Indians who had been in ambush made their appearance. Kelly was shot and instantly killed. Field made his escape and hid himself in a cornfield. The cabin was invested, the negro woman killed, and the young Scotchman was made a prisoner. Kelly's family reached Greenbrier settlement and gave the alarm, prompted by their fears for the safety of those they had left behind. Capt. Stuart, who was at the fort under the command of Col. Lewis, undertook to raise a volunteer force to go to the rescue of Kelly and his companions, in which he succeeded, but this force had not proceeded far on the way before they met Field, who, nearly naked and without food, had run eighty miles to apprise them of the fate of Kelly. Capt. Stuart then returned to the fort, deeming it advisable to prepare more thoroughly for the anticipated attack of the savages. But as if fate had decreed the discomfiture of the Kelly family, two more of them soon fell victims to another party of Indians, who were prowling around the settlements on Muddy creek. An account of this bloody episode, found in the *Chronicles of Border Warfare*, closes with this part of a paragraph: "As the daughter of Walter Kelly was walking with her uncle (who had conducted the family from the Kanawha), some distance from the house, which had been converted into a temporary fort, and in which they lived, they were discovered and fired upon, the latter was killed and scalped, and the former, being overtaken in her flight, was taken into captivity." The next adventurers who located at Kelly's creek, were Maj. "Billy" Morris and his family, including

three of his brothers. They all located at this place and became the first permanent settlers in the county.

The site on which Charleston now stands, with a large contiguous tract, was first granted by Lord Dunmore to Major Thomas Bullitt, in 1772. Without even seeing his possessions, Major Bullitt, in 1786, sold to Mr. George Clendenin, that portion of his grant now covered by the county seat. The deed was made before the county was formed, but the exact date of Mr. Clendenin's occupancy of his purchase is shrouded in uncertainty. It is regarded, however, as certain, that he was the first settler of the town, and in 1786 or 1787, it is certain that he built a fort on the river bank, which took his name. Clendenin's fort, in 1788, became the place of refuge for a portion of the family of Lewis Tackett, whose home on Coal river was destroyed by the Shawnee Indians. That part of the family who could not reach the fort, fell into the hands of the savages. The construction of Clendenin's fort was followed by several other log cabins which stood for many years as reminders of the early times.

The first county court which convened at Charleston, met in Clendenin's residence on the 5th day of October, 1789. The justices in attendance were Thomas Lewis, Robert Clendenin, Francis Watkins, Charles McClurg, Benjamin Strother, William Clendenin, David Robinson, George Alderson, Leonard Morris and James Van Bibber. Thomas Lewis was chosen sheriff, William H. Cavendish, clerk; Reuben Slaughter, county surveyor, and Benjamin Strother, David Robinson and John Van Bibber, commissioners of revenue.

Charleston was incorporated as a town by an act of the Virginia legislature passed December 19, 1794. By the same act Reuben Slaughter, Andrew Donnally, Sr., William Clendenin, John Morris, Sr., George Alderson, Abraham Baker, John Young and William Morris were named as the first board of trustees. At the first sitting of the county court, George Clendenin was ordered to erect buildings for the use of the county. At the term begun on the 6th of January, 1792, a county prison was ordered to be contracted for. At the March term the following order verbatim was entered: "Ordered that the sheriff do let to the lowest bidder, the building of a prison for the county of Kanawha, twelve feet square, with two floors, one of earth in the bank of the hill facing the Kanawha, and the other laid over with logs as close as possible; the house to be between floors seven feet, covered cabin fashion The bolts, bars and locks upon as economical a plan as possible; and that the clerk on behalf of the court of this county give his bond to the undertaker or undertakers for the payment of the sum the said building is undertaken for; and that he also take bond and security of the undertaker or undertakers,

on or before the 1st of July next, to have the same completed." The building was built in the present residence part of the city, on Kanawha street, within a few hundred yards of the Clendenin block-house. Sheriff George Alderson entered his protest against the building on the score of insufficiency, and for the reason that it was partly underground, but in spite of the protest the work proceeded, the jail was constructed in strict accordance with the order of the court and was used for jail purposes for a number of years. The first court house was ordered to be built at the March term of the court, 1796. The contract for a portion of the work is a unique document, and is in the following language: "That Guthridge Slaughter be allowed $128 for doing the inside work of the court house, in the manner following, viz.: two good floors, two doors, four windows, one pair of stairs and stair door, a fashionable seat for the magistrates and clerk, attorneys' table, bench and bar; the work all to be done in a workman-like manner, to be well chinked and daubed, together with window shutters. The said undertaker to give bond with security for the true and faithful performance of said work in six months from this time." The lot upon which this pretentious public building was erected was bought by the county of George Alderson, for which he was paid $100. The building was constructed of logs, was one story in height, and was about thirty feet in width by forty in length. It contained two jury rooms, about fourteen feet square, and stood immediately in front of the present court house, and on the same lot. The building may well be judged, if now in existence, would not be considered a good sample of modern architecture, but it would be a most curious and interesting relic. The first county clerk's office was ordered built in 1802, and it was stipulated that it should be constructed of stone or brick, if of stone, the outside to be stuccoed, the roof to be laid with jointed shingles, the doors and windows and shutters to be handsomely painted, and the whole finished in a good and workman-like manner.

Within the range of the original county there are abundant evidences of a pre-historic race of inhabitants, the relics of whose buildings and implements are dissimilar to those of any of the Indian tribes in existence at the earliest exploration of the country by the whites. The origin, character, habits and pursuits of these earlier occupiers of the soil will doubtless have to be forever left to conjecture and speculation.

The attachment of the Indians for this portion of Virginia was such that their incursions did not cease till considerable progress toward its settlement by the white race had been made. Shortly after the beginning of the present century, while several persons, namely: James Staten, Leonard Morris, William

Morris, John Young and John Jones, were returning to their homes after having been in attendance in court at Charleston for several days, they were made painfully conscious of the presence of their insidious enemies. Their destination was in the vicinity of the falls of Kanawha, and late in the afternoon, as they were crossing, on horseback, a small branch of that river, just below the village of Cannelton, they were fired upon by a band of the red men who had been lying in ambush, evidently for that very purpose. James Staten was instantly killed, and two or three others were slightly wounded, but all the survivors put spurs to their horses, and such was their speed that they were soon out of harm's way. This incident gave a significant name to the stream they were crossing, and it was ever afterward known as "Staten's Run." A somewhat similar incident gave its name to Hale's Spring. This spring was on the opposite shore of the stream from the house of Mr. Clendenin, who had in his employ about the year 1789, a young man by the name of Hale. Hale was an excellent marksman, and when he pointed his rifle at a deer or an Indian, and pulled the trigger, there was pretty sure to be a death in front of him. From this circumstance he had doubtless attracted the attention and awakened the ire of the Indians, who were continually prowling about in the vicinity. One day Hale had occasion to cross the river with a companion in a canoe to procure each, a pail of pater from the spring. They both took the precaution to carry their rifles along, being well avare of the presence of Indians in the neighborhood. In a fair, open field fight, they would undoubtedly have proved a match for their assailants, but they were not on the alert for a hidden foe. They had filled their pails with the cool beverage, and were re-crossing the stream, when they were fired upon by a group of Indians who had secreted themselves behind a clump of trees near the spring. Hale was shot through the head and instantly killed, but his companion, whose name the legend has failed to perpetuate, saved himself by instantly plunging into the water and keeping his head beneath the surface as long as he could hold his breath only bobbing up to take a needed but hasty inspiration, and quickly diving down again, while the bullets whistled harmlessly above him. He finally reached the shore, and was soon safely ensconced within the walls of the block-house. This adventure gave the name both to the spring and to Hale's branch. Almost every creek in the county is similarly connected with some early tradition, which gives to its name a historic significance, and which serves to perpetuate the name and deeds of some of the early settlers. Most of these traditions, too, have intimate relation to the Indian barbarities which for a long period, kept the pioneers in a state of constant watchfulness and alarm.

In common with the entire valley of the Kanawha, the inhabitants of this county are blessed with a serene and healthful climate. The atmospheric conditions for salubriousness are not excelled in any portion of the Union. Extremes of heat and cold are not known, and there are no low swampy lands to impart malaria to the air. Consumption or febrile diseases have no place here, and the pure, limpid waters which have their sources in almost every locality, help to perfect these sanitary conditions. The winters are only long enough to furnish a delightsome and invigorating change from the warmer temperatures of summer, and every season of the year has its peculiar charms. The autumns are especially delightful. There is no climate in which the requisites of health, comfort and pleasure are more fully and exactly met than in this favored land.

Though the mining interests of the county have somewhat contributed to keep the agricultural industries in the back ground, there is fine, productive soil in Kanawha county, which is admirably adapted to the cultivation of all the grains and root plants, and sorghum and tobacco of a fine grade can be raised with success. All the fruits, both indigenous and exotic which are to be found in the temperate zone, here find a most friendly soil and genial climate. Upon the mountains, fine cranberries are a spontaneous production, and the grape in all its varieties here finds favorite exposures for its amplest growth. The raising of this luscious fruit is attracting great attention, and every effort in that direction is crowned with success. The county is well adapted to sheep raising and the production of wool might be made a leading agricultural industry. There are water-powers sufficient to do the woolen manufacturing for the world, and the resources of the county only need developing in the direction of wool-raising and woolen manufacturing to make these interests the source of great wealth to the county. The means of transportation are or can be made adequate to every demand of the producing resources. The Kanawha river is navigable for an extended stretch. It is a placid and easy flowing stream, obstructed by no dangerous shoals to interfere with the passage of larged size boats. The stream varies in width from 600 to 900 feet, but its supply of water from mountain tributaries is constant, it is rarely obstructed by ice in winter and it as rarely becomes shoal by drouth in summer. Most of its tributaries are smooth and deep and are navigable for batteaux and rafts for the facile carriage of coal, iron ore or lumber with which the county abounds. As the general improvement of the country progresses, carriage by canals will become more and more in vogue, and railroad companies will compete for their full share of the carrying trade. The susceptibilities of the country for production are but in their infancy. Capital, in-

dustry and enterprise will increase them in a geometric ratio till something of the capacities of the soil, the mines and the facilities for carrying are brought into use. The county has before it a bright and prosperous future.

Newspapers.—The rise and progress of newspapers furnishes a good gauge of the advance of civilization, and a short history of the press is a proper accompaniment of the history of any county. The first newspaper established at the county seat of Kanawha county was called the *Kanawha Patriot*, was published by H. P. Gaines in the year 1819. In the year 1820 Mason Campbell began the publication of the *Western Courier*, which survived for two years, but five years later the same gentleman started the *Western Virginian*, the publication of which he continued until 1829. He then sold out to other parties, who changed the name to the *Western Register*, but continued its publication for only one year. A year or two afterward Mason Campbell and Ezra Walker began the publication of the *Kanawha Banner*, which survived until 1834, when followed by a paper of smaller size, called the *Kanawha Patriot*, a political organ of the whig pursuasion. In 1840, Pate & Hickey established the first democratic journal, the *Jeffersonian*, but at that time the whigs largely predominated in the county, and the paper only had the brief existence of one year. In 1842, E. W. Newton began the issue of a whig paper, called the *Kanawha Republican*. The *Western Virginian* was the second democratic venture, in 1851, by Thompson & Gardner. The paper survived but little longer than its democratic predecessor. The paper was succeeded by the *Kanawha Valley Star*, by John Rundell, and this paper lived to record the opening of the civil war. In 1864, S. S. and E. T. Moore began the issue of the first republican paper, the *West Virginia Journal*. In 1870, H. S. Walker & Co. established the *West Virginia Courier*, first a weekly, then a daily and finally a tri-weekly paper. The *Baptist Record*, by J. B. Hardwicke, D. D., was started in 1870, but it had a short life. The same year the *Charleston Herald* was started by John Brisben Walker, which was issued for two years. The *Kanawha Daily*, in 1871 had a short existence, under the charge of Thomas Hughes & Co. In 1872 C. B. Webb issued the *Kanawha Chronicle*, at first independent in politics, but in 1876 espousing the cause of the democracy. The papers in present existence are the *Kanawha Gazette*, democratic, established in 1877 as a weekly; issued as a daily since 1888; M. W. Donnally, proprietor; the *Kanawha Democrat*, by P. M. Noyes; *The Nonpariel*, independent, 1877, weekly till 1890, then daily, by J. V. Henderson; the *Star*, republican, daily, 1881; weekly in 1885; R. H. Mahone; the *State Tribune*, republican, 1881; M. B. Reber, manager; the *West Virginia School Journal*, educational; 1881, by B. S. Morgan.

PRIOR COUNTY JURISDICTION IN THE KANAWHA VALLEY.

It may be interesting in this connection to give a brief account of the division of the jurisdiction of counties in what is now the Kanawha valley with some reference to the whole state of West Virginia. In Withers' "Chronicles of Border Warfare" is the following:

"At the fall session of the colonial legislature, in 1738, the counties of Frederick and Augusta were formed out of Orange. The country included within the boundaries of the Potomac river on the north and the Blue Ridge on the east and a line to be run from the head spring of Hedgman, to the head spring of the Potomac, on the south and west to be the county of Frederick; the remainder of the state west of the Blue Ridge to the utmost limits of Virginia to constitute Augusta. Within its limits were included not only a considerable portion of West Virginia as she now is, but an extent of territory out of which has been already carved four states possessing great natural advantages and the extreme fertility of whose soil will enable them to support perhaps a more dense population than any other portion of North America of equal dimensions."

Before the year 1738 all this region had been included in the county of Orange.

The oldest of the four counties in the Great Kanawha valley is Kanawha, and from which, as originally formed, the others have been principally carved. Kanawha county was formed in 1789 and was taken from Greenbrier and Montgomery. The last named county was formed from Fincastle in 1777 and Greenbrier was taken from Montgomery and Botetourt in 1778. Botetourt was taken from Augusta in 1770, while Augusta, as above stated, was formed from Orange in 1738. Fincastle was formed in 1772 out of Botetourt, and in 1777 was abolished as a separate county, its territory being divided into Washington, Montgomery and Kentucky. An anomaly in the erection of a county was afforded in the case of the district of West Augusta. Jos. A. Waddell, in his "Annals of Augusta County, Virginia," says: "The district of West Augusta seems to have been evolved rather than created by law. Its existence was first recognized by the legislature during the session which began October 7, 1776, when an act was passed 'for ascertaining the boundary between the county of Augusta and the district of West Augusta.' The boundary of the district was thus described: 'Beginning on the Allegheny mountains, between the heads of Potowmack, Cheat and Greenbrier rivers, thence along the ridge of mountains which divides the waters of Cheat river from those of Green-

brier and that branch of the Monongahela river called Tyger's valley, to the Monongahela river; thence up the said river and the west fork thereof to Bingerman's creek on the north side of the said west fork; thence up the said creek to the head thereof; thence in a direct course to the head of Middle Island creek, a branch of the Ohio; and thence to the Ohio, including all the waters of the said creek in the aforesaid district of West Augusta; all that territory lying to the northward of the aforesaid and to the westward of the states of Pennsylvania and Maryland, shall be decreed and is hereby declared to be within the district of West Augusta.'

"The act proceeded to divide the district into three counties of Ohio, Yohogania and Monongalia. The greater part of Yohogania fell within the territory of Pennsylvania and the boundary line between that state and Virginia was established; and the residue was by act of 1785, added to Ohio county, and Yohogania became extinct.

"We may state that the rhetorical declaration about West Augusta, attributed to Washington at a dark day during the war is sheer fiction. What Washington said in the simplest terms was that if driven to extremity he would retreat to Augusta county, in Virginia, and there make a stand."

CHAPTER XXVI.

BANKING INSTITUTIONS.

BANKS are the arteries of commerce, and there is no more certain way to determine the health and prosperity of trade than to ascertain the condition of these avenues through which flow the large volume of business. A season of disaster to banks is always one in which the tradesmen and people complain of financial distress. The greatest of German statesmen has said in substance, that the next great European war will have its initial engagements fought out in the bourses of that continent. The recent financial maneuvers between the nations of the old world, and the simultaneous prophecies of war, seem to confirm the prediction and at the same time prove that banks are perhaps the greatest feature of modern sociology. With the rise of important business projects in the Kanawha valley can be dated the appearance of banks, and as the commercial interests of this valley have grown, so have banking institutions increased and prospered.

The first institution of this kind in this portion of the state was established in 1832. That was when nearly all the states had what was known as the state bank. Soon after that date was inaugurated the system of wildcat banking, which was attended with such direful consequences in many portions of the land, but more particularly in the states lying farther to the west. In the year just named the State Bank of Virginia established at Charleston, a branch, of which J. C. McFarland was made presinent, Samuel Hannah, cashier, and J. M. Doddridge, teller.

At that time salt manufacturing was developing into such proportions as to render exchange and banking facilities almost necessary. Upon the decline of that industry the coal and lumbering interests grew into such magnitude as to require additional accommodation from local banks. Under that old and sometimes disputed commercial adage, "the demand regulates the supply," new organizations of ample capital were instituted at various periods.

At the present time there are four banks in that part of the Kanawha valley, of which these volumes treat. Three of them are at Charleston, and are known as the Charleston National, the

Citizens' National, and the Kanawha Valley bank. Of these, according to the latest reports at hand, the first named has a paid in capital of $100,000, with a surplus of $20,000, and undivided profits, $5,000. Its president is L. Prichard, and cashier, E. A. Reid. The Citizens' National has a capital of $125,000. Its officers are Neil Robinson, president; William A. McCorkle, vice-president, and W. T. McClurg, cashier. The Kanawha Valley bank has a paid in capital of $150,000, and $130,000 in undivided profits. The president is J. Q. Dickinson, and R. T. Oney is cashier.

The total banking capital for Charleston is thus seen to be $375,000, on which there is a surplus of $20,000, and undivided profits amounting to $135,000. It is probable that but few cities in the United States can make a better showing than this with an equal population. With such ample provisions for banking accommodations, Charleston's citizens may well feel proud. Many persons in the small adjoining towns recognizing the advantages to be derived from transacting business through trustworthy and reliable banks, have availed themselves of those at Charleston, and this affords a reciprocal gain to the banks. The other bank in the Kanawha valley is located at Point Pleasant. Indeed, this is the only other town of sufficient size that would seem to warrant the establishment of such an institution. The position occupied by Point Pleasant is such as to derive many commercial benefits which its neighboring towns cannot hope to enjoy. The steady growth of trade at that place long since induced prudent business men to launch in the banking business, and the enterprise has proved to be of much good to the public as well as a desirable source of profit to the proprietors. The present bank at that place is known as the Merchants' National, and has a capital of $50,000, and a surplus of $10,000. John McColloch is president and T. Stribling cashier.

Banking and Commercial Laws.— The banking laws of West Virginia are in the main liberal. Banks are not required to make public their condition nor are they obliged to make report of any sort to state officials. The laws of the state require that a company doing a banking business shall have a capital stock of at least $25,000, but not more than $500,000. The stockholders are individually liable for an amount equal to their shares in the bank above the amount for all liabilities incurred while such stockholders. Savings banks may be organized by thirteen persons without being a joint stock company, but such banks must be managed by a board of trustees, certified to, as proper persons for such business by the judge of the circuit court of the county wherein the bank is to be located. In banks of this kind the deposit must be invested in first mortages or trust deeds on real estate, bonds or securities of the United States, or other

municipal securities or they may be loaned on personal security. Ten per cent. of the fund shall be kept on hand to meet current expenses and payments in excess of receipts.

Acknowledgments may be taken before a notary public, a recorder, prothonotary, the clerk of any court of record or commissioner appointed to act within any state by the governor of this state and must be duly authenticated by the seal annexed to such acknowledgment. The acknowledgment of a married woman must be certified to, as having been examined apart from her husband, and that the deed or writing had been fully explained to her, and that she declared her willingness to execute the same and had no desire to retract it.

There is no law regulating assignments for the benefit of creditors by insolvence. Assignments of that kind are sometimes made, but they do not affect a discharge of the debt. A debtor under arrest may procure a discharge by conveying all his property which the law does not exempt. Deeds of assignment should be acknowledged and filed in the office of the clerk of the county court. When real estate is assigned, the wife should join in the assignment under seal and acknowledgment in order to bar her right of dower.

A writ of attachment will be issued upon affidavit by the creditor that the debtor is a non-resident and has left or is about to leave the state or that he conceals himself so that summons cannot be served; or that he is removing or about to remove his property out of the state; or that he is converting his property into money with the design of defrauding his creditors; or that he has disposed of his property with the intention of defrauding his creditors; or that he has property or choses in action which he conceals; or that he has fraudulently contracted the debt for which the action was brought. The creditor must give bond and the sheriff is then obliged to take the property attached into his possession. Money or other property due the debtor in the hands of a third person may be garnisheed.

Justices of the peace have civil jurisdiction in actions where the amount demanded does not exceed $300 and where the title to real estate is not involved in the case. In each county a circuit court is held which has jurisdiction in cases where the debt exceeds $50. The clerks of county court have full probate power through the sanctum of the court.

Immediately upon the close of a term of court at which a judgment has been rendered an execution may be issued, which is returnable in ninety days. In justice's courts, stay of execution may be had as follows: Less than $50, two months; $50 to $100, four months; over $100, six months. There is no stay in the higher court. A property sold under execution, deed of trust or mortgage when foreclosed, can not be redeemed.

A homestead to the value of $1,000 may be exempted from execution under these provisions: Where the property is willed or given to the debtor (being a husband or parent) as a homestead, and such persons previous to contracting any debt, must place a declaration of his intention on the land record of the county, to keep such property as a homestead. Besides this to the value of $200 in personal property, the debtor is entitled to an exemption. Judgments bear six per cent. interest, which is the legal rate of interest throughout the state, excepting that incorporated companies may borrow money at higher rates.

A judgment is a lien upon all real estate but it must be filed in the county clerk's office within ninety days to secure it against innocent purchasers. Actions on store accounts must be brought within three years; accounts between merchants within five years; contracts not in writing or in writing and not under seal, five years; contracts under seal, twenty years; to recover land, ten years.

A wife's property acquired from any other source than her husband, is held for her separate use, but the husband must join in the conveyance of realty. A widow is entitled to one-third of her husband's real estate of which he was seized at any time during coverture unless her dower shall have been legally relinquished.

From the first day in February in each year, taxes on real estate become a lien upon it and draw six per cent. interest thereafter until paid. Sales are held every two years for property which has previously returned as delinquent and not redeemed or sold for taxes, interest and fifteen per cent. penalty. A year is allowed for redemption.

If the reader has pursued these two volumes thus far he will see that they treat of a valley favored beyond most localities. Here a bounteous providence has exhausted the catalogue of those things which go to make a nation rich and powerful. The mines yield their inexhaustible product to man with a readiness that is nowhere else surpassed. In no other place does the earth give forth such a variety of her valuable stores. The fertility of the soil in the Kanawha valley is renowned through the whole land, and the prodigality of its harvests is a source of great delight and profit to its industrious denizens as well as a cause of surprise and admiration to the stranger. Its forests are prolific in all the valuable timbers that are anywhere indigenous to the United States, and the manufacturing of lumber is nowhere attended with more remunerative returns than in the valley of the Great Kanawha. It is probable that no portion of our land is

more highly favored with those natural highways of commerce, navigable rivers, thus rendering the great heart of the continent tributary to the enterprising business men of this region. Man, too, has done his part for this favored place, and the telegraph and railway place it at the threshold of the greatest markets of the world.

In addition to this profusion of bounties on every hand, Nature has here dressed the land in her most luxurious attire. On all sides may be seen the useful blended in a striking and picturesque panorama of beauty. The landscape is made up of mountain and meadow, trees and towns, river and railway. The constant surprises that await the eye in this valley are always sufficient to rouse the weary traveler in the swiftly gliding railway coach and lure him to look again upon the passing picture.